

A HISTORY OF INDIAN PHILOSOPHY

A HISTORY

OF

INDIAN PHILOSOPHY

BY

SURENDRANATH DASGUPTA, M.A., Ph.D. PRINCIPAL, SANSKRIT COLLEGE, CALCUTTA

VOLUME II

CAMBRIDGE
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS

PUBLISHED BY THE SYNDICS OF THE CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS

London Office: Bentley House, N.W. 1 American Branch: New York

Agents for Canada, India, and Pakistan: Macmillan

First printed 1932 Reprinted 1952

First printed in Great Britain at the University Press, Cambridge Reprinted by offset-litho by Percy Lund Humphries & Co. Ltd

PREFACE

Nine years have passed away since the first volume of this work was published, and the present volume has been in the press for more than two years. During the last seven year; bad health has been responsible for many interruptions. In the first volume manuscripts were sparingly used, but in the present work numerous unpublished and almost unknown manuscripts have been referred to. These could not be collected easily, and it took time to read them; many of them were old and moth-eaten and it was not often easy to decipher the handwriting. It has not always been possible, however, to give an elaborate account of the content of all these manuscripts, for in many cases they contained no new matter and had therefore only been mentioned by name, a fact which could be ascertained only after long and patient study, since records of them were previously unknown. A considerable delay was also caused in the writing of this volume by the fact that large portions of what will appear in the third volume had to be compiled before the manuscripts had left the author's hands. In any event, the author offers his sincere apologies for the delay.

The manuscript of the third volume has made good progress and, barring illness and other accidents, will soon be sent to press. This volume will contain a fairly elaborate account of the principal dualistic and pluralistic systems, such as the philosophy of the Pañca-rātra, Bhāskara, Yāmuna, Rāmānuja and his followers, Madhva and his followers, the Bhāgavata-purāna and the Gaudīya school of Vaiṣṇavism. The fourth and the fifth volumes will deal with the philosophy of Vallabha and some other lesser known schools of Vaiṣṇavism, the philosophy of the Purāṇas, Tantras, the different schools of Śaivas, Sāktas, Indian Aesthetics, the philosophy of right and law and the religious systems that have found their expression in some of the leading vernaculars of India.

A new impression of the first volume is now in the press. The present volume contains four chapters on Śańkara Vedānta, the Medical Speculations of the Ancient Hindus, and the Philosophy of the Yoga-vāsiṣṭha and the Bhagavad-gītā. A good deal of the Śańkara Vedānta, especially in regard to its controversy with

Bhāskara, Rāmānuja, Madhva and their followers, still remains to be treated in the third volume.

A word of explanation may be needed with regard to the inclusion in a work on Indian philosophy of the speculations of the Indian medical schools. Biology has recently played a great part in liberating philosophy from its old-world ideas. In ancient India, Biology had not grown into a separate science; whatever biological ideas were current in India were mixed up with medical, osteological and physiological speculations, the only branches of study in ancient India which may be regarded as constituting an experimental science. It was therefore thought that a comprehensive work on the history of Indian philosophy would be sadly defective without a chapter on these speculations, which introduce also some distinctly new ethical and eschatological concepts and a view of life which is wholly original. The biological notions of growth, development and heredity of these schools are no less interesting, and their relations to the logical categories of Nyāya are very instructive.

No attempt has been made to draw any comparisons or contrasts with Western philosophy, since in a work of this type it would most likely have been misleading and would have obscured the real philosophical issues. The study here presented is strictly faithful to the original Sanskrit texts within the limits of the present writer's capacities. Often the ground covered has been wholly new and the materials have been obtained by a direct and first-hand study of all available texts and manuscripts. Nevertheless some sources, containing, possibly, valuable materials, inevitably remain unconsulted, for many new manuscripts will be discovered in future, and our knowledge of Indian philosophy must advance but slowly. In spite of the greatest care, errors of interpretation, exposition and expression may have crept in and for these the author craves the indulgence of sympathetic readers.

Since the publication of the first volume of the present work, many treatises on Indian philosophy have appeared in India and elsewhere. But it has not been possible to refer to many of these. The present attempt is mainly intended to give an exposition of Indian thought strictly on the basis of the original texts and commentaries, and not to eradicate false views by indulging in controversy; and, since the author takes upon himself the responsibility of all the interpretations of the texts that he has used, and since

he has drawn his materials mostly from them, it has seldom been possible to refer to the efforts of his fellow-workers in the field. Occasionally, however, he has had to discuss and sometimes to borrow the views of other writers in the assessment of chronological facts, and he also expresses his indebtedness to such other writers who have worked upon some of the special problems of Indian thought. It has been suggested to him that it would have been better if the views of other writers had been fully criticized, but however that may be, such criticism has been considered as beyond the scope of this work, which, as at present planned, will cover some 3000 pages when completed.

The chronological views regarding the antiquity of the Gitā may appear heretical, but it is hoped that they may be deemed excusable, for this is an age of toleration, and they are not more heretical than the views of many distinguished writers on Indian chronology. In the chapter on the Gitā, some repetition of the same views in different contexts was inevitable on account of the looseness of the structure of the Gītā, which is an ethico-religious treatise and not a system of philosophy. This, however, has been studiously avoided in the other chapters. Neither the Yoga-vāsiṣtha nor the Gītā are systematic works on philosophy, and yet no treatment of Indian philosophy can legitimately ignore their claims. For in a country where philosophy and religion have been inseparably associated, the value of such writings as breathe the spirit of philosophy cannot be over-estimated, and no history of Indian philosophy worth the name can do without them.

I have no words sufficient to express my gratitude to my esteemed friend, Dr F. W. Thomas, Boden Professor of Sanskrit, Oxford, who went through the proofs in two of their stages and thus co-operated with me in the trouble of correcting them. I fear that in spite of our joint efforts many errors have escaped our eyes, but had it not been for his kind help the imperfections of the book would have been greater. I must similarly thank my friend, Mr Douglas Ainstie, for help with the proofs. My thanks are also due to my pupils, Dr M. Eleade (Bucharest), Mr Janakiballabh Bhattacharyya, M.A., and my other friends, Messrs Satkari Mookerjee, M.A., Durgacharan Chatterjee, M.A., Srish Chandra Das Gupta, M.A., and my daughter, Miss Maitreyi Devi, for the assistance they rendered me in getting the manuscript

ready for the press, inserting diacritical marks, comparing the references and the like, and also in arranging the index cards. But as none of them had the whole charge of any of these tasks, and as their help was only of an occasional nature, the responsibility for imperfections belongs to the author and not to them.

SURENDRANATH DASGUPTA

Calcutta, 1931

CONTENTS

CHAPTER XI

	THE SANKARA SCHOOL OF VEDANTA (continued)	PAGE
1	The World-Appearance	
2	Thought and its Object in Buddhism and in Vedant Sankara's Defence of Vedanta; Philosophy of Badarāyana and	13
3	Bhartrprapañca	36
4	Teachers and Pupils in Vedanta	46
5	Vedanta Doctrine of Soul and the Buddhist Doctrine of Soullessness	58
6		73
7	Sankara and his School	77
8	Mandana, Sureśvara and Viśvarūpa	82
9	Mandana (A.D. 800)	87
10	Sureśvara (A.D. 800)	98
11	Padmapāda (A.D. 820)	102
I 2	Vācaspati Miśra (A.D. 840)	106
13	Sarvajñātma Muni (A.D. 900)	111
14	Ānandabodha Yati (eleventh or twelfth century A.D.)	116
15	Mahā-vidyā and the Development of Logical Formalism	118
16	Vedānta Dialectic of Śrīharşa (A.D. 1150)	125
17	Application of the Dialectic to the Different Categories and Concepts	133
18	Citsukha's Interpretations of the Concepts of Śańkara Vedānta (A.D.	
	1220)	147
19	The Dialectic of Nagarjuna and the Vedanta Dialectic	163
20	Dialectical Criticisms of Santarakşita and Kamalasıla (A.D. 760) as	
	forerunners of Vedānta Dialectics	171
	(a) Criticisms of Sāmkhya Parināma Doctrine	171
	(b) Criticism of Isvara	176
	(c) Refutation of the Soul Theory (d) Refutation of the Mimāṃsā Theory of the Self	178
	(a) Refutation of the Miniarisa Theory of the Self	179 181
	(f) Refutation of the Upanişad View of the Self	181
	(g) Refutation of the Opanisad view of the Schr	182
	(h) Refutation of Criticisms of the Non-permanency of Entities .	185
	(i) Resutation of the Nyāya Vaisesika Categories	187
21	Dialectic of Sankara and Ānandajñāna	189
22		196
23	Vimuktātman (A.D. 1200)	198
23 24	Rāmādvaya (A.D. 1300)	204
~+ 25	Vidyāranya (A.D. 1350)	214
26	Nṛsimhāśrama Muni (A.D. 1500)	216
2 7	Appaya Dikşita (A.D. 1550)	218
	Prakāśānanda (A.D. 1550—1600)	220
	Madhusūdana Sarasvatī (A.D. 1500)	225

x Contents

CHAPTER XII

			_
THE PHILOSOPHY	OF THE	YOGA-V	ĀSISTHA

ı	Yoga-vāsistha								PAGE 228
2	The Ultimate Entity .								232
3	Origination								235
4	Karma, Manas and the Cates	gories							237
5	The World-Appearance .								240
6	Nature of Agency Kartṛtva) a	and the	: Illu	sion c	of Wo	rld C	reatio	n.	242
7	The Stage of the Saint (Jiva	n-muki	ta)						245
8	Energy of Free-will (Paurusa	ı) .							252
9	Prāṇa and its Control .								256
10	Stages of Progress								264
11	Methods of Right Conduct								267
12	Yoga-vāsistha, Sankara Vedā	nta an	d Bu	ddhis	t Vijî	iānavā	ida	•	268

CHAPTER XIII

SPECULATIONS IN THE MEDICAL SCHOOLS

I	Äyur-veda and the Atharva-Veda .							273
2	Bones in the Atharva-Veda and Ayur-veda	3						284
3	Organs in the Atharva-Veda and Ayur-ved	la						288
4	Practice of Medicine in the Atharva-Veda							293
5	The Foetus and the Subtle Body .							302
6	Foetal Development							312
7	Growth and Disease							319
8	Vāyu, Pitta and Kapha							325
9	Head and Heart							340
10	The Circulatory and the Nervous System							344
11	The Nervous System of the Tantras							352
12	The Theory of Rasas and their Chemistry							357
13	The Psychological Views and other Ontological	gical	Cate	gorie	s			366
14	Logical Speculations and Terms relating to	o Aca	demi	c Dis	pute			373
15	Did Logic Originate in the Discussions of					s?		392
16	Äyur-veda Ethics							402
17	Springs of Action in the Caraka-samhitā				_		•	411
18	Good Life in Caraka					•	•	418
19	Āyur-veda Literature			•	•	•	•	-
_			-	•	•	•	•	423

Contents xi

CHAPTER XIV

THE PHILOSOPHY OF THE BHAGAVAD-GĪTĀ

I	The Gttā Literature .					-			437
2	Gītā and Yoga								443
3	Sāmkhya and Yoga in the Gitte	ā·							455
4	Sămkhya Philosophy in the G	ītā							461
5	Avyakta and Brahman .								47°
6	Conception of Sacrificial Dutie	es in	the (Itā					479
7	Sense-control in the Gitā								488
8	The Ethics of the Gītā and th	e Bu	ddhis	t Eth	ics				493
9	Analysis of Action								515
10	Eschatology								517
11	God and Man								523
I 2	Vişņu, Vāsudeva and Kṛṣṇa								535
13	Bhagavata and the Bhagavad-g	gītā	•	•	•	•	•	٠	545
	INDEX						•		553

CHAPTER XI

THE ŚANKARA SCHOOL OF VEDĀNTA (continued)

THE treatment of the school of Sankara Vedanta in the preceding chapter may be considered fairly sufficient fo, all ordinary purposes. But the reputation of this school of thought stands so high, and so many people are interested in it, that it was pointed out to me that it would be desirable to go into a little more detailed study of it. An additional justification for such a suggestion is to be found in the regrettable fact that, though numerous elementary and half-informed treatises have been published both in this country and in Europe, I do not know of any systematic study of the system in any of the modern languages of Europe or Asia which has been based on a first-hand study of the works of the great thinkers of this school who followed Sankara and developed his system in a remarkably recondite manner. The comparatively small compass of this chapter in a History of Indian Philosophy cannot be expected to fulfil adequately such a demand; but still it may be expected that an attempt to bring out some of these materials by some amount of detailed study will be excusable, though it may seem slightly to disturb the general plan of this work.

The World-Appearance.

The Upanisads, called also the Vedānta, contain passages which indicate very different lines of thought, theistic, pantheistic, of self as the only ultimate reality, creationism, etc. The works of those commentators who wrote commentaries on the Upanisads before Śańkara and tried to interpret them on the supposition that there was one uniform, systematic, dogmatic philosophy in them are now practically all lost, and all that we can know of them is contained in the meagre references that are found in Śańkara's commentaries or the works of other, later, commentators. As an example I may refer to Bhartrprapañca, who tried to give a realistic interpretation of the *Brhad-āranyaka Upaniṣad* by treating the world and souls as real emanations from God or Brahman¹.

¹ Fragments of Bhartrprapañca from the writings of Sankara and his commentator Anandajñāna and from Sureśvara's Vārttika have been collected by Prof. Hiriyanna, Mysore, in a short paper read at the Third Oriental Conference in Madras in 1924, published in Madras in 1925.

Sankara inherited from his predecessors the opinion that the Upaniṣads teach us one consistent systematic philosophy, but, being under the influence of Gauḍapāda, differed from them on the nature of this philosophy, which he propounded so elaborately in all his commentaries on the Upaniṣads and the Brahma-sūtras.

The main thesis of Sankara, as has already been pointed out in the preceding chapter, consists of the view that Brahman alone is the ultimate reality, while everything else is false. He was interested in proving that this philosophy was preached in the Upanisads; but in the Upanisads there are many passages which are clearly of a theistic and dualistic purport, and no amount of linguistic trickery could convincingly show that these could yield a meaning which would support Sankara's thesis. Sankara therefore introduces the distinction of a common-sense view (vyāvahārika) and a philosophic view (pāramārthika), and explains the Upanisads on the supposition that, while there are some passages in them which describe things from a purely philosophic point of view, there are many others which speak of things only from a common-sense dualistic view of a real world, real souls and a real God as creator. Sankara has applied this method of interpretation not only in his commentary on the Upanisads, but also in his commentary on the Brahma-sūtra. Judging by the sūtras alone, it does not seem to me that the Brahma-sūtra supports the philosophical doctrine of Sankara, and there are some sūtras which Sankara himself interpreted in a dualistic manner. He was never afraid of indulging in realistic interpretations; for he could easily get out of the difficulty by asserting that all the realistic conceptions found in the sūtras or in the Upanisad passages were merely an estimate of things from the common-sense point of view. Though on the basis of Sankara's own statements, as well as those of his later commentators and other adherents of his school, there is hardly any room for doubt regarding the meaning and force of Sankara's philosophy, yet at least one Indian scholar has sought to prove that Sankara's philosophy was realistic1. That there was some amount of realism in Sankara is proved by his own confession, when he criticizes the uncompromising Buddhistic idealists (vijnāna-vādins) or the so-called Buddhistic nihilists (śūnya-vādins).

¹ Advaita Philosophy by K. Vidyāratna, published by the Calcutta University Press, 1924.

I have already discussed in a general way in what sense according to the Vedānta, from the point of view of the Sankara school of Vedānta as interpreted by his later adherents, the world is an illusion. But in the present section I propose to discuss Sankara's own statements, as well as the statements of some of his important followers, on the subject of the nature of world illusion. This is one of the most important points of the Sankara school of philosophy and needs a discussion in some detail.

But before I take it up, I am naturally reminded of the views of Buddhist idealism and the so-called Buddhistic nihilism, and it seems desirable that Sankara's doctrine of illusion should be treated in connection with the doctrines of illusion in those systems of Buddhistic thought which preceded Sankara. Taking the Sūnyavāda theory of Nāgārjuna and Candrakīrti, we see that they also introduced the distinction between limited truth and absolute truth. Thus Nāgārjuna says in his Mādhyamika-sūtras that the Buddhas preach their philosophy on the basis of two kinds of truth, truth as veiled by ignorance and depending on common-sense presuppositions and judgments (samvrti-satya) and truth as unqualified and ultimate (paramārtha-satya)1. The word samvrti literally means "closed." Candrakīrti explains samvrti as meaning "closing on all sides" and says that it is ignorance (ajñāna) which is denoted by the term samorti here, because it covers the truth of all things2. In this sense the whole of the world of our experience of causes and effects, which we perceive and of which we speak, presents an appearance which is hidden by ignorance. This world is not contradicted in our world-experience; but, as each and every entity of this world is produced by other things or entities, and they again by others, and as we cannot specify the nature of each one of them without referring to others which produced them or from which they originated, and tracing those again to other causes and

> dve satye samupāśritya buddhānām dharma-deśanā loka-samvṛti-satyam ca satyam ca paramārthataḥ. Mādhyamika-sūtra, xxiv. 8, p. 492, B.B. edition.

² Ajñānam hi samantāt sarva-padārtha-tattvāvacchādanāt samvṛtir ity ucyate. Ibid. Candrakirti however gives two other meanings of the word samvṛti, which do not seem to be so closely connected with the etymology. In the first of the two meanings samvṛti means interdependent origination or pratītya-samutpāda, and in the second it means the conventional world of common-sense, which can be expressed or indicated by speech and language and which we are supposed to know and refer to in all our experiences involving the knower and the known—samvṛtih samketo loka-vyavahārah, sa ca abhidhānābhidheya-jñāna-jñeyādilak-saṃaḥ.

so on, it is not possible to assert anything as to the nature or characteristic (svabhāva) of anything as it is. Things are known to us only as being the result of the combination of many entities or as product complexes. Nothing is produced of itself, and so the products are never by themselves self-existent, but exist only through the coming together of different entities. That which has any nature of its own cannot owe its origination to other complexes, and so there is nothing in our world-experience which has a nature of its own. The apparent reality of the world has therefore the mysterious veil of ignorance over it, and it is this veil of ignorance which is referred to by the term loka-samvrta. This is spoken of also as tathya-samvrti (real ignorance), as distinguished from mithyā-samvrti (false ignorance), properly used of the ordinary illusions and hallucinations of magic, mirage reflections, etc.¹ Those appearances which are due to sense-defects or other causes and are therefore contradicted in experience are called mithyā-samvrta, because their falsehood is discovered in experience. The falsehood of the world-appearances, however, can be realized only when their real nature (paramārtha $r\bar{u}pa$) as a succession of essenceless products of causal complexes is properly understood. The world holds good and remains uncontradicted and has all the appearance of reality in all our practical experiences, and it is only when it is understood that these phenomena have no nature of their own that they are considered false. All teachings in philosophy take for granted the world-appearances. subjective and objective, and try to give a rational analysis and estimate of them; and it is only through an experience of these world-phenomena and a rational understanding of them that one realizes their truth as being a mere flow of causes and effects devoid of essence. The appearance of the world as reality is therefore true only in a limited manner during the period when the veil of ignorance is not removed from our eyes; and this is signified by designating the truth (satya) of the world as only loka-samvrta. This world-appearance is however relatively true when compared with the ordinary illusions of perception (when, e.g., a piece of rope is perceived as a snake, or when one sees a mirage in a desert).

But a question arises—if the world-appearance has no essence of its own, how is it that it appears to have one, or how is it that the world-phenomena appear at all? To such a question Nāgārjuna's answer is that the appearance of the world is like the

¹ Bodhi-caryāvatāra-pañjikā, p. 353, Biblotheca Indica Series, 1902.

appearance of mirages or dreams, which have no reality of their own, but still present an objective appearance of reality¹. The world is not a mere nothing, like a lotus of the sky or the hare's horn, which are simply non-existent (avidyamāna). Thus there is not only the ultimate truth (paramārtha); there is also the relative truth of the phenomenal world ('oka-samvrti-sutya); there are, further, the sense-illusions, hallucinations and the like which are contradicted in ordinary experience (aloka-samvṛta or mithyāsamvrta), and also that which is mercly non-existent, like the hare's horn. The error (viparyāsa) of world-appearance is considered as being of four kinds, viz. the consideration of the momentary as eternal, the consideration of the painful as being pleasurable, the consideration of the unholy as holy, and of that which has no soul as having a soul². And this error is due to ignorance ($avidy\bar{a}$). Candrakīrti quotes a passage from the Ārya-drdhāśaya-pariprechā, in which it is said that, just as a man may see in a dream that he is spending the night with the wife of the king, and, suddenly realizing that he is discovered, tries to fly for fear of his life (thus perceiving the presence of a woman, where there is none), so we are always falling into the error of asserting that we have perceived the manifold world-appearance where there is none³.

Such analogies of error naturally suggest the supposition that there must be some reality which is mistaken as some other thing; but, as has already been explained, the Buddhists emphasized the fact that, in dreams, the illusory appearances were no doubt objectively known as objective presentations of which we had previously become aware—experiences through which we pass, though there is no reality on which these appearances rest or are imposed. It was here that Sankara differed. Thus, in his introduction to the commentary on the *Brahma-sūtra* he says that the essence of all illusory perception is that one thing is mistaken for another, that the qualities, characteristics or attributes of one thing are taken for the qualities, characteristics or attributes of another. Illusion is defined as the false appearance in some object of something

¹ Mādhyamika-sūtra, XXIII. 8.

² Iha catvāro viparyāsā ucyante: tadyathā pratikṣaṇa-vināśini skandha-pañcake yo nityam iti grāhaḥ sa viparyāsaḥ...duhkhātmake skandha-pañcake yaḥ sukham iti viparīto grāhaḥ so 'paro viparyāsaḥ,...śarīram aśuci-svabhāvam tatra yo śucitvena grāhaḥ sa viparyāsaḥ,...pañca-skandham nirātmakam tasmin ya ātma-grāhaḥ anātmani ātmābhnivesaḥ sa viparyāsaḥ. Candrakīrti's commentary on ibid. XXIII. 13. Compare it with the Yoga-sūtra, II. 5, Ānandāśrama Series.
³ Candrakīrti's commentary on the Mādhyamika-sūtra, XXIII. 13.

experienced before, resembling a memory image. It is explained by some as being the false affirmation of the characteristics of one thing in regard to another; others explain it as an error due to the nonapprehension of the difference between that which is wrongly apprehended and the misapprehended object which the former is wrongly supposed to be; others think that, when one thing is misapprehended as another, the illusion consists in the fancying of the former entity as being endowed with strange characteristics (viparīta-dharmatva); but in all these different ways of analysis illusion fundamentally is nothing but the false appearance of one thing with the characteristics of another. So also it may be that a conch-shell appears as silver or that one moon appears as two moons¹. Sankara then suggests that, since the universal self (pratyag-ātman) is felt through our feeling of "I" and since it is immediate in all experience (aparoksa), it is not absolutely unrelated and unindicated (avisaya) in experience, and consequently it is quite possible that the non-self (anātman) and its characteristics may be illusorily imposed upon the universal self. This illusory imposition of the non-self and its characteristics on the universal self is called nescience (avidvā).

In his commentary on Gaudapāda's Kārikā, 1. 17, Sankara says that, when a piece of rope falsely appears as a snake, this is merely false imposition or appearance, not existence. The illusory appearance of the snake did not really bring into existence a snake. which later on became non-existent when right knowledge supervened. It was a mere illusion, and the rope-snake had no existence at all². Śańkara in commenting on Gaudapāda's Kārikā explains with approval Gaudapada's view that the world of common experience is as illusory as a dream. Dreams are false; for in a dream a man may have the experience of going to distant places, and yet. when he wakes up, he finds that he has been asleep for a few seconds only, and has not moved a foot from his bed. The dream experiences are therefore false, because they are contradicted by the waking experiences. But the waking experiences, being similar to dream experiences, are equally false. For both sets of experiences involve the duality of subject and object, and are therefore

¹ Śańkara's Adhyāsa-bhāṣya on the Brahma-sūtra, Nirṇaya-Sāgara Press, Bombay, 1904.

² Rajjvām sarpa iva kalpitatvāt na tu sa vidyate...na hi rajjvām bhrāntibuddhyā kalpitah sarpo vidyamānah san vivekato nivrttah; tathedam prapañcākhyam māyā-mātram. Gaudapāda's Kārikā, 1. 17, Ānandāśrama Series.

fundamentally more or less the same: so that, if one of them is false, the other also is false. The world-experience is like other well-known instances of illusion—the mirage, for example. Since it had no existence in the beginning, and will not have any existence in the end, neither can it have existence in the intervening period of appearance. The objection that our waking experiences fulfil practical purposes and have thus associated with them the pragmatic test of truth, which is absent in the case of dream experiences, is invalid; for the pragmatic tests of the waking experiences may well be contradicted by dream experiences; a man who goes to sleep after a sumptuous feast may well dream that he has been starving for days together. Both our inner world of mind and its experiences and the outer objective world are thus false creations¹. But Gaudapāda and Śankara differ from the Śūnyavādin Buddhists in this-that they think that even false creations must have some basis in truth. If a rope appears as a snake, the false creation of the snake has some basis in the truth of the rope: there could not be false creations and false appearances without any firm basis of truth (āspada) underlying them2. Nāgārjuna, it will be remembered, tried to prove the falsity of all appearances on the ground of their being interdependent and not having anything which could be pointed out as their own nature. The dialectic being applicable to all appearances, there was nothing left which was not relative and interdependent, nothing which was selfevident by nature and which was intelligible by itself without reference to anything else. It is this interdependence and relativity of all appearances that was called "nothingness" or sūnyatā by Nāgārjuna. There was nothing which could be affirmed of anything independently by itself without reference to something else; nothing therefore could be conceived as having any essence by itself. All appearances were therefore only interdependent phantom creations; and it was precisely this interdependence that proved the essencelessness of their natures. There was no basis of truth anywhere. There was nothing which had any essence. But neither Sankara nor Gaudapada appears to have tried to show why the inner world of thoughts, ideas, emotions, volitions and the outer world of objects should be considered as being illusory appearances.

¹ Sankara's commentary on Gaudapāda's Kārikā, 11. 1-12.

² Na hi nirāspadā rajju-sarpa-mrgatrsnikādayah kvacit upalabhyante. Ibid. 1. 6.

Their main point seems to consist in a dogmatic statement that all appearances or experiences are false just as dream experiences are false. The imperfect analogy of waking experiences is made into an argument, and the entire manifold of appearances is declared to be false. But it is urged at the same time that these false creations must have some basis of truth; the changing appearances must have some unchanging basis on which they are imposed—and this basis is the self (ātman), or Brahman, which is the only thing that is permanent, unchanging and real. This self is the being of pure intelligence, which is one identical unit, negating all differences and duality (viśuddha-vijñapti-mātra-sattādvaya-rūpena)1. Just as the false creation of "snake" appears in the case of the "rope," so all such judgments as "I am happy," "I am unhappy," "I am ignorant," "I am born," "I am old," "I am with a body," "I perceive," etc., are all merely false predications associated with the self; they are all false, changing and illusory predications, and it is only the self which remains permanent through all such judgments. The self is entirely different from all such predications; it is self-luminous and self-manifesting, shining independently by itself.

By applying the dialectic of mutual interdependence, pratītyasamutpāda, Nāgārjuna tried to prove that there was nothing which could be pointed out as the essence of anything as it is; but he did not explain how the appearances which were nothing more than phantom creations came to be what they were. How did the world-appearance of essenceless interdependent phenomena show itself? Sankara did not try to prove with a keen logical dialectic that the world-appearance was false: he simply took it for granted, since the Upanisads proclaimed Brahman as the ultimate reality. But how did the world-appearance manifest itself? Sankara does not seem to go deeply into this question and simply passes it over in asserting that this world-appearance is all due to ignorance (avidyā); it could not be spoken of as either existing or non-existing; it was merely illusory, like the conch-shell silver. But Padmapāda, who wrote the commentary known as Pañca-pādikā on the first four sūtras of Śankara's commentary on the Brahmasūtras, says that the precise meaning of the term "false conception" (mithyā-jñāna) in Śankara's introduction to his commentary on the Brahma-sūtras is that there is a force or power or potency (śakti) of

¹ Gaudapāda's Kārikā, 11. 17.

nescience which constitutes materiality (jadātmikā avidyā-śaktih), and that it is this potency which transforms itself into the stuff (upādāna) of the world-appearance¹. It is well to remember in this connection that, according to Sankara's philosophy, it is not only the objective world that constitutes the world of appearance, but also the subjective world of all experiences and predicates that may be associated with the self. Thus, when one says "I," this ego-hood is analysed as involving two parts -- the one, pure intelligence or pure consciousness; and the other, the concept of subjectivity, which is illuminated, expressed or manifested by the underlying pure intelligence with which it is falsely associated. The concept of subjectivity stands here as materiality, or objectivity, which is made to float up by the power of pure intelligence, thus causing the judgment "I am" or "I am a man2." This avidyā-śakti, or power of avidyā, subsists in the pure self and, on the one hand, arrests the revelation of its true nature as Brahman, and, on the other hand, transforms itself into the various concepts associated with the psychological self of our ordinary experience3. The illusion consists in the association of the psychological qualities of thinking, feeling, willing, etc. with the transcendent or universal self (pratyak-citi). These psychological determinations are all mutually connected with one another. Thus, to be able to enjoy pleasures, one must first act; one can only act when one has attachments, antipathies and desires, and one can have attachments and desires only when one has experienced joys and sorrows—so these psychological determinations in a beginningless cycle are always naturally associated with the transcendent self-luminous self4.

It should be clear from the foregoing discussion that, as Padmapāda or Prakāśātman explains, ajñāna or nescience is some kind of indefinable stuff out of the transformations of which subjective psychological experiences and the world of objects have come into being. This ajñāna is not the ajñāna of the Buddhists. i.e. a wrong notion or misconception, and this adhyāsa, or illusion,

Pañca-pādikā, p. 4, the Vizianagram Sanskrit Series, 1891.
 asmat-pratyaye yo'nidam-amsas cid-eka-rasah tasmims tad-bala-nirbhāsitatayā lakşaņato yuşmad-arthasya manuşyābhimānasya sambhedaivāvabhāsah sa eva adhyāsah. Ibid. p. 3.

³ atah sā pratyak-citi brahma-svarūpāvabhāsam pratibadhnāti ahamkārādy-atad-rūpa-pratibhāsa-nimittam ca bhavati. Ibid. p. 5.

⁴ Prakāśātman's Pañca-pādikā-vivaraņa, p. 10, the Vizianagram Sanskrit Series, 1892.

is not the viparvaya of Nāgārjuna; for here it is a positive power or stuff. Thus Prakāśātman argues that all effects have at their back some cause, which forms their stuff or material; the worldappearance, being also an effect, must have some stuff out of which it has evolved or was made up; and ajñāna, lying in the transcendent self as a separate power, is such a material cause1. This avidyā-potency in the transcendent self is positive in its nature. This positive ajñāna is directly perceived in such immediate perceptions as "I do not know myself or others," and can also be inferred or comprehended by implication2. The fact that ajñāna or avidvā is spoken of as a power inherent in the transcendent self shows that it is dependent thereon; avidvā is not, however, a power, but a substance or entity which has certain powers by which it transforms itself into the cosmic appearances, subjective and objective; yet it is called a power, or śakti, because of its dependence (para-tantratā) on the transcendent self, and it is in consideration of the entire dependence of avidyā and its transformations on the self that the self is regarded as the material cause of all effects the cosmic appearances of the world and the mind3. The self thus not only holds the ajñāna within it as a dependent function, but in spite of its self-luminosity it can be reacted upon by the ajñāna with its manifold powers in such a way that it can be veiled by this ajñāna and made the underlying basis of all worldappearances of aiñāna-transformations4.

Appaya Dīkṣita, referring in his Siddhānta-leśa to the view of the writer of the Padārtha-tattva, summarizes the matter thus: Brahman and Māyā form together the material cause (ubhayam upādānam), and hence it is that in the world-appearance there are two distinct characteristics, "being" (sattā) from Brahman and materiality (jāḍya) from Māyā. Brahman is the cause, as the unchanging basis of the Māyā, which is the cause as being the

¹ sarvam ca kāryam sopādānam bhāva-kāryatvāt ghaţādivad ity anumānāt ...tasmān mithyārtha-taj-jñānātmakam mithyā-bhūtam adhyāsam upādānakāram-sāpekşam...mithyā-jñānam eva adhyāsopādānam. Pañca-pādikā-vivarana, pp. 11-12.

² Ibid. p. 13.

³ śaktir ity ātma-para-tantratayā ātmanah sarva-kāryopādānasya nirvodhrtvam. Ibid. p. 13. Ātma-kāranatva-nirvodhrtvād ātma-para-tantratvā ca śaktimatyām api śakti-śabda upacāritah. Akhandānanda Muni's Tattva-dīpana, p. 65, Chowkhambā Sanskrit Book Depot, Benares, 1902.

⁴ atah svaprakāše 'pi ātmani vicitra-sakti-bhāva-rūpāvidyā-prayuktam āva-raṇam durapahnavam. Rāmānanda Sarasvati's Vivaraṇopanyāsa, p. 16, Chow-khambā Sanskrit Book Depot, Benares, 1901.

stuff that actually undergoes transformation¹. Vācaspati Miśra also conceives Brahman, jointly with its avidya, to be the material cause of the world (avidyā-sahita-bruhmopādānan.)2. In his adoration hymn at the beginning of his Bhāmatī he describes Brahman as being in association with its companion, the indefinable avidya, the unchanging cause of the entire objective universe³. Sarva jñātma Muni, however, does not wish to give mu vā the same degree of co-operation in the production of the world-appearance as Brahman, and considers the latter to be the teal material cause of the world through the instrumentality of Māyā; for Brahman, being absolutely changeless, cannot by itself be considered as cause, so that, when Brahman is spoken of as cause, this can only be in a remote and modified sense (upalaksana), through the instrumentality of māyā1. The author of the Siddhānta-muktāvalī is referred to by Appaya Diksita as holding that it is the māyā and māyā alone that forms the stuff of the world-appearance; and that Brahman is not in any way the material cause of the universe, but that it is only the basis of the subsistence of $m\bar{a}v\bar{a}$ and is only from that point of view spoken of as being the material cause⁵.

It is clear that the above differences of view regarding the nature of the relation between $m\bar{a}v\bar{a}$ and the self or Brahman in the production of the world-appearance are mere scholastic disputes over words or modes of expression, and have but little philosophical significance. As has already been said, these questions do not seem to have arisen in Sankara's mind. He did not think it worth while to explain anything definitely regarding the nature of avidyā and its relation with Brahman, and the part that it played in supplying the material stuff of the universe. The world was an illusion, and Brahman was the basis of truth on which these illusions appeared; for even illusions required something on which they could appear. He never faced squarely the difficulties that are naturally connected with the theory, and was not therefore concerned to explain the definite relation of māyā to Brahman in connection with the production of the phantom show of the universe. The natural objection against such views is that the term

¹ Siddhānta-leśa, p. 12, V.S. Series, 1890.

² Bhāmatī on Sankara's Bhāṣya, 1. 1. 2, Nirṇaya-Sāgara Press, 1904.

⁷ Anirvācyāvidyā-dvitaya-sacivasya prabhavato vivartā yasyaite viyad-anilatejob-avanayah, ibid. p. 1.

¹ Samksepa-śārtraka, 1. 333, 334, Bhāū Sāstrī's edition.

⁵ Siddhānta-leśa, p. 13, V.S. Series, 1890.

 $avidv\bar{a}$ (formed by compounding the negative particle a and vidvā "knowledge") may mean either absence of knowledge (vidvābhāvah) or false knowledge (mithyā-jñānam); and in neither of these meanings can it be supposed to behave as the material cause or substance-stuff of anything; for a false knowledge cannot be a substance out of which other things are made¹. The answer given by Anandabodha Bhattaraka to such an objection is that this avidva is not a psychological ignorance, but a special technical category, which is beginningless and indefinable (anādy-anirvācyāvidyāśravanāt). The acceptance of such a category is a hypothesis which one is justified in holding as valid, since it explains the facts. Effects must have some cause behind them, and a mere instrumental cause cannot explain the origination of the substratum of the effect; again, effects which are not true cannot have for their material cause (upādāna-kārana) that which is true, nor can they have for their material cause that which is absolutely non-existent. So, since the material cause of the world can neither be true nor he anything which is absolutely non-existent, the hypothesis is naturally forced upon the Vedantists that the material cause of this false world-appearance is an entity which is neither existent nor non-existent2. Ānandabodha in his Pramāna-mālā quotes approvingly from the Brahma-tattva-samīksā of Vācaspati to show that avidyā is called avidyā or nescience because it is a hypothetic category which is neither "is" nor "is not," and is therefore unintelligible; avidyā signifies particularly the unintelligibility of this category3. Anandabodha points out that the acceptance of avidyā is merely the logical consequence of indicating some possible cause of the world-appearance—considering the nature of the world-appearance as it is, its cause can only be something which neither is nor is not; but what we understand by such a category, we cannot say; it is plainly unintelligible; the logical requirements of such a category merely indicate that that which is the material cause of this false world-appearance cannot be regarded either as existing or as non-existing; but this does not

¹ avidyā hi vidyābhavo mithyā-jñānan vā na cobhayam kasya cit samavāyikāranam adravyatvāt. Ānandabodha's Nyāya-makaranda, p. 122, Chowkhambā Sanskrit Book Depot, Benares, 1901.
² Ibid. pp. 122-124.

³ sad-asad-ubhayānubhayādi-prakāraiḥ anirvacanīyatvam eva hy avidyānām avidyātvam. Brahma-tattva-samīkṣā as quoted in Pramāṇa-mālā, p. 10, Chow-khambā Sanskrit Book Depot, Benares, 1967.

make this concept either intelligible or consiste t^1 . The concept of $avidy\bar{a}$ is thus plainly unintelligible and inconsistent.

Thought and its Object in Buddhism and in Vedanta.

The Vedanta takes a twofold view of things . the first view refers to ultimate reality and the second to appearance. This ultimate reality is pure intelligence, as identical with pure bliss and pure being. This is called ultimately real in the sense that it is regarded as changeless. By pure intelligence the Vedanta does not mean the ordinary cognitional states; for these have a subjective and an objective content which are extraneous to them. This pure intelligence is pure immediacy, identical with the fact of revelation found in all our conscious states. Our apprehensions of objects are in some sense events involving both a subjective and an objective content; but their special feature in every case is a revelatory inwardness or immediacy which is non-temporal and changeless. The fact that we see, hear, feel, touch, think, remember is equivalent to saying that there are various kinds of cognizings. But what is the nature of this cognizing? Is it an act or a fact? When I see a blue colour, there is a blue object, there is a peculiar revelation of an appearance as blue and a revelation of the "I" as perceiver. The revelation is such that it is both a revelation of a certain character as blue and of a certain thing called the blue object. When a revelation occurs in perception, it is one and it reveals both the object and its appearance in a certain character as blue. The revelation is not the product of a certain relation which happens to subsist at any time between the character-appearance and the object; for both the characterappearance as blue and the object are given in revelation. The revelation is self-evident and stands unique by itself. Whether I see, or hear, or feel, or change, the fact remains that there is some sort of an awareness which does not change. Awareness is ever present by itself and does not undergo the changes that its contents undergo. I may remember that I had seen a blue object five minutes previously; but, when I do this, what I perceive is the image of a blue object, with certain temporal and spatial relations, which arises or

¹ Vailakşanya-vāco-yuktir hi pratiyogi-mrūpanād yauktikatva-prakaţana-phalā na tv evam-rūpatāyāḥ sāmañjasya-sampādanāya ity avocāma. Pramāna-mālā, p. 10.

becomes revealed; but the revelation itself cannot be revealed again. I may be conscious, but I cannot be conscious of consciousness. For consciousness as such, though ever present in its immediacy, cannot become an object of any other consciousness. There cannot be any such thing as the awareness of an awareness or the awareness of the awareness of an awareness, though we may multiply such phrases in language at our pleasure. When I remember that I have been to Trinity College this morning, that only means that I have an image of the way across the commons, through Church Street and Trinity Street; my movements through them are temporally pushed backward, but all this is a revelation as image at the present moment and not a revelation of a past revelation. I cannot say that this present image in any way reveals that particular image as the object of the present revelation. But the former revelation could not be held to be distinct from the present one; for distinction is always based on content and not on revelation. Revelation as such is identical and, since this is so, one revelation cannot be the object of another. It is incorrect to say that "A is A" means that one A becomes itself over again. It is owing to the limitations of grammatical terminology that identity is thus described. Identity thus understood is different from what we understand by identity as a relation. Identity understood as a relation presupposes some difference or otherness and thus is not self-contained. And it is because it is not self-contained that it can be called a relation. When it is said that A is identical with A. it means that on all the various occasions or contents in which A appeared it always signified the same thing, or that it had the same shape or that it was the same first letter of the English alphabet. Identity in this sense is a function of thought not existing by itself, but in relation to a sense of opponency or otherness. But revelation has no otherness in it; it is absolutely ubiquitous and homogeneous. But the identity of revelation of which we are speaking does not mean that the revelation signifies the same thing amidst a diversity of contents: it is simply the one essence identical in itself and devoid of any numerical or other kinds of difference. It is absolutely free from "now" and "then," "here" and "there," "such" or "not such" and "this" or "that." Consciousness of the self-shining self taken in this way cannot be regarded as the relation of an appearance to an object, but it is the fact of the revelation or the entity of the self. If we conceive of revelation in this way, it is an error to make any distinction in revelation as the revelation of the past or the revelation of the present moment. For moments are revealed as objects are revealed; they do not constitute revelation or form any part of it. This revelation is identical with the self-shiring self to which everything else has to be related in order to be known.

"Is cognizing an act or a fact?" Before this can be answered the point to be made clear is what is meant by cognizing. If we ignore the aspect of revelation and speak of mental states which can be looked at from the point of view of temporal or qualitative change of character, we must speak of them as acts or events. If we look at any mental state as possessing certain characters and relations to its objects, we have to speak of these aspects. But, if we look at cognizing from the point of view of its ultimate truth and reality as revelation, we cannot call it either an act or a fact; for, as revelation, it is unique and unchangeable in itself. All relations and characters are revealed in it, it is self-evident and is at once in and beyond them all. Whether we dream or wake. whether we experience an illusion or a truth, revelation is always there. When we look at our mental states, we find that they are always changing, but this is so only with reference to the contents. Apart from this there is a continuity in our conscious life. By this continuity the Vedanta apprehends not any sort of coherence in our ideas, but the fact of the permanence of revelation. It may be asked what remains of revelation, if the mental states are taken away. This question is not admissible; for the mental states do not form part of revelation; they are rendered conscious by coming into relation with revelation. This category is the ultimate reality. It is not self or subject in the sense in which self or ego is ordinarily understood. For what is ordinarily understood as the ego or the "I" is as much a content of the perception of the moment as any other objective content. It is not impossible that any particular objective content may be revealed at any time without the corresponding "I perceive" being explicitly revealed at the same time. The notion of ego or "I" does not refer to an everlasting abiding independent self or person; for this notion is as changing as any other objective content. The "I" has no definite real content as referring to an existing entity, but is only a particular mode of mind which is often associated, as a relatively abiding content, with other changing contents of the

mind. As such, it is as changeable as is any other object. "I know this" only means that there is a revelation which at one sweep reveals both the "this" and the "I." So far as the revelation appears as revealing the "this" and the "I," it is manifested in a subjective mental state having a particular conscious centre different from other similar centres. But, since revelation cannot in reality be individuated, all that we may say about "I" or "mine," "thou" or "thine," falls outside it. They are all contents, having some indefinite existence of their own and revealed by this principle of revelation under certain conditions. This principle of revelation thus has a reality in quite a different sense from that which is used to designate the existence of any other object. All other objects are dependent upon this principle of revelation for their manifestation, and their nature or essence, out of connection with it, cannot be defined or described. They are not self-evident, but are only expressed by coming into some sort of relation with this principle. We have already seen that this principle cannot be either subjective or objective. For all considerations of subject or object fall outside it and do not in any way qualify it, but are only revealed by it. There are thus two principles, the principle of revelation and all that which is revealed by it. The principle of revelation is one; for there is nothing else like it; it alone is real in the highest and truest sense. It is absolute in the sense that there is no growth, decay, evolution or change in it, and it is perfectly complete in itself. It is infinite in the sense that no finitude can form part of it, though through it all finitude is being constantly revealed. It is all-pervading in the sense that no spatial or temporal limits can be said to affect it in any way, though all these are being constantly revealed by it. It is neither in my head nor in my body nor in the space before me; but yet there is nowhere that it is not. It has sometimes been designated as the "Self" or ātman, but only in the sense of denoting its nature as the supreme essence and transcendent reality of allthe Brahman.

Apart from this principle of revelation, all else is constituted of a substanceless indefinable stuff called $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$. In some schools of Śańkara Vedānta it is said that all is pure and simple illusion, that things exist only when they are perceived and dissolve into nothingness as soon as we cease to perceive them; this school has been designated the *Dṛṣṭi-ṣṛṣṭi* school, a doctrine which has been

2

briefly explained in the tenth chapter of the present work¹. One of the most important texts of this school is the Siddhānta-muktāvalī by Prakāśānanda². Prakāśānanda seems to have taken his inspiration from the Yoga-vāsistha, and he denied the existence of things when they are not perceived (ajñāta-sattvānabhyupagana). He tried to show that there were no grounds for holding that external objects existed even when they were not perceived or that external objects had a reality independent of their perceptions. Examining the capacity of perception as a proof to establish this difference between perception and its object, he argued that, since the difference between the awareness and its object was a quality of the awareness, the awareness itself was not competent to grasp this quality in the object, as it was one of the constituents of the complex quality involving a difference of the awareness and its object; to assert the contrary would be a fallacy of self-dependence (ātmāśrayatva). If the apprehended difference is a complex, such as "differencebetween-awareness-and-its-object," and if this complex is a quality which is apprehended as existing in the object, it has to be assumed that, in order that the nature of awareness may be realized, vindicated or established, it must depend upon itself involved as a constituent in the complex "difference-between-awareness-and-itsobject" directly and immediately-which comes to the same thing as saying that awareness becomes aware of itself by being aware of itself; this is impossible and is called the logical fallacy of self-

¹ A History of Indian Philosophy, vol. 1. pp. 477-478, by S. N. Dasgupta, published by the Cambridge University Press, 1922.

² Prakāśānanda refers to the arguments of Prakāśātman's (A.D. 1200) Pañcapādikā-vivaraņa and Sarvajñātma Muni's (A.D. 900) Samkşepa-sārīraka and refers approvingly to Sureśvara, the author of the Naiskarmya-siddhi. Appaya Diksita (A.D. 1620) refers to Prakāsānandain his Siddhānta-leša (pp. 13,72). Nānā Dīksita, a follower of the school of Prakāśānanda and author of the Siddhānta-dīpikā, in a commentary on the Siddhanta-muktavali, gives a list of Vedanta teachers. In this list he mentions the names of Prakāsanubhavananda, Nrsimha and Raghavendra Yati. Venis thinks (see The Pandit, 1890, pp. 487-490) that Prakāśānubhava is the same as Prakāśātman and Nṛsiṃha the same as Nṛsiṃhāśrama Muni, who is said to have converted Appaya Diksita to Sankara Vedanta, and thinks that Prakāśānanda lived in the last quarter of the sixteenth century, being wedged in between Nrsimha and Appaya. Though it would be difficult to settle his time so precisely and definitely, yet it would not be wrong to suppose that he lived some time towards the latter half of the sixteenth century. Prakāśānanda's doctrine of Drsti-srsti is apparently unknown to the earlier Vedantic works and even the Vedānta-paribhāṣā, a work of the early sixteenth century, does not seem to be aware of him, and it appears that the earliest mention of his name can be traced only to Appaya, who lived in the sixteenth and the seventeenth centuries. Prakāśānanda may thus be believed to have lived in the latter half of the sixteenth century.

dependence1. If it is held that the complex quality ("differenceof-awareness-from-the-object") is directly perceived in the object through the senses, then it has to be assumed that the said complex quality existed in the object even before the production of the awareness, and this would involve the impossible supposition that the complex quality of which the awareness was a constituent was already present even before such an awareness had already come into being. If perception or direct awareness cannot be said to prove the difference between the awareness and its object, there can be no inference which may be supposed to do it. For such an inference has to take form thus-"the object is different from its own awareness, because it is associated with entirely different kinds of qualities or characteristics2." But how could it be known that the object has qualities of an entirely different character from its awareness, since a difference between an awareness and its object was contested and could not be proved by perception or any other means? Prakāśānanda further says that the argument by implication (arthapatti), that awareness involves the acceptance of something different from the awareness of which the awareness is affirmed, because there cannot be any knowledge without a corresponding object, is invalid. In proving the invalidity of the supposition that knowledge necessarily implies an object, Prakāśānanda raises the question whether such an implication of an object as conditioning knowledge refers to the production (utpatti) of knowledge, its persistence (sthiti) or its secondary cognition. As regards the first alternative Prakāśānanda says that according to the Vedanta consciousness is ever-existent and is never a product; and, even if it is regarded as a product, the process of cognition can itself be regarded as a sufficient cause for its production. It can by no means be urged that the presence of an external object is in all cases necessary for the production of knowledge; for, though it is arguable that in perception an object is necessary, no one will suggest that an external object is to be considered necessary in the production of inferential knowledge-a fact which shows that the presence of an external object is not indispensable for the production of knowledge as such. As regards the persistence of knowledge it is said

¹ Siddhānta-muktāvalī, as printed in the Pandit, 1889, pp. 247-249.
² vimato viṣayaḥ sva-viṣaya-jñānād bhidyate tad-viruddha-dharmāśrayatvāt. Ibid. p. 252.

that awareness has not the object that it knows for its locus or substance (āśraya), in such a way that the absence of the object, as apart from the awareness, would make it impossible for the awareness to persist; and, if knowledge is supposed to be persisting in anything, that something would not be a cognized object, but the cognizer itself—as in the Nyāya view, where knowledge is regarded as an attribute of the self and the self is then regarded as the substance or locus (āśraya) of knowledge. Since again cognition and its object do not exist in the same space or in the same time (this is proved by the possibility of our knowing a past or a future object), there cannot be any such concomitance between the two that it would be right for any one to infer the external presence of an object because of there being a subjective cognition or awareness. So he argues that there is no proof that cognition and cognized objects are different.

In the above account of Prakāśānanda's views it is clear that he does not attempt to give any positive proof in support of his thesis that the world-appearance and all objects contained in it have no existence while they are not perceived or that the being of all objects cognized is their percipi. He only tries to show that it cannot be logically established that awareness of blue and blue are two different objects; or, in other words, that it cannot be proved that the cognized object is different from its cognition. It could not legitimately be held that awareness (pratiti) was different from its object (pratyetavya). The whole universe, as we perceive it, is nothing but cognition without there being any object corresponding to it. As dreams are nothing but mere awareness, without there being any real objects behind them which manifest themselves in different ways of awareness and their objects, so also is the world of awaking consciousness¹. The world has thus no independent substratum, but is mere cognition or mere awareness (vijñāna-mātra or bhāva-mātra).

This scheme of Vedānta philosophy is surprisingly similar to the idealism of Vasubandhu (A.D. 280-360), as taught in his *Vimšatikā* with a short commentary of his own and in his *Trimšikā* with a commentary by Sthiramati². According to this idealism

pratyetavya-pratityoś ca bhedah prāmāṇikah kutah pratiti-mātram evaitad bhāti vitvom carācaram jūāna-jūeya-prabhedena yathā svāpnam pratiyate vijūāna-mātram evaitat tathā jāgrac carācaram.

Siddhānta-muktāvalī, p.258.
² Vijnapti-mātratā-siddhi, containing two treatises, Viņšatikā and Trimšikā,

(vijùāna-vāda) of Vasubandhu all appearances are but transformations of the principle of consciousness by its inherent movement, and none of our cognitions are produced by any external objects which to us seem to be existing outside of us and generating our ideas. Just as in dreams one experiences different objects at different places and countries without there being any objective existence of them, or as in dreams many people may come together and perform various actions, so what seems to be a real world of facts and external objects may well be explained as a mere creation of the principle of intelligence without any objective basis at all. All that we know as subjective or objective is mere ideation (viiñapti) and there is no substantive reality, or entity corresponding to it; but that does not mean that pure non-conceptual (anabhilapyenātmanā) thought, which the saints realize, is also false¹. It is possible that the awareness of anything may become the object of a further awareness, and that of another; but in all such cases where the awarenesses are significant (arthavatī) there is no entity or reality represented by them; this, however, should not be interpreted as a denial of the principle of intelligence or pure knowledge as such. Vasubandhu then undertakes to show that the perceptual evidence of the existence of the objective world cannot be trusted. He says that, taking visual perception as an example, we may ask ourselves if the objects of the visual perception are one as a whole or many as atoms. They cannot be mere wholes, since wholes would imply parts; they cannot be of the nature of atoms, since such atoms are not separately perceived; they cannot be of the nature of combinations of atoms, since the existence of atoms cannot be proved². For, if six atoms combine from six sides. that implies that the atoms have parts; if however six atoms combine with one another at one identical point, that would mean that the combined group would not have a size larger than that of one atom and would therefore be invisible. Again, if the objects of awareness and perception were only wholes, then succession and sequence would be inexplicable, and our perception of separate and distinct things would remain unaccountable. So they have

Paris, 1925. It seems probable that Vasubandhu flourished in A.D. 280-360 rather than in A.D. 420-500 as held by me in the first volume of the present work. See B. Bhattacharya's foreword to the *Tattva-samgraha*.

¹ yo balair dhārmānām svabhāvo grāhya-grāhakādih parikalpitah tena kalpitenātmanā teṣām nairātmyam na tv anabhilāpyenātmanā yo buddhānām viṣaya iti. Commentary on Viṃsatikā, p. 6.

² Nāpi te samhatā visayī-bhavanti, yasmāt paramāņur ekam dravyam na sidhyati. Ibid. p. 7.

no real objective existence, though perception leads us to believe that they have. People are dreaming of the world of objects in the sleep of the sub-conscious habit of false imaginative construction (vitatha-vikalpābhyāsa-vāsanā-nidrayā), and in their dreams they construct the objective world; it is only when they become awake with the transcendent indeterminate knowledge (lokottaranirvikalpa-jñāna-lābhāt brubuddho bhavati) that they find the world-construction to be as false as the dream-construction of diverse appearances. In such a view there is no objective material world, and our cognitions are not influenced by external objects; how then are our minds influenced by good instructions and associations? and, since none of us have any real physical bodies, how can one kill another? Vasubandhu explains this by the theory that the thought-currents of one person can sometimes determine the thought-currents of another. Thus the idea of killing of a certain type may produce such a disturbance of the vital powers of another as to produce a cessation of the continuity of the thought-processes, which is called death1. So also the good ideas of one may influence the ideas of another for good.

In the Trimśikā of Vasubandhu and its commentary by Sthiramati this idealism is more clearly explained. It is said that both the soul (or the knower) and all that it knows as subjective ideas or as external objects existing outside of us are but transformations of pure intelligence (vijñāna-pariṇāma). The transformation (pariṇāma) of pure intelligence means the production of an effect different from that of the causal moment simultaneously with the cessation of the causal moment². There is neither externality nor subjectivity in pure intelligence, but these are imposed upon it (vijnana-svarūpe parikalpita eva ātmā dharmās ca). All erroneous impositions imply that there must be some entity which is mistaken for something else; there cannot be erroneous impositions on mere vacuity; so it has to be admitted that these erroneous impositions of various kinds of external characteristics, self, etc. have been made upon the transformations of pure intelligence³. Both Vasubandhu and Sthiramati repudiate the suggestion of those extreme idealists who

¹ para-vijñapti-viśeṣādhipatyāt pareṣām jivitendriya-virodhini kācit vikriyā utpadyate yayā sabhāga-santati-vicchedākhyam n:aranam bhavati. Commentary on Vimśatikā, p. 10.

² kāraņa-kṣaṇa-nirodha-sama-kālah kārana-kṣaṇa-vilakṣaṇa-kāryaṣya ātma-lābhah parināmah. Sthiramati's commentary on Trimśikā, p. 16.

³ upacārasya ca nirādhārasyāsambhavād avašyam vijāāna-parināmo vastuto 'sty upagantavyo yatra ātma-dharmopacārah pravartate. Ibid. Compace Sankara's commentary on Gaudapāda's Kārikā, "na hi nirāspadā mrgatrşnikādayah."

deny also the reality of pure intelligence on grounds of interdependence or relativity (samvrti)1. Vasubandhu holds that pure consciousness (vijñapti-mātratā) is the ultimate reality. This ultimate consciousness is a permanent entity, which by its inherent power (śakti) undergoes threefold transformations as the inherent indeterminate inner change (vipāka), which again produces the two other kinds of transformations as the inner psychoses of mental operations (manana) and as the perception of the so-called external sensibles (visaya-vijñapti). The apprehension of all appearances or characterized entities (dharma) as cognized objects and that of selves as cognizers, the duality of perceivers and the perceived, are due to the threefold transformations of vipāka, manana and visava-vijnapti. The ultimate consciousness (vijnapti-mātra) which suffers all these modifications is called alaya-vijnana in its modified transformations, because it is the repository of all experiences. The ultimate principle of consciousness is regarded as absolutely permanent in itself and is consequently also of the nature of pure happiness (sukha); for what is not eternal is painful, and this, being eternal, is happy². When a saint's mind becomes fixed (pratisthita) in this pure consciousness (vijñapti-mātra), the tendency to dual thought of the subjective and the objective (grāhya-grāhakānuśaya) ceases and there dawns the pure indeterminate (nir-vikalpa) and transcendent (lokottara) consciousness. It is a state in which the ultimate pure consciousness returns from its transformations and rests in itself. It is divested of all afflictions (kleśa) or touch of vicious tendencies and is therefore called anasrava. It is unthinkable and undemonstrable, because it is, on the one hand, pure self-consciousness (pratyātma-vedya) and omniscience (sarvajnatā), as it is divested of all limitations (avarana), and, on the other hand, it is unique in itself³. This pure consciousness is called the container of the seed of all (sarva-bija), and, when its first indeterminate and indefinable transformations rouse the psychosis-transformations and

nayā kleśa-jñeyāvaraṇa-prahāṇāt...sarva-dharma-vibhutva-lābhataś ca dharma-kāya ity ucyate). Ibid,

¹ Thus Lankāvatāra, one of the most important works on Buddhistic idealism, denies the real transformation of the pure intelligence or ālaya-vijñāna. See Lankāvatāra, p. 46, published by the Otani University Press, Kyoto, 1923.

² dhruvo nityatvād akṣayatayā; sukho nityatvād eva yad anityam tad duḥkham

ayam ca nitva iti asmāt sukhah. Sthiramati's commentary on Trimśikā, p. 44.

³ Ālaya-vijāāna in this ultimate state of pure consciousness (vijāapti-mātratā) is called the cause (dhātu) of all virtues, and, being the ultimate state in which the dharmas or characterized appearances have lost all their limitations it is called the dharma-kāya of the Buddha (mahā-munh bhūmi-pāramitādi-bhāva-

also the transformations as sense-perceptions, these mutually act and react against one another, and thus the different series rise again and again and mutually determine one another. These transformations are like waves and ripples on the occan, where each is as much the product of others as well as the generator of others.

In this view thought (vijñāna) is regarded as a real substance, and its transformations are also regarded as real; and it is these transformations that are manifested as the selves and the characterized appearances². The first type of transformations, called vipāka, is in a way the ground of the other two transformations, which contain the indeterminate materials out of which the manifestations of the other two transformations appear. But, as has already been pointed out, these three different types of transformations again mutually determine one another. The vipāka transformations contain within them the seeds of the constructive instincts (vikalpa-vāsanā) of the selves as cognizers, the constructive instincts of colours, sounds, etc., the substantive basis (āśraya) of the attribution of these twofold constructive instincts, as well as the sense-faculties and the localization of space-determinations (sthāna-vijnapti or bhājana-loka-sanniveśa-vijnapti). They are also associated in another mode with sense-modifications involving the triune of the sense (indriva), sense-object (visaya) and cognition (and each of these triunes is again associated with a characteristic affective tone corresponding to the effective tones of the other two members of the triune in a one-to-one relation), attention (manaskāra), discrimination (samjñā), volition (cetanā) and feeling (vedanā)3. The vipāka transformations have no determinate or limited forms (aparicchinnālambanākāra), and there are here no

¹ tac ca varttate srotasaughavat. Ibid. p. 21.

² avasyam vijñāna-parināmo vastuto'sty upagantavy oyatrātmadharmopacārah pravarttate. Ibid. p. 16.

³ Feeling(vedanā) is distinguished here as painful, pleasurable and as the basic entity which is neither painful nor pleasurable, which is feeling per se (vedanā anubhuxa-svahhāvā sā punar viṣayaṣva āhlādaka-paritāpaka-tadubhaya-kara-vivikta-svarūpa-sākṣātkarana-bhedāt). This feeling per se must be distinguished again from the non-pleasurable-painful feeling existing along with the two other varieties, the painful and the pleasurable. Here the vipāka transformations are regarded as evolving the basic entity of feeling, and it is therefore undifferentiated in it as pleasure or pain and is hence called "feeling as indifference (upekṣā)" and undifferentiated (avyākṛta). The differentiation of feeling as pleasurable or as painful takes place only as a further determination of the basic entity of feeling evolved in the vipāka transformations of good and bad deeds (subhāsubha-karma-vipāka). Good and bad (śubhāśubha) are to be distinguished from moral and immoral as potential and actual determinations of virtuous and vicious actions.

actualized emotional states of attachment, antipathy or the like, which are associated with the actual pleasurable or painful feelings. The vipāka transformations thus give us the basic concept of mind and its principal functions with all the potentialities of determinate subject-object consciousness and its processes. There are here the constructive tendencies of selves as perceivers, the objective constructive tendencies of colours, sounds, etc., the sense-faculties, etc., attention, feeling, discrimination, volition and sense-functioning. But none of these have any determinate and actualized forms. The second grade of transformations, called manana, represents the actual evolution of moral and immoral emotions; it is here that the mind is set in motion by the ignorant references to the mental elements as the self, and from this ignorance about the self is engendered self-love (ātma-sneha) and egoism (ātmamāna). These references are again associated with the fivefold universal categories of sense-functioning, feeling, attention, volition and discrimination. Then comes the third grade of transformations, which is associated with the fivefold universal categories together with the special manifestations of concrete senseperceptions and the various kinds of intellectual states and moral and immoral mental states, such as desire (chandah) for different kinds of sense-experiences, decisions (adhimoksa) in conclusions firmly established by perceptions, reasoning, etc., memory, attentive reflection (samādhi), wisdom (prajñā), faith and firm will for the good (śraddhā), shamefulness (hrī) for the bad, etc. The term ālava-viināna is given to all these three types of transformations, but there is underneath it, as the permanent passive ground, the eternal and unchangeable pure thought (viiñapti-mātratā).

It may be pointed out here that in this system of philosophy the eternal and unchangeable thought-substance undergoes by virtue of its inner dynamic three different orders of superficial changes, which are compared to constantly changing streams and waves. The first of these represents the basic change which later determines all subjective and objective possibilities; the second starts the process of the psychosis by the original ignorance and false attribution of self-hood to non-self elements, self-love and egoism; and in the third grade we have all the concrete mental and extra-mental facts. The fundamental categories which make the possibility of mind, mental processes and the extra-mental relations, are evolved in the first stage of transformations; and these

abide through the other two stages of transformations and become more and more complex and concrete in course of their association with the categories of the other transformations. In analysing the knowledge situation Vasubandhu does not hold that our awareness of blue is only a modification of the "awareness," but he thinks that an awareness has always two relations, a relation with the subject or the knower (grāhaka-graha) and a relation with the object which is known (grāhya-graha). Blue as an object is essential for making an awareness of blue possible; for the awareness is not blue, but we have an awareness of the blue. But Vasubandhu argues that this psychological necessity is due to a projection of objectivity as a necessary function of determinate thought, and it does not at all follow that this implies that there are real external objects existing outside of it and generating the awareness as external agent. Psychological objectivity does not imply ontological objectivity. It is argued that, if the agency of objective entities in the production of sense-knowledge be admitted, there could not be any case where sense-knowledge could be admitted to be produced without the operation of the objective entities; but, since in dreams and illusions such sense-knowledge is universally regarded as being produced without the causal operation of such objective entities, no causal operation can be conceded to the objective entities for the production of sense-knowledge.

Sankara, in attempting to refute the Buddhist idealism in his commentary on the *Brahma-sūtra*, II. ii. 28, seems to refer to a school of idealism which is the same as that described by Sāntarakṣita in his *Tattva-saṃgraha* (commented upon by Kamalaśīla), but largely different from that described in Vasubandhu's *Triṃśikā*. The positive arguments against the impossibility of an external world constituted by partless atoms are the same¹. But

¹ Vācaspati, however, in his *Bhāmatī* commentary, II. ii. 28, introduces some new points. He says that spatial extension, as perceived in visual perception, cannot be due to the perception of partless atoms. Nor can it be said that the colour particles produced in uninterrupted succession generate the notion of spatial extension, though there is no spatial extension in the individual atom; for it is not possible that the groups of colour particles are not interrupted by taste, smell and the tactual particles. So it has to be admitted that the colour particles are at some distance from one another and are interrupted by other particles, and that the continuous appearance of colour in spatial distribution is a false appearance, like the appearance of continuous trees from a distance constituting a forest (gandha-rasa-sparsa-paramānv-antaritā hi te rūpa-paramānavo na nirantarāh; tasmād ārāt sāntaresu vṛkṣeṣu eka-ghana-pratyayavad eṣa sthūla-pratyayah paramānusu sāntaresu bkrānta eva).

it is further argued on behalf of the Buddhist idealists that the awareness of a pillar, the awareness of a wall or of a jug or of a piece of cloth, implies that these individual awarenesses are mutually different in nature among themselves; and that consequently the apparent differences among objects are but differences among the ideas; and that therefore the objects are of the same nature as the particular ideas by which we are supposed to know them; and, if that be so, the hypothesis of an external world of objects becomes unnecessary. Moreover the fact that both the idea of the object and the object are taken at one and the same moment proves that both the object and the idea are identical, just as the illusory second moon perceived simultaneously with the moon is identical with it1. When one of them is not perceived the other also is not perceived. If they were by nature separate and different, there would be no reason why there should be such a uniform and invariable relation between them. The reason for the diversity of our ideas is to be sought not in the diversity of external objects which are ordinarily supposed to produce them, but in the beginningless diversity of the instinctive sub-conscious roots (vāsanā) which produce all our ideas in the waking state, just as they produce dreams during sleep; as dreams are admitted by all to be produced without any external objects, so are all ideas produced without any external real objects; for as ideas the dream ideas are just the same as the waking ideas. But in both cases there are the instinctive sub-conscious roots (vāsanā), without which no ideas, whether in the dream state or in the waking state, can be produced; so these, being invariably present in all cases of production of ideas, are the cause of all ideas2.

¹ This simile is adduced by Vācaspati probably from a quotation from Dinnāga—sahopalambha-niyamād abhedo nīla-tad-dhiyoh bhedas ca bhrānti-vijītānair drsyetendāv ivādvaye.

Since both the blue and the idea of the blue are taken at the same moment, they are one and the same; for any two things which are taken simultaneously are identical. As one moon appears as two in an illusory manner, so the difference between the idea and the object is also perceived only illusorily. This argument of sahopalambha-niyama is absent in Vasubandhu's Vimšatikā and Trimšikā.

² Vācaspati summarizes in this connection the inference of the Sautrāntikas for the existence of an external world of objects as the causes of the corresponding ideas. The argument of the Sautrāntikas runs thus: When, the old causes remaining the same, there is a new effect, that new effect must be due to a new cause. Now, though it should be admitted that in the passing series of inner consciousness each particular moment generates the succeeding one, and that this power of productivity is called vāsanā (tat-pravṛtti-vijāāna-janana-śak-

Sankara in refuting the above position says that such a view is untenable because it contradicts our experience, which always distinguishes the subject and the object from the awareness. We are directly aware of our sense-contact with external objects which we perceive, and the object of awareness and the awareness are not one and the same. Our awareness itself shows that it is different from its object. The awareness of a pillar is not the same as a pillar, but a pillar is only an object of the awareness of a pillar. Even in denying external objects, the Buddhist idealists have to say that what is knowable only within appears as if it was existing outside1. Sankara argues thus: if externality is absolutely non-existent, how can any sense-cognition appear as external? Visnumitra cannot appear as the son of a barren woman. Again, the fact that an idea has the same form as its object does not imply that there are no objects; on the other hand, if there were no objects, how could any idea have the same form as its corresponding object? Again, the maxim that any two things which are taken simultaneously are identical is false; for, if the object and its awareness are comprehended at the same moment, the very fact that one is taken along with the other shows that they cannot be identical. Moreover, we find that in all our awarenesses of blue or yellow, a jug or a wall, it is the qualifying or predicative factors of objects of knowledge that differ; awareness as such remains just the same. The objects of knowledge are like so many extraneous qualities attributed to knowledge, just as whiteness or blackness may be attributed to a cow; so whether one perceives blue or red or yellow, that signifies that the difference of perception involves a difference in objects and not in the awareness itself. So the awareness, being one, is naturally different from the objects, which are many; and, since the objects are many,

tir vāsanā), and that its tendency to effectuate itself is called its power of fruition (paripāka), even then it would be difficult to understand how each particular moment should have a power altogether different from other moments; for, since there is nothing else to change the character of the moments, each moment igust as much a moment as any other. So it has to be admitted that there are other things which make one moment different in its power of effectuation from any other; and these are the external objects.

¹ Sankara says yad antar-jñeya-rūpam tad bahirvad avabhāsate. This seems to be a quotation from Dinnāga. Dinnāga's verse, as quoted by Kamalaśila in his commentary on the Tattva-samgraha, verses 2082-2084, runs as follows:

yad antar-jñeya-rūpam tu bahirvad avabhāsate so 'rtho vijñāna-rūpatvāt tat-pratyayatayāpi ca.

This shows that Sankara had Dinnaga in his mind when he attempted to refute the Buddhist idealists.

they are different from the one, the awareness. The awareness is one and it is different from the objects, which are many¹. Moreover, the argument that the appearance of world objects may be explained on the analogy of dreams is also invalid; for there is a great difference between our knowledge of dreams and of worldly objects—dreams are contradicted by the waking experience, but the waking experiences are never found contradicted.

It is curious to note here the contradictions in Sankara's own statements. It has been already pointed out that he himself in his commentary on Gaudapāda's Kārikā built a powerful argument for the non-existence of all objects of waking experience on the analogy of the non-existence of the objects of dream experience. Santarakșita (A.D. 705) and Kamalasīla (A.D. 728) in refuting a position similar to that of the view of Sankara—that consciousness is one and unchangeable and that all objects are changing, but that the change of objects does not imply any change of the consciousness itself -argue that, had this been so, then that would imply that all sensibles of different kinds of colours, sounds, etc. were known at one and the same time, since the consciousness that would reveal those objects is constant and unchangeable². Kamalaśīla therefore holds that consciousness is not unchangeable and one, but that there are only the changeable ideas of the sensibles and each idea is different from the other which follows it in time. Sankara's view that consciousness is only one and that it is only the objects that are many seems to be based on a separation due to an arbitrary abstraction. If the commentary on Gaudapāda's Kārikā be admitted to be a work of Sankara, then it may be urged that Sankara's views had undergone a change when he was writing the commentary on the Brahma-sūtra; for in the commentary on Gaudapāda's Kārikā he seems again and again to emphasize the view that the objects perceived in waking experience are as false and as non-existent as objects of dream experience. His only realism there consisted in the assertion that the world was but the result of a false illusory imposition on the real Brahman, since

¹ dvābhyām ca bheda ekasya siddho bhavati ekasmāc ca dvayoḥ; tasmād artha-jūānayor bhedaḥ. Sankara's Bhāṣya, 11. ii. 28, Nirṇaya-Sāgara Press. Bombay, 1904.

² tad yadi nityaika-jñāna-pratibhāsātmakā amī sabdādayah syus tadā vicitrās-tarana-pratibhāsavat sakrd eva pratibhāsavar; tat-pratibhāsātmakasya jñānasya sarvadā vasthitatvāt. Kamalasila's commentary on the Tattva-sangraha, sl. 331. Gaekwad's Oriental Series, 1926.

Neither Santarakşita nor Kamalasıla seems to be familiar with Sankara.

illusions such as mirage, etc. must have some underlying basis upon which they are imposed. But in the commentary on the *Brahma-sūtra* the world of objects and sensibles is seen to have an existence of some sort outside individual thought. Vācaspati in his *Bhāmatī* commentary distinguishes the position of Saṅkara from that of Buddhist idealism by saying that the Vedānta holds that the "blue" is not an idea of the form of blue, but "the blue" is merely the inexplicable and indefinable object.

In discussing the views of Vasubandhu in the Vimsatikā and Trimśikā it has been pointed out that Vasubandhu did not try to repudiate the objectivity of the objects of awareness, but he repudiated the idea that objects of awareness existed outside of thought and produced the different kinds of awareness. His idea seems to have been that the sensibles are made up of thoughtstuff and, though they are the psychological objects of awareness, they do not exist outside of thought and determine the different ideas that we have of them. But both the sensibles and their ideas are determined by some inner law of thought, which determines the nature and methods of the whole process of the growth and development of the psychosis, and which determines not only its cognitional character, but also its moral and emotional character. All the arguments of Śańkara in which he emphasizes the psychological duality of awareness and its object would have no force against Vasubandhu, as Vasubandhu admits it himself and holds that "blue" (nila) is different from the idea of blue; the blue is an object (ālambana) and the idea of the blue is an awareness. According to him thought splits itself into subject and object; the idea therefore expresses itself as a subject-object awareness. The subject and the object are as much products of thought as the idea itself; the fact that he considers the blue to be thought does not mean that he denies the objectivity of the blue or that the only existence of the blue is the blue-idea. The blue is objectively present before the idea of blue as a presentation, just as there is the subject to perceive it, but this objectivity does not imply that the blue is somewhere outside thought in the space outside; for even space-locations are thought-products, and so there is no sense in attributing the sensibles of presentation to the outside world. The sensibles are objects of awareness, but they are not the excitants

¹ na hi brahma-vādino nīlādyākārām vittim abhyupagacchanti, kintu anir-vacanīyam nīlādīti. Bhāmatī, 11. ii. 28.

of the corresponding awareness. It does not seem that Sankara says anything to refute such a view. Sankara's position in the commentary on Gaudapāda's Kārikā seems to have been the same sort of view as that of Dinnaga, which he takes so much pains to refute in the Brahma-sūtra-bhāsya, and as such it was opposed to the view of Nagarjuna that there must be some essence or reality on which the illusory impositions are made. But in the Brahmasūtra-bhāsva he maintains the view that the objective world, as it appears to our consciousness, is present before it objectively and independently-only its ultimate nature is inexplicable. The difference of the objects from the awareness and their independent existence and activity have been accepted by most of the later Vedanta teachers of the Sankara school; and it is well known that in sense-perception the need of the mind-contact with the object of perception through the specific sense is considered indispensable¹.

Prakāśātman (A.D. 1200) in his Pañca-pādikā-vivarana raises this point and says that the great difference between the Mahāvānists and the Vedantins consists in the fact that the former hold that the objects (visaya) have neither any separate existence nor any independent purpose or action to fulfil as distinguished from the momentary ideas, while the latter hold that, though the objects are in essence identical with the one pure consciousness, yet they can fulfil independent purposes or functions and have separate, abiding and uncontradicted existences². Both Padmapada and Prakasatman argue that, since the awareness remains the same while there is a constant variation of its objects, and therefore that which remains constant (anuvrtta) and that which changes (vyāvrtta) cannot be considered identical, the object cannot be regarded as being only a modification of the idea³. It is suggested that the Buddhist idealist urges that, if the object (e.g. blue) is different from the awareness, it cannot be revealed in it, and, if the blue can be revealed in the awareness, at that moment all the other things of the world might as well be revealed; for there is no such

¹ See Vedānta-paribhāṣā, ch. 1, Śrīvenkateśvar Press, Bombay, 1911.

² tattva-darsinas tu advitīyāt samvedanāt abhede 'pi visayasya bhedenāpi artha-kriyā-sāmarthya-sattvam sthāyitvam cābādhitam astīti vadanti. Pañca-pādikā-vivarana. p. 73. In addition to this work Prakāšātman also wrote two independent commentaries on Brahma-sūtra called Śārīraka-mīmāmsā-nyāya-samgraha and Laukika-nyāya-muktāvali.

³ anuvṛttasya vyāvṛttān na bhedo 'nuvṛttatvād ākāśa-ghaṭādivat. Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa, p. 73.

specific relation with the blue that the blue alone should appear in consciousness at that moment. If it is urged that the blue produces the awareness of the blue, then what would be the function of the visual organ? It is better, therefore, the Buddhist suggests, to admit a natural and unique relation of identity of the idea and the object. The Vedantist objects to this and says that such a supposition cannot be true, since we perceive that the subject. object and the idea are not one and the same. To such an objection the Buddhist is supposed to reply that these three do not form a complex unity, but arise at three successive moments of time, and then by virtue of their potency or root-impression a complex of the three appears; and this complex should not therefore be interpreted as being due to a relationing of three distinct entities². Thus the fact that "I perceive blue" is not to be interpreted as a conscious relationing of "I," "the blue" and the awareness, but as an ideation arising at one particular point of time, involving all the three constituents in it. Such a supposition is necessary, because all appearances are momentary, and because the relationing of the three as three independent entities would necessarily be impossible without the lapse of some time for their operation of relationing. The theory of momentariness naturally leads us to the above supposition, that what appears as relationing is nothing but one momentary flash, which has the above three as its constituent elements; so the Buddhist is supposed to admit that, psychologic-

¹ tasmāt svābhāvikāsādharaņābhedasambandhād eva vijñāne nīlam avabhāsate, Paņca-pādikā-vivaraņa, p. 74.

Arguing from a similar point of view, Sāntarakṣita and Kamalaśīla urge that, if the object was not identical with the awareness, there must be some immutable law why they should appear simultaneously. This law according to the Buddhists could only be either of identity (tādātmya) or of causality as invariability of production (tad-utpatti). The first alternative is what the Buddhists here are contending for as against the Vedāntists. There cannot be the law of causality here; for there cannot be any operation of the law of causality as production between two entities which are simultaneous. Tattva-samgraha and Pañjikā, 2030, 2031.

² tad vāsanā-sameta-samanantcra-pratyaya-samuttham sankalanātmakam pratyayāntaram etan neha sambandhāgamah. Padmapāda's (A.D. 820) Pañca-pādikā, p. 25. This work exerted the greatest influence on the development of Vedāntic thought for about six or seven centuries, and several commentaries were written on it. Most important of these are Prakāšātman's Pañcapādikā-vivaraṇa, Pañca-pādikādhyāsa-bhāsya-vyākhyā, Pañca-pādikā-śāstra-darpaṇa by Amṛtānanda, Tattva-dipana by Amṛtānandanātha, and also a commentary by Anāndapūrņa Yati. Prakāšātman's commentary on it, called Pañcapādikā-vivaraṇa, was commented upon by Akhandānanda Muni in his Tattva-dipana, by Rāmānanda Sarasvatī in his Vivaranopanyāsa, and by Nṛsimhāśrama in his Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa-bhāva-prakāšikā.

ally, the awareness and its object seem to be different, but such a psychological appearance can at best be considered as a mental illusion or fiction; for logically the Buddhist cannot admit that a momentary appearance could subsist long enough to have the possibility of being relationed to the self and the awareness, as in "I know the blue"; and, if the blue was not considered to be identical with awareness, there would remain no way to explain the possibility of the appearance of the blue in the awareness.

Padmapāda points out that the main point with the Buddhists is the doctrine of causal efficiency (artha-kriyā-kāritva), or the maxim that that alone exists which can prove its existence by effecting some purpose or action. They hold further that this criterion of existence can be satisfied only if all existents are momentary and if all things are momentary; the only epistemological view that can consistently be accepted is the identity of the awareness and the object. The main reason why only momentary existents can satisfy the criterion of causal efficiency is that, if the existents were not assumed to be momentary, they could not effect any purpose or action². Padmapāda urges in refutation of this that, if causal efficiency means the productivity of its own awareness (sva-vişayaiñāna-jananam), then an awareness or idea has no existence; for it does not produce any other knowledge of itself (samvidām sva-vişayajñānā-jananād asallakṣanatvam), and the awareness of one cannot be known by others except by inference, which again would not be direct cognition3. If causal efficiency means the production of another moment, then the last moment, having no other moment to produce, would itself be non-existent; and, if the last moment is proved to be non-existent, then by turns all the other moments would be non-existent. Existence is a nature of things; and even when a thing remains silent after an operation it does not on that account cease to exist⁴. On such a basis Prakāśātman points out

¹ nānubhavam āśritya samvedanād abhinnam nīlam brūmah kintu vijñānena nīlasya pratibhāsānyathānupapattya; kṣanikasya tv āgantuka-sambandhābhāve... pratibhāsa eva na syāt. Pañca-pādikā-vivarana, p. 74.

² See the first volume of this work, pp. 163-164, where the reasons in justification of the doctrine are briefly stated.

³ Padmapāda derives the possibility of one's being aware of an awareness, which however hardly appears to be convincing. He thinks that an awareness, being of the nature of light, does not stand in need of any other light to illuminate it. na ca samvit samvido visayah samvid-ātmanā bhedābhāvāt pradīpasyeva pradīpāntaram. Pañca-pādikā, p. 27.

^{*} nārtha-kriyā-kāritva-lakṣaṇaṃ sattvam kintu svābhāvikam iti sakṛt kāryyam kṛtvā tuṣṇīmbhūtasyāpi sthāyinah sattvam na virudhyate. Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa, p. 80.

3

that the supposed three notions of "I," "awareness" and the object are really not three distinct notions appearing as one on account of their similarity, but all the three are joined together in one identical subject-object-awareness which does not involve the three successive stages which the Buddhists suppose. This identity is proved by the fact that they are recognized (pratyabhijñā) to be so. We are, again, all conscious of our own identity, that we persist in all our changing states of consciousness, and that, though our ideas are continually changing with the changing objects, we remain unchanged all the same; and this shows that in knowing ourselves as pure awareness we are successively connected with the changing objects. But the question arises who is to be convinced of this identity, a notion of which can be produced only by a relationing of the previous existence (through sub-conscious impressions of memory) to the existence of the present moment; and this cannot be done by the Vedantic self, which is pure self-revealing consciousness that cannot further be made an object of any other conscious state; for it is unchangeable, indestructible, and there cannot be in it a consciousness of relationing between a past state and a present state through the sub-conscious impressions of memory¹. The mere persistence of the same consciousness is not the recognition of identity; for the recognition of identity would be a relation uniting the past as past with the present as present; and, since there is no one to perceive the relation of identity, the appearance of identity is false. The Vedantic answer to such an objection is that, though the pure consciousness cannot behave as an individual, yet the same consciousness associated with mind (antahkarana-visista) may behave as an individual who can recognize his own identity as well as that of others. The mind is associated with the sub-conscious impressions of a felt ego (ahamvrtti-samskāra-sahitam), due to the experience of the self as associated with a past time; being responsible for the experience of the self as associated with the present time, it produces the notion of the identity of the self as persisting both in the past and in the present. A natural objection against such an explanation is that, since the Vedanta does not admit that one awareness can be the object of another awareness, the revival of a past awareness is

¹ pūrvānubhava-saṃskāra-sahitād idānīṃtana-vastu-pramiti-kāraṇāj jātam ekasya kāla-dvaya-saṃbandha-viṣayakaṃ pratyakṣa-jñānaṃ pratyabhijñā iti cet, na tarhi ātmani sā sambhavati...vijñāna-svabhāvasya hy ātmanaḥ...jñānānta-rāgamyatvāt... Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa, p. 75.

impossible, without which recognition of identity would be impossible. The answer of the Vedantist is that, just as an idea is remembered through its sub-conscious impressions, so, though recognition of identity was absent in the preceding moment, yet it could arise through the operation of the sub-conscious impressions at a later moment¹. According to the Vedanta the pure consciousness is the only unchanging substance underlying; it is this consciousness associated with mind (antahkarana) that behaves as the knower or the subject, and it is the same consciousness associated with the previous and later time that appears as the objective self with which the identity is felt and which is known to be identical with the knower—the mind-associated consciousness. We all have notions of self-identity and we feel it as "I am the same"; and the only way in which this can be explained is on the basis of the fact that consciousness, though one and universal, can yet be supposed to perform diverse functions by virtue of the diverse nature of its associations, by which it seems to transform itself as the knower and the thousand varieties of relations and objects which it knows. The main point which is to be noted in connection with this realization of the identity of the self is that the previous experience and its memory prove that the self existed in the past; but how are we to prove that what existed is also existing at the present moment? Knowledge of identity of the self is something different from the experience of self in the past and in the present. But the process consists in this, that the two experiences manifest the self as one identical entity which persisted through both the experiences, and this new experience makes the self known in the aforesaid relation of identity. Again, when I remember a past experience, it is the self as associated with that experience that is remembered; so it is the self as associated with the different time relations that is apprehended in an experience of the identity of self.

From all these discussions one thing that comes out clearly is that according to the Śańkara Vedānta, as explained by the Vivarana school of Padmapāda and his followers, the sense-data and the objects have an existence independent of their being perceived; and there is also the mind called antaḥkarana, which operates in its own way for the apprehension of this or that object. Are objects already there and presented to the pure consciousness through the

¹ Pañca-pādikā-vivaraņa, p. 76.

mind? But what then are the objects? and the Sankarite's answer is that they in themselves are unspeakable and indescribable. It is easy to notice the difference of such a view from that of the Buddhistic idealism of Dinnaga or the Lankavatara on the one hand and that of Vasubandhu in his Trimsikā on the other. For in the case of the former there were no objects independent of their being perceived, and in the case of the latter the objects are transformations of a thought-principle and are as such objective to the subject which apprehends them. Both the subject and the object are grounded in the higher and superior principle, the principle of thought. This grounding implies that this principle of thought and its transformations are responsible for both the subject and the object, as regards material and also as regards form. According to the Sankara Vedanta, however, the stuff of worldobjects, mind, the senses and all their activities, functionings and the like are but modifications of $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$, which is indescribable (anirvācya) in itself, but which is always related to pure consciousness as its underlying principle, and which in its forms as material objects hides from the view and is made self-conscious by the illuminating flash of the underlying principle of pure consciousness in its forms as intellectual states or ideas. As already described, the Śūnyavādins also admitted the objective existence of all things and appearances; but, as these did not stand the test of criticism, considered them as being essenceless (nihsvabhāva). The only difference that one can make out between this doctrine of essencelessness and the doctrine of indescribableness of the Sankara school is that this "indescribable" is yet regarded as an indescribable something, as some stuff which undergoes changes and which has transformed itself into all the objects of the world. The idealism of the Sankara Vedanta does not believe in the sahopalambha-niyama of the Buddhist idealists, that to exist is to be perceived. The world is there even if it be not perceived by the individual; it has an objective existence quite independent of my ideas and sensations: but, though independent of my sensations or ideas, it is not independent of consciousness, with which it is associated and on which it is dependent. This consciousness is not ordinary psychological thought, but it is the principle that underlies all conscious thought. This pure thought is independent and selfrevealing, because in all conscious thought the consciousness shines by itself; all else is manifested by this consciousness and

when considered apart from it, is inconceivable and unmeaning. This independent and uncontradicted self-shiningness constitutes being $(ab\bar{a}dhita-svayam-prak\bar{a}sataiva\ asya\ satt\bar{a})^1$. All being is pure consciousness, and all appearance hangs on it as something which is expressed by a reference to it and apart from which it has no conceivable status or meaning. This is so not only epistemologically or logically, but also ontologically. The object-forms of the world are there as transformations of the indescribable stuff of $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$, which is not "being," but dependent on "being"; but they can only be expressed when they are reflected in mental states and presented as ideas. Analogies of world objects with dream objects or illusions can therefore be taken only as popular examples to make the conception of $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ popularly intelligible; and this gives the Vedāntic idealism its unique position.

Śańkara's Defence of Vedānta; Philosophy of Bādarāyaņa and Bhartrprapañca.

Śańkara's defensive arguments consisted in the refutation of the objections that may be made against the Vedantic conception of the world. The first objection anticipated is that from the followers of Sāmkhya philosophy. Thus it is urged that the effect must be largely of the same nature as the cause. Brahman, which is believed to be intelligent (cetana) and pure (śuddha), could not be the cause of a world which is unintelligent (jada and acetana) and impure (asuddha). And it is only because the world is so different in nature from the intelligent spirits that it can be useful to them. Two things which are identical in their nature can hardly be of any use to each other—two lamps cannot be illuminating to each other. So it is only by being different from the intelligent spirits that the world can best serve them and exist for them. Sankara's answer to this objection is that it is not true that the effect should in every way be similar to the cause—there are instances of inanimate hair and nails growing from living beings, and of living insects growing out of inanimate objects like cowdung. Nor can it be denied that there is at least some similarity between Brahman and the world in this, that both have being. It cannot be urged that, because Brahman is intelligent, the world also should be intelligent; for there is no reason for such

¹ Vācaspati Miśra's Bhāmatī, p. 13, Nirņaya-Sāgara edition, 1904.

an expectation. The converse of it also has not been found to be true—it has not been found that what is unimelligent has been known to have been derived from a source other than Brahman¹. The whole point of this argument seems to lie in the fact that since the Upanisads assert that Brahman is the cause of the world, the apparent incompatibility of the production of an impure and unintelligent world from the intelligent and pure Brahman has to be explained away; for such ultimate truths can be discovered not by reason, but by the testimony of the Upanisads. Another objection supposed to be raised by Samkhya against Vedanta is that at the time of dissolution (pralaya), when the world of effects will dissolve back into Brahman the cause, the impurities of the worldly state might also make the causal state of Brahmahood impure. Sankara refutes it by pointing out two sets of instances in which the effects do not affect the causal state when they return to it. Of these, one set of instances is to be found in those cases where articles of gold, silver, etc. are melted back into their original material states as unformed gold and silver, and are not seen to affect them with their specific peculiarities as formed articles. The other instance is to be found in the manifestation of magic by a magician. The magical creations of a magician are controlled by him and, when they vanish in this way, they cannot in any way affect the magician himself; for the magical creations have no reality. So also a dreamer is not affected by his dreams when he is awake. So the reality is one which remains altogether untouched by the changing states. The appearance of this reality as all the changing states is mere false show (māyā-mātram), like the appearance of a rope as a snake. Again, as a man may in deep sleep pass into a state where there is no trace of his mundane experiences and may yet, when he becomes awake, resume his normal vocation in life, so after the dissolution of the world into its causal state there may again be the same kind of creation as there was before the dissolution. So there can be no objection that the world of impure effects will affect the pure state of Brahman at the time of dissolution or that there could be no creation after dissolution.

These arguments of Śańkara in answer to a supposed objection

¹ kim hi yac caitanyenānanvitam tad abrahma-prakṛtikam dṛṣṭam ti brahma-vādinam praty udāhriyeta samastasya vastujātasya brahma-prakṛtikatvābhyu-pagamāt. Sankara's Bhāṣya, 11. i. 6.

that the world of effects, impure and unintelligent as it is, could not have been the product of pure and intelligent Brahman are not only weak but rather uncalled for. If the world of effects is mere māyā and magic and has no essence (vastutva), the best course for him was to rush straight to his own view of effects as having no substantiality or essence and not to adopt the parinama view of real transformations of causes into effects to show that the effects could be largely dissimilar from their causes. Had he started with the reply that the effects had no real existence and that they were merely magical creations and a false show, the objection that the impure world could not come out of pure Brahman would have at once fallen to the ground; for such an objection would have validity only with those who believed in the real transformations of effects from causes, and not with a philosopher like Sankara, who did not believe in the reality of effects at all. Instead of doing that he proceeded to give examples of the realistic return of golden articles into gold in order to show that the peculiar defects or other characteristics of the effect cannot affect the purity of the cause. Side by side with this he gives another instance, how magical creations may vanish without affecting the nature of the magician. This example, however, does not at all fit in with the context, and it is surprising how Sankara failed to see that, if his examples of realistic transformations were to hold good, his example of the magic and the magician would be quite out of place. If the parinama view of causation is to be adopted, the vivarta view is to be given up. It seems however that Sankara here was obliged to take refuge in such a confusion of issues by introducing stealthily an example of the vivarta view of unreality of effects in the commentary on sūtras which could only yield a realistic interpretation. The sūtras here seem to be so convincingly realistic that the ultimate reply to the suggested incompatibility of the production of effects dissimilar from their causes is found in the fact that the Upanisads hold that this impure and unintelligent world had come out of Brahman; and that, since the Upanisads assert it, no objection can be raised against it on grounds of reason.

In the next section the theory of realistic transformation of causes is further supported by the *sūtra* which asserts that in spite of the identity of effects with their cause their plurality or diversity may also be explained on the analogy of many popular illustrations. Thus, though the waves are identical with the sea, yet they have

an existence in their plurality and diversity as well. Here also Sankara has to follow the implication of the sūtra in his interpretation. He, however, in concluding his commentary on this sūtra, says that the world is not a result of any real transformation of Brahman as effect; Brahman alone exists, but yet, when Brahman is under the conditioning phenomena of a world-creation, there is room for apparent diversity and plurality. It may be pointed out, however, that such a supplementary explanation is wholly incompatible with the general meaning of the rule, which is decidedly in favour of a realistic transformation. It is unfortunate that here also Sankara does not give any reason for his supplementary remark, which is not in keeping with the general spirit of the sūtra and the interpretation which he himself gave of it.

In the next section the sūtras seem plainly to assert the identity of cause and effect, "because of the possibility of the effect, because the cause exists, because the effect exists in the cause and is due to an elaboration of the cause and also for other reasons and the testimony of the Upanisads." Such a meaning is quite in keeping with the general meaning of the previous sections. Sankara, however, interprets the sūtra as meaning that it is Brahman, the cause, which alone is true. There cannot therefore be any real transformation of causes into effects. The omniscience of Brahman and His being the creator of the world have thus only a limited validity; for they depend upon the relative reality of the world. From the absolute point of view therefore there is no Isvara who is the omniscient creator of the world¹. Śańkara supports this generally on the ground of the testimony of some Upanisad texts (e.g. mrttiketyeva satyam, etc.). He however introduces an argument in support of the sat-kārya-vāda theory, or the theory that the effect is already existent in the cause. This theory is indeed common both to the parināma view of real transformation and the vivarta view, in two different ways. It is curious however that he should support the sat-kārva-vāda theory on parināma lines, as against the generative view of a-sat-kārya-vāda of the Nyāya, but not on vivarta lines, where effects are treated as non-existent and false. Thus he

na tāttvikam aisvaryyam sarvajūatvam ca brahmanah kinto avidyopādhikam iti tadāsrayam pratijūā-sūtram, tattvāsrayam tu tad ananyatva-sūtram. Bhāmatī on the above Bhāṣya.

¹ kūţa-stha-brohmātma-vādinaḥ ekatvaikāntyāt išitrīšitavyabhāvah īšvarakāraņa-pratijñā-virodha iti cet; na; avidyātmaka-nāma-rūpa-bija-vyākaraṇāpekṣaivāt sarvajñatvasya. Šaikara's Bhāṣya on Brahma-sūtra, 11, i, 14.

says that the fact that curd is produced from milk and not from mud shows that there is some such intimate relation of curd with milk which it has not with anything else. This intimate relation consists in the special power or capacity (śakti) in the cause (e.g. the milk), which can produce the special effect (e.g. the curd). This power is the very essence of the cause, and the very essence of this power is the effect itself. If a power determines the nature of the effect, it must be already existent in the cause as the essence of the effect. Arguing against the Nyāya view that the cause is different from the effect, though they are mutually connected in an inseparable relation of inherence (samavāya), he says that, if such a samavāya is deemed necessary to connect the cause with the effect, then this also may require a further something to connect the samavāya with the cause or the effect and that another and that another ad infinitum. If it is urged that samavāya, being a relation, does not require any further relation to connect it with anything else, it may well be asked in reply how "conjunction" (samyoga), which is also regarded as a relation, should require the relation of inherence (samavāya) to connect it with the objects which are in conjunction (samyogin). The conception of samavāya connecting substances with their qualities is unnecessary; for the latter always appear identified with the former (tādātmya-pratīti). If the effect, say a whole, is supposed to be existing in the cause, the parts, it must exist in them all taken together or in each of the separate parts. If the whole exist only in the totality of the parts, then, since all the parts cannot be assembled together, the whole as such would be invisible. If the whole exist in the parts in parts, then one has to conceive other parts of the whole different from its constituent parts; and, if the same questions be again repeated, these parts should have other parts and these others; and thus there would be a vicious infinite. If the whole exists wholly in each of the parts at the same time, then there would be many wholes. If it exists successively in each of the parts, then the whole would at one time be existent only in one part, and so at that time the functions of the whole would be absent in the other parts. If it is said that, just as a class-concept (e.g. cow) exists wholly in each of the individuals and yet is not many, so a whole may also be wholly existent in each of the parts, it may well be replied that the experience of wholes is not like the experience of class-concepts. The class-concept of cow is realized in each and every cow; but

a whole is not realized in each and every part. Again, if the effect is non-existent before its production, then, production being an action, such an action would have nothing as its agent, which is impossible—for, since the effect is non-existent before its production, it could not be the agent of its production; and, since being non-existent, it cannot be the agent of its production, such a production would be either itself non-existent or would be without any agent. If, however, production is not defined as an action, but as a relationing of an effect with its cause (svakāraṇa-sattā-samavāya), then also it may be objected that a relation is only possible when there are two terms which are related, and, since the effect is as yet non-existent, it cannot be related to its cause.

But, if the effect is already existent, what then is the necessity of the causal operation ($k\bar{a}raka-vy\bar{a}p\bar{a}ra$)? The answer to such a question is to be found in the view that the effect is but an elaboration of the cause into its effect. Just as a man may sit with his limbs collected together or stretched out and yet would be considered the same man, so an effect also is to be regarded as an expansion of the cause and as such identical with it. The effect is thus only a transformed state of the cause; and hence the causal operation is necessary for bringing about this transformation; but in spite of such a transformation the effect is not already existing in the cause as its potency or power.

There are seven other smaller sections. in the first of these the objection that, if the world is a direct product of the intelligent Brahman, there is no reason why such an intelligent being should create a world which is full of misery and is a prison-house to himself, is easily answered by pointing out that the transcendent creator is far above the mundane spirits that suffer misery in the prison-house of the world. Here also Sankara adds as a supplementary note the remark that, since there is no real creation and the whole world is but a magical appearance, no such objection that the creator should not have created an undesirable world for its own suffering is valid. But the sūtras gave him no occasion for such a remark; so that indeed, as was the case with the previous sections, here also his $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ theory is not in keeping even with his general interpretation of the sūtras, and his remarks have to be appended as a note which hangs loosely and which does not appear to have any relevancy to the general meaning and purport of the sūtras.

In the next section an objection is raised that Brahman cannot without the help of any other accessory agents create the world; the reply to such an objection is found in the fact that Brahman has all powers in Himself and can as such create the world out of Himself without the help of anything else.

In the next section an objection is raised that, if the world is a transformation of Brahman, then, since Brahman is partless, the transformation must apply to the whole of Brahman; for a partial transformation is possible only when the substance which is undergoing the transformation has parts. A reply to such an objection is to be found in the analogy of the human self, which is in itself formless and, though transforming itself into various kinds of dream experiences, yet remains unchanged and unaffected as a whole by such transformations. Moreover, such objections may be levelled against the objectors themselves; for Sāmkhya also admits the transformation of the formless prakṛti.

In another section it is urged that, since Brahman is complete in Himself, there is no reason why He should create this great world, when He has nothing to gain by it. The reply is based on the analogy of play, where one has nothing to gain and yet one is pleased to indulge in it. So Brahman also creates the world by His $\hbar l \bar{l} \bar{a}$ or play. Saṅkara, however, never forgets to sing his old song of the $m \bar{a} y \bar{a}$ theory, however irrelevant it may be, with regard to the purpose of the $s \bar{u} t r a s$, which he himself could not avoid following. Thus in this section, after interpreting the $s \bar{u} t r a$ as attributing the world-creation to God's playful activity, he remarks that it ought not to be forgotten that all the world-creation is but a fanciful appearance due to nescience and that the ultimate reality is the identity of the self and Brahman.

The above discussion seems to prove convincingly that Bādarāyana's philosophy was some kind of bhedābheda-vāda or a theory of transcendence and immanence of God (Brahman)—even in the light of Śańkara's own commentary. He believed that the world was the product of a real transformation of Brahman, or rather of His powers and energies (śakti). God Himself was not exhausted by such a transformation and always remained as the master creator who by His play created the world and who could by His own powers create the world without any extraneous assistance. The world was thus a real transformation of God's powers, while He Himself, though remaining immanent in the

world through His powers, transcended it at the same time, and remained as its controller, and punished or rewarded the created mundane souls in accordance with their bad and good deeds.

The doctrine of bhedābheda-vāda is certainly prior to Sankara, as it is the dominant view of most of the puranas. It seems probable also that Bhartrprapañca refers to Bodhāyana, who is referred to as vrttikāra by Rāmānuja, and as vrttikāra and Upavarsa by Sankara, and to Dramidācāiya, referred to by Sankara and Rāmānuja; all held some form of bhedābheda doctrine1. Bhartrprapañca has been referred to by Sankara in his commentary on the Brhadāranyaka Upanisad; and Ānandajñāna, in his commentary on Sankara's commentary, gives a number of extracts from Bhartrprapañca's Bhāsya on the Brhadāranyaka Upanisad. Prof. M. Hiriyanna collected these fragments in a paper read before the Third Oriental Congress in Madras, 1924, and there he describes Bhartrprapañca's philosophy as follows. The doctrine of Bhartrprapañca is monism, and it is of the bhedābheda type. The relation between Brahman and the jiva, as that between Brahman and the world, is one of identity in difference. An implication of this view is that both the jīva and the physical world evolve out of Brahman, so that the doctrine may be described as Brahma-parināma-vāda. On the spiritual side Brahman is transformed into the antaryamin and the jīva; on the physical side into avyakta, sūtra, virāj and devatā, which are all cosmic; and jāti and pinda, which are not

¹ Prof. S. Kuppusvāmī Sāstrī, in an article read before the Third Oriental Conference, quotes a passage from Venkaṭa's Tattva-ṭtkā on Rāmānuja's commentary on the Brahma-sūtras, in which he says that Upavarṣa is a name of Bodhāyana—vritikārasya Bodhāyanasyaira hi Upavarṣa iti syān nāma—Proceedings of the Third Oriental Conference, Madras, 1924. The commentators on Sankara's Bhāṣya say that, when he refers to Vṛttikāra in 1. i. 9, 1. i. 23, 1. ii. 23 and 111. iii. 53, he refers to Upavarṣa by name. From the views of Upavarṣa referred to in these sūtras it appears that Upavarṣa believed in the theory of jūāna-karma-samuccaya, held also by Bhāskara (an adherent of the bhedābheda theory), Rāmānuja and others, but vehemently opposed by Śankara, who wanted to repudiate the idea of his opponents that the performance of sacrificial and Vedic duties could be conceived as a preliminary preparation for making oneself fit for Brahma-knowledge.

References to Dramidācārya's commentary on the Chāndogya Upaniṣad are made by Ānandagiri in his commentary on Saṅkara's commentary on the Chāndogya Upaniṣad. In the commentary of Sarvajātma Muni's Saṃkṣepa-śārtraka, 111. 217–227, by Nṛṣimhāśrama, the Vākyakāra referred to by Sarvajātma Muni sa Ātreya has been identified with Brahmanandin or Taṅka and the bhāṣyakāra (a quotation from whose Bhāṣya appears in Saṃkṣepa-śārtraka, 111. 221, "antarguṇā bhagavatī paradevateti," is referred to as a quotation from Dramidācārya in Rāmānuja's Vedārtha-saṃgraha, p. 138, Pandit edition) is identified with Dramidācārya, who wrote a commentary on Brahmanandin's Chāndogyopaniṣad-vārttika.

cosmic. These are the avasthas or modes of Brahman, and represent the eight classes into which the variety of the universe may be divided. They are again classified into three rāśis, paramātma-rāśi, jīva-rāśi and mūrttāmūrtta-rāśi, which correspond to the triple subject-matter of Religion and Philosophy, viz. God. soul and matter. Bhartrprapañca recognized what is known as pramāna-samuccaya, by which it follows that the testimony of common experience is quite as valid as that of the Veda. The former vouches for the reality of variety and the latter for that of unity (as taught in the Upanisads). Hence the ultimate truth is dvaitādvaita. Moksa, or life's end, is conceived as being achieved in two stages—the first leading to apavarga, where samsāra is overcome through the overcoming of asanga; and the second leading to Brahmahood through the dispelling of avidyā. This means of reaching either stage is jñāna-karma-samuccaya, which is a corollary on the practical side to pramāna-samuccava on the theoretical side.

It is indeed difficult to say what were the exact characteristics of Bādarāyaṇa's bhedābheda doctrine of Vedānta; but there is very little doubt that it was some special type of bhedābheda doctrine, and, as has already been repeatedly pointed out, even Sankara's own commentary (if we exclude only his parenthetic remarks, which are often inconsistent with the general drift of his own commentary and the context of the sūtras, as well as with their purpose and meaning, so far as it can be made out from such a context) shows that it was so. If, however, it is contended that this view of real transformation is only from a relative point of view (vyavahārika), then there must at least be one sūtra where the absolute (pāramārthika) point of view is given; but no such sūtra has been discovered even by Sankara himself. If experience always shows the causal transformation to be real, then how is one to know that in the ultimate point of view all effects are false and unreal? If, however, it is contended that there is a real transformation (parināma) of the māyā stuff, whereas Brahman remains always unchanged, and if māyā is regarded as the power (sakti) of Brahman, how then can the śakti of Brahman as well as its transformations be regarded as unreal and false, while the possessor of the śakti (or the saktimat, Brahman) is regarded as real and absolute? There is a great diversity of opinion on this point among the Vedantic writers of the Sankara school. Thus Appaya Diksita in his Siddhānta-leśa refers to the author of Padārtha-nirnaya as saying that

Brahman and māyā are both material causes of cle world-appearance—Brahman the vivarta cause, and māyā the parināma cause. Others are said to find a definition of causation intermediate between vivarta and parināma by defining material cause as that which can produce effects which are not different from itself (svabhinna-kārya janakatvam upādānatvam). The world is identical with Brahman inasmuch as it has being, and it is identical with nescience inasmuch as it has its characteristics of materiality and change. So from two different points of view both Brahman and maya are the cause of the world. Vācaspati Miśra holds that māyā is only an accessory cause (sahakāri), whereas Brahman is the real vivarta cause1. The author of the Siddhānta-muktāvalī, Prakāśānanda, however. thinks that it is the maya energy (maya-śakti) which is the material cause of the world and not Brahman. Brahman is unchangeable and is the support of $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$; and is thus the cause of the world in a remote sense. Sarvajñātma Muni, however, believes Brahman alone to be the vivarta cause, and māyā to be only an instrument for the purpose2. The difficulty that many of the sūtras of Bādarāyana give us a parināma view of causation was realized by Sarvajñātma Muni, who tried to explain it away by suggesting that the parināma theory was discussed approvingly in the sūtras only because this theory was nearest to the vivarta, and by initiating people to the parināma theory it would be easier to lead them to the vivarta theory, as hinted in sūtra 11. i. 143. This explanation could have some probability, if the arrangement of the sūtras was

² He lived about A.D. 900 during the reign of King Manukuladitya and was a pupil of Devesvara.

vivarta-vādasya hi pūrva-bhūmir vedānta-vāde pariņāma-vādah vyavasthite 'smin pariņāma-vāde svayam samāyāti vivarta-vādah.

Samksepa-śārīraka, 11. 61.

upāyam ātisṭhati pūrvum uccair upeyam āptum janatā yathaiva śrutir munīndraś ca vivarta-siddhyai vikāra-vādam vadatas tathaiva.

Ibid. 11. 62.

vikāra-vādam Kapilādi-pakṣam upetya vādena tu sūtra-kāraḥ śrutiś ca samjalpati pūrvabhūmau sthitvā vivarta-pratipādanāya.

Ibid. 11. 64.

¹ Vācaspati Miśra flourished in about A.D. 840. In addition to his Bhāmatī commentary on the Brahma-sūtra he wrote many other works and commentaries on other systems of philosophy. His important works are: Tattva-bindu, Tattva-vaiśāradī (yoga), Tattva-samīkṣā Brahma-siddhi-ṭīkā, Nyāya-kaṇikā on Vidhi-viveka, Nyāya-tattvāloka, Nyāya-ratna-ṭīkā, Nyāya-vārttika-tātparya-ṭīkā, Brahma-tattva-saṃhitoddipanī, Yukti-dīpikā (Sāṇikhya), Sāṃkhya-tattva-kaumudī, Vedānta-tattva-kaumudī.

such as to support the view that the parināma view was introduced only to prepare the reader's mind for the vivarta view, which was ultimately definitely approved as the true view; but it has been shown that the content of almost all the sūtras of II. i. consistently support the parināma view, and that even the sūtra II. i. 14 cannot be explained as holding the vivarta view of causation as the right one, since the other sūtras of the same section have been explained by Śańkara himself on the parināma view; and, if the content be taken into consideration, this sūtra also has to be explained on the parināma view of bhedābheda type.

Teachers and Pupils in Vedanta.

The central emphasis of Śańkara's philosophy of the Upanisads and the Brahma-sūtra is on Brahman, the self-revealed identity of pure consciousness, bliss and being, which does not await the performance of any of the obligatory Vedic duties for its realization. A right realization of such Upanisad texts as "That art thou," instilled by the right teacher, is by itself sufficient to dispel all the false illusions of world-appearance. This, however, was directly against the Mīmāmsā view of the obligatoriness of certain duties, and Sankara and his followers had to fight hard on this point with the Mīmāmsakas. Different Mīmāmsā writers emphasized in different ways the necessity of the association of duties with Brahma-wisdom; and a brief reference to some of these has been made in the section on Sureśvara. Another question arose regarding the nature of the obligation of listening to the unity texts (e.g. "that art thou") of the Vedanta; and later Vedanta writers have understood it differently. Thus the author of the Prakatārtha. who probably flourished in the twelfth century, holds that it is only by virtue of the mandate of the Upanisads (such as "thou shouldst listen to these texts, understand the meaning and meditate") that one learns for the first time that one ought to listen to the Vedanta texts—a view which is technically called apūrvavidhi. Others, however, think that people might themselves engage in reading all kinds of texts in their attempts to attain salvation and that they might go on the wrong track; and it is just to draw them on to the right path, viz. that of listening to the unity texts of the Upanisads, that the Upanisads direct men to listen to the unity texts—this view is technically called niyama-vidhi.

The followers of Sarvajñātma Muni, however, maintain that there can in no sense be a duty in regard to the attainment of wisdom of Brahma-knowledge, and the force of the duty lies in enjoining the holding of discussions for the clarification of one's understanding; and the meaning of the obligatory sentence "thou shouldst listen to" means that one should hold proper discussions for the clarification of his intellect. Other followers of Sureśvara, however, think that the force of the obligation lies in directing the student of Vedānta steadily to realize the truth of the Vedānta texts without any interruption; and this view is technically called parisaṃkhyā-vidhi. Vācaspati Miśra and his followers, however, think that no obligation of duties is implied in these commands; they are simply put in the form of commands in order to show the great importance of listening to Vedānta texts and holding discussions on them, as a means of advancement in the Vedāntic course of progress.

But the central philosophical problem of the Vedanta is the conception of Brahman—the nature of its causality, its relation with $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ and the phenomenal world of world-appearance, and with individual persons. Sankara's own writings do not always manifest the same uniform and clear answer; and many passages in different parts of his work show tendencies which could be more or less diversely interpreted, though of course the general scheme was always more or less well-defined. Appaya Diksita notes in the beginning of his Siddhanta-leśa that the ancients were more concerned with the fundamental problem of the identity of the self and the Brahman, and neglected to explain clearly the order of phenomenal appearance; and that therefore many divergent views have sprung up on the subject. Thus shortly after Sankara's death we have four important teachers, Sureśvara and his pupil Sarvaiñātma Muni, Padmapāda and Vācaspati Miśra, who represent three distinct tendencies in the monistic interpretation of the Vedānta. Sureśvara and his pupil Sarvajñātma Muni held that māyā was only an instrument (dvāra), through which the one Brahman appeared as many, and had its real nature hidden from the gaze of its individual appearances as individual persons. In this view māyā was hardly recognized as a substance, though it was regarded as positive; and it was held that māyā had, both for its object and its support, the Brahman. It is the pure Brahman that is the real cause underlying all appearances, and the māvā only hangs on it like a veil of illusion which makes this one thing

appear as many unreal appearances. It is easy to see that this view ignores altogether the importance of giving philosophical explanations of phenomenal appearance, and is only concerned to emphasize the reality of Brahman as the only truth. Vācaspati's view gives a little more substantiality to māyā in the sense that he holds that māyā is coexistent with Brahman, as an accessory through the operation of which the creation of world-appearance is possible; $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ hides the Brahman as its object, but it rests on individual persons, who are again dependent on māyā, and māyā on them, in a beginningless cycle. The world-appearance is not mere subjective ideas or sensations, but it has an objective existence. though the nature of its existence is inexplicable and indescribable; and at the time of dissolution of the world (or pralaya) its constitutive stuff, psychical and physical, will remain hidden in avidva, to be revived again at the time of the next worldappearance, otherwise called creation. But the third view, namely that of Padmapada, gives māyā a little more substantiality, regarding it as the stuff which contains the double activity or power of cognitive activity and vibratory activity, one determining the psychical process and the other the physical process, and regarding Brahman in association with $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$, with these two powers as Isvara, as the root cause of the world. But the roots of a very thoroughgoing subjective idealism also may be traced even in the writings of Sankara himself. Thus in the Brhadaranyaka-bhasya he says that, leaving aside theories of limitation (avaccheda) or reflection (pratibimba), it may be pointed out that, as the son of Kuntī is the same as Rādheya, so it is the Brahman that appears as individual persons through beginningless avidyā; the individual persons so formed again delusively create the world-appearance through their own avidyā. It will be pointed out in a later section that Mandana also elaborated the same tendency shortly after Sankara in the ninth century. Thus in the same century we have four distinct lines of Vedantic development, which began to expand through the later centuries in the writers that followed one or the other of these schools; and some additional tendencies also developed. The tenth century seems to have been very barren in the field of the Vedanta, and, excepting probably Iñanottama Miśra. who wrote a commentary on Sureśvara's Vārttika, no writer of great reputation is known to us to have lived in this period. In other fields of philosophical development also this century was more or

less barren, and, excepting Udavana and Śrīdhara in Nyāya-Vaisesika, Utpala in Astronomy and Abhinavagupta in Saivism, probably no other persons of great reputation can be mentioned. There were, however, a few Buddhistic writers of repute in this period, such as Candragomin (junior) of Rajsnahi, the author of Nyāya-loka-siddhi, Prajñākara Gupta of Vikramasilā, author of Pramāna-vārtikālankāra and Sahofulambha-nis aya, Ācārya Jetāri of Rajshahi, the author of Hetu-tattvopadesa, Dharma-dharmiviniscaya and Bālāvatāra-tarka, Jina, the author of Pramānavārtikālankāra-tikā, Ratnakīrti, the author of the Apoha-siddhi, Ksana-bhanga-siddhi and Sthira-siddhi-dūşana, and Ratna Vajra, the author of the Yukti-prayoga. The eleventh century also does not seem to have been very fruitful for Vedanta philosophy. The only author of great reputation seems to have been Anandabodha Bhattarakacarya, who appears to have lived probably in the latter half of the eleventh century and the first half of the twelfth century. The mahāvidvā syllogisms of Kulārka Pandita, however, probably began from some time in the eleventh century, and these were often referred to for refutation by Vedantic writers till the fourteenth century, as will be pointed out in a later section. But it is certain that quite a large number of Vedantic writers must have worked on the Vedanta before Anandabodha, although we cannot properly trace them now. Anandabodha says in his Nyāya-makaranda that his work was a compilation (samgraha) from a large number of Vedantic monographs (nibandha-puspānjali). Citsukha in his commentary on the Nyāya-makaranda points out (p. 346) that Anandabodha was refuting a view of the author of the Brahma-prakāsikā. According to Govindananda's statement in his Ratna-prabha. p. 311, Amalananda of the thirteenth century refuted a view of the author of the Prakaţārtha. The author of the Prakatārtha may thus be believed to have lived either in the eleventh or in the twelfth century. It was a commentary on Sankara's Bhāsya, and its full name was Sārīraka-bhāsya-prakatārtha; and Ānandajñāna (called also Janardana) wrote his Tattvāloka on the lines of Vedantic interpretation of this work. Mr Tripathi says in his introduction to the Tarka-samgraha that a copy of this work is available in Tekka Matha; but the present writer had the good fortune of going through it from a manuscript in the Advar Library, and a short account of its philosophical views is given below in a separate section. In the Siddhanta-lesa of Appaya Diksita we

hear of a commentary on it called Prakatārtha-vivaraņa. But, though Anandajñana wrote his Tattvāloka on the lines of the Prakaţārtha, yet the general views of Anandajñāna were not the same as those of the author thereof; Anandajñana's position was very much like that of Sarvajñātma Muni, and he did not admit many ajñānas, nor did he admit any difference between māvā and avidvā. But the author of the Prakatārtha, so far as can be judged from references to him in the Siddhanta-leśa, gave a separate place to the antahkaranas of individual persons and thought that, just as the jivas could be cognizers through the reflection of pure intelligence in the antahkarana states, so Isvara is omniscient by knowing everything through $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ modifications. The views of the author of the Prakatārtha regarding the nature of vidhi have already been noted. But the way in which Anandajñana refers to the Prakaţārtha in Mundaka, p. 32, and Kena, p. 23, shows that he was either the author of the Prakatartha or had written some commentary to it. But he could not have been the author of this work, since he refers to it as the model on which his Tattvāloka was written; so it seems very probable that he had written a commentary to it. But it is surprising that Anandajñāna, who wrote commentaries on most of the important commentaries of Sankara, should also trouble himself to write another commentary on the Prakaţārtha, which is itself a commentary on Śankara's commentary. It may be surmised, therefore, that he had some special reasons for respecting it, and it may have been the work of some eminent teacher of his or of someone in his parental line. However it may be, it is quite unlikely that the work should have been written later than the middle of the twelfth century1.

It is probable that Gangāpurī Bhaṭṭāraka also lived earlier than Ānandabodha, as Citsukha points out. Gangāpurī must then have lived either towards the latter part of the tenth century or the first half of the eleventh century. It is not improbable that he may have been a senior contemporary of Ānandabodha. His work, Padārtha-tattva-nirṇaya, was commented on by Ānandajñāna. According to him both māyā and Brahman are to be regarded as the cause of the world. All kinds of world-phenomena exist, and being may therefore be attributed to them; and being is the same whatever may be the nature of things that exist. Brahman is thus the changeless cause in the world or the vivarta-kāraṇa; but all the

¹ See Tripathi's introduction to the Tarka-samgraha.

changing contents or individual existents must also be regarded as products of the transformation of some substance, and in this sense māyā is to be regarded as the pariņāmi-kāraṇa of the world. Thus the world has Brahman as its vivarta-kāraṇa and māyā as its pariṇāmi-kāraṇa. The world manifests both aspects, the aspect of changeless being and that of changing materiality; so both māyā and Brahman form the material cause of the world in two different ways (Brahmamāyāca 'tyubhayopādānam; sattva-jādya-rūpobhaya-dharmānugaty-upapattis ca). Tarka-viveka and Siddhānta-viveka are the names of two chapters of this book, giving a summary of Vaiseṣika and Vedānta philosophy respectively. The view of Gangāpurī in the Padārtha-tattva-nirṇaya just referred to seems to have been definitely rejected by Ānandabodha in his Pramāṇa-mālā, p. 16.

When Kularka had started the mahā-vidyā syllogisms, and great Nyāya authors such as Jayanta and Udayana in the ninth and tenth centuries had been vigorously introducing logical methods in philosophy and were trying to define all that is knowable, the Vedantic doctrine that all that is knowable is indefinable was probably losing its hold; and it is probable that works like Anandabodha's Pramāna-mālā and Nyāya-dīpāvalī in the eleventh century or in the early part of the twelfth century were weakly attempting to hold fast to the Vedantic position on logical grounds. It was Śrīharsa who in the third quarter of the twelfth century for the first time attempted to refute the entire logical apparatus of the Naiyāyikas. Śrīharsa's work was carried on in Citsukha's Tattva-pradīpikā in the early part of the thirteenth century, by Anandajñana in the latter part of the same century in his Tarka-samgraha and by Nrsimhāśrama Muni in his Bheda-dhikkāra in the sixteenth century. On the last-named a pupil, Nārāyanāśrama, wrote his Bhedadhikkāra-satkriyā, and this had a sub-commentary, called Bhedadhikkāra-satkriyojjvalā. The beginnings of the dialectical arguments can be traced to Sankara and further back to the great Buddhist writers, Nāgārjuna, Āryadeva, Candrakīrti, etc. Interest in these dialectical arguments was continuously kept up by commentaries written on these works all through the later centuries. The names of these commentators have been mentioned in the sections on Śrīharsa, Citsukha and Ānandajñāna.

Moreover, the lines of Vedānta interpretation which started with Sureśvara, Padmapāda and Vācaspati were vigorously

continued in commentaries and in independent works throughout the later centuries. Thus in the middle of the thirteenth century Vācaspati's *Bhāmatī* was commented on by Amalānanda in his *Kalpa-taru*; and this *Kalpa-taru* was again commented on by Appaya Dīkṣita in the latter part of the sixteenth century and the first quarter of the seventeenth century, and by Lakṣmīnṛsiṃha in his *Abhoga* towards the end of the seventeenth century or the beginning of the eighteenth¹.

Padmapāda's *Pañca-pādikā* was commented on by Prakāśātman in the thirteenth century in his Pañca-pādikā-vivaraņa, by Akhaņdānanda in the fourteenth century in his Tattva-dīpana, by Vidyāranya in the same century in his Vivarana-prameya-samgraha, by Anandapūrņa and Nṛṣimha in the sixteenth century and by Rāma Tīrtha in the seventeenth century². The line of Sureśvara also continued in the summary of his great Vārttika (called Vārttika-sāra) by Vidyāranya and its commentaries, and also in the commentaries on the Samksepa-śārīraka from the sixteenth century onwards. Many independent works were also written by persons holding more or less the same kinds of views as Sarvajñātma Muni³. The philosophy of drsti-srsti-vāda Vedānta, which was probably started by Mandana, had doubtless some adherents too; but we do not meet with any notable writer on this line. except Prakāśānanda in the sixteenth century and his pupil Nānā Dīkṣita. The Vedānta-kaumudī is an important work which is

¹ Allāla Suri, son of Trivikramācārya, wrote a commentary on the Bhāmatī, called the Bhāmati-tilaka.

² Samyagbodhendra Samyamin, pupil of Girvāṇendra (A.D. 1450), wrote a summary of the main contents of the Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa in six chapters (var-ṇaka), and this work is called by two names, Advaita-bhūṣaṇa and Vivaraṇa-prameya-saṃgraha. There are again two other commentaries on Prakāsātman's Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa: the Riju-vivaraṇa by Viṣṇubhaṭṭa, son of Jaṇārdaṇa Sarvaṇā and pupil of Svāmindrapūrṇa, and the Tīkā-ratna by Āṇandapūrṇa. The Riju-vivaraṇa had again another commentary on it, called the Trayyanta-bhūva-pradīpikā, by Rāmāṇanda, pupil of Bhārati Tirtha.

There are, however, two other commentaries on the Pañca-pādikā called Pañca-pādikā-vyākhyā (by an author whose name is not definitely known) and the Prabandha-parisodhuā by Ātmasvarūpa, pupil of Nṛsiṃhasvarūpa. Dharma-rāyādhvarindra also wrote a commentary on Pañca-pādikā, called the Pañca-pādikā-tīkā.

³ Apart from the two published commentaries on the Samkşepa-śārtraka, there is another work called the Samkşepa-śārtraka-sambandhokti by Vedānanda, pupil of Vedādhyakṣa-bhagavat-pūjyapāda, in which the author tries to show the mutual relation of the verses of it as yielding a consistent meaning. Nṛṣimhā-ṣrama also wrote a commentary on the Samkṣepa-śārtraka, called the Tattva-bodhini. One Sarvajnātma Bhagavat wrote a small Vedāntic work, called Pañca-prakriyā; but it is not probable that he is the same as Sarvajnātma Muni.

referred to by Appaya Dīkṣita in his Siddhānta-leśa. In this work the omniscience of Brahman consists in the fact that the pure consciousness as Brahman manifests all that exists either as actually transformed or as potentially transformed, as future, or as latently transformed, as the past in the māyā; and it is the Parameśvara who manifests Himself as the underlying consciousness (sākṣin) in individual persons, manifesting the ajñāna transformations in them, and also their potential ajñāna in dreamless sleep. Many other important Vedānta views of an original character are expressed in this book. This work of Ramādvaya has been found by the present writer in the Govt. Oriental MSS. Library, Madras, and a separate section has been devoted to its philosophy. From references in it to followers of Madhva it may be assumed that the Vedānta-kaumudī was written probably in the fourteenth century.

From the fourteenth century, however, we have a large number of Vedānta writers in all the succeeding centuries; but with the notable exception of Prakāśānanda, Madhusūdana Sarasvatī in his Advaita-siddhi (in which he tried to refute the objections of Vyāsa Tīrtha against the monistic Vedānta in the sixteenth century) and probably Vidyāraṇya's Vivaraṇa-prameya-saṃgraha and Dharmarājādhvarīndra's Paribhāṣā, and its Śikhāmaṇi commentary by Rāmakṛṣṇa, there are few writers who can be said to reveal aný great originality in Vedāntic interpretations. Most of the writers of this later period were good compilers, who revered all sorts of past Vedāntic ideas and collected them in well-arranged forms in their works. The influence of the Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa, however, is very strong in most of these writers, and the Vivaraṇa school of thought probably played the most important part in Vedāntic thought throughout all this period.

These Vedāntic writers grew up in particular circles inspired by particular teachers, whose works were carried on either in their own families or among their pupils; a few examples may make this clear. Thus Jagannāthāśrama was a great teacher of south India in the latter half of the fifteenth century; he had a pupil in Nṛṣiṃhāśrama, one of the most reputed teachers of Vedānta in the early half of the sixteenth century. He was generally inspired on the one hand by the *Vivaraṇa* and on the other by Srīharṣa and Citsukha and Sarvajñātma Muni: he wrote a number of Vedānta works, such as *Advaita-dīpikā* (his pupil, Nārāyaṇāśrama, wrote a commentary called *Advaita-dīpikā-vivaraṇa* on it), *Advaita-pañca-*

ratna, Advaita-bodha-dīpikā, Advaita-ratna-kosa, Tattva-bodhinī, a commentary on the Samksepa-śārīraka, Tattva-viveka (which had two commentaries, Tattva-viveka-dīpana of Nārāyanāśrama and Tattva-vivecana of Agnihotra, pupil of Jñānendra Sarasvatī), Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa-prakāśikā, Bheda-dhikkāra, Advaita-ratna-vyākhyāna (a commentary on Mallanārodīya's Advaita-ratna), and Vedānta-tattva-viveka. The fact that he could write commentaries both on Sarvajñātma Muni's work and also on the Vivarana, and also write a Bheda-dhikkāra (a work on dialectic Vedānta on the lines of Śrīharsa's dialectical work) shows the syncretistic tendencies of the age, in which the individual differences within the school were all accepted as different views of one Vedanta, and in which people were more interested in Vedanta as a whole and felt no hesitation in accepting all the Vedantic ideas in their works. Nrsimhāśrama had a pupil Dharmarājādhvarīndra, who wrote a Vedānta-paribhāsā, a commentary called Tarka-cūdāmani on the Tattva-cintāmani of Gangeśa, and also on the Nyaya-siddhāntadīpa of Śaśadhara Ācārya, and a commentary on the Pañca-pādikā of Padmapāda. His son and pupil Rāmakṛṣṇa Dīkṣita wrote a commentary on the first, called Vedānta-sikhāmani; and Amaradāsa. the pupil of Brahmavijñana, wrote another commentary on this Sikhāmani of Rāmakrsna¹. Rāmakrsna had also written a commentary on Rucidatta's Tattva-cintāmaņi-prakāśa, called Nyāyasikhāmani, and a commentary on the Vedānta-sāra. Other authors. such as Kāśīnātha Śāstrin and Brahmendra Sarasvatī, had also written separate works bearing the name Vedānta-paribhāsā after the Vedānta-paribhāṣā of Dharmarāja in the seventeenth century. Under the sphere of Nrsimha's influence, but in the Saiva and Mīmāmsaka family of Rangarāja Adhvarin, was born Appaya Dīksita. who became one of the most reputed teachers of the sixteenth and the seventeenth centuries. His works have all been noted in the section devoted to him. He again was a teacher of Bhattojī Dīksita. who in addition to many works on grammar, law and ritual (smrti) wrote two important works on Vedanta, called Tattva-kaustubha and Vedānta-tattva-dīpana-vyākhyā, the latter a commentary on the commentary, Tattva-viveka-dipana, of Nārāyanāśrama (a pupil of Nṛsimhāśrama) on the latter's work, Vedānta-tattva-viveka. This Nārāyanāśrama had also written another commentary on

 $^{^1}$ Pettā Dikṣita, son of Nārāyaṇa Dikṣita, also wrote a commentary on the $Ved\bar{a}nta\text{-}paribhāṣā$, called $Ved\bar{a}nta\text{-}paribhāṣā\text{-}prakāsikā$.

Nrsimhāśrama's Bheda-dhikkāra, called Bheda-dhikkāra-satkriyā; and later on in the eighteenth century anothe, commentary was written on Nrsimha's Bheda-dhikkara, called Advaita-candrikā, by Narasimha Bhatta, pupil of Rāmabhadrāśrama and Nāgeśvara in the eighteenth century. Bhattoji Diksita's son Bnānuji Diksita was a commentator on the Amara-kosa (Vyākhyā-sudhā or Subodhinī). Bhattojī was, however, a pupil not only of Appaya, but also of Nrsimhāśrama Muni bhattoji's younger brother and pupil, Rangojī Bhatta, wrote two works, the Advaita-cintāmani and the Advaita-śāstra-sāroddhāra, more or less on the same lines, containing a refutation of Vaiseșika categories, a determination of the nature of the self, a determination of the nature of ajñāna and the nature of the doctrine of reflection, proofs of the falsity of world-appearance and an exposition of the nature of Brahman and how Brahmahood is to be attained. His son Konda Bhatta was mainly a grammarian, who wrote also on Vaisesika. Again Madhusūdana Sarasvatī, who was a pupil of Viśveśvara Sarasvatī (pupil of Sarvajña Viśveśa and pupil's pupil of Govinda Sarasvatī), lived in the early half of the sixteenth century and was probably under the influence of Nrsimhāśrama, who is reputed to have defeated Madhusūdana Sarasvatī's teacher, Mādhava Sarasvatī. Madhusūdana had at least three pupils, Purusottama, who wrote on Madhusūdana's commentary the Siddhanta-tattva-bindu a commentary called Siddhānta-tattva-bindu-tīkā1; the others were Bālabhadra and Sesagovinda (the latter of whom wrote a commentary on Sankara's Sarva-darsana-siddhanta-samgraha, called Sarva-siddhanta-rahasva-tīkā). Again Sadānanda, the author of the Vedānta-sāra, one of the most popular and well-read syncretistic works on Vedanta, was a contemporary of Nrsimhāśrama; Nrsimha Sarasvatī wrote in 1588 a commentary thereon, called Subodhini. Devendra, the author of the Svānubhūti-prakāśa, was also a contemporary of Nṛsimhāśrama. It has already been pointed out that Prakāśānanda was probably a contemporary of Nrsimhāśrama, though he does not seem to have been under his influence. This shows how some of the foremost Vedanta writers of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries grew up together in a Vedantic circle, many of whom were directly or indirectly under the influence of Nrsimhāśrama and Appava Dīkṣita.

 $^{^1}$ Brahmānanda wrote on the $\it Siddh\bar{a}nta-bindu$ another commentary, called $\it Siddh\bar{a}nta-bindu-\mu k\bar{a}$.

Passing to another circle of writers, we see that Bhāskara Diksita, who lived in the latter half of the seventeenth century, wrote a commentary, Ratna-tūlikā, on the Siddhānta-siddhānjana of his teacher Kṛṣṇānanda. The Siddhānta-siddhānjana is an excellent syncretistic work on Vedanta, which contains most of the important Vedanta doctrines regarding the difference of dharma-vicāra and brahma-vicāra, the relation of Mīmāmsā theories of commands, and the need of Brahma-knowledge; it introduces many Mīmāṃsā subjects and treats of their relations to many relevant Vedanta topics. It also introduces elaborate discussions on the nature of knowledge and ignorance. It seems, however, to be largely free from the influence of the Vivarana, and it does not enter into theories of perception or the nature of the antahkarana and its vrtti. It is thus very different from most of the works produced in the sixteenth century in the circles of Nrsimha or Appaya. Krsnānanda lived probably in the middle of the seventeenth century. He had for teacher Rāmabhadrānanda; and Rāmabhadrānanda was taught by Svayamprakāśānanda, the author of the Vedānta-naya-bhūṣaṇa, a commentary on the Brahma-sūtra on the lines of Vācaspati Miśra's Bhāmatī. This Svayamprakāśa must be distinguished from the other Svayamprakāśa, probably of the same century, who was a pupil of Kaivalyananda Yogindra and the author of the Rasabhivvañiikā, a commentary of Advaita-makaranda of Laksmidhara Kavi. Rāmabhadrānanda had as his teacher Rāmānanda Sarasvatī, the author of the Vedānta-siddhānta-candrikā, on which a commentary was written by Gangadharendra Sarasvatī (A.D. 1826), pupil of Rāmacandra Sarasvatī and pupil's pupil of Sarvajña Sarasvatī, and author of the Sāmrājya-siddhi with its commentary, the Kaivalvakalpadruma. Prakāśānanda was a pupil of Advaitānanda, author of the Brahma-vidyābharana, a commentary on Sankara's Sārīrakabhāsya—Advaitānanda was a disciple of Rāmatīrtha, author of the Anvaya-prakāśikā (a commentary on the Samksepa-śārīraka of Sarvajñatma Muni) and a disciple of Krsnatīrtha, a contemporary of Jagannāthāśrama, the teacher of Nrsimhāśrama. Rāmatīrtha's Anvaya-prakāśikā shows an acquaintance with Madhusūdana's Advaita-siddhi; and he may thus be considered to have lived in the middle of the seventeenth century. Svayamprakāśānanda, again, had for pupil Mahādevānanda, or Vedāntin Mahādeva, the author of the Advaita-cintā-kaustubha or Tattvānusandhāna. It seems very clear that these writers of the seventeenth and the early eighteenth

centuries flourished in a different circle of Vedāntic ideas, where the views of Vācaspati, Sureśvara and Sarvajñātma Muni had greater influence than the authors of the Vivaraṇa school of Vedānta. Another important syncretistic Vedānta writer is Sadānanda Kāśmīraka, author of the Advaita-brahma-siddhi, who lived in the early part of the eighteenth century. The Advaita-brahma-siddhi is an excellent summary of all the most important Vedānta doctrines, written in an easy style and explaining the chief features of the Vedāntic doctrines in the different schools of Advaita teachers. Narahari's Bodha-sāra may be mentioned as one of the important products of the late eighteenth century¹.

The sort of relationship of teachers and students in particular circles that has been pointed out holds good of the earlier authors also, though it is difficult to trace them as well as can be done in the later years, since many of the earlier books are now missing and the footprints of older traditions are becoming more and more faint. Thus it may be pointed out that Vidyāraṇya was a contemporary of Amalānanda in the fourteenth century, as both of them

¹ A number of other important Vedanta works, written mostly during the seventeenth to nineteenth centuries, may also be mentioned. Thus Lokanatha, son of Sarvajňanārāyana and grandson of Nrsimhāśrama, wrote a metrical work in three chapters refuting the views of the dualists, called Advaita-muktāsāra with a commentary on it called Kānti; Brahmānanda Sarasvatī wrote the Advaita-siddhānta-vidyotana; Gopālānanda Sarasvatī, pupil of Yogānanda, wrote the Akhandātma-prakāsikā; Harihara Paramuhamsa, pupil of Šivarāma, pupil of Viśveśvarāśrama, wrote the Anubhava-vilāsa, and early in the nineteenth century Sāmin, a pupil of Brahmānanda, wrote a big work in twelve chapters, called Brahmānanda-vilāsa. In this connection it may not be out of place to mention the names of some important works of Vedanta dialectics in refutation of other systems of philosophical views more or less on the lines of those dialectical writings which have been noticed in the present volume. Thus Anandapū na (A.D. 1600), who commented on Śriharsa's Khandana-khanda-khādya, wrote the Nyāya-candrikā in four chapters, refuting the views of the Nyāya, Mīmāmsā and Vaisesika; Ānandānubhava, pupil of Nārāyaņa Jyotisha, who lived probably in the same century, wrote a similar work, called Padartha-tattva-ninaya; Jhanaghana, who probably lived in the thirteenth century, wrote an elaborate dialectical work in thirty-three chapters (prakarana), called Tattva-śuddhi; Srīnivāsa Yajvan, who probably lived in the sixteenth century, wrote the Vādāvalī in twenty-six chapters in refutation of Visistādvaita and Dvaita views; Bhavānīsankara also wrote a similar dialectical work, called Siddhānta-dīpikā. As examples of semi-popular Vedanta works of a syncretistic type, such works as the Tattva-bodha of Vasudevendra, the Guna-traya-viveka of Svayamprakaśa Yogindra, the Jagan-mithyātva-dīpikā of Rāmendra Yogin, the Ānanda-dīpa of Sivānanda Yati (which had a commentary called Ananda-dīpa-tīkār by Rāmanātha), the Svātma-yoga-pradipa by Yogiśvara (which had a commentary by Amarānanda) and the Vedanta-hrdaya (on the lines of the Yoga-vāsistha and Gauda-pāda) by Varada Pandita may be mentioned. This latter work was probably later than Prakāśānanda's Vedānta-siddhānta-muktāvali, which followed the same line of thought.

were pupils of Sankarānanda and Anubhavānanda respectively; these in turn were both pupils of Ānandātman. Sankarānanda was the author of the Gītā-tātparya-bodhinī and of a number of commentaries on the various Upaniṣads, and also of a summary of the Upaniṣads, called Upaniṣad-ratna. Amalānanda, however, had as teacher not only Anubhavānanda, but also Sukhaprakāśa Muni, who again was a disciple of Citsukha, himself a disciple of Gaudeśvara Ācārya (called also Jñānottama).

Vedānta Doctrine of Soul and the Buddhist Doctrine of Soullessness.

One of the most important points of Śańkara's criticism of Buddhism is directed against its denial of a permanent soul which could unite the different psychological constituents or could behave as the enjoyer of experiences and the controller of all thoughts and actions.

The Buddhists argue that for the production of sense-cognition, as the awareness of a colour or sound, what is required in addition to the sense-data of colours, etc. is the corresponding sensefaculties, while the existence of a soul cannot be deemed indispensable for the purpose¹. Vasubandhu argues that what is experienced is the sense-data and the psychological elements in groups called skandhas. What one calls self (ātman) cannot be anything more than a mere apparent cognitional existence (prajñapti-sat) of what in reality is but a conglomeration of psychological elements. Had the apparent self been something as different from the psychological elements as colours are from sounds, it would then be regarded as an individual (pudgala); but, if its difference from these psychological elements be of the same nature as the difference of the constituents of milk from the appearance of milk, then the self could be admitted only to have a cognitional existence (prainapti- $(sat)^2$. The self has, in fact, only a cognitional appearance of separateness from the psychological elements; just as, though

The arguments here followed are those of Vasubandhu, as found in his Abhidharma-kośa, and are based on Prof. Stcherbatsky's translation of the appendix to ch. viii of that work, called the Pudgala-viniścaya, and Yaśomitra's commentary in manuscript from Nepal, borrowed from Viśvabhāratī, Santiniketan, Bengal.

² yadi yathā rūpādiḥ śabdāder bhāvāntaram abhipreyate pudgala iti abhyupagato bhavati bhinna-lakṣaṇam hi rūpam śabdād ityādi kṣīrādivat samudāyaś cet prajñaptitaḥ. Abhidharma-kośa-vyākhyā, Viśvabhārati MS. p. 337.

milk appears to have a separate existence from the proper combination of its constituent elements, yet it is in reality nothing more than a definite kind of combination of its constituent elements, so the self is nothing more than a certain conglomeration of the psychological elements (skandha), though it may appear to have a separate and independent existence. The Vatsiputriyas, however, think that the individual is something different from the skandhas or psychological entities, as its nature is different from the nature of them. The Vātsīputrīyas deny the existence of a permanent soul, but believe in momentary individuals (pudgala) as a category separate and distinct from the skandhas. Just as fire is something different from the fuel that conditioned it, so the name "individual" (pudgala) is given to something conditioned by the skandhas at a given moment in a personal life¹. Vasubandhu, however, argues against the acceptance of such an individual and says that there is no meaning in accepting such an individual. Rain and sun have no effects on mere vacuous space, they are of use only to the skin; if the individual is, like the skin, a determiner of the value of experiences, then it must be accepted as external; if it is like vacuous space, then no purpose is fulfilled by accepting it². The Vātsīputrīyas, however, thought that, just as the fuel conditioned the fire, so the personal elements conditioned the individual. By this conditioning the Vatsiputriyas meant that the personal elements were some sort of a coexisting support3. What is meant by saying that the pudgala is conditioned by the personal elements is that, when the skandhas or psychological elements are present, the pudgala is also present there4. But Vasubandhu urges that a mere conditioning of this kind is not sufficient to establish the cognitional existence of an individual; for even colour is conditioned by the visual sense, light and attention in such a way that, these being present, there is the perception of light; but can anybody on that ground consider the

¹ Stcherbatsky's translation of the Pudgala-viniścaya, Bulletin de l'Académie des Sciences de Russie, p. 830.

The exact text of Vasubandhu, as translated from Tibetan in a note, runs thus: grhīta-pratyutpannābhyantara-skandham upādāya pudgala-prajñaptih. Ibid. p. 953.

² Vātsīputrīyānām tīrthika-drştih prasajyale nisprayojanatvam ca varsāta-pābhyām kim vyomnas carmany-asti tayoh phalam carmopamas cet sa nityah khatulyas ced asatphalah.

MS. of Yasomitra's commentary, p. 338.

** āšraya-bhūtah saha-bhūtas ca. Ibid.

⁴ rūpasyāpi prajňaptir vaktavyā cakşur-ādişu satsu tasyopalambhāt, tāni cakşur-ādiny upādāya rūpam prajňāpyate. Ibid.

existence of colour to be a cognitional one? And would cognitional entities deserve to be enumerated as separate categories? Again it may be asked, if such an individual exists, how is it experienced? For, if it be experienced by any of the senses, it must be a sensedatum: for the senses can grasp only their appropriate sense-data, and the individual is no sense-datum. Therefore, just as milk is nothing but the collected sense-data of colour, taste, etc., so also the so-called individual is nothing more than the conglomerated psychological elements1. The Vātsīputrīyas argue that, since the psychological elements, the sense-data, etc., are the causes of our experience of the individual, the individual cannot be regarded as being identical with these causal elements which are responsible for their experience; if it were so, then even light, eye, attention, etc., which are causes of the experience of the sense-data, would have to be regarded as being identical in nature with the individual2. But it is not so maintained; the sense-datum of sounds and colours is always regarded as being different from the individual, and one always distinguishes an individual from a sense-datum and says "this is sound," "this is colour" and "this is individual 3." But the individual is not felt to be as distinct from the psychological elements as colour is from sound. The principle of difference or distinctness consists in nothing but a difference of moments; a colour is different from a sound because it is experienced at a different moment, while the psychological elements and the individual are not experienced at different moments4. But it is argued in reply that, as the sense-data and the individual are neither different nor identical (ratio essendi), so their cognition also is neither different nor identical in experience (ratio cognoscendi)5. But Vasubandhu says that, if such a view is taken in this case, then it might as well be taken in all cases wherever there is any conglomeration⁶. Moreover, the separate senses are all limited to their special fields, and the mind which acts with them is also limited

¹ yathā rūpādīnyeva samastāni samuditāni kṣīramiti udakamiti vā prajñāpyate, tathā skandhāś ca samastā pudgala iti prajñāpyate, iti siddham. MS. of Yaśomitra's commentary, p. 339 A.

² yathā rūpam pudgalopalabdheh kāraṇam bhavati sa ca tebhyo 'nyo na vaktavyah āloka-cakṣur-manaṣkārā api rūpopalabdheh kāraṇam bhavati tad api tad-abhinna-svabhāvah pudgalaḥ prāpnoti. Ibid.
³ Ibid. p. 339 B.

¹ svalakşanād api kṣaṇāntaram anyad ity udāhāryam. Ibid.

[§] yathā rūpa-pudgalayor anyānanyatvam avaktavyam evam tudupalabdhyor api anyānanyatvam avaktavyam. Ibid.

^{*} yo`yam siddhāntah pudgala eva vaktavyah so`yam bhidyate samskṛtam api avaktavyam iti kṛtvā. Ibid.

to the data supplied by them; there is, therefore, no way in which the so-called individual can be experienced. In the Ajita sermon Buddha is supposed to say: "A visual consciousness depends upon the organ of sight and a visible object. When these three (object, sense organ and consciousness) combine, a sensation is produced. It is accompanied by a feeling, a representation and a volition. Only so much is meant, when we are speaking of a human being. To these (five sets of elements) different names are given, such as a sentient being, a man, Manu's progeny, a son of Manu, a child, an individual, a life, a soul. If with respect to them the expression is used 'he sees the object with his own eyes,' it is false imputation (there being in reality nobody possessing eyes of his own). In common life such expressions with respect to them are current as 'that is the name of this venerable man, he belongs to such a caste and such a family, he eats such food, this pleases him, he has reached such an age, he has lived so many years, he has died at such an age.' These O brethren! accordingly are mere words, mere conventional designations.

> 'Expressions are they, (but not truth)! Real elements have no duration: Vitality makes them combine In mutually dependent apparitions¹.'''

The Vātsīputrīyas however refer to the Bhāra-hāra-sūtra, in which Buddha is supposed to say: "O brethren, I shall explain unto you the burden (of life), and moreover I shall explain the taking up of the burden, the laying aside of it and who the carrier is....What is the burden? All the five aggregates of elements—the substrates of personal life. What is meant by the taking up of the burden? The force of craving for a continuous life, accompanied by passionate desires, the rejoicing at many an object. What is the laying aside of the burden? It is the wholesale rejection of this craving for a continuation of life, accompanied as it is by passionate desires and rejoicings at many an object, the getting rid of it in every circumstance, its extinction, its end, its suppression, an aversion to it, its restraint, its disappearance. Who is the carrier? We must answer: it is the individual, i.e. 'this venerable man having this name, of such a caste, of such a family, eating such food, finding pleasure or displeasure at such things, of such an age, who after a

¹ Stcherbatsky's translation in Bulletin de l'Académie des Sciences de Russie.

life of such length will pass away having reached such an age¹." But Vasubandhu points out that the carrier of the burden is not to be supposed to be some eternal soul or real individual. It is the momentary group of elements of the preceding moment that is designated as the burden, and the immediately succeeding one the carrier of the burden (bhāra-hāra)².

The Vātsīputrīyas again argue that activity implies an active agent, and, since knowing is an action, it also implies the knower who knows, just as the walking of Devadatta implies a Devadatta who walks. But Vasubandhu's reply to such a contention is that there is nowhere such a unity. There is no individual like Devadatta: what we call Devadatta is but a conglomeration of elements. "The light of a lamp is a common metaphorical designation for an uninterrupted production of a series of flashing flames. When this production changes its place, we say that the light has moved. Similarly consciousness is a conventional name for a chain of conscious moments. When it changes its place (i.e. appears in co-ordination with another objective element), we say that it apprehends that object. And in the same way we speak about the existence of material elements. We say matter 'is produced,' 'it exists'; but there is no difference between existence and the element which does exist. The same applies to consciousness (there is nothing that cognizes, apart from the evanescent flashing of consciousness itself)3."

It is easy to see that the analysis of consciousness offered by the Vedānta philosophy of the Śańkara school is entirely different from this. The Vedānta holds that the fact of consciousness is entirely different from everything else. So long as the assemblage of the physical or physiological conditions antecedent to the rise of any cognition, as for instance, the presence of illumination, sense-object contact, etc., is being prepared, there is no knowledge, and it is only at a particular moment that the cognition of an object arises. This cognition is in its nature so much different from each and all the elements constituting the so-called assemblage of conditions, that it cannot in any sense be regarded as the product of

¹ Stcherbatsky's translation.

² Yasomitra points out that there is no carrier of the burden different from the collection of the skandhas—bhārādānavan na skandhebhyo 'rthāntara-bhūtaḥ pudgala ity arthaḥ. Abhidharma-kośa-vyākhyā, Viśvabhārati MS.

³ Stcherbatsky's translation in Bulletin de l'Académie des Sciences de Russie, pp. 938-939.

any collocation of conditions. Consciousness thus, not being a product of anything and not being further analysable into any constituents, cannot also be regarded as a momentary flashing. Uncaused and unproduced, it is eternal, infinite and unlimited. The main point in which consciousness differs from everything else is the fact of its self-revelation. There is no complexity in consciousness. It is extremely simple, and its only essence or characteristic is pure self-revelation. The so-called momentary flashing of consciousness is not due to the fact that it is momentary, that it rises into being and is then destroyed the next moment, but to the fact that the objects that are revealed by it are reflected through it from time to time. But the consciousness is always steady and unchangeable in itself. The immediacy (aparoksatva) of this consciousness is proved by the fact that, though everything else is manifested by coming in touch with it, it itself is never expressed, indicated or manifested by inference or by any other process, but is always self-manifested and self-revealed. All objects become directly revealed to us as soon as they come in touch with it. Consciousness (samvid) is one. It is neither identical with its objects nor on the same plane with them as a constituent element in a collocation of them and consciousness. The objects of consciousness or all that is manifested in consciousness come in touch with consciousness and themselves appear as consciousness. This appearance is such that, when they come in touch with consciousness, they themselves flash forth as consciousness, though that operation is nothing but a false appearance of the nonconscious objects and mental states in the light of consciousness, as being identical with it. But the intrinsic difference between consciousness and its objects is that the former is universal (pratyak) and constant (anuvrtta), while the latter are particular (apratyak) and alternating (vyāvrtta). The awarenesses of a book, a table, etc. appear to be different not because these are different flashings of knowledge, but because of the changing association of consciousness with these objects. The objects do not come into being with the flashings of their awareness, but they have their separate existence and spheres of operation¹. Consciousness is one and unchanging; it is only when the objects get associated with it that

¹ tattva-darsī tu nityam adviityam vijūānam visayās ca tatrādhyastāh pṛthagartha-kriyā-samarthās teṣām cābādhitam sthāyitvam astīti vadati. Vīvaraņaprameya-samgraha, p. 74, the Vizianagram Sanskrit Series, Benares, 1893.

they appear in consciousness and as identical with it in such a way that the flashing of an object in consciousness appears as the flashing of the consciousness itself. It is through an illusion that the object of consciousness and consciousness appear to be welded together into such an integrated whole, that their mutual difference escapes our notice, and that the object of consciousness, which is only like an extraneous colour applied to consciousness, does not appear different or extraneous to it, but as a specific mode of the consciousness itself. Thus what appear as but different awarenesses, as book-cognition, table-cognition, are not in reality different awarenesses, but one unchangeable consciousness successively associated with ever-changing objects which falsely appear to be integrated with it and give rise to the appearance that qualitatively different kinds of consciousness are flashing forth from moment to moment. Consciousness cannot be regarded as momentary. For, had it been so, it would have appeared different at every different moment. If it is urged that, though different consciousnesses are arising at each different moment, yet on account of extreme similarity this is not noticed; then it may be replied that, if there is difference between the two consciousnesses of two successive moments, then such difference must be grasped either by a different consciousness or by the same consciousness. In the first alternative the third awareness, which grasps the first two awarenesses and their difference, must either be identical with them, and in that case the difference between the three awarenesses would vanish; or it may be different from them, and in that case. if another awareness be required to comprehend their difference and that requires another and so on, there would be a vicious infinite. If the difference be itself said to be identical with the nature of the consciousness (samvit-svarūpa-bhūto bhedah), and if there is nothing to apprehend this difference, then the nonappearance of the difference implies the non-appearance of the consciousness itself; for by hypothesis-the difference has been held to be identical with the consciousness itself. The non-appearance of difference, implying the non-appearance of consciousness, would mean utter blindness. The difference between the awareness of one moment and another cannot thus either be logically proved, or realized in experience, which always testifies to the unity of awareness through all moments of its appearance. It may be held that the appearance of unity is erroneous, and that, as such, it

presumes that the awarenesses are similar; for without such a similarity there could not have been the erroneous appearance of unity. But, unless the difference of the awarenesses and their similarity be previously proved, there is nothing which can even suggest that the appearance of unity is erroneous¹. It cannot be urged that, if the existence of difference and similarity between the awarenesses of two different moments can be proved to be false, then only can the appearance of unity be proved to be true; for the appearance of unity is primary and directly proved by experience. Its evidence can be challenged only if the existence of difference between the awarenesses and their similarity be otherwise proved. The unity of awareness is a recognition of the identity of the awarenesses (pratyabhijnā), which is self-evident.

It has also been pointed out that the Buddhists give a different analysis of the fact of recognition. They hold that perception reveals the existence of things at the moment of perception, whereas recognition involves the supposition of their existence through a period of past time, and this cannot be apprehended by perception, which is limited to the present moment only. If it is suggested that recognition is due to present perception as associated with the impressions (samskāra) of previous experience, then such a recognition of identity would not prove the identity of the self as "I am he"-for in the self-luminous self there cannot be any impressions. The mere consciousness as the flash cannot prove any identity; for that is limited to the present moment and cannot refer to past experience and unite it with the experience of the present moment. The Buddhists on their side deny the existence of recognition as the perception of identity, and think that it is in reality not one but two concepts—"I" and "that" and not a separate experience of the identity of the self as persisting through time. To this the Vedantic reply is that, though there cannot be any impressions in the self as pure consciousness, yet the self as associated with the mind (antahkarana) can well have impressions (samskāra), and so recognition is possible². But it may be objected that the complex of the self and mind would then be playing the double rôle of knower and the known; for it is the mind containing the impressions and the self that together

¹ Vivaraṇa-prameya-saṃgraha, p. 76. ² kevale cidātmani janya-jñāna-tat-saṃskārayor asaṃbhave 'py antal karaṇavisiste tat-sambhavād ukta-pratyabhijnā kim na syāt. Ibid. p. 76.

play the part of the recognizer, and it is exactly those impressions together with the self that form the content of recognition alsoand hence in this view the agent and the object have to be regarded as one. But in reply to this Vidyāranya Muni urges that all systems of philosophy infer the existence of soul as different from the body; and, as such an inference is made by the self, the self is thus both the agent and the object of such inferences. Vidyāranya says that it may further be urged that the recognizer is constituted of the self in association with the mind, whereas the recognized entity is constituted of the self as qualified by past and present time1. Thus the recognition of self-identity does not strictly involve the fact of the oneness of the agent and its object. If it is urged that, since recognition of identity of self involves two concepts, it also involves two moments, then the assertion that all knowledge is momentary also involves two concepts, for momentariness cannot be regarded as being identical with knowledge. The complexity of a concept does not mean that it is not one but two different concepts occurring at two different moments. If such a maxim is accepted, then the theory that all knowledge is momentary cannot be admitted as one concept, but two concepts occurring at two moments; and hence momentariness cannot be ascribed to knowledge, as is done by the Buddhists. Nor can it be supposed, in accordance with the Prabhākara view, that the existence of the permanent "this self" is admitted merely on the strength of the recognizing notion of "self-identity"; for the self which abides through the past and exists in the present cannot be said to depend on a momentary concept of recognition of self-identity. The notion of self-identity is only a momentary notion, which lasts only at the present time; and hence the real and abiding self cannot owe its reality or existence merely to a psychological notion of the moment.

Again, if it is argued that memory, such as "I had an awareness of a book," shows that the self was existing at the past time when the book was perceived, it may be replied that such memory and previous experience may prove the past existence of the self, but it cannot prove that the self that was existing in the past is identical with the self that is now experiencing. The mere existence of self at two moments of time does not prove that the self had persisted through the intervening times. Two notions of

¹ antaḥkaraṇa-viśiṣṭatayaivātmanaḥ pratyabhijñātṛtvaṃ pūrvāpara-kāla-viśiṣṭatayā ca pratyabhijñeyatvam. Vivaraṇa-prameya-saṃgraha, p. 77.

two different times cannot serve to explain the idea of recognition, which presupposes the notion of persistence. If it were held that the two notions produce the notion of self-persistence through the notion of recognition, then that would mean that the Buddhist admits that one can recognize himself as "I am he." It cannot be said that, since the self itself cannot be perceived, there is no possibility of the perception of the identity of the self through recognition; for, when one remembers "I had an experience," that very remembrance proves that the self was perceived. Though at the time when one remembers it the self at the time of such memory is felt as the perceiver and not as the object of that self-perception, vet at the time of the previous experience which is now being remembered the self must have been itself the object of the perception. If it is argued that it is only the past awareness that is the object of memory and this awareness, when remembered, expresses the self as its cognizer, then to this it may be replied that since at the time of remembering there is no longer the past awareness, the cognizer on whom this awareness had to rest itself is also absent. It is only when an awareness reveals itself that it also reveals the cognizer on whom it rests; but, if an awareness is remembered, then the awareness which is remembered is only made an object of present awareness which is self-revealed. But the past awareness which is supposed to be remembered is past and lost and, as such, it neither requires a cognizer on which it has to rest nor actually reveals such a cognizer. It is only the self-revealed cognition that also immediately reveals the cognizer with its own revelation. But, when a cognition is mediated through memory, its cognizer is not manifested with its remembrance¹ So the self which experienced an awareness in the past can be referred to only through the mediation of memory. So, when the Prabhākaras hold that the existence of the self is realized through such a complex notion as "I am he," it has to be admitted that it is only through the process of recognition (pratyabhijnā) that the persistence of the self is established. The main point that Vidyāranya Muni urges in his Vivarana-prameya-samgraha is that the fact of recognition or the experience of self-identity cannot be explained by any assumption of two separate concepts, such as the memory of a past cognition or cognizer and the present awareness.

¹ svayamprakāśamānam hi samvedanam āśrayam sādhayati na tu smṛtiviṣayatayā para-prakāśyam. Vivarana-prameya-samgraha, p. 78.

We all feel that our selves are persisting through time and that I who experienced pleasure yesterday and I who am experiencing new pleasures to-day are identical; and the only theory by which this notion of self-persistence or self-identity can be explained is by supposing that the self exists and persists through time. The Buddhist attempts at explaining this notion of self-identity by the supposition of the operation of two separate concepts are wholly inadequate, as has already been shown. The perception of self-identity can therefore be explained only on the basis of a permanently existing self.

Again, the existence of self is not to be argued merely through the inference that cognition, will and feeling presuppose some entity to which they belong and that it is this entity that is called self; for, if that were the case, then no one would be able to distinguish his own self from that of others. For, if the self is only an entity which has to be presupposed as the possessor of cognition, will, etc., then how does one recognize one's own cognition of things as differing from that of others? What is it that distinguishes my experience from that of others? My self must be immediately perceived by me in order that I may relate any experience to myself. So the self must be admitted as being self-manifested in all experience; without admitting the self to be self-luminous in all experience the difference between an experience as being my own and as belonging to others could not be explained. It may be objected by some that the self is not self-luminous by itself, but only because, in self-consciousness, the self is an object of the cognizing operation (samvit-karma). But this is hardly valid; for the self is not only cognized as an object of self-consciousness. but also in itself in all cognitional operations. The self cannot be also regarded as being manifested by ideas or percepts. It is not true that the cognition of the self occurs after the cognition of the book or at any different time from it. For it is true that the cognition of the self and that of the book take place at the same point of time; for the same awareness cannot comprehend two different kinds of objects at the same time. If this was done at different points of time, then that would not explain our experience—"I have known this." For such a notion implies a relation between the knower and the known; and, if the knower and the known were grasped in knowledge at two different points of time, there is nothing which could unite them together in the

same act of knowledge. It is also wrong to maintain that the self is manifested only as the upholder of ideas; for the self is manifested in the knowing operation itself. So, since the self cannot be regarded as being either the upholder or cognizer of ideas or their object, there is but one way in which it can be considered as selfmanifesting or self-revealing (sva-prakāsa). The immediacy of the self is thus its self-revealing and self-manifesting nature. The existence of self is thus proved by the self-luminous nature of the self. The self is the cognizer of the objects only in the sense that under certain conditions of the operation of the mind there is the mind-object contact through a particular sense, and, as the result thereof, these objects appear in consciousness by a strange illusion; so also ideas of the mind, concepts, volitions and emotions appear in consciousness and themselves appear as conscious states, as if consciousness was their natural and normal character, though in reality they are only illusorily imposed upon the consciousnessthe self-luminous self.

Ānandabodha Bhattārakācārya, from whom Vidyāranya often borrows his arguments, says that the self-luminosity of the self has to be admitted, because it cannot be determined as being manifested by anything else. The self cannot be regarded as being perceived by a mental perception (mānasa pratyaksa); for that would involve the supposition that the self is the object of its own operation; for cognition is at any rate a function of the self. The functions of cognition belonging to the self cannot affect the self itself¹. The Vedanta has also to fight against the Prabhakara view which regards cognition as manifesting the object and the self along with itself, as against its own view that it is the self which is identical with knowledge and which is self-manifesting. Anandabodha thus objects to the Prabhākara view, that it is the object-cognition which expresses both the self and the not-self, and holds that the self cannot be regarded as an object of awareness. Anandabodha points out that it may be enunciated as a universal proposition that what is manifested by cognition must necessarily be an object of cognition, and that therefore, if the self is not an object of cognition, it is not manifested by cognition². Therefore the self or the cognizer is not manifested by cognition; for, like

¹ tathā sati svādhāra-vijñāna-vṛtti-vyāpyatvād ātmanah karmatve svätmani vṛtti-virodhād iti brümah. Nyāya-makaranda, p. 131.
² Ibid. pp. 134-135.

cognition, it is self-manifested and immediate without being an object of cognition¹.

The self-luminosity of cognition is argued by Anandabodha. He says that, if it is held that cognition does not manifest itself, though it manifests its objects, it may be replied that, if it were so, then at the time when an object is cognized the cognizer would have doubted if he had any cognition at the time or not. If anyone is asked whether he has seen a certain person or not, he is sure about his own knowledge that he has seen him and never doubts it. It is therefore certain that, when an object is revealed by any cognition, the cognition is itself revealed as well. If it is argued that such a cognition is revealed by some other cognition, then it might require some other cognition and that another and so on ad infinitum; and thus there is a vicious infinite. Nor can it be held that there is some other mental cognition (occurring either simultaneously with the awareness of the object or at a later moment) by which the awareness of the awareness of the object is further cognized. For from the same mind-contact there cannot be two different awarenesses of the type discussed. If at a later moment, then, there is mind-activity, cessation of one mind-contact, and again another mind-activity and the rise of another mind-contact, that would imply many intervening moments, and thus the cognition which is supposed to cognize an awareness of an object would take place at a much later moment, when the awareness which it has to reveal is already passed. It has therefore to be admitted that cognition is itself self-luminous and that, while manifesting other objects, it manifests itself also. The objection raised is that the self or the cognition cannot affect itself by its own functioning (vrtti); the reply is that cognition is like light and has no intervening operation by which it affects itself or its objects. Just as light removes darkness, helps the operation of the eye and illuminates the object and manifests itself all in one moment without any intervening operation of any other light, so cognition also in one flash manifests itself and its objects, and there is no functioning of it by which it has to affect itself. This cognition cannot be described as being mere momentary flashes, on the ground that, when there is the blue awareness, there is not the yellow awareness; for apart from the blue awareness, the

¹ samveditā na samvid-adhīna-prakāšah samvit-karmatām antarena aparok-satvāt samvedanavat. Nyāya-makaranda, p. 135. This argument is borrowed verbatim by Vidyāranya in his Vivarana-prameya-samgraha, p. 85.

yellow awareness or the white awareness there is also the natural basic awareness or consciousness, which cannot be denied. would be wrong to say that there are only the particular awarenesses which appear and vanish from moment to moment; for, had there been only a series of particular awarenesses, then there would be nothing by which their differences could be realized. Each awareness in the series would be of a particular and definite character, and, as it passed away, would give place to another, and that again to another, so that there would be no way of distinguishing one awareness from another; for according to the theory under discussion there is no consciousness except the passing awarenesses, and thus there would be no way by which their differences could be noticed; for, even though the object of awareness, such as blue and yellow, differed amongst themselves, that would fail to explain how the difference of a blue awareness and a yellow awareness could be apprehended. So the best would be to admit the self to be of the nature of pure consciousness.

It will appear from the above discussion that the Vedanta had to refute three opponents in establishing its doctrine that the self is of the nature of pure consciousness and that it is permanent and not momentary. The first opponent was the Buddhist, who believed neither in the existence of the self nor in the nature of any pure permanent consciousness. The Buddhist objection that there was no permanent self could be well warded off by the Vedanta by appealing to the verdict of our notion of self-identity—which could not be explained on the Buddhist method by the supposition of two separate notions of a past "that self" and the present "I am." Nor can consciousness be regarded as being nothing more than a series of passing ideas or particular awarenesses; for on such a theory it would be impossible to explain how we can react upon our mental states and note their differences. Consciousness has thus to be admitted as permanent. Against the second opponent, the Naiyāyika, the Vedānta urges that the self is not the inferred object to which awarenesses, volitions or feelings belong, but is directly and immediately intuited. For, had it not been so, how could one distinguish his own experiences as his own and as different from those of others? The internalness of my own experiences shows that they are directly intuited as my own, and not merely supposed as belonging to some self who was the possessor of his experiences. For inference cannot reveal the

internalness of any cognition or feeling. Against the third opponent, the Mīmāṃsaka, the Vedānta urges that the self-revealing character belongs to the self which is identical with thought—as against the Mīmāṃsā view, that thought as a self-revealing entity revealed the self and the objects as different from it. The identity of the self and thought and the self-revealing character of it are also urged; and it is shown by a variety of dialectical reasoning that such a supposition is the only reasonable alternative that is left to us.

This self as pure consciousness is absolutely impersonal, unlimited and infinite. In order to make it possible that this one self should appear as many individuals and as God, it is supposed that it manifests itself differently through the veil of māyā. Thus, according to the Siddhanta-lesa, it is said in the Prakaţarthavivarana that, when this pure consciousness is reflected through the beginningless, indescribable māyā, it is called Isvara or God. But, when it is reflected through the limited parts of māyā containing powers of veiling and of diverse creation (called $avidy\bar{a}$), there are the manifestations of individual souls or jīvas. It is again said in the Tattva-viveka of Nrsimhāśrama that, when this pure consciousness is reflected through the pure sattva qualities, as dominating over other impure parts of prakrti, there is the manifestation of God. Whereas, when the pure consciousness is reflected through the impure parts of rajas and tamas, as dominating over the sattva part of prakrti (called also avidyā), there are the manifestations of the individual selves or jivas. The same prakrti in its two aspects, as predominating in sattva and as predominating in rajas and tamas, goes by the name of māyā and avidyā and forms the conditioning factors (upādhi) of the pure consciousness, which on account of the different characters of the conditioning factors of māvā and avidyā appear as the omniscient God and the ignorant individual souls. Sarvajñātma Muni thinks that, when the pure consciousness is reflected through avidya, it is called Isvara, and, when it is reflected through mind (antahkarana), it is called jiva.

These various methods of accounting for the origin of individual selves and God have but little philosophical significance. But they go to show that the principal interest of the Vedānta lies in establishing the supreme reality of a transcendental principle of pure consciousness, which, though always untouched and unattached in its own nature, is yet the underlying principle which

can explain all the facts of the enlivening and enlightening of all our conscious experiences. All that is limited, he it an individual self or an individual object of awareness, is in some sense or other an illusory imposition of the modification of a non-conscious principle on the principle of consciousness. The Vedānta is both unwilling and incapable of explaining the nature of the world-process in all its details, in which philosophy and science are equally interested. Its only interest is to prove that the world-process presupposes the existence of a principle of pure consciousness which is absolutely and ultimately real, as it is immediate and intuitive. Reality means what is not determined by anything else; and in this sense pure consciousness is the only reality—and all else is indescribable—neither real nor unreal; and the Vedānta is not interested to discover what may be its nature.

Vedāntic Cosmology.

From what has been said above it is evident that māyā (also called avidyā or ajñāna) is in itself an indefinable mysterious stuff, which has not merely a psychological existence, but also an ontological existence as well. It is this ajñāna which on the one hand forms on the subjective plane the mind and the senses (the self alone being Brahman and ultimately real), and on the other hand, on the objective plane, the whole of the objective universe. This ajñāna has two powers, the power of veiling or covering (avarana) and the power of creation (viksepa). The power of veiling, though small, like a little cloud veiling the sun with a diameter of millions of miles, may, in spite of its limited nature, cover up the infinite, unchangeable self by veiling its self-luminosity as cognizer. The veiling of the self means veiling the shining unchangeable self-perception of the self, as infinite, eternal and limitless, pure consciousness, which as an effect of such veiling appears as limited, bound to sense-cognitions and sense-enjoyments and functioning as individual selves¹. It is through this covering power of aiñana that the self appears as an agent and an enjoyer of pleasures and pains and subject to ignorant fears of rebirth, like the illusory perception of a piece of rope in darkness as a snake. Just as through the creative power of ignorance a piece of

¹ vastuto 'jñānasyātmāchādakatvābhāve 'pi pramātṛ-buddhimātrāchādakatvena ajñānasyātmāchādakatvam upacārād ucyate. Subodhinī on Vedānta-sāra, p. 13, Nirnaya-Sāgara Press, Bombay, 1916.

rope, the real nature of which is hidden from view, appears as a snake, so does ignorance by its creative power create on the hidden self the manifold world-appearance. As the ajñāna is supposed to veil by its veiling power (āvaraņa-śakti) only the self-cognizing and self-revealing aspect of the self, the other aspect of the self as pure being is left open as the basis on which the entire worldappearance is created by the creative power thereof. The pure consciousness, veiled as it is by ajñāna with its two powers, can be regarded as an important causal agent (nimitta), when its nature as pure consciousness forming the basis of the creation of the worldappearance is emphasized; it can be regarded as the material cause, when the emphasis is put on its covering part, the ajñāna. It is like a spider, which, so far as it weaves its web, can be regarded as a causal agent, and, so far as it supplies from its own body the materials of the web, can be regarded as the material cause of the web, when its body aspect is emphasized. The creative powers (viksepa-śakti) of ajñāna are characterized as being threefold, after the manner of Sāmkhya prakrti, as sattva, rajas and tamas. With the pure consciousness as the basis and with the associated creative power of ajñāna predominating in tamas, space (ākāśa) is first produced; from ākāśa comes air, from air fire, from fire water, from water earth. It is these elements in their fine and uncompounded state that in the Sāmkhya and the Purānas are called tan-mātras. It is out of these that the grosser materials are evolved as also the subtle bodies 1. The subtle bodies are made up of seventeen parts,

As to how the subtle elements are combined for the production of grosser elements there are two different theories, viz. the trivit-karana and the pañetkarana. The trivrt-karana means that fire, water and earth (as subtle elements) are each divided into two halves, thus producing two equal parts of each; then the three half parts of the three subtle elements are again each divided into two halves, thus producing two quarter parts of each. Then the original first half of each element is combined with the two quarters of other two elements. Thus each element has half of itself with two quarter parts of other two elements. Vācaspati and Amalānanda prefer triert-karaņa to pañci-karaņa; for they think that there is no point in admitting that air and akasa have also parts of other elements integrated in them, and the Vedic texts speak of trivrt-karana and not of pañci-karaṇa. The pañci-karaṇa theory holds that the five subtle elements are divided firstly into two halves, and then one of the two halves of these five elements is divided again into four parts, and then the first half of each subtle element is combined with the one-fourth of each half of all the other elements excepting the element of which there is the full half as a constituent. Thus each element is made up of one-half of itself, and the other half of it is constituted of the one-fourth of each of the other elements (i.e. one-eighth of each of the other four elements), and thus each element has at least some part of other elements integrated into it. This view is supported by the Vedānta-paribhāṣā and its Sikhāmani commentary, p. 363.

excluding the subtle elements, and are called sūksma-śarīra or linga-sarīra. This subtle body is composed of the five cognitive senses, the five conative senses, the five vāyus or biomotor activities, buddhi (intellect) and manas, together with the five subtle elements in tanmatric forms. The five cognitive senses, the auditory, tactile, visual, gustatory and olfactory senses, are derived from the sattva parts of the five elements, akasa, vayu, agni, ap and prthivi respectively. Buddhi, or intellect, means the mental state of determination or affirmation (niścayātmikā antahkarana-vṛtti). Manas means the two mental functions of vikalpa and sankalpa or of sankalpa alone resulting in doubt1. The function of mind (citta) and the function of egoism (ahamkāra) are included in buddhi and manas2. They are all produced from the sattva parts of the five elements and are therefore elemental. Though they are elemental, yet, since they are produced from the compounded sattva parts of all the elements, they have the revealing function displayed in their cognitive operations. Buddhi with the cognitive senses is called the sheath of knowledge (vijnānamaya-koṣa). Manas with the cognitive senses is called the sheath of manas (manomaya-kosa). It is the self as associated with the vijñānamaya-koşa that feels itself as the agent, enjoyer, happy or unhappy, the individual self (jiva) that passes through worldly experience and rebirth. The conative senses are produced from the rajas parts of the five elements. The five vāyus or biomotor activities are called Prāna or the breathing activity, Udāna or the upward activity and Samāna or the digestive activity. There are some who add another five vāyus such as the Nāga, the vomiting Apāna trovānes activity, Kūrma, the reflex activity of opening the eyelids, Krkala, the activity of coughing, Devadatta, the activity of yawning, and Dhanañjaya, the nourishing activity. These prānas

¹ The Vedānta-sāra speaks of sankalpa and vikalpa, and this is explained by the Subodhinī as meaning doubt. See Vedānta-sāra and Subodhinī, p. 17. The Vedānta-paribhāṣā and its commentators speak of sankalpa as being the only unction of manas, but it means "doubt." See pp. 88-89 and 358.

² smaranākāra-vyttimad antaḥkaraṇaṃ cittam (Vedānta-paribhāṣā-Maṇi-prabhā, p. 89). anayor eva cittāhaṃkārayor antarbhāvaḥ (Vedānta-sāra, p. 17). But the Vedānta-paribhāṣā says that manas, buddhi, ahaṃkāra and citta, all four, constitute the inner organ (antaḥkaraṇa). See Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 88. The Vedānta-sāra however does not count four functions buddhi, manas, citta, ahaṃkāra; citta and ahaṃkāra are regarded as the same as buddhi and manas. Thus according to the Vedānta-sāra there are only two categories. But since the Vedānta-paribhāṣā only mentions buddhi and manas as constituents of the subtle body, one need not think that there is ultimately any difference between it and the Vedānta-sāra.

together with the cognitive senses form the active sheath of prāṇa (prāṇamaya-koṣa). Of these three sheaths, the vijñānamaya, manomaya and prāṇamaya, the vijñānamaya sheath plays the part of the active agent (kartr-rūpah); the manomaya is the source of all desires and volition, and is therefore regarded as having an instrumental function; the prāṇamaya sheath represents the motor functions. These three sheaths make up together the subtle body or the sūkṣma-śarīra. Hiraṇyagarbha (also called Sūtrātmā or prāṇa) is the god who presides over the combined subtle bodies of all living beings. Individually each subtle body is supposed to belong to every being. These three sheaths, involving as they do all the subconscious impressions from which our conscious experience is derived, are therefore called a dream (jāgrad-vāsanāmayatvāt svapna).

The process of the formation of the gross elements from the subtle parts of the elements is technically called pañcīkaraṇa. It consists in a compounding of the elements in which one half of each rudimentary element is mixed with the eighth part of each other rudimentary element. It is through such a process of compounding that each element possesses some of the properties of the other elements. The entire universe consists of seven upper worlds (Bhuḥ, Bhuvaḥ, Svar, Mahar, Janaḥ, Tapaḥ and Satyam), seven lower worlds (Atala, Vitala, Sutala, Rasātala, Talātala, Mahātala and Pātāla) and all the gross bodies of all living beings. There is a cosmic deity who presides over the combined physical bodies of all beings, and this deity is called Virāt. There is also the person, the individual who presides over each one of the bodies, and, in this aspect, the individual is called Viśva.

The ajñāna as constituting antaḥkaraṇa or mind, involving the operative functions of buddhi and manas, is always associated with the self; it is by the difference of these antaḥkaraṇas that one self appears as many individual selves, and it is through the states of these antaḥkaraṇas that the veil over the self and the objects are removed, and as a result of this there is the cognition of objects. The antaḥkaraṇa is situated within the body, which it thoroughly pervades. It is made up of the sattva parts of the five rudimentary elements, and, being extremely transparent, comes into touch with the sense objects through the specific senses and assumes their forms. It being a material stuff, there is one part inside the body, another part in touch with the sense-objects, and a third part between the two and connected with them both as one whole.

The interior part of the antahkarana is the ego or the agent. The intervening part has the action of knowledge, called also vrtti-jnāna. The third part, which at the time of cognition is transformed into the form of the sense-objects, has the function of making them manifested in knowledge as its objects. The antahkarana of three parts being transparent, pure consciousness can well be manifested in it. Though pure consciousness is one, yet it manifests the three different parts of the antahkarana in three different ways, as the cognizer (pramātr), cognitive operation (pramāna) and the cognition, or the percept (pramiti). In each of the three cases the reality is the part of the pure consciousness, as it expresses itself through the three different modifications of the antahkarana. The sense-objects in themselves are but the veiled pure consciousness, brahman, as forming their substance. The difference between the individual consciousness (jīva-caitanya) and the brahman-consciousness (brahma-caitanya) is that the former represents pure consciousness, as conditioned by or as reflected through the antahkarana, while the latter is the unentangled infinite consciousness, on the basis of which all the cosmic creations of $m\bar{a}v\bar{a}$ are made. The covering of avidya, for the breaking of which the operation of the antahkarana is deemed necessary, is of two kinds, viz. subjective ignorance and objective ignorance. When I say that I do not know a book, that implies subjective ignorance as signified by "I do not know," and objective ignorance as referring to the book. The removal of the first is a precondition of all kinds of knowledge, perceptual or inferential, while the second is removed only in perceptual knowledge. It is diverse in kind according to the form and content of the sense-objects; and each perceptual cognition removes only one specific ignorance, through which the particular cognition arises1.

Śankara and his School.

It is difficult to say exactly how many books were written by Sankara himself. There is little doubt that quite a number of books attributed to Sankara were not written by him. I give here a list of those books that seem to me to be his genuine works, though it is extremely difficult to be absolutely certain.

¹ See Madhusūdana Sarasvati's *Siddhānta-bindu*, pp. 132–150; and Brahmānanda Sarasvati's *Nyāya-ratnāvalī*, pp. 132–150, Śrīvidyā Press, Kumba-konam, 1893.

I have chosen only those works which have been commented on by other writers, since this shows that these have the strength of tradition behind them to support their authenticity. The most important works of Sankara are his commentaries on the ten Upanisads, İśā, Kena, Kaṭha, Praśna, Muṇḍaka, Māṇḍūkya, Aitareya, Taittirīya, Chāndogya and Brhad-āranyaka and the Sāriraka-mīmāmsā-bhāṣya. The main reasons why a number of works which probably were not written by him were attributed to him seem to be twofold; first, because there was another writer of the same name, i.e. Sankarācārya, and second, the tendency of Indian writers to increase the dignity of later works by attributing them to great writers of the past. The attribution of all the Purānas to Vyāsa illustrates this very clearly. Sankara's Īsopanisadbhāṣya has one commentary by Ānandajñāna and another, Dipikā, by the other Sankara Ācārya. His Kenopanisad-bhāsya has two commentaries, Kenopanisad-bhāṣya-vivarana and a commentary by Ānandajnāna. The Kāthakopanisad-bhāsya has two commentaries, by Anandajñana and by Balagopala Yogindra. The Prasnopanisadbhāṣya has two commentaries, by Ānandajñāna and Nārāyanendra Sarasvatī. The Mundakopanisad-bhāsya has two commentaries, by Anandajñāna and Abhinavanārāyanendra Sarasvatī. Māndūkyopanisad-bhāṣya has two commentaries, by Ānandajñāna and Mathuranatha Śukla, and a summary, called Mandukyopanisadbhāsyārtha-samgraha, by Rāghavānanda. The Aitareyopanisadbhāsya has six commentaries, by Ānandajñāna, Abhinavanārāvana. Nrsimha Ācārya, Bālakṛṣṇadāsa, Jñānāmṛta Yati, and Viśveśvara Tīrtha. The Taittirīyopanisad-bhāṣya seems to have only one commentary on it, by Anandajñana. The Chandogyopanisad has two commentaries, called Bhāṣya-tippana, and a commentary by Anandajñāna. The Brhad-āranyakopanisad-bhāsya has a commentary by Anandajñāna and a big independent work on it by Sureśvara, called Brhad-āranyakopanisad-bhāṣya-vārttika, or simply Vārttika, which has also a number of commentaries; these have been noticed in the section on Sureśvara. His Aparokṣānubhava has four commentaries, by Śankara Ācārya, by Bālagopāla, by Candeśvara Varman (Anubhava-dīpikā), and by Vidyāraņya. His commentary on Gaudapāda's Māndūkya-kārikā, called Gaudapādīya-bhāsya or Agamaśāstra-vivarana, has two commentaries, one by Śuddhānanda and one by Anandajñana. His Atma-jñanopadesa has two commentaries, by Anandajñana and by Pūrnananda Tirtha; the Eka-śloka has a

commentary called Tattva-dīpana, by Svayamprakāśa 1 ati; no commentary however is attributed to the Viveku-cūdāmaņi, which seems to be genuinely attributed to Sankara; the Atma-bodha has at least five commentaries, by Advayananda, Bhasurananda, Bodhendra (Bhāva-prakāśika), Madhusūdana Sarasvatī and Rār ananda Tīrtha; The Atmanatma-viveka has at least four commentaries, by Padmapāda, Pūrnānanda Tīrtha, Sāyana and Svayamprakāśa Yati. The Atmopadesa-vidhi is said to have a commentary by Anandaiñana; the Ananda-lahari has about twenty-four commentaries, by Appaya Dīksita, Kavirāja, Krsna Ācārya (Mañju-bhāsinī), Keśayabhatta, Kaivalyāśrama (Saubhāgya-vardhinī), Gangāharī (Tattvadīpikā), Gangādhara, Gopīrāma, Gopīkānta Sārvabhauma (Anandalahari-tari), Jagadīśa?, Jagannātha Pañcānana, Narasimha, Brahmānanda (Bhāvārtha-dīpikā), Malla Bhatta, Mahādeva Vidyāvagīśa. Mahādeva Vaidva, Rāmacandra, Rāmabhadra, Ramānanda Tīrtha, Laksmīdhara Deśika and Viśvambhara and Śrīkantha Bhatta and another called Vidvan-manoramā. The Upadeśa-sāhasrī has at least four commentaries, by Anandajñana, by Rama Tirtha (Padayojanikā), Bodha-vidhi by a pupil of Vidyādhāman, and by Sankarācārya. His Cid-ānanda-stava-rāja, called also Cid-ānanda-daśaślokī or simply Daśa-śloki, has also a number of commentaries and subcommentaries, such as the Siddhanta-tattva-bindu by Madhusūdana Sarasvatī; Madhusūdana's commentary was commented on by a number of persons, such as Nārāyana Yati (Laghu-tīkā), Purusottama Sarasvatī (Siddhānta-bindu-sandīpana), Pūrnānanda Sarasvatī (Tattva-viveka), Gauda Brahmānanda Sarasvatī (Siddhānta-bindu-nyāya-ratnāvalī), by Saccidānanda and Sivalāla Sarman. Gauda Brahmānanda's commentary, Siddhānta-bindu-nyāyaratnāvalī, was further commented on by Krsnakānta (Siddhāntanyāya-ratna-pradīpikā). Śankara's Drg-drsya-prakarana was commented on by Rāmacandra Tīrtha; his Pañcīkarana-prakriyā has again a number of commentaries—that by Sureśvara is Pañcikarana-vārttika, and this has a further commentary, called Pañcīkarana-vārttikābharana, by Abhinavanārāyanendra Sarasvatī, pupil of Iñanendra Sarasvatī. Other commentaries on the Pañcikaranaare Pancikarana-bhāva-prakāsikā, Pancikarana-ţikātattva-candrikā, Pañcīkarana-tātparya-candrikā and Pañcīkaranavivarana by Anandajñāna, Pañcīkarana-vivarana by Svayamprakāśa Yati and by Prajñānānanda, and a sub-commentary called Tattva-candrikā. Śańkara also commented on the Bhagavad-

gîtā; this commentary has been examined in the chapter on the Bhagavad-gitā in the present volume. His Laghu-vākya-vṛtti has a commentary called Puspānjali, and another, called Laghuvākya-vrtti-prakāśikā, by Rāmānanda Sarasvatī; his Vākya-vrtti has a commentary by Anandajñāna, and another commentary. called Vākya-vrtti-prakāśikā, by Viśveśvara Pandita. He starts his Vākya-vrtti in the same manner as Īśvarakṛṣṇa starts his Sāmkhyakārikā, namely by stating that, suffering from the threefold sorrows of life, the pupil approaches a good teacher for instruction regarding the ways in which he may be liberated from them. Sureśvara in his Naiskarmya-siddhi also starts in the same manner and thus gives a practical turn to the study of philosophy, a procedure which one does not find in his Brahma-sūtra-bhāṣya. The answer, of course, is the same as that given in so many other places, that one is liberated only by the proper realization of the Upanisad texts that declare the unity of the self with Brahman. He then goes on to show that all external things and all that is called mind or mental or psychical is extraneous to self, which is of the nature of pure consciousness; he also declares here that the effects of one's deeds are disposed by God (Iśvara), the superior illusory form of Brahman, and not by the mysterious power of apūrva admitted by the Mīmāmsists. He concludes this short work of fifty-three verses by insisting on the fact that, though the unity texts (advaita-śruti) of the Upanisads, such as "that (Brahman) art thou," may have a verbal construction that implies some kind of duality, yet their main force is in the direct and immediate apperception of the pure self without any intellectual process as implied by relations of identity. The Vākya-vrtti is thus conceived differently from the Aparoksānubhūti, where yoga processes of posture and breath-regulations are described, as being helpful for the realization of the true nature of self. This may, of course, give rise to some doubts regarding the true authorship of the Aparokṣānubhūti, though it may be explained as being due to the different stages of the development of Sankara's own mind; divergences of attitude are also noticeable in his thoroughgoing idealism in his commentary on Gaudapāda's Kārikā, where the waking life is regarded as being exactly the same as dream life, and external objects are deemed to have no existence whatsoever, being absolutely like dream-perceptions-as contrasted with his Śārīraka-mīmāmsā-bhāsya, where external objects are considered to have an indescribable existence, very different from dreamcreations. The Upadeśa-sāhasrī, which in its nineteen chapters contains only six hundred and seventy-five stanzas, 's more in a line with the Vākya-vrtti, and, though the well-known Vedānta topics are all slightly touched upon, greater emphasis is laid on the proper realization of the Vedantic unity texts, such as "that art thou," as means to the attainment of Brahmahood. There are also a number of short poems and hymns attributed to Sankarācārya, such as the Advaitānubhūti, Ātma-bodha, Tattvopadeśa, Praudhānubhūti, etc., some of which are undoubtedly his, while there are many others which may not be so; but in the absence of further evidence it is difficult to come to any decisive conclusion¹. These hymns do not contain any additional philosophical materials, but are intended to stir up a religious fervour and emotion in favour of the monistic faith. In some cases, however, the commentators have found an excuse for extracting from them Vedantic doctrines which cannot be said to follow directly from them. As an illustration of this, it may be pointed out that out of the ten ślokas of Sankara Madhusūdana made a big commentary, and Brahmānanda Sarasvatī wrote another big commentary on that of Madhusūdana and elaborated many of the complex doctrines of the Vedanta which have but little direct bearing upon the verses themselves. But Sankara's most important work is the Brahma-sūtra-bhāsya, which was commented on by Vācaspati Miśra in the ninth century, Anandajñana in the thirteenth, and Govindananda in the fourteenth century. Commentaries on Vacaspati's commentary will be noticed in the section on Vācaspati Miśra. Subrahmanya wrote a verse summary of Sankara's commentary which he calls Bhāsyārthanyāya-mālā; and Bhāratī Tīrtha wrote also the Vaiyāsika-nyāya $m\bar{a}l\bar{a}$, in which he tried to deal with the general arguments of the Brahma-sūtra on the lines of Śankara's commentary. Many other persons, such as Vaidyanātha Dīksita, Devarāma Bhatta, etc., also wrote topical summaries of the main lines of the general arguments of the Brahma-sūtra on the lines of Sankara's commentary, called Nyāya-mālā or Adhikarana-mālā. But many other persons were inspired by Sankara's commentary (or by the commentaries of Vācaspati Miśra and other great writers of the Śankara school) and under the name of independent commentaries on the Brahma-sūtra merely repeated what was contained in these. Thus

¹ The Atma-bodha was commented upon by Padmapada in his commentary Atma-bodha-vyākhyāna, called also Vedānta-sāra.

Amalānanda wrote his Sāstra-darpaṇa imitating the main lines of Vācaspati's commentary on Śańkara's commentary; and Svayamprakāśa also wrote his Vedānta-naya-bhūṣaṇa, in which for the most part he summarized the views of Vācaspati's Bhāmatī commentary. Hari Dīkṣita wrote his Brahma-sūtra-vṛtti, Śaṅkarānanda his Brahma-sūtra-dīpikā and Brahmānanda his Vedānta-sūtra-muktā-valī as independent interpretations of the Brahma-sūtra, but these were all written mainly on the lines of Śaṅkara's own commentary, supplementing it with additional Vedāntic ideas that had been developed after Śaṅkara by the philosophers of his school of thought or explaining Śaṅkara's Bhāṣya¹.

Mandana, Sureśvara and Viśvarūpa.

General tradition has always identified Maṇḍana with Sureśvara and Viśvarūpa; and Col. G. A. Jacob in his introduction to the second edition of the Naiṣkarmya-siddhi seems willing to believe this tradition. The tradition probably started from Vidyāraṇya's Śaṅkara-dig-vijaya, where Maṇḍana is spoken of as being named not only Umbeka, but also Viśvarūpa (VIII. 63). He further says in x. 4 of the same work that, when Maṇḍana became a follower of Śaṅkara, he received from him the name Sureśvara. But the Śaṅkara-dig-vijaya is a mythical biography, and it is certainly very risky to believe any of its statements, unless corroborated by other reliable evidences. There is little doubt that Sureśvara was

¹ Some of these commentaries are: Brahma-sūtra-bhāṣyārtha-saṃgraha by Brahmānanda Yati, pupil of Viśveśvarānanda, Brahma-sūtrārtha-dipikā by Venkața, son of Gauri and Siva, Brahma-sutra-vrtti (called also Mitākṣarā) by Annam Bhatta, and Brahma-sūtra-bhāṣya-vyākhyā (called also Vidyā-śrī) by Jňanottama Bhattaraka, pupil of Jňanaghana. The peculiarity of this last work is that it is the only commentary on the eka-jīva-vāda line that the present writer could trace. In addition to these some more commentaries may be mentioned, such as Brahma-sūtra-vrtti by Dharma Bhatta, pupil of Rāmacandrārya and pupil's pupil of Mukundāśrama, Sūtra-bhāṣya-vyākhyāna (called also Brahmavidya-bharana) by Advaitānanda, pupil of Rāmānanda and pupil's pupil of Brahmānanda, Brahma-sūtra-bhāsya-vyākhyā (called also Nyāya-raksā-mani) by Appaya Diksita, Brahma-tattva-prakāšikā (which is different from an earlier treatise called Brahma-prakāśikā) by Sadāśivendra Sarasvatī, Brahma-sūtropanyāsa by Rāmeśvara Bhāratī, by a pupil of Rāmānanda, Śārīraka-mīmāmsāsūtra-siddhānta-kaumudī by Subrahmanya Agnicin Makhīndra, Vedānta-kaustubha by Sitarama; none of which seem to be earlier than the sixteenth century. But Ananyānubhava, the teacher of Prakāśātman (A.D. 1200), seems to have written another commentary, called Sārīraka-nyāya-maņimālā. Prakāśātman himself also wrote a metrical summary of the main contents of Sankara's Bhāsya called Sārīraka-mīmāmsā-nyāya-samgraha, and Kṛṣṇānubhūti, in much later times, wrote a similar metrical summary, called Sārīraka-nīmāmsā-samgraha.

the author of a Vārttika, or commentary in verse, on Śańkara's Brhad-āranyaka Upaniṣad (which was also summa ized by Vidyaranya in a work called Vārttika-sāra, which latter was further commented on by Maheśvara Tīrtha in his commentary, called the Laghu-samgraha). The Vārttika of Sureśvara was commented on by at least two commentators, Anandagiri in his Śāstra-prakāśikā and Anandapūrna in his Nyaya-kalpa latikā. In a commentary on the Parāsara-smṛti published in the Bib. Ind. series (p. 51) a quotation from this Vārttika is attributed to Visvarūpa; but this commentary is a late work, and in all probability it relied on Vidyāranya's testimony that Viśvarūpa and Sureśvara were identically the same person. Vidyāranya also, in his Vivarana-prameyasamgraha, p. 92, quotes a passage from Sureśvara's Vārttika (IV. 8), attributing it to Viśvarūpa. But in another passage of the Vivaraņapramey :- samgraha (p. 224) he refers to a Vedanta doctrine, attributing it to the author of the Brahma-siddhi. But the work has not yet been published, and its manuscripts are very scarce: the present writer had the good fortune to obtain one. A fairly detailed examination of the philosophy of this work will be given in a separate section. The Brahma-siddhi is an important work, and it was commented on by Vācaspati in his Tattva-samīksā, by Ānandapūrna in his Brahma-siddhi-vyākhyā-ratna, by Sankhapāni in his Brahma-siddhi-tikā, and by Citsukha in his Abhiprāyaprakāśikā. But only the latter two works are available in manuscripts. Many important works however refer to the Brahma-siddhi and its views generally as coming from the author of Brahma-siddhi (Brahma-siddhi-kāra). But in none of these references, so far as it is known to the present writer, has the author of Brahma-siddhi been referred to as Sureśvara. The Brahma-siddhi was written in verse and prose, since two quotations from it in Citsukha's Tattvapradīpikā (p. 381, Nirnaya-Sāgara Press) and Nyāya-kanikā (p. 80) are in verse, while there are other references, such as Tattvapradipikā (p. 140) and elsewhere, which are in prose. There is, however, little doubt that the Brahma-siddhi was written by Mandana or Mandana Miśra; for both Śrīdhara in his Nyāyakandalī (p. 218) and Citsukha in his Tattva-pradīpikā (p. 140) refer to Mandana as the author of the Brahma-siddhi. Of these the evidence of Śrīdhara, who belonged to the middle of the tenth century, ought to be considered very reliable, as he lived within a hundred years of the death of Mandana; whoever Mandana may have been,

since he lived after Śańkara (A.D. 820), he could not have flourished very much earlier than the middle of the ninth century. It is, therefore, definitely known that the Naiṣkarmya-siddhi and the Vārttika were written by Sureśvara, and the Brahma-siddhi by Maṇḍana. The question regarding the identity of these two persons may be settled, if the views or opinions of the Brahma-siddhi can be compared or contrasted with the views of the Naiṣkarmya-siddhi or the Vārttika. From the few quotations that can be traced in the writings of the various writers who refer to it it is possible to come to some fairly decisive conclusions.

Of all passages the most important is that quoted from the Brahma-siddhi in the Vivarana-prameya-samgraha (p. 224). It is said there that according to the author of the Brahma-siddhi it is the individual persons (jīvāh, in the plural) who by their own individual ignorance (svāvidvavā) create for themselves on the changeless Brahman the false world-appearance. Neither in itself, nor with the $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$, or as reflection in $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$, is Brahman the cause of the world (Brahma na jagat-kāranam). The appearances then are but creations of individual ignorance, and individual false experiences of the world have therefore no objective basis. The agreement of individual experiences is due to similarity of illusions in different persons who are suffering under the delusive effects of the same kinds of ignorance; this may thus be compared with the delusive experience of two moons by a number of persons. Not all persons experience the same world; their delusive experiences are similar, but the objective basis of their experience is not the same (samvādas tu bahu-puruṣāvagata-dvitīya-candravat sādrśyād upapadyate). If this account is correct, as may well be supposed, then Mandana Miśra may be regarded as the originator of the Vedantic doctrine of drsti-srsti-vada, which was in later times so forcefully formulated by Prakāśānanda, Again, in Prakāśātman's Pañca-pādikā-vivarana (p. 32), it is held that according to the author of the Brahma-siddhi both māyā and avidyā are nothing but false experiences (avidyā māyā mithyā-pratyaya iti). About the function

¹ A copy of the manuscript of the *Brahma-siddhi* and its commentary was consulted by me in the Adyar and the Govt. Sanskrit MSS. Libraries after the above section had been written, and a thorough examination of its contents, I am happy to say, corroborates the above surmises. The *Brahma-siddhi* is expected to be shortly published by Prof. Kuppusvāmi Šāstrī, and I consulted the tarka-pāda of it in proof by the kind courtesy of Prof. Sāstrī in Madras in December 1928. A separate section has been devoted to the philosophy of Maṇḍana's *Brahma-siddhi*.

of knowledge as removing doubts he is said to hold the view (as reported in the Nyāya-kandalī, p. 218) that doubt regarding the validity of what is known is removed by knowledge itself. In the Nyāva-kanikā (p. 80) it is said that Mandana held that reality manifests itself in unlimited conceptions of unity or universality, whereas differences appear only as a result of limited experience. Again, in the Laghu-candrikā (p. 112, Kumbakonam edition) Mandana is introduced in the course of a discussion regarding the nature of the dispersion of ignorance and its relation to Brahma-knowledge or Brahmahood. According to Sankara, as interpreted by many of his followers, including Sureśvara, the dissolution of ignorance (avidyā-nivrtti) is not a negation, since negation as a separate category has no existence. So dissolution of ignorance means only Brahman. But according to Mandana there is no harm in admitting the existence of such a negation as the cessation of ignorance; for the monism of Brahman means that there is only one positive entity. It has no reference to negations, i.e. the negation of duality only means the negation of all positive entities other than Brahman (bhāvādvaita). The existence of such a negation as the cessation of ignorance does not hurt the monistic creed. Again, Sarvajñātma Muni in his Samksepa-śārīraka(II. 174) says that ignorance (avidyā) is supported (āśraya) in pure consciousness (cin-mātrāśrita-visayam ajñānam), and that, even where from the context of Sankara's Bhāsya it may appear as if he was speaking of the individual person (jiva) as being the support of ajñāna, it has to be interpreted in this sense. Objections of Mandana, therefore, to such a view, viz. that ignorance rests with the individuals, are not to be given any consideration; for Mandana's views lead to quite different conclusions (parihrtya Mandana-vācah tad dhy anyathā prasthitam)1. The commentator of the Samksepa-śārīraka, Rāmatīrtha Svāmin, also, in commenting on the passage referred to, contrasts the above view of Mandana with that of Suresvara, who according to him is referred to by an adjective bahu-śruta in the Samksepa-śārīraka text, and who is reported to have been in agreement with the views of Sarvajñātma Muni, as against the views of Mandana. Now many of these views which have been attributed to Mandana are not shared by Sureśvara, as will appear from what will be said below concerning him. It does not therefore appear that Mandana Miśra and Sureśvara were the same

¹ Mr Hiriyanna, in J.R.A.S. 1923, mentions this point as well as the point concerning avidyā-nivrtti in Mandana's view as admission of negation.

person. But, if Vidyāraņya, who knows so much about the views of Mandana, had identified them in the Sankara-dig-vijaya, that might lead one to pause. Now Mr Hiriyanna seems to have removed this difficulty for us by his short note in J.R.A.S. 1924, where he points out that Vidyāranya in his Vārttika-sāra refers to the author of the Brahma-siddhi as a different authority from the author of the Vārttika, viz. Sureśvara. Now, if Vidyāranya, the author of the Vārttika-sāra, knew that Mandana, the author of the Brahma-siddhi. was not the same person as Sureśvara, he could not have identified them in his Sankara-dig-rijaya. This naturally leads one to suspect that the Vidvaranya who was the author of the Vivarana-prameyasamgraha and the Vārttika-sāra was not the same Vidyāranya as the author of Sankara-dig-vijaya. Another consideration also leads one to think that Vidvāranva (the author of the Vivaranaprameya-samgraha) could not have written the Sankara-dig-vijaya. Anandātman had two disciples, Anubhavānanda and Sankarānanda. Anubhavānanda had as his disciple Amalānanda, and Sankarānanda had Vidvāranya as his disciple. So Amalānanda may be taken as a contemporary of Vidyāranya. Now Amalānanda had another teacher in Sukhaprakāśa, who had Citsukha as his teacher. Thus Citsukha may be taken to be a contemporary of the grand teacher (parama-guru), Anandatman, of Vidyaranya. If this was the case, he could not have written in his Sankara-dig-vijava (XIII. 5) that Citsukha, who lived several centuries after Padmapada. was a disciple of Padmapāda. It may therefore be safely asserted that the author of the Sankara-dig-vijaya was not the author of the Vivarana-prameya-samgraha. Now, if this is so, our reliance on the author of the Vivarana-prameya-samgraha cannot be considered to be risky and unsafe. But on p. 92 of the Vivarana-pramevasamgraha a passage from the Vārttika of Sureśvara (IV. 8) is attributed to Viśvarūpa Ācārya. It may therefore be concluded that Mandana, the author of the Brahma-siddhi, was not the same person as Sureśvara, unless we suppose that Mandana was not only a Mīmāmsā writer, but also a Vedānta writer of great repute and that his conversion by Sankara meant only that he changed some of his Vedantic views and accepted those of Sankara, and it was at this stage that he was called Sureśvara. On this theory his Brahma-siddhi was probably written before his conversion to Sankara's views. It seems likely that this theory may be correct. and that the author of the Vidhi-viveka was also the author of the

Brahma-siddhi; for the passage of the Brahma-siddhi duoted by Vācaspati in his Nyāya-kaṇikā is quoted in a martier which suggests that in all probability the author of the Via'n-viveka was also the author of the Brahma-siddhi. It may also be concluded that in all probability Viśvarūpa was the same person as Sureśvara, though on this subject no references of value are known to the present writer other than by the author of the Vivi aṇa-prameya-saṃgraha.

Maṇḍana (A.D. 800).

Mandana Miśra's Brahma-siddhi with the commentary of Śańkhapāni is available in manuscript, and Mahāmahopādhyāya Kuppusyāmi Śāstrī of Madras is expected soon to bring out a critical edition of this important work. Through the courtesy of Mahāmahopādhyāya Kuppusvāmi Sāstrī the present writer had an opportunity of going through the proofs of the Brahma-siddhi and through the courtesy of Mr C. Kunhan Raja, the Honorary Director of the Adyar Library, he was able also to utilize the manuscript of Sankhapāni's commentary¹. The Brahma-siddhi is in four chapters, Brahma-kānda, Tarka-kānda, Nivoga-kānda, and Siddhikānda, in the form of verses (kārikā) and long annotations (vrtti). That Mandana must have been a contemporary of Sankara is evident from the fact that, though he quotes some writers who flourished before Śankara, such as Śabara, Kumārila or Vyāsa, the author of the Yoga-sūtra-bhāṣya, and makes profuse references to the Upanisad texts, he never refers to any writer who flourished after Śańkara². Vācaspati also wrote a commentary, called Tattvasamīksā, on Mandana's Brahma-siddhi; but unfortunately this text, so far as is known to the present writer, has not yet been

¹ Citsukha, the pupil of Jñānottama, also wrote a commentary on it, called Abhiprāya-prakāšikā, almost the whole of which, except some portions at the beginning, is available in the Government Oriental Manuscript Library, R. No. 3853. Ānandapūrņa also wrote a commentary on the Brahma-siddhi, called Bhāva-suddhi.

² Mandana's other works are Bhāvanā-viveka, Vidhi-viveka, Vibhrama-viveka and Sphoja-siddhi. Of these the Vidhi-viveka was commented upon by Vācaspati Miśra in his Nyāya-kaṇikā, and the Sphota-siddhi was commented upon by the son of Bhavadāsa, who had also written a commentarv, called Tattva-vibhāvanā, on Vācaspati Miśra's Tattva-bindu. The commentary on the Sphota-siddhi is called Gopālika. Mandana's Vibhrama-viveka is a small work devoted to the discussion of the four theories of illusion (khyāti), ātma-khyāti, asat-khyāti, anyathā-khyāti and akhyāti. Up till now only his Bhāvanā-viveka and Vidhi-viveka have been published.

discovered. In the Brahma-kāṇḍa chapter Maṇḍana discusses the nature of Brahman; in the Tarka-kāṇḍa he tries to prove that we cannot perceive "difference" through perception and that therefore one should not think of interpreting the Upaniṣad texts on dualistic lines on the ground that perception reveals difference. In the third chapter, the Niyoga-kāṇḍa, he tries to refute the Mīmāṃsā view that the Upaniṣad texts are to be interpreted in accordance with the Mīmāṃsā principle of interpretation, that all Vedic texts command us to engage in some kind of action or to restrain ourselves from certain other kinds of action. This is by far the longest chapter of the book. The fourth chapter, the Siddhi-kāṇḍa, is the shortest: Maṇḍana says here that the Upaniṣad texts show that the manifold world of appearance does not exist at all and that its apparent existence is due to the avidyā of jīva.

In the Brahma-kānda the most important Vedāntic concepts are explained by Mandana according to his own view. He first introduces the problem of the subject (drastr) and the object (drśya) and says that it is only by abolishing the apparent duality of subject and object that the fact of experience can be explained. For, if there was any real duality of subject and object, that duality could not be bridged over and no relation between the two could be established; if, on the other hand, there is only the subject, then all things that are perceived can best be explained as being illusory creations imposed on self, the only reality¹. Proceeding further with the same argument, he says that attempts have been made to bring about this subject-object relation through the theory of the operation of an intermediary mind (antahkarana); but whatever may be the nature of this intermediary, the pure unchangeable intelligence, the self or the subject, could not change with its varying changes in accordance with its connection with different objects; if it is held that the self does not undergo any transformation or change, but there is only the appearance of a transformation through its reflection in the antahkarana, then it is plainly admitted that objects are not in reality perceived and that there is only an appearance of perception. If objects are not perceived in reality, it is wrong to think that they have a separate

¹ ekatva evāyam draṣṭṛ-drɨya-bhāvo 'vakalpate, draṣṭur eva cid-ātmanaḥ tathā tathā viparināmād vivartanād vā; nānātve tu vivikta-svabhāvayor asamsṛṣṭa-paraspara-svarūpayor asambaddhayoḥ kīdrɨo draṣṭṛ-drɨya-bhāvaḥ. Kuppusvāmi Sāstri's edition of Brahma-siddhi, p. 7. (In the press.)

and independent existence from the self¹. Just as the very same man sees his own image in the mirror to be different from him and to exist outside of him as an object, so the same self appears as all the diverse objects outside of it. It is difficult to conceive how one could admit the existence of external objects outside the pure intelligence (cit); for in that case it would be impossible to relate the two².

According to Maṇḍana avidyā is called māyā, or false appearance, because it is neither a characteristic (sva-bhāva) of Brahman nor different from it, neither existent nor non-existent. If it was the characteristic of anything, then, whether one with that or different from it, it would be real and could not therefore be called avidyā; if it was absolutely non-existent, it would be like the lotus of the sky and would have no practical bearing in experience (na vyavahāra-bījam) such as avidyā has; it has thus to be admitted that avidyā is indescribable or unspeakable (anirvacanīyā)³.

According to Maṇḍana $avidy\bar{a}$ belongs to the individual souls $(j\bar{\imath}va)$. He admits that there is an inconsistency in such a view; but he thinks that, $avidy\bar{a}$ being itself an inconsistent category, there is no wonder that its relation with $j\bar{\imath}va$ should also be incon-

¹ ekāntahkaraṇa-samkrāntāv asty eva sambandha iti cet, na, citeh suddhatvād apariṇāmād aprati-saṃkramāc ca; drṣyā buddhih citi-sannidhes chāyaya vivartata iti ced atha keyam tac chāyatā? a-tad-ātmanah tad-avabhāsah; na tarhi paramārthato drṣyam drṣyate, paramārthatas ca drṣyamānam draṣṭṛ-vyatiriktam asti iti durbhaṇam. Ibid. Sankhapāṇi in commenting on this discards the view that objects pass through the sense-channels and become superimposed on the antahkaraṇa or durbhaṇam and thereby become related to the pure intelligence of the self and objectified: na tu sphaṭikopame cetasi indriya-praṇālt-saṃkrāntānām arthānām tatraiva saṃkrāntena ātma-caitanyena sambaddhānām tad-drṣyatvam ghaṭṣyate. Adyar MS. p. 75.

It may not be out of place to point out in this connection that the theory of Padmapāda, Prakāsātman, as developed later on by Dharmarājādhvarīndra, which held that the mind (antaḥkaraṇa) becomes superimposed on external objects in perception, was in all probability borrowed from the Sāṃkhya doctrine of cic-chāyāpatti in perception, which was somehow forced into Sankara's loose epistemological doctrines and worked out as a systematic epistemological theory. The fact that Maṇḍana discards this epistemological doctrine shows, on the one hand, that he did not admit it to be a right interpretation of Sankara and may, on the other hand, be regarded as a criticism of the contemporary interpretation of Padmapāda. But probably the reply of that school would be that, though they admitted extra-individual reality of objects, they did not admit the reality of objects outside of pure intelligence (cit).

² tathā hi darpaṇa-tala-stham ātmāṇam vibhaktam ivātmanah pratyeti; cites tu

vibhaktam asamsṛṣṭam tayā cetyata iti dur-avagamyam. Ibid.

⁸ Ibid. p. 9. It may not be out of place here to point out that Anandabodha's argument in his Nyāya-makaranda regarding the unspeakable nature of avidyā, which has been treated in a later section of this chapter, is based on this argument of Mandana.

sistent and unexplainable. The inconsistency of the relationship of avidyā with the jīvas arises as follows: the jīvas are essentially identical with Brahman, and the diversity of jivas is due to imagination (kalpanā); but this imagination cannot be of Brahman, since Brahman is devoid of all imagination (tasyā vidyātmanaḥ kalpanā-sūnyatvāt); it cannot be the imagination of the jīvas, since the jīvas themselves are regarded as being the product of imagination 1. Two solutions may be proposed regarding this difficulty, firstly, that the word māyā implies what is inconsistent; had it been a consistent and explainable concept, it would be reality and not $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}^2$. Secondly, it may be said that from avidy \bar{a} come the *itvas* and from the jivas comes the avidyā, and that this cycle is beginningless and therefore there is no ultimate beginning either of the jīvas or of the avidyā3. This view is held by those who think that avidyā is not the material cause of the world: these are technically called avidyopādāna-bheda-vādins. It is through this avidvā that the jīvas suffer the cycle of births and rebirths, and this avidyā is natural to the jivas, since the jivas themselves are the products of avidyā4. And it is through listening to the Vedantic texts, right thinking, meditation, etc. that true knowledge dawns and the avidyā is destroyed; it was through this avidyā that the jīvas were separated from Brahman; with its destruction they attain Brahmahood5.

In defining the nature of Brahman as pure bliss Śańkhapāṇi the commentator raises some very interesting discussions. He starts by criticizing the negative definition of happiness as cessation of pain or as a positive mental state qualified by such a negative condition⁶. He says that there are indeed negative pleasures which are enjoyed as negation of pain (e.g. a plunge into cold water is an escape from the painful heat); but he holds that there are cases where pleasures and pains are experienced simultaneously

itaretarāśraya prasangāt kalpanādhīno hi jīva vibhāgah, jīvāśrayā kalpanā.

jīva vibhāgaḥ, jīvāśrayā kalpanā. Ibīd. p. 10.

² anupapadyamānārthaiva hi mūyā; upapadyamānārthatve yathārtha-bhāvān na māyā syāt. Ibīd.

³ anāditvān netaretarāsrayatva-doşah. Ibid.

¹ na hi jīveşu nisarga-jā vidyāsti, avidyaiva hi naisargikī, āgantukyā vidyāyāh pravilayah. Ibid. pp. 11-12.

⁵ avidyayaiva tu brahmano jivo vibhaktah, tan-nivrttau brahma-svarūpam eva bhavati, yathā ghaṭādi-bhede tad-ākāšam parišuddham paramākašam eva bhavati. Ibid.

⁶ duḥkha nivṛttir vā tad-visiṣṭātmopalabdhir vā sukham astu, sarvathā sukham nāma na dharmāntaram asti. Adyar MS. of the Sankhapāṇi commentary, p. 18.

and not as negation of each other. A man may feel painful heat in the upper part of his body and yet feel the lower part of his body delightfully cool and thus experience pleasure and pain simultaneously (sukha-duhkhe yugapaj janyete). Again, according to the scriptures there is unmixed pain in Hell, and this shows that pain need not necessarily be relative. Again, there are many cases (e.g. in the smelling of a delightful odour of camphor) where it cannot be denied that we have an experience of positive pleasure1. Sankhapāni then refutes the theory of pain as unsatisfied desire and happiness as satisfaction or annulment of desires (visavaprāptim vinā kāma eva duhkham atah tan-nivrttir eva sukham bhavisyati) by holding that positive experiences of happiness are possible even when one has not desired them². An objection to this is that experience of pleasures satisfies the natural, but temporarily inactive, desires in a sub-conscious or potential condition³. Again, certain experiences produce more pleasures in some than in others, and this is obviously due to the fact that one had more latent desires to be fulfilled than the other. In reply to these objections Sankhapāni points out that, even if a thing is much desired, yet, if it is secured after much trouble, it does not satisfy one so much as a pleasure which comes easily. If pleasure is defined as removal of desires, then one should feel happy before the pleasurable experience or after the pleasurable experience, when all traces of the desires are wiped out, but not at the time of enjoying the pleasurable experience; for the desires are not wholly extinct at that time. Even at the time of enjoying the satisfaction of most earnest desires one may feel pain. So it is to be admitted that pleasure is not a relative concept which owes its origin to the sublation of desires, but that it is a positive concept which has its existence even before the desires are sublated4. If negation of desires be defined as happiness, then even disinclination to food through bilious attacks is to be called happiness⁵. So it is to be admitted that positive pleasures are in the first instance experienced and then are desired. The theory that pains and pleasures are relative and that without pain there can be no experience of pleasure and that there can be no experience of pain without an

¹ Ibid. pp. 20, 21. ² Ibid. p. 22.

³ sahajo hi rāgaḥ sarva-puṃsām asti sa tu viṣaya-viśeṣeṇa āvir-bhavati. Ibid.

^{*} atah kāma-nivṛtteḥ prāg-bhāvi sukhu-vastu-bhūtam eṣṭavyam. Ibid. p. 27. 5 Ibid. p. 25.

experience of pleasure is false and consequently the Vedāntic view is that the state of emancipation as Brahmahood may well be described as an experience of positive pure bliss¹.

Sankara in his commentary on the Brahma-sūtra and in his commentaries on some of the Upaniṣads and the Māndūkya-kārikā had employed some elements of dialectical criticism, the principles of which had long been introduced in well-developed forms by the Buddhists. The names of the three great dialecticians, Śrīharṣa, Ānandajñāna and Citsukha, of the Śankara school, are well known, and proper notice has been taken of them in this chapter. But among the disciples of Śańkara the man who really started the dialectical forms of argument, who was second to none in his dialectical powers and who influenced all other dialecticians of the Śańkaraschool, Ānandabodha, Śrīharṣa, Ānandajñāna, Citsukha, Nṛṣiṃhāśrama and others, was Maṇḍana. Maṇḍana's great dialectical achievement is found in his refutation of the perception of difference (bheda) in the Tarka-kānda chapter of his Brahma-siddhi.

The argument arose as follows: the category of difference (bheda) is revealed in perception, and, if this is so, the reality of difference cannot be denied, and therefore the Upanisad texts should not be interpreted in such a way as to annul the reality of "difference." Against such a view-point Mandana undertakes to prove that "difference," whether as a quality or characteristic of things or as an independent entity, is never experienced by perception (pratyaksa)2. He starts by saying that perception yields three possible alternatives, viz. (1) that it manifests a positive object, (2) that it presents differences from other objects, (3) that it both manifests a positive object and distinguishes it from other objects3. In the third alternative there may again be three other alternatives, viz. (i) simultaneous presentation of the positive object and its distinction from others, (ii) first the presentation of the positive object and then the presentation of the difference, (iii) first the presentation of the difference and then the presentation of the positive object⁴. If by perception differences

¹ yadi duḥkhā-bhāvah sukham syāt tataḥ syād evam bhāvāntare tu sukhe duḥkhābhāve ca tathā syād eva. Ibid. p. 161.

² This discussion runs from page 44 of the *Brahma-siddhi* (in the press) to the end of the second chapter.

⁸ tatra pratyakşe trayah kalpāḥ, vastu-svarūpa-siddhiḥ vastv-antarasya vya-vacchedaḥ ubhayam vā. Brahma-siddhi, 11.

⁴ ubhayasminn api traividhyam, yaugapadyam, vyavaccheda-pūrvako vidhih, vidhi-pūrvako vyavacchedah. Ibid.

from other objects are experienced, or if it manifests both the object and its differences, then it has to be admitted that "difference" is presented in perception; but, if it can be proved that only positive objects are presented in perception, unassociated with any presentation of difference, then it has to be admitted that the notion of difference is not conveyed to us by perception, and in that case the verdict of the Upanişads that reality is one and that no diversity can be real is not contradicted by perceptual experience. Now follows the argument.

Perception does not reveal merely the difference, nor does it first reveal the difference and then the positive object, nor both of them simultaneously; for the positive object must first be revealed, before any difference can be manifested. Difference must concern itself in a relation between two positive objects, e.g. the cow is different from the horse, or there is no jug here. The negation involved in the notion of difference can have no bearing without that which is negated or that of which it is negated, and both these are positive in their notion. The negation of a chimerical entity (e.g. the lotus of the sky) is to be interpreted as negation of a false relation of its constituents, which are positive in themselves (e.g. both the lotus and the sky are existents, the incompatibility is due to their relationing, and it is such a relation between these two positive entities that is denied), or as denying the objective existence of such entities, which can be imagined only as a mental idea¹. If the category of difference distinguishes two objects from one another, the objects between which the difference is manifested must first be known. Again, it cannot be held that perception, after revealing the positive object, reveals also its difference from other objects; for perception is one unique process of cognition, and there are no two moments in it such that it should first reveal the object with which there is present sense-contact and then reveal other objects which are not at that moment in contact with sense, as also the difference between the two2. In the case of the discovery of one's own illusion, such as "this is not silver, but conch-shell," only the latter knowledge is perceptual, and this knowledge refers to and negates after the previous knowledge of the object as silver has been negated. It was

kutascin nimittäd huddhau labdha-rūpānām bahir nişedhah kriyate.

kramah samgacchate yuktyā naika-vijñāna-karmaņoh na sannihita-jam tac ca tadanyāmarsi jāyate. Ibid. 11. Kärikā 3.

only when the presented object was perceived as "this before" that it was denied as being the silver for which it was taken, and when it was thus negated there was the perception of the conchshell. There is no negative concept without there first being a positive concept; but it does not therefore follow that a positive concept cannot be preceded by a negative concept. This is therefore not a case where there are two moments in one unique perception, but there are here different cognitive experiences².

Again, there is a view (Buddhist) that it is by the power or potency of the indeterminate cognition of an object that both the positive determinate cognition and its difference from others are produced. Though the positive and the negative are two cognitions, yet, since they are both derived from the indeterminate cognition, it can well be said that by one positive experience we may also have its difference from others also manifested (eka-vidhir eva anyavyavacchedah)3. Against such a view Mandana urges that one positive experience cannot also reveal its differences from all other kinds of possible and impossible objects. A colour perceived at a particular time and particular place may negate another colour at that particular place and time, but it cannot negate the presence of taste properties at that particular place and time; but, if the very perception of a colour should negate everything else which is not that colour, then these taste properties would also be negated, and, since this is not possible, it has to be admitted that perception of a positive entity does not necessarily involve as a result of that very process the negation of all other entities.

There is again a view that things are by their very nature different from one another (prakṛtyaiva bhinnā bhāvāḥ), and thus, when by perception an object is experienced, its difference from other objects is also grasped by that very act. In reply to this objection Maṇḍana says that things cannot be of the nature of differences; firstly, in that case all objects would be of the nature of difference, and hence there would be no difference among them; secondly, as

¹ pūrva-vijnāna-vihite rajatādau "idam" iti ca sannihitārtha-sāmānye niṣedho vidhi-pūrva eva, šuktikā-siddhis tu virodhi-niṣedha-pūrva ucyate; vidhi-pūrvatā ca niyamena niṣedhasyocyate, na vidher niṣedha-pūrvakatā niṣidhyate. Brahma-siddhi, 11. Kārikā 3.

⁸ na ca tatra eka-jñānasya kramavad-vyāpāratā ubhaya-rūpasya utpatteh. Ibid.
³ nīlasya nirvikalpaka-darśanasya yat sāmarthyam niyataika-kāranatvam tena anādi-vāsanā-vaśāt pratibhāsitam janitam idam nedam iti vikalpo bhāvābhā-va-vyavahāram pravartayati...satyam jñāna-dvayam idam savikalpakam tu nirvikalpakam tayor mūla-bhūtam tat pratyakṣam tatra ca eka-vidhir eva anya-vyavaccheda iti brūma iti. Sankhapāni's commentary, ibid.

"difference" has no form, the objects themselves would be formless; thirdly, difference being essentially of the nature of negation, the objects themselves would be of the nature of negation: fourthly, since difference involves duality or plurality in its concept. no object could be regarded as one; a thing cannot be regarded as both one and many¹. In reply to this the objector says that a thing is of the nature of difference only in relation to others (parapeksam vastuno bheda-svabhāvah nātmāpeksam), but not in relation to itself. In reply to this objection Mandana says that things which have been produced by their own causes cannot stand in need of a relation to other entities for their existence; all relationing is mental and as such depends on persons who conceive the things, and so relationing cannot be a constituent of objective things2. If relationing with other things constituted their essence, then each thing would depend on others—they would depend on one another for their existence (itaretarāśraya-prasangāt). In reply to this it may be urged that differences are different, corresponding to each and every oppositional term, and that each object has a different specific nature in accordance with the different other objects with which it may be in a relation of opposition; but, if this is so, then objects are not produced solely by their own causes: for, if differences are regarded as their constituent essences, these essences should vary in accordance with every object with which a thing may be opposed. In reply to this it is urged by the objector that, though an object is produced by its own causes, yet its nature as differences appears in relation to other objects with which it is held in opposition. Mandana rejoins that on such a view it would be difficult to understand the meaning and function of this oppositional relation (apeksā); for it does not produce the object, which is produced by its own causes, and it has no causal efficiency and it is also not experienced, except as associated with the other objects (nānāpeksa-pratiyoginām bhedah pratīyate). Difference also cannot be regarded as being of the essence of oppositional relation; it is only when there is an oppositional relation between objects already experienced that difference manifests

> na bhedo vastuno rūpaṃ tad-abhāva-prasangataḥ arūpeṇa ca bhinnatvaṃ vastuno nāvakalpate. Brahma--iddhi, 11. 5.

² nāpekṣā nāma kaścid vastu-dharmo yena vastuni vyavasthāpyeran, na khalu sva-hetu-prāpitodayeşu sva-bhāva-vyavasthiteşu vastuşu sva-bhāva-sthitaye vastvantarāpekṣā yujyate. Ibid. 11. 6, vṛtti.

itself. Relations are internal and are experienced in the minds of those who perceive and conceive. But it is further objected to this that concepts like father and son are both relational and obviously externally constitutive. To this Mandana's reply is that these two concepts are not based on relation, but on the notion of production; that which produces is the father and that which is produced is the son. Similarly also the notions of long and short depend upon the one occupying greater or less space at the time of measurement and not on relations as constituting their essence.

In reply to this the objector says that, if relations are not regarded as ultimate, and if they are derived from different kinds of actions, then on the same ground the existence of differences may also be admitted. If there were no different kinds of things, it would not be possible to explain different kinds of actions. But Mandana's reply is that the so-called differences may be but differences in name; the burning activity of the same fire is described sometimes as burning and sometimes as cooking. In the Vedanta view it is held that all the so-called varied kinds of actions appear in one object, the Brahman, and so the objection that varied kinds of actions necessarily imply the existence of difference in the agents which produce them is not valid. Again, the difficulty in the case of the Buddhist is in its own way none the less; for according to him all appearances are momentary, and, if this be so, how does he explain the similarities of effects that we notice? It can be according to them only on the basis of an illusory notion of the sameness of causes; so, if the Buddhist can explain our experience of similarity on the false appearance of sameness of causes, the Vedantist may also in his turn explain all appearances of diversity through illusory notions of difference, and there is thus no necessity of admitting the reality of differences in order to explain our notions of difference in experience². Others again argue that the world must be a world of diversity, as the various objects of our experience serve our various purposes, and it is impossible that one and the same thing should serve different purposes. But this objection is not valid, because even the self-same thing can serve diverse purposes; the same fire can burn, illuminate and cook. There is no objection to there being a number of limited (avacchinna) qualities

¹ pauruşeyim apekşām na vastv anuvartate, ato na vastu-svabhāvah. Ibid. ³ atha nir-anvaya-vināšānām api kalpanā-vişayād abhedāt kāryasya tulyatā hanta tarhi bhedād eva kalpanā-vişayāt kāryābheda-siddher mūdhā kārana-bheda-kalpanā. Ibid.

or characters in the self-same thing. It is sometimes urged that things are different from one another because of their divergent powers (e.g. milk is different from sesamum because curd is produced from milk and not from sesamum); but divergence of powers is like divergence of qualities, and, just as the same fire may have two different kinds of powers or qualities, namely, that of burning and cooking, so the same entity may at different moments both possess and not possess a power, and this does not in the least imply a divergence or difference of entity. It is a great mystery that the one self-same thing should have such a special efficiency (sāmarthyātiśaya) that it can be the basis of innumerable divergent appearances. As one entity is supposed to possess many divergent powers, so one self-same entity may on the same principle be regarded as the cause of divergent appearances.

Again, it is held by some that "difference" consists in the negation of one entity in another. Such negations, it may be replied, cannot be indefinite in their nature; for then negations of all things in all places would make them empty. If, however, specific negations are implied with reference to determinate entities, then, since the character of these entities, as different from one another, depends on these implied negations, and since these implied negations can operate only when there are these different entities, they depend mutually upon one another (itaretarāśraya) and cannot therefore hold their own. Again, it cannot be said that the notion of "difference" arises out of the operation of perceptual processes like determinate perception (occurring as the culmination of the perceptual process); for there is no proof whatsoever that "difference," as apart from mutual negation, can be definitely experienced. Again, if unity of all things as "existents" (sat) was not realized in experience, it would be difficult to explain how one could recognize the sameness of things. This sameness or unity of things is by far the most fundamental of experiences, and it is first manifested as indeterminate experience, which later on transforms itself into various notions of difference¹. In this connection Mandana also takes great pains in refuting the view that things are twofold in their nature, both unity and difference, and also

¹ pratyekam anubiddhatvād abhedena mṛṣā matah bhedo yathā tarangānām bhedād bhedah kalāvataḥ. Brahma-siddhi, 11. Kārikā 31.

the Jaina view that unity and difference are both true in their own respective ways. But it is not necessary to enter into these details. The main point in his refutation of the category of difference consists in this, that he shows that it is inconceivable and dialectically monstrous to suppose that the category of difference can be experienced through perception and that it is philosophically more convenient to suppose that there is but one thing which through ignorance yields the various notions of difference than to suppose that there are in reality the infinite agreements of unity and difference just as they are experienced in perception.

In the third chapter of the Brahma-siddhi, called the Niyoga- $k\bar{a}nda$, Maṇḍana refutes the Mīmāṃsā view that the Vedāntic texts are to be interpreted in accordance with the Mīmāṃsā canon of interpretation, viz. that Vedic texts imply either a command or a prohibition. But, as this discussion is not of much philosophical importance, it is not desirable to enter into it. In the fourth chapter, called the Siddhi- $k\bar{a}nda$, Maṇḍana reiterates the view that the chief import of the Upaniṣad texts consists in showing that the manifold world of appearance does not exist and that its manifestation is due to the ignorance (avidyā) of the individual souls ($j\bar{v}a$). The sort of ultimate reality that is described in the Upaniṣad texts is entirely different from all that we see around us, and it is as propounding this great truth, which cannot be known by ordinary experience, that the Upaniṣads are regarded as the only source from which knowledge of Brahman can be obtained.

Sureśvara (A.D. 800).

Sureśvara's chief works are the Naiṣkarmya-siddhi and Bṛhadāranyakopaniṣad-bhāṣya-vārttika. The Naiṣkarmya-siddhi has at least five commentaries, such as the Bhāva-tattva-prakāśikā by Citsukha, which is based on Jñānottama's Candrikā. This Candrikā is thus the earliest commentary on the Naiṣkarmya-siddhi. It is difficult to determine Jñānottama's date. In the concluding verses of this commentary the two names Satyabodha and Jñānottama occur; and Mr Hiriyanna points out in his introduction to the Naiṣkarmya-siddhi that these two names also occur in the Sarvajña-pīṭha of Conjeeveram, to which he claims to have belonged as teacher and pupil,

and according to the list of teachers of that Matha Jñānottama was the fourth from Śańkara. This would place Jñānottama at a very early date; if, however, the concluding verses are not his, but inserted by someone else, then of course they give no clue to his date except the fact that he must have lived before Citsukha, since Citsukha's commentary was based on Jñānottama's commentary Candrikā. Another commentary is the Vidyā-surabhi of Jñānāmṛta, the pupil of Uttamāmṛta; another is the Naiṣkarmya-siddhivivaraṇa of Akhilātman, pupil of Daśarathapriya; and there is also another commentary, called Sārārtha, by Rāmadatta, which is of comparatively recent date.

Sureśvara's Naiskarmya-siddhi is divided into four chapters. The first chapter deals with discussions regarding the relation of Vedic duties to the attainment of Vedantic wisdom. Avidya is here defined as the non-perception in one's experience of the ultimate oneness of the self: through this rebirths take place, and it is the destruction of this ignorance which is emancipation (tannāso muktir ātmanah). The Mīmāmsists think that, if one ceases to perform actions due to desire (kāmya-karma) and prohibited actions, then the actions which have already accumulated will naturally exhaust themselves in time by yielding fruits, and so, since the obligatory duties do not produce any new karma, and since no other new karmas accumulate, the person will naturally be emancipated from karma. There is, however, in the Vedas no injunction in favour of the attainment of right knowledge. So one should attain emancipation through the performance of the Vedic duties alone. As against this Mīmāmsā view Sureśvara maintains that emancipation has nothing to do with the performance of actions. Performance of Vedic duties may have an indirect and remote bearing, in the way of purifying one's mind, but it has certainly no direct bearing on the attainment of salvation. Suresvara states a view attributed to Brahmadatta in the Vidyā-surabhi commentary, that ignorance is not removed merely by the knowledge of the identity of oneself with Brahman, as propounded in Vedanta texts, but through long and continuous meditation on the same. So the right apprehension of the Upanisadic passages on the identity of the Brahman and the individual does not immediately produce salvation; one has to continue to meditate for a long time on such ideas of identity; and all the time one has to perform all one's obligatory duties, since, if one ceased to perform them, this

would be a transgression of one's duties and would naturally produce sins, and hence one would not be able to obtain emancipation. So knowledge must be combined with the performance of duties (iñāna-karma-samuccaya), which is vehemently opposed by Sankara. Another view which occurs also in the Vārttika, and is there referred to by the commentator Anandajñana as being that of Mandana, is that, as the knowledge derived from the Vedantic texts is verbal and conceptual, it cannot of itself lead to Brahma-knowledge. but, when these texts are continually repeated, they produce a knowledge of Brahman as a mysterious effect by just the same kind of process as gives rise to the mysterious effects of sacrificial or other Vedic duties. The Vārttika refers to various schools among the adherents of the joint operation of knowledge and of duties (jñāna-karma-samuccaya), some regarding jñāna as being the more important, others regarding karma as more important, and still others regarding them both as being equally important, thus giving rise to three different schools of jñānakarma-samuccaya. Sureśvara tries to refute all these views by saying that true knowledge and emancipation are one and the same thing, and that it does not in the least require the performance of any kind of Vedic duties. Suresvara also refutes the doctrine of the joint necessity of karma and jñāna on the view of those modified dualists, like Bhartrprapanca, who thought that reality was a unity in differences, so that the doctrine of differences was as true as that of unity, and that, therefore, duties have to be performed even in the emancipated state, because, the differences being also real, the necessity of duties cannot be ignored at any stage of progress, even in the emancipated state, though true knowledge is also necessary for the realization of truth as unity. Sureśvara's refutation of this view is based upon two considerations, viz. that the conception of reality as being both unity and difference is self-contradictory, and that, when the oneness is realized through true knowledge and the sense of otherness and differences is removed, it is not possible that any duties can be performed at that stage; for the performance of duties implies experience of duality and difference1.

The second chapter of the Naiskarmya-siddhi is devoted to the exposition of the nature of self-realization, as won through the proper interpretation of the unity texts of the Upanisads by a ¹ See also Prof. Hiriyanna's introduction to his edition of the Naiskarmya-siddhi.

proper teacher. The experience of the ego and all its associated experiences of attachment, antipativy, etc., vanish with the dawn of true self-knowledge of unity. The notion of ego is a chargeful and extraneous element, and hence outside the element of pure consciousness. All manifestations of duality are due to the distracting effects of the antahkarana. When true knowledge dawns, the self together with all that is objectivity in knowledge vanishes. All the illusory appearances are due to the imposition of aiñāna on the pure self, which, however, cannot thereby disturb the unperturbed unity of this pure self. It is the antahkarana, or the intellect, that suffers all modifications in the cognitive operations; the underlying pure consciousness remains undisturbed all the same. Yet this non-self which appears as mind, intellect, and its objects is not a substantive entity like the prakrti of the Samkhya; for its appearance is due merely to ignorance and delusion. This worldappearance is only a product of nescience (ajñāna) or false and indescribable illusion on the self, and is no real product of any real substance as the Sāmkhya holds. Thus it is that the whole of the world-appearance vanishes like the illusory silver in the conch-shell as soon as truth is realized.

In the third chapter Suresvara discusses the nature of aiñāna, its relation with the self, and the manner of its dissolution. There are two entities, the self and the non-self; now the non-self, being itself a product of ajñāna (nescience or ignorance), cannot be regarded as its support or object; so the aiñāna has for its support and object the pure self or Brahman; the ignorance of the self is also in regard to itself, since there is no other object regarding which ignorance is possible—the entire field of objective appearance being regarded as the product of ignorance itself. It is the ignorance of the real nature of the self that transforms itself into all that is subjective and objective, the intellect and its objects. It is thus clear that according to Suresyara, unlike Vācaspati Misra and Mandana, the $avidy\bar{a}$ is based not upon individual persons (jiva), but upon the pure intelligence itself. It is this ignorance which, being connected and based upon the pure self, produces the appearances of individual persons and their subjective and objective experiences. This ajñāna, as mere ignorance, is experienced in deep dreamless sleep, when all its modifications and appearances shrink within it and it is experienced in itself as pure ignorance, which again in the waking state manifests itself in the whole series of experiences. It is easy to

see that this view of the relation of ajñāna to pure intelligence is different from the idealism preached by Mandana, as noticed in the previous section. An objection is raised that, if the ego were as much an extraneous product of ajñāna as the so-called external objects, then the ego should have appeared not as a subject, but as an object like other external or internal objects (e.g. pleasure, pain, etc.). To this Suresvara replies that, when the antahkarana or mind is transformed into the form of the external objects, then, in order to give subjectivity to it, the category of the ego (ahamkāra) is produced to associate objective experiences with particular subjective centres, and then through the reflection of the pure intelligence by way of this category of the ego the objective experience, as associated with this category of the ego, appears as subjective experience. The category of the ego, being immediately and intimately related to the pure intelligence, itself appears as the knower, and the objectivity of the ego is not apparent, just as in burning wood the fire and that which it burns cannot be separated. It is only when the pure intelligence is reflected through the ajñāna product of the category of the ego that the notion of subjectivity applies to it, and all that is associated with it is experienced as the "this," the object, though in reality the ego is itself as much an object as the objects themselves. All this false experience, however, is destroyed in the realization of Brahman, when Vedantic texts of unity are realized. In the third chapter of the Naiskarmya-siddhi the central ideas of the other three chapters are recapitulated. In the Vārttika Sureśvara discusses the very same problems in a much more elaborate manner, but it is not useful for our present purposes to enter into these details.

Padmapāda (A.D. 820).

Padmapāda is universally reputed to be a direct disciple of Śańkarācārya, and, since the manner of his own salutation to Śańkarācārya confirms this tradition, and since no facts are known that can contradict such a view, it may safely be assumed that he was a younger contemporary of Śańkarācārya. There are many traditional stories about him and his relations with Śańkarācārya; but, since their truth cannot be attested by reliable evidence, it is not possible to pronounce any judgment on them. Only two works are attributed to him, viz. the *Pañca-pādikā*, which is a commentary on

Sankara's commentary on the first four sūtras of the Brahma-sūtra and Sankara's introduction to his commentary known as the adhyāsa and the sambhāvanā-bhāsya, and the Ātma-bodha-ayākhyāna, called also Vedānta-sāra. This Pañca-pādikā is one of the most important of the Vedanta works known to us. It was commented on by Prakāśātman (A.D. 1200) in his Pañca-pādikā-vivarana¹. The Pañcapādikā-vivarana was further commented on by Akhandananda (A.D. 1350), a pupil of Anandagiri, in his Tuttvu-dipana. Anandapūrna (A.D. 1600), who wrote his Vidyā-sāgarī commentary on Śrīharsa's Khandana-khanda-khādya and also a commentary on the Mahā-vidyā-vidambana, wrote a commentary on the Pañca-pādikā². Nrsimhāśrama also wrote a commentary on the Pañca-pādikāvivarana, called the Pañca-pādikā-vivarana-prakāśikā, and Śrīkrsna also wrote one on the Pañca-pādikā-vivarana. Aufrecht refers to another commentary by Amalananda as Pañca-pādikā-śāstra-darpana; but this is undoubtedly a mistake for his Sastra-darpana, which is noticed below. Amalananda was a follower of the Vācaspati line and not of the line of Padmapāda and Prakāśātman. Rāmānanda Sarasvatī, a pupil of Govindānanda, the author of the Ratna-prabhā commentary on the Śānkara-bhāsya, wrote his Vivaranopanyāsa (a summary of the main theses of the Vivarana) as a commentary on Sankara's Bhāsya; but this was strictly on the lines of the Pañca pādikā-vivarana, though it was not a direct commentary thereon. Vidyāranya also wrote a separate monograph, called Vivarana-prameya-samgraha, in which he interpreted the Vedantic doctrines on the lines of the Pañca-pādikā-vivaraņa. Of all these the Vivaranopanyāsa of Rāmānanda Sarasvatī was probably the last important work on the Vivarana line; for Rāmānanda's teacher Govindananda, the pupil of Gopala Sarasvatī and the pupil's pupil of Sivarāma, refers in his Ratna-prabhā commentary to Jagannāthāśrama's commentary on the Śānkara-bhāṣya, called the Bhāsya-dīpikā, and also to Anandagiri's commentary as "vṛddhāh," p. 5 (Nirṇaya-Sāgara Press, 1904). Jagannātha was the teacher of Nrsimhāśrama; Govindānanda must therefore have lived towards the end of the sixteenth century. Rāmānanda may

¹ Prakāśātman also wrote a metrical summary of Śaņkara's *Bhāṣya* and a work called *Śabda-nirṇaya*, in which he tried to prove the claims of scriptural testimony as valid cognition.

^a As Mr Telang points out in his introduction to the Mahā-vidyā-vidambana, it seems that Ānandapūrņa lived after Sankara Misra (A.D. 1529), as is seen from his criticism of his reading of a passage of the Khandana-khanda-khādya, p. 586 (Chowkhambā).

therefore be placed in the early part of the seventeenth century. Govindānanda himself also in his Ratna-prabhā commentary followed the Vivaraṇa line of interpretation, and he refers to Prakāśātman with great respect as Prakāśātma-śrī-caraṇaiḥ (Ratna-prabhā, p. 3).

Padmapāda's method of treatment, as interpreted by Prakāśātman, has been taken in the first and the second volumes of the present work as the guide to the exposition of the Vedanta. It is not therefore necessary that much should be said in separate sections regarding the Vedantic doctrines of these two great teachers. But still a few words on Padmapāda's philosophy may with advantage be read separately. Padmapāda says that māyā, avyākrta, prakrti, agrahana, avyakta, tamah, kārana, laya, śakti, mahāsupti, nidrā, kṣara and ākāśa are the terms which are used in older literature as synonymous with avidyā. It is this entity that obstructs the pure and independently self-revealing nature of Brahman, and thus, standing as the painted canvas (citra-bhitti) of ignorance (avidyā), deeds (karma) and past impressions of knowledge (pūrvaprajñā-samskāra) produce the individual persons (jīvatvāpādikā). Undergoing its peculiar transformations with God as its support, it manifests itself as the two powers of knowledge and activity (vijnāna-kriyā-śakti-dvayāśraya) and functions as the doer of all actions and the enjoyer of all experiences (kartrtva-bhoktrtvaikādhārah). In association with the pure unchangeable light of Brahman it is the complex of these transformations which appears as the immediate ego (ahamkāra). It is through the association with this ego that the pure self is falsely regarded as the enjoyer of experiences. This transformation is called antahkarana, manas, buddhi and the ego or the ego-feeler (aham-pratyayin) on the side of its cognitive activity, while on the vibratory side of its activity (spanda-śaktyā), it is called prāna or biomotor functions. The association of the ego with the pure atman, like the association of the redness of a japā flower with a crystal, is a complex (granthi) which manifests the dual characteristics of activity of the avidyā stuff and the consciousness of the pure self (sambhinnobhaya-rūpatvāt).

On the question as to whether $avidy\bar{a}$ has for both support $(\bar{a}siraya)$ and object (visaya) Brahman Padmapāda's own attitude does not seem to be very clear. He only says that $avidy\bar{a}$ manifests itself in the individual person $(j\bar{i}va)$ by obstructing the real nature of the Brahman as pure self-luminosity and that the

Brahman by its limitation (avaccheda) through beginningless avidyā is the cause of the appearance of infinite individual persons. But Prakāśātman introduces a long discussion, trying to prove that Brahman is both the support and the object of a idyā as against the view of Vācaspati Miśra that avidyā has the Brahman as its object and the jīva as its support (āśraja). This is thus one of the fundamental points of difference between the livarana line of interpretation and the interpretation of the Vacaspati line. In this Prakāśātman agrees with the view of Sureśvara and his pupil Sarvajñātman, though, as will be noticed, Sarvajñātman draws some nice distinctions which are not noticed by Sureśvara.

Padmapāda draws a distinction between two meanings of falsehood $(mith_{\lambda}\bar{a})$, viz. falsehood as simple negation (apahnava-vacana)and falsehood as the unspeakable and indescribable (anirvacanivatā-vacana). It is probably he who of all the interpreters first described aiñāna or avidvā as being of a material nature (iadātmikā) and of the nature of a power (jadātmikā avidyā-śakti), and interpreted Sankara's phrase "mithyā-jñāna-nimittah" as meaning that it is this material power of $aj\tilde{n}\bar{a}na$ that is the constitutive or the material cause of the world-appearance. Prakāśātman, however, elaborates the conception further in his attempts to give proofs in support of the view that $avidy\bar{a}$ is something positive ($bh\bar{a}va-r\bar{u}pa$). These proofs have been repeatedly given by many other later writers, and have already been dealt with in the first volume of the present work. Padmapāda is also probably the first to attempt an explanation of the process of Vedantic perception which was later on elaborated by Prakāśātman and later writers, and his views were all collected and systematized in the exposition of the Vedāntaparibhāṣā of Dharmarāja Adhvarīndra in the sixteenth century. Describing this process, Padmapada says that, as a result of the cognitive activity of the ego, the objects with which that is concerned become connected with it, and, as a result of that, certain changes are produced in it, and it is these changes that constitute the subject-object relation of knowledge (jñātur jñeya-sambandhaḥ). The antahkarana, or psychical frame of mind, can lead to the limited expression of the pure consciousness only so far as it is associated with its object. The perceptual experience of immediacy (aparoksa) of objects means nothing more than the expression of the pure consciousness through the changing states of the antahkarana. The ego thus becomes a perceiver (pramātr) through its connection

with the underlying consciousness. Prakāśātman, however, elaborates it by supposing that the antaḥkaraṇa goes out to the objective spatial positions, and assumes the spatial form of the objects perceived. Hence what Padmapāda conceived merely as the change of the antaḥkaraṇa states through the varying relation of the antaḥkaraṇa with its objects, is interpreted in the definite meaning of this relation as being nothing more than spatial superposition of the antaḥkaraṇa on its objects. In inference, however, there is no immediate knowledge, as this is mediated through relations with the reason (linga). Knowledge however would mean both mediate and immediate knowledge; for it is defined as being the manifestation of the object (artha-prakāśa).

On the subject of the causality of Brahman Padmapāda says that that on which the world-appearance is manifested, the Brahman, is the cause of the world. On this point Prakāśātman offers three alternative views, viz. (1) that, like two twisted threads in a rope, māyā and Brahman are together the joint cause of the world, (2) that that which has $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ as its power is the cause, and (3) that the Brahman which has māyā supported on it is the cause of the world, but in all these the ultimate causality rests with Brahman, since māvā is dependent thereon. Brahman is sarva-jña (omniscient) in the sense that it manifests all that is associated with it, and it is the Brahman that through its $m\bar{a}v\bar{a}$ appears as the world of experience. The doctrines of avaccheda-vāda and pratibimbavāda explained in the first volume of the present work are also at least as old as Padmapāda's Pañca-pādikā, and both Padmapāda and Prakāśātman seem to support the reflection theory (pratibimba-vāda), the theory that the jīva is but a reflected image of Brahman¹

Vācaspati Miśra (A.D. 840).

Vācaspati Miśra, the celebrated author of a commentary called *Bhāmatī* on Śankara's commentary, is the author of a *Tattva-samīkṣā*, a commentary on Maṇḍana's *Brahma-siddhi*; he also commented on the *Sāṃkhya-kārikā*, *Vidhi-viveka*, *Nyāya-vārttika*, and he was

¹ See volume 1, pp. 475, 476. These two doctrines were probably present in germinal forms as early as the ninth century. But gradually more and more attention seems to have been paid to them. Appaya Dikşita gives a fairly good summary of these two doctrines in the *Parimala*, pp. 335-343, Sri Vāṇi Vilāsa Press, Srirangam, without committing either himself or Vācaspati to any one of these views.

the author of a number of other works. In his Nyāya-sūcīnihandha he gives his date as 898 (vasv-anka-vasu-vatsare), which in all probability has to be understood as of the Vikrama-samvat, and consequently he can safely be placed in A.D 842. In his commentary called Bhāmatī he offers salutation to Mārtanda-alaka-svāmin. which has been understood to refer to his teacher. But Amalananda in commenting thereon rightly points out that this word is a compound of the two names Martanda and Tilakasvamin, belonging to gods adored with a view to the fruition of one's actions. Tilakasyāmin is referred to in Yājñavalkya, 1. 204 as a god, and the Mitāksarā explains it as being the name of the god Kārttikeva or Skanda. Udayana, however, in his Nyāya-vārttika-tātparya-pariśuddhi (p. o), a commentary on Vācaspati's Tātparya-tīkā, refers to one Trilocana as being the teacher of Vācaspati, and Vardhamāna in his commentary on it, called Nyāya-nibandha-prakāśa. confirms this: Vācaspati himself also refers to Trilocanaguru, whom he followed in interpreting the word vyavasāya (Nyāya-sūtra, 1. i. 4) as determinate knowledge (savikalpa)1. It is however interesting to note that in the Nyāya-kanikā (verse 3) he refers to the author of the Nvāva-mañjarī (in all probability Jayanta) as his teacher (vidvātaru)2. Vācaspati says at the end of his Bhāmatī commentary that he wrote that work when the great king Nrga was reigning. This king, so far as the present writer is aware, has not yet been historically traced. Bhāmatī was Vācaspati's last great work; for in the colophon at the end of the Bhāmatī he says that he had already written his Nyāya-kanikā, Tattva-samīksā, Tattva-bindu and other works on Nyāya, Sāmkhya and Yoga.

Vācaspati's Vedāntic works are *Bhāmatī* and *Tattva-samīkṣā* (on *Brahma-siddhī*). The last work has not yet been published. Aufrecht, referring to his work, *Tattva-bindu*, says that it is a Vedānta work. This is however a mistake, as the work deals with the *sphoṭa* doctrines of sound, and has nothing to do with Vedānta. In the absence of Vācaspati's *Tattva-samīkṣā*, which has not been published, and manuscripts of which have become extremely scarce, it is difficult to give an entirely satisfactory account of the special features of Vācaspati's view of Vedānta. But his *Bhāmatī*

Nvāva-kanikā, introductory verse.

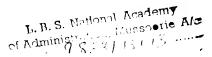
trilocana-gurūnnīta-mārgānugamanonmukhaiḥ yathāmānam yathā-vastu vyākhyātam idam īdṛśam. Nyāya-vārttika-tātparya-ṭīkā, p. 87. Benares, 1898. ajñāna-timira-śamanīṃ nyāya-mañjarīṃ rucirām prasavitre prabhavitre vidyā-tarave namo gurave.

commentary is a great work, and it is possible to collect from it some of the main features of his views. As to the method of Vācaspati's commentary, he always tries to explain the text as faithfully as he can, keeping himself in the background and directing his great knowledge of the subject to the elucidation of the problems which directly arise from the texts and to explaining the allusions and contexts of thoughts, objections and ideas of other schools of thought referred to in the text. The Bhāmatī commentary on Sankara's Bhāsva is a very important one, and it had a number of important sub-commentaries. The most important and earliest of these is the Vedānta-kalpa-taru of Amalānanda (A.D. 1247-1260), on which Appaya Dīkṣita (about A.D. 1600) wrote another commentary called Vedanta-kalpa taru-parimala¹. The Vedānta-kalpa-taru was also commented on by Laksminrsimha, author of the Tarka-dipikā, son of Kondabhatta and grandson of Rangoji Bhatta, towards the end of the seventeenth century, and this commentary is called Abhoga. The Abhoga commentary is largely inspired by the Vedāntakalpa-taru-parimala, though in many cases it differs from and criticizes it. In addition to these there are also other commentaries on the Bhāmatī, such as the Bhāmatī-tilaka, the Bhāmatī-vilāsa, the Bhāmatī-vyākhyā by Śrīranganātha and another commentary on the Vedānta-kalpa-taru, by Vaidyanātha Payagunda, called the Vedānta-kalpa-taru-mañjarī.

Vācaspati defines truth and reality as immediate self-revelation (sva-prakāśatā) which is never contradicted (abādhita). Only the pure self can be said to be in this sense ultimately real. He thus definitely rejects the definition of reality as the participation of the class-concept of being, as the Naiyāyikas hold, or capacity of doing work (artha-kriyā-kāritva), as the Buddhists hold. He admits two kinds of ajñāna, as psychological and as forming the material cause of the mind and the inner psychical nature of man or as the material world outside. Thus he says in his commentary on the Sankara-

¹ Amalananda also wrote another work, called Śāstra-darpaṇa, in which, taking the different topics (adhikaraṇas) of the Brahma-sūtras, he tried to give a plain and simple general explanation of the whole topic without entering into much discussion on the interpretations of the different sūtras on the topic. These general lectures on the adhikaraṇas of the Brahma-sūtras did not, however, reveal any originality of views on the part of Amalananda, but were based on Vācaspati's interpretation, and were but reflections of his views, as Amalanah himself admits in the second verse of the Śāstra-darpaṇa (Vācaspati-mati-vimbitam ādarsam prārabhe vimalam)—Śri Vāṇi Vilāsa Press, 1913, Srirangam, Madras.

bhāsya, 1. iii. 30, that at the time of the great dissolution (mahāpralaya) all products of avidya, such as the psychical frame (antahkarana), cease to have any functions of their own, but are not on account of that destroyed; they are at that time merged in the indescribable avidyā, their root cause, and abide there as potential capacities (sūksmena śakti-rūpena) together with the wrong impressions and psychological tendencies of illusion. When the state of mahā-pralaya is at an end, moved by the will of God. they come out like the limbs of a tortoise or like the rejuvenation during rains of the bodies of frogs which have remained inert and lifeless all the year round, and then, being associated with their proper tendencies and impressions, they assume their particular names and forms as of old before the mahā-pralaya. Though all creation takes place through God's will, yet God's will is also determined by the conditions of karma and the impressions produced by it. This statement proves that he believed in avidya as an objective entity of an indescribable nature (anirvācvā avidya), into which all world-products disappear during the mahā-pralaya and out of which they reappear in the end and become associated with psychological ignorance and wrong impressions which had also disappeared into it at the time of the mahā-pralaya. Avidyā thus described resembles very much the prakrti of Yoga, into which all the world-products disappear during a mahā-pralaya together with the fivefold avidyā and their impressions, which at the time of creation become associated with their own proper buddhis. In the very adoration hymn of the Bhāmatī Vācaspati speaks of avidyā being twofold (avidyādvitaya), and says that all appearances originate from Brahman in association with or with the accessory cause (sahakāri-kārana) of the two avidyās (avidyā-dvitaya-sacivasya). In explaining this passage Amalananda points out that this refers to two avidvas, one as a beginningless positive entity and the other as the preceding series of beginningless false impressions (anyā pūrvāpūrva-bhramasamskārah). There is thus one aspect of avidyā which forms the material stuff of the appearances; but the appearances could not have been appearances if they were not illusorily identified with the immediate and pure self-revelation (sva-prakāśā cit). Each individual person (jiva) confuses and misapprehends his psychical frame and mental experiences as intelligent in themselves, and it is by such an illusory confusion that these psychical states



attain any meaning as appearances; for otherwise these appearances could not have been expressed at all. But how does the person come in, since the concept of a person itself presupposes the very confusion which it is supposed to make? To this Vacaspati's reply is that the appearance of the personality is due to a previous false confusion, and that to another previous false confusion (cf. Mandana). So each false confusion has for its cause a previous false confusion, and that another false confusion and so on in a beginningless series. It is only through such a beginningless series of confusions that all the later states of confusion are to be explained. Thus on the one hand the avidyā operates in the individual person, the jīva, as its locus or support (āśraya), and on the other hand it has the Brahman or pure self-revealing intelligence as its object (visaya), which it obscures and through which it makes its false appearances to be expressed, thereby giving them a false semblance of reality, whereby all the world-appearances seem to be manifestations of reality1. It is easy to see how this view differs from the view of the Samksepa-śārīraka of Sarvajñātma Muni; for in the opinion of the latter, the Brahman is both the support (āśraya) and the object (visaya) of ajñāna, which means that the illusion does not belong to the individual person, but is of a transcendental character. It is not the individual person as such (jiva), but the pure intelligence that shines through each individual person (pratyak-cit), that is both obscured and diversified into a manifold of appearances in a transcendental manner. In Vācaspati's view, however, the illusion is a psychological one for which the individual person is responsible, and it is caused through a beginningless chain of illusions or confusions, where each succeeding illusory experience is explained by a previous illusory mode of experience, and that by another and so on. The content of the illusory experiences is also derived from the indescribable $avidy\bar{a}$, which is made to appear as real by their association with Brahman, the ultimately real and self-revealing Being. The illusory appearances, as they are, cannot be described as being existent or non-existent; for, though they seem to have their individual existences, they are always negated by other existences, and none of them have that kind of reality which can be said to defy all negation and contradiction; and it is only such uncontradicted self-revelation that can be said to be

¹ It is in the latter view that Vācaspati differs from Maṇdana, on whose Brahma-siddhi he wrote his Tattva-samīkṣā.

ultimately real. The unreality of world-appearance, consists in the fact that they are negated and contradicted; and yet they are not absolutely non-existent like a hare's horn, since, had they been so. they could not have been experienced at all. So in spite of the fact that the appearances are made out of avidya, they have so far as any modified existence can be ascribed to them, the Brahman as their underlying ground and it is for this reason that Brahman is to be regarded as the ultimate cause of the world. As soon as this Brahman is realized, the appearances vanish; for the root of all appearances is their illusory confusion with reality, the Brahman. In the Bhāmatī commentary on Sankara's commentary, II. ii. 28, Vācaspati points out that according to the Sankara Vedānta the objects of knowledge are themselves indescribable in their nature (anirvacanīyam nīlādi) and not mere mental ideas (na hi brahmavādino nīlādy-ākārām vittim abhyupagacchanti kintu anirvacanīyam nīlādi). The external objects therefore are already existent outside of the perceiver, only their nature and stuff are indescribable and irrational (anirvācya). Our perceptions therefore refer always to such objects as their excitants or producers, and they are not of the nature of pure sensations or ideas generated from within, without the aid of such external objects.

Sarvajñātma Muni (A.D. 900).

Sarvajñātma Muni was a disciple of Sureśvarācārya, the direct disciple of Sankara, to whom at the beginning of his work Samksepa-śārīraka he offers salutation by the name Devesvara, the word being a synonym of the word sura in Suresvara. The identification of Devesvara with Suresvara is made by Rāma Tīrtha, the commentator on the Samksepa-śārīraka, and this identification does not come into conflict with anything else that is known about Sarvajñātma Muni either from the text of his work or from other references to him in general. It is said that his other name was Nityabodhācārya. The exact date of neither Sureśvara nor Sarvajñātma can be definitely determined. Mr Pandit in his introduction to the Gaudavaho expresses the view that, since Bhavabhūti was a pupil of Kumārila, Kumārila must have lived in the middle of the seventh century, and, since Sankara was a contemporary of Kumārila (on the testimony of the Sankara-dig-vijaya), he must have lived either in the seventh century or in the first half of the eighth century. In the

first volume of the present work Sankara was placed between A.D. 780-820. The arguments of Mr Pandit do not raise any new point for consideration. His theory that Bhavabhūti was a pupil of Kumārila is based on the evidence of two manuscripts, where, at the end of an act of the Mālatī-Mādhava, it is said that the work was written by a pupil of Kumārila. This evidence, as I have noticed elsewhere, is very slender. The tradition that Sankara was a contemporary of Kumārila, based as it is only on the testimony of the Sankara-digvijaya, cannot be seriously believed. All that can be said is that Kumārila probably lived not long before Sankara, if one can infer this from the fact that Sankara does not make any reference to Kumārila. Hence there seems to be no reason why the traditionally accepted view that Sankara was born in Samvat 844, or A.D. 788, or Kali age 3889, should be given up1. Taking the approximate date of Sankara's death to be about A.D. 820 and taking into consideration that Sureśvara, the teacher of Sarvajñātman, occupied his high pontifical position for a long time, the supposition that Sarvajñātman lived in A.D. 900 may not be very far wrong. Moreover, this does not come into conflict with the fact that Vācaspati, who probably wrote his earlier work the Nyāya-sūcī-nibandha in A.D. 842, also wrote his commentary on Mandana's Brahma-siddhi when Sureśvara was occupying the pontifical position,

Sarvajñātma Muni was thus probably a younger contemporary of Vācaspati Miśra. In his Samksepa-śārīraka he tries to describe the fundamental problems of the Vedanta philosophy, as explained by Sankara. This work, which is probably the only work of his that is known to us, is divided into four chapters, written in verses of different metres. It contains in the first chapter 563 verses, in the second 248, in the third 365 and in the fourth 63. In the first chapter of the work he maintains that pure Brahman is the ultimate cause of everything through the instrumentality (dvāra) of ajñāna. The ajñāna, which rests on (āśraya) the pure self and operates on it as its object (visaya), covers its real nature (ācchādya) and creates delusory appearances (viksipati), thereby producing the threefold appearances of God (Īśvara), soul (jīva) and the world. This aiñāna has no independent existence, and its effects are seen only through the pure self (cid-ātman) as its ground and object, and its creations are all false. The pure self is directly perceived in the state of dreamless sleep as being of the nature

¹ See Ārya-vidyā-sudhā-kara, pp. 226, 227.

of pure bliss and happiness without the slightest touch of sorrow: and pure bliss can only be defined as that which is the ultimate end and not under any circumstances a means to anything else; such is also the pure self, which cannot be regarded as being a means to anything else; moreover, there is the fact that everyone always desires his self as the ultimate object of attainment which he loves above anything else. Such an infinite love and such an ultimate end cannot be this limited self, which is referred to as the agent of our ordinary actions and the sufferer in the daily concerns of life. The intuitive perception of the seers of the Upanisads also confirms the truth of the self as pure bliss and the infinite. The illusory impositions on the other hand are limited appearances of the subject and the object which merely contribute to the possibility of false attribution and cannot therefore be real (na vāstavam tat). When the Brahman is associated with aiñāna there are two false entities, viz. the ajñāna and the Brahman as associated with the ajñāna; but this does not imply that the pure Brahman, which underlies all these false associations, is itself also false, since this might lead to the criticism that, everything being false, there is no reality at all, as some of the Buddhists contend. A distinction is drawn here between adhara and adhisthana. The pure Brahman that underlies all appearances is the true adhisthāna (ground), while the Brahman as modified by the false aiñāna is a false adhara or a false object to which the false appearances directly refer. All illusory appearances are similarly experienced. Thus in the experience "I perceive this piece of silver" (in the case of the false appearance of a piece of conch-shell as silver) the silvery character or the false appearance of the silver is associated with the "this" element before the perceiver, and the "this" element in its turn, as the false object, becomes associated with the false silver as the "this silver." But, though the objectivity of the false silver as the "this" before the perceiver is false, the "this" of the true object of the conch-shell is not false. It is the above kind of double imposition of the false appearance on the object and of the false object on the false appearance that is known as parasparādhyāsa. It is only the false object that appears in the illusory appearance and the real object lies untouched. The inner psychical frame (antahkarana) to a certain extent on account of its translucent character resembles pure Brahman, and on account of this similarity it is often mistaken for the pure self and the pure

self is mistaken for the antahkarana. It may be contended that there could be no antahkarana without the illusory imposition, and so it could not itself explain the nature of illusion. The reply given to such an objection is that the illusory imposition and its consequences are beginningless and there is no point of time to which one could assign its beginning. Hence, though the present illusion may be said to have taken its start with the antahkarana, the antahkarana is itself the product of a previous imposition, and that of a previous antahkarana, and so on without a beginning. Just as in the illusion of the silver in the conch-shell, though there is the piece of conch-shell actually existing, yet it is not separately seen, and all that is seen to exist is the unreal silver, so the real Brahman exists as the ground, though the world during the time of its appearance is felt to be the only existing thing and the Brahman is not felt to be existent separately from it. Yet this ajñāna has no real existence and exists only for the ignorant. It can only be removed when the true knowledge of Brahman dawns, and it is only through the testimony of the Upanisads that this knowledge can dawn; for there is no other means of insight into the nature of Brahman. Truth again is defined not as that which is amenable to proof, but as that which can be independently and directly felt. The aināna, again, is defined as being positive in its nature (bhāva $r\bar{u}pam$) and, though it rests on the pure Brahman, yet, like butter in contact with fire, it also at its touch under certain circumstances melts away. The positive character of ajñāna is felt in the world in its materiality and in ourselves as our ignorance. The real ground cause, however, according to the testimony of the Upanisads, is the pure Brahman, and the ajñāna is only the instrument or the means by which it can become the cause of all appearances; but, aiñāna not being itself in any way the material cause of the world, Sarvajñātman strongly holds that Brahman in association and jointly with ajñāna cannot be regarded as the material cause of the world. The ajñāna is only a secondary means, without which the transformation of appearances is indeed not possible, but which has no share in the ultimate cause that underlies them. He definitely denies that Brahman could be proved by any inference to the effect that that which is the cause of the production, existence and dissolution of the world is Brahman, since the nature of Brahman can be understood only by the testimony of the scriptures. He indulges in long discussions in order to show how the Upanisads

can lead to a direct and immediate apprehension of reality as Brahman.

The second chapter of the book is devoted mainly to the further elucidation of these doctrines. In that chapter Sarvajñātma Muni tries to show the difference of the Vedanta view from the Buddhist, which difference lies mainly in the fact that, in spite of the doctrine of illusion, the Vedanta admits the ultimate reality to be Brahman. which is not admitted by the Buddhists. He also shows how the experiences of waking life may be compared with those of dreams. He then tries to show that neither perception nor other means of proof can prove the reality of the world-appearance and criticizes the philosophic views of the Samkhya, Nyaya and other systems. He further clarifies his doctrine of the relation of Brahman to aiñāna and points out that the association of ajnana is not with the one pure Brahman, nor with individual souls, but with the pure light of Brahman, which shines as the basis and ground of individual souls (pratyaktva); for it is only in connection with this that the ajñāna appears and is perceived. When with the dawn of right knowledge pure Brahman as one is realized, the aiñāna is not felt. It is only in the light of Brahman as underlying the individual souls that the ajñāna is perceived, as when one says, "I do not know what you say"; so it is neither the individual soul nor the pure one which is Brahman, but the pure light as it reveals itself through each and every individual soul¹. The true light of Brahman is always there, and emancipation means nothing more than the destruction of the ajñāna. In the third chapter Sarvajñātman describes the ways (sādhana) by which one should try to destroy this ajñāna and prepare oneself for this result and for the final Brahma knowledge. In the last chapter he describes the nature of emancipation and the attainment of Brahmahood.

The Saṃkṣepa-śārīraka was commented upon by a number of distinguished writers, none of whom seem to be very old. Thus Nṛṣiṃhāśrama wrote a commentary called Tattva-bodhinī, Puruṣottama Dīkṣita wrote another called Subodhinī, Rāghavānanda another called Vidyāmṛta-varṣiṇī, Viśvadeva another called Siddhānta-dīpa, on which Rāma Tīrtha, pupil of Kṛṣṇa Tīrtha,

¹ nājñānam advayasamāśrayam iştam evam nādvaita-vastu-vişayam niśitekşanānām nānanda-nitya-vişayāśrayam iştam etat pratyaktva-mātra-vişayāśrayatānubhūteḥ. Samkşepa-śārīraka, II. 211.

based his commentary Anvayārtha-prakāśikā. Madhusūdana Sara-svatī also wrote another commentary, called Samkṣepa-śārīraka-sāra-samgraha.

Ānandabodha Yati.

Anandabodha is a great name in the school of Sankara Vedanta. He lived probably in the eleventh or the twelfth century¹. He refers to Vācaspati's Tattva-samīksā and criticizes, but without mentioning his name, Sarvajñātman's view of the interpretation of the nature of self as pure bliss. He wrote at least three works on Sankara Vedānta, viz. Nyāya-makaranda, Nyāya-dīpāvalī and Pramāna-mālā. Of these the Nyāya-makaranda was commented upon by Citsukha and his pupil Sukhaprakāśa in works called Nyāya-makaranda-tīkā and Nyāya-makaranda-vivecanī. Sukhaprakāśa also wrote a commentary on the Nyāya-dīpāvalī, called Nyāya-dīpāvalī-tātparya-tīkā. Anubhūtisvarūpa Ācārya (late thirteenth century), the teacher of Anandajñana, also wrote commentaries on all the three works of Anandabodha. Anandabodha does not pretend to have made any original contribution and says that he collected his materials from other works which existed in his time². He starts his Nyāya-makaranda with the thesis that the apparent difference of different selves is false, since not only do the Upanisads hold this doctrine, but it is also intelligible on grounds of reason that the apparent multiplicity of selves can be explained on an imaginary supposition of diversity (kālpanikapurusa-bheda), even though in reality there is but one soul. Arguing on the fact that even the illusory supposition of an imaginary diversity may explain all appearances of diversity. Anandabodha tries to refute the argument of the Sāmkhva-kārikā that the diversity of souls is proved by the fact that with the birth and death of some there is not birth or death of others. Having refuted the plurality of subjects in his own way, he turns to the refutation of plurality of objects. He holds that difference (bheda) cannot be perceived by sense-perception, since difference cannot be perceived without perceiving both the object and all else from which it differs. It cannot be said that first the object is perceived and then the difference; for perception will naturally

¹ Mr Tripathi in his introduction to Ānandajñāna's *Tarka-saṃgraha* gives Ānandabodha's date as A.D. 1200.

Nānā-nibandha-kusuma-prabhavāvadātanyāyāpadeśa-makaranda-kadamba eşa.

cease with awareness of its object, and there is no way in which it can operate for the comprehension of difference; neither can it be held that the comprehension of difference can in any way be regarded as simultaneous with the perception of the sensibles. Nor is it possible that, when two sensibles are perceived at two different points of time, there could be any way in which their difference could be perceived; for the two sensibles cannot be perceived at one and the same time. It cannot, again, be said that the perception of any sensible, say blue, involves with it the perception of all that is not blue, the yellow, the white, the red, etc.: for in that case the perception of any sensible would involve the perception of all other objects of the world. The negation of the difference of an entity does not mean anything more than the actual position of it. It is not, however, right to hold that all positive entities are of the nature of differences; for this is directly against all experience. If differences are perceived as positive entities, then to comprehend their differences further differences would be required, and there would thus be a vicious infinite. Moreover, differences, being negative in their nature, cannot be regarded as capable of being perceived as positive sensibles. Whether difference is taken as a subject or a predicate in the form "the difference of the jug from the pillar," or "the jug is different from the pillar," in either case there is comprehension of an earlier and more primitive difference between the two objects, on the basis of which the category of difference is realized.

Anandabodha then discusses the different theories of error held by the Nyāya, Mīmāṃsā, Buddhism, etc. and supports the anirva-canīya theory of error¹. In this connection he records his view as to why nescience $(avidy\bar{a})$ has to be admitted as the cause of world-appearance. He points out that the variety and multiplicity of world-appearance cannot be explained without the assumption of a cause which forms its substance. Since this world-appearance is unreal, it cannot come out of a substance that is real, nor can it come out of something absolutely non-existent and unreal, since such a thing evidently could not be the cause of anything; hence, since the cause of world-appearance cannot be either real or unreal, it must have for its cause something which is neither real nor unreal, and the neither-real-nor-unreal entity is $avidy\bar{a}^2$.

² Nyāya-makaranda, pp. 122, 123.

¹ See the first volume of the present work, ch. x, p. 485.

He next proceeds to prove the doctrine that the self is of the nature of pure consciousness (ātmanah samvid-rūpatva). This he does, firstly, by stating the view that awareness in revealing itself reveals also immediately its objects, and secondly, by arguing that even though objects of awareness may be varying, there is still the unvarying consciousness which continues the same even when there is no object. If there were only the series of awarenesses arising and ceasing and if there were constant and persistent awarenesses abiding all the time, how could one note the difference between one awareness and another, between blue and yellow? Referring to avidya, he justifies the view of its being supported on Brahman, because avidyā, being indefinable in its nature, i.e. being neither negative nor positive, there can be no objection to its being regarded as supported on Brahman. Moreover, Brahman can only be regarded as omniscient in its association with avidyā, since all relations are of the nature of avidyā and there cannot be any omniscience without a knowledge of the relations. In his Nyāya-dīpavalī he tries by inference to prove the falsity of the world-appearance on the analogy of the falsity of the illusory silver. His method of treatment is more or less the same as the treatment in the Advaitasiddhi of Madhusūdana Sarasvatī at a much later period. There is practically nothing new in his Pramāna-mālā. It is a small work of about twenty-five pages, and one can recognize here the arguments of the Nyāya-makaranda in a somewhat different form and with a different emphasis. Most of Anandabodha's arguments were borrowed by the later writers of the Vedanta school. Vyasatīrtha of the Madhva school of Vedanta collected most of the standard Vedānta arguments from Ānandabodha and Prakāśātman for refutation in his Nyāyāmrta, and these were again refuted by Madhusūdana's great work, the Advaita-siddhi, and these refuted in their turn in Rāma Tīrtha's Nyāyāmrta-taranginī. The history of this controversy will be dealt with in the third volume of the present work.

Mahā-vidyā and the Development of Logical Formalism.

The Buddhists had taken to the use of the dialectic method of logical discussions even from the time of Nāgārjuna. But this was by no means limited to the Buddhists. The Naiyāyikas had also adopted these methods, as is well illustrated by the writings

XI] Mahā-vidyā and Development of Logical Formalism 119

of Vātsvāvana, Uddyotakara, Vācaspati, Udayana and others. Sankara himself had utilized this method in the refutation of Buddhistic, Jaina, Vaisesika and other systems of Indian philosophy. But, though these writers largely adopted the dialectic methods of Nagarjuna's arguments, there seems to be little attempt on their part to develop the purely formal side of Nagarjuna's logical arguments, viz. the attempt to formulate definitions with the strictest formal rigour and to offer criticisms with that overemphasis of formalism and scholasticism which attained their culmination in the writings of later Nyāva writers such as Raghunātha Siromani, Jagadīśa Bhattācārya, Mathurānātha Bhattācārya and Gadādhara Bhattācārya. It is generally believed that such methods of overstrained logical formalism were first started by Gangeśa Upādhyāya of Mithilā early in the thirteenth century. But the truth seems to be that this method of logical formalism was steadily growing among certain writers from as early as the tenth and eleventh centuries. One notable instance of it is the formulation of the mahā-vidyā modes of syllogism by Kulārka Pandita in the eleventh century. There is practically no reference to this mahā-vidvā syllogism earlier than Śrīharsa (A.D. 1187)¹. References to this syllogism are found in the writings of Citsukha Ācārya (A.D. 1220), Amalānanda, called also Vyāsāśrama (A.D. 1247), Ānandajñāna (A.D. 1260), Venkata (A.D. 1360), Sesa Sārngadhara (A.D. 1450) and others². The mahā-vidyā syllogisms were started probably some time in the eleventh century, and they continued to be referred to or refuted by writers till the fifteenth century, though it is curious to notice that they were not mentioned by Gangesa or any of his followers, such as Raghunatha, Jagadīsa and others, in their discussions on the nature of kevalānvayi types of inference.

¹ gandhe gandhāntara-prasañjikā na ca yuktir asti; tadastitve vā kā no hāniḥ; tasyā apy asmābhiḥ khanḍanīyatvāt. Śrīharşa's Khanḍana-khanḍa-khādya, p. 1181, Chowkhambā edition.

² athavā ayam ghaṭaḥ etadghaṭānyatve sati vedyatvānadhikaraṇānya-padārhatvāt paṭavad ity-ādimahāvidyā-prayogair api vedyatva-siddhir apy ūhaniyā.— Citsukha Ācārya's Tattva-pradīpikā, p. 13, also p. 304. The commentator Pratyagrūpa-bhagavān mentions Kulārka Paṇḍita by name. evaṃ sarvā mahavidyās tac-chāyā vānye prayogāḥ khaṇḍanīyā iti.—Amalānanda's Vedānta-kalpa-taru, p. 304 (Benares, 1895). sarvāsv eva mahāvidyāsu, etc.—Ānandajñāna's Tarka-saṃgraha, p. 22. Also Venkaṭa's Nyāya-parisuddhi, pp. 125, 126, 273-276, etc., and Tattva-muktā-kalāpa with Sarvārtha-siddhi, pp. 478, 485, 486-491. Mr M. R. Telang has collected all the above references to mahā-vidyā in his introduction to the Mahā-vidyā-viḍambana, Gaekwad's Oriental Series, Baroda, 1920.

In all probability mahā-vidyā syllogisms were first started by Kulārka Pandita in his Daśa-śloki-mahā-vidyā-sūtra containing sixteen different types of definitions for sixteen different types of mahā-vidyā syllogisms. Assuming that Kulārka Paņdita, the founder of mahā-vidyā syllogisms, flourished in the eleventh century, it may well be suggested that many other writers had written on this subject before Vadindra refuted them in the first quarter of the thirteenth century. Not only does Vadindra refer to the arguments of previous writers in support of mahā-vidyā and in refutation of it in his Mahā-vidyā-vidambana, but Bhuvanasundara Sūri also in his commentary on the Mahā-vidyā-vidambana refers to other critics of mahā-vidvā. Recently two different commentaries have been discovered on mahā-vidvā, by Purusottamavana and Pūrņaprajña. Venkaţa in his Nyāya-pariśuddhi refers to the Mahā-vidvā, the Māna-manohara and the Pramāna-mañjarī, and Śrīnivāsa in his commentary Nyāya-sāra on the Nyāya-parisuddhi describes them as works which deal with roundabout syllogisms (vakrānumāna)1. This shows that for four or five centuries mahā-vidyā syllogisms were in certain quarters supported and refuted from the eleventh century to the sixteenth century.

It is well known that the great Mīmāmsā writers, such as Kumārila Bhatta and his followers, believed in the doctrine of the eternity of sounds, while the followers of the Nyāya and Vaiśesika, called also Yaugācāryas, regarded sound as non-eternal (anitya). Mahā-vidyā modes were special modes of syllogism, invented probably by Kulārka Pandita for refuting the Mīmāmsā arguments of the eternity of sounds and proving the non-eternity of sounds. If these modes of syllogism could be regarded as valid, they would also have other kinds of application for the proving or disproving of other theories and doctrines. The special feature of the mahāvidyā syllogisms consisted in their attempt to prove a thesis by the kevalānvayi method. Ordinarily concomitance (vyāpti) consists in the existence of the reason (hetu) in association with the probandum and its non-existence in all places where the probandum is absent (sādhyābhāvavad-avrttitvam). But the kevalānvayi form of inference which is admitted by the Naiyayikas applies to those cases where the probandum is so universal that there is no case where it is absent, and consequently it cannot have a reason (hetu) whose concomitance with it can be determined by

¹ See M. R. Telang's introduction to the Mahā-vidyā-vidambana.

its non-existence in all cases where the probandum is absent and its existence in all cases where the probandum is present. Thus in the proposition, "This is describable or nameable (idam abhidhevam) because it is knowable (prameyatvāt)," both the probandum and the reason are so universal that there is no case where their concomitance can be tested by negative instances. Mahā-vidvā syllogisms were forms of kevalānvayi inference of this type, and there were sixteen different varieties of it which had this advantage associated with them, that, they being kevalanvayi forms of syllogism, it was not easy to criticize them by pointing out defects or lapses of concomitance of the reason and the probandum, as no negative instances are available in their case. In order to make it possible that a kevalānvayi form of syllogism should be applicable for affirming the non-eternity of sound, Kularka tried to formulate propositions in sixteen different ways so that on kevalanvayi lines such an affirmation might be made about a subject that by virtue of it the non-eternity of sound should follow necessarily as the only consequence, other possible alternatives being ruled out. It is this indirect approach of inference that has been by the critics of mahā-vidvā styled roundabout syllogism. Thus mahā-vidvā has been defined as that method of syllogism by which a specific probandum which it is desired to prove by the joint method of agreement and difference (3, anvaya-vyatireki-sādhyaviseşam vādy-abhimatam sādhayati) is proved by the necessary implication of the existence of a particular probandum in a particular subject (2, pakse vyāpaka-pratītya-paryavasāna-balāt), affirmed by the existence of hetu in the subject on kevalānvayi lines (1, kevalānvayini vyāpake pravartamāno hetuh). In other words, a reason which exists in a probandum inseparably abiding in a subject (paksa) without failure (proposition 1) proves (sādhayati), by virtue of the fact, that such an unfailing existence of that probandum in that subject in that way is only possible under one supposition (proposition 2), namely, the affirmation of another probandum in another subject (e.g. the affirmation of the probandum "noneternity" to the subject "sound"), which is generally sought to be proved by the direct method of agreement and difference (proposition 3). This may be understood by following a typical mahāvidyā syllogism. Thus it is said that by reason of knowability (meyatva) as such the self, dissociated from the relations of all eternal and non-eternal qualities of all other objects excepting

sound, is related to a non-eternal entity (ātmā śabdetarānitya-nitvayavrttitvānadhikaranānitya-vrtti-dharmavān meyatvād ghatavat). Now by the qualifying adjunct of "self" the self is dissociated from all qualities that it shares with all other eternal and non-eternal objects excepting sound, and the consequence is that it is left only with some kind of non-eternal quality in relation with sound, as this was left out of consideration in the qualifying adjunct, which did not take sound within its purview. Since many relations are also on the Nyāya view treated as qualities, such a non-eternal relation of the self to sound may be their mutual difference or their mutual negation (anyonyābhāva). Now, if the self, which is incontestably admitted to be eternal, has such a non-eternal quality or relation to sound, then this can only be under one supposition, viz. that sound is non-eternal. But, since all other non-eternal relations that the self may have to other non-eternal objects, and all other eternal relations that it may have to other eternal objects, and all other such relations that it may have to all eternal and non-eternal objects jointly, except sound, have already been taken out of consideration by the qualifying phrase, the inseparable and unfailing non-eternal quality that the self may have, in the absence of any negative instances, is in relation to sound; but, if it has a non-eternal quality in relation to sound, then this can be so only under one supposition, viz. that sound is itself non-eternal; for the self is incontestably known as eternal. This indirect and roundabout method of syllogism is known as mahāvidyā. It is needless to multiply examples to illustrate all the sixteen types of propositions of mahā-vidyā syllogism, as they are all formed on the same principle with slight variations.

Vādīndra in his Mahā-vidyā-vidambana refuted these types of syllogism as false, and it is not known that any one else tried to revive them by refuting Vādīndra's criticisms. Vādīndra styles himself in the colophon at the end of the first chapter of his Mahā-vidyā-vidambana "Hara-kinkara-nyāyācārya-parama-pandita-bhatṭa-vādindra," and in the concluding verse of his work refers to Yogisvara as his preceptor. The above epithets of Hara-kinkara, nyāyācārya, etc. do not show however what his real name was. Mr Telang points out in his introduction to the Mahā-vidyā-vidambana that his pupil Bhaṭṭa Rāghava in his commentary on Bhāsarvajña's Nyāya-sāra, called Nyāya-sāra-vicāra, refers to him by the name Mahādeva. Vādīndra's real name, then, was Mahādeva,

and the rest of the epithets were his titles. Bhatta Rāghava says that the name of Vādīndra's father was Sāranga, Bhatt. Rāghava gives his own date in the Saka era. The sentence however is liable to two different constructions, giving us two different dates, viz.A.D. 1252 and 1352. But, judging from the fact that Vadindra was a religious counsellor of King Śrīsimha (also called Śinghana), who reigned in Devagiri A.D. 1210-1247, and that in all probability he lived before Venkata (A.D. 1267–1369), who refers to his Mahā-udyā-vidambana, Mr Telang suggests that we should take A.D. 1252 to be the date of Bhatta Rāghava; and, since he was a pupil of Vādīndra, one may deduct about 27 years from his date and fix Vadindra's date as A.D. 1225. Mr Telang points out that such a date would agree with the view that he was a religious counsellor of King Śrīsimha. Vādīndra refers to Udayana (A.D. 984) and Šivāditya Miśra (A.D. 975-1025). Mr Telang also refers to two other works of Vādīndra, viz. Rasa-sāra and Kaṇāda-sūtra-nibandha, and argues from allusions contained in Vadindra's Mahā-vidvā-vidambana that he must have written other works in refutation of mahā-vidvā. Vādīndra's Mahā-vidvā-vidambana consists of three chapters. In the first chapter he gives an exposition of the mahā-vidvā syllogisms; the second and third chapters are devoted to the refutation of these syllogisms. Vādīndra's Mahā-vidyā-vidambana has two commentaries, one called Mahā-vidyā-vidambana-vyākhyāna, by Ānandapūrņa (A.D. 1600), and the other, called Vyākhyāna-dīpikā, by Bhuvanasundara Sūri (A.D. 1400). In addition to these Bhuvanasundara Sūri also wrote a small work called the Laghu-mahā-vidyā-vidambana and a commentary, Mahā-vidyā-vivaraṇa-tippana, on a Mahā-vidyā-daśaślokī-vivaraņa by an unknown author.

The main points of Vādīndra's criticisms may briefly be stated as follows: He says that it is not possible that there should be a proper reason (hetu) which has no negative instances (kevalānvayihetor eva nirvaktum aśakyatvāt). It is difficult to prove that any particular quality should exist everywhere and that there should not be any instance or case where it does not occur. In the third chapter he shows that not only is it not possible to have kevalānvayi hetus, but that even in arguments on the basis of such kevalānvayi hetu there would be great scope for fallacies of self-contradiction (sva-vyāghāta) and fallacies of illicit distribution of the middle term (anaikāntikatva) and the like. He also shows how all these fallacies apply to all the mahā-vidyā syllogisms invented by Kulārka Paṇḍita.

It is needless for our present purposes to enter into any elaborate logical discussion of Vādīndra; for the present digression on $mah\bar{a}\text{-}vidy\bar{a}$ syllogisms is introduced here only to show that scholastic logicisms were not first introduced by Śrīharṣa, but had already come into fashion a few centuries before him, though Śrīharṣa was undoubtedly the most prominent of those who sought to apply these scholastic methods in philosophy.

It will thus be seen that the fashion of emphasizing the employment of logical formalism as a method in philosophy was inherited by the Naiyayikas and Vedantists alike from Buddhists like Nāgārjuna, Āryadeva and others in the third and the fourth centuries and their later successors in the fifth, sixth and seventh centuries. But during the eighth, ninth and tenth centuries one notices a steady development on this side in the works of prominent Nyāya writers such as Vātsyāyana, Uddyotakara, Vācaspati Miśra and Udayana and Vedantic authors such as the great master Śankarācārya, Vācaspati Miśra and Ānandabodha Yati. But the school of abstract and dry formalism may be said to have properly begun with Kulārka Pandita, or the authors of the Māna-manohara and Pramāṇa-mañjarī in the latter part of the eleventh century, and to have been carried on in the works of a number of other writers. until we come to Gangesa of the early thirteenth century, who enlivened it with the subtleties of his acute mind by the introduction of the new concepts of avacchedakatā, which may be regarded as a new turning point after vyāpti. This work was further carried on extremely elaborately by his later successors, the great writers of this new school of logic (navya-nyāya), Raghunātha Śiromani, Jagadīśa Bhattācārya, Gadādhara Bhattācārya and others. On the Vedanta side this formalism was carried on by Śrīharsa (A.D. 1187), Citsukha of about A.D. 1220 (of whom Vādīndra was a contemporary), Anandajñāna or Anandagiri of about A.D. 1260 and through a number of minor writers until we come to Nrsimhāśrama and Madhusūdana Sarasvatī of the seventeenth century. It may be surmised that formal criticisms of Śrīharsa were probably largely responsible for a new awakening in the Naivāvikas, who began to direct their entire attention to a perfecting of their definitions and discussions on strict lines of formal accuracy and preciseness to the utter neglect of the collection of new data, new experiences or the investigation of new problems or new lines of enquiry, which is so essential for the development of true philosophy. But, when once they started perfecting the purely logical appliances and began to employ them successfully in debates, it became essential for all Vedantists also to master the ways of this new formalism for the defence of their old views, with utter neglect of new creations in philosophy. Thus in the growth of the history of the dialectic of logical formalism in the Vedanta system of thought it is found that during the eighth, ninth, tenth and eleventh centuries the element of formalism was at its lowest and the controversies of the Vedanta with the Buddhists, Mīmāmsists and Naiyāyikas were based largely on the analysis of experience from the Vedantic standpoint and its general approach to philosophy. But in the twelfth and the thirteenth centuries the controversy was largely with the Nyāya and Vaiśesika and dominated by considerations of logical formalism above everything else. Criticisms became for the most part nothing more than criticisms of Nyāya and Vaiśesika definitions. Parallel to this a new force was gradually growing during these centuries in the writings of Rāmānuja and his followers, and in the succeeding centuries the followers of Madhva, the great Vaisnava writer, began to criticize the Vedantists (of the Śańkara school) very strongly. It is found therefore that from the thirteenth or fourteenth century the Vedantic attack was largely directed against the followers of Rāmānuja and Madhva. A history of this controversy will be given in the third and fourth volumes of the present work. But the method of logical formalism had attained such an importance by this time that, though the Vaisnavas brought in many new considerations and points of view in philosophy, the method of logical formalism never lost its high place in dialectic discussions.

Vedānta Dialectic of Śrīharṣa (A.D. 1150).

Śrīharṣa flourished probably during the middle of the twelfth century A.D. Udayana, the great Nyāya writer, lived towards the end of the tenth century, as is evident from the colophon of his Lakṣaṇāvalī¹. Śrīharṣa often refutes the definitions of Udayana, and therefore must have flourished after him. Again, the great logician Gangeśa of Mithilā refers to Śrīharṣa and refutes his

tarkāmbarānka(906)pramitesv atītesu sakāntataḥ varsesūdayanas cakre subodhām laksaṇāvalīm. Lakṣaṇāvalī, p. 72, Surendralāl Gosvāmin's edition, Benares, 1900.

views, and, since Gangesa lived in A.D. 1200, Śrīharsa must have lived before that date. Accordingly Śrīharsa was after Udayana and before Gangesa, i.e. between the tenth and twelfth centuries A.D. At the end of his book he refers to himself as honoured by the King of Kanauj (Kānyakubjeśvara). It is probable that this king may be Jayacandra of Kanauj, who was dethroned about A.D. 11951. In his poetical work Naisadha-carita he mentions at the end of the several chapters many works of his, such as Arnavavarnana, Gaudorvīśa-kula-praśasti, Nava-sāhasānka-carita, Vijayapraśasti, Śiva-śakti-siddhi, Sthairya-vicārana, Chandah-praśasti, and also Iśvarābhisandhi and Pañcanaliya kāvya2. The fact that he wrote a work eulogizing the race of the kings of Gauda leads one to suspect that he may have been one of the five Brahmans invited by Adiśūra of Bengal from Kanauj in the early part of the eleventh century, in which case Śrīharsa would have to be placed at that time, and cannot be associated with Jayacandra, who was dethroned in A.D. 1195. Śrīharsa's most important philosophical contribution was the Khandana-khanda-khādya (lit. "the sweets of refutation"), in which he attempts to refute all definitions of the Nyāya system intended to justify the reality of the categories of experience and tries to show that the world and all world-experiences are purely phenomenal and have no reality behind them. The only reality is the self-luminous Brahman of pure consciousness³. His polemic is against the Nyāva, which holds that

- ¹ Ānandapūrņa in his commentary on the Khandana-khanda-l.hādya, called Khandana-phakkikā, explains Kānyakubjeśvara as Kāśīrāja, i.e. King of Kāśī or Benares.
 - ² None of these however are available.
- ³ Sriharşa at the end of this work speaks of having purposely made it extremely knotty here and there, so that no one could understand its difficulties easily except when explained by the teacher. Thus he says:

grantha-granthir iha kvacit kvacid api nyāsi prayatnān mayā prājñammanya-manā haṭhena paṭhittmāsmin khalaḥ khelatu, śraddhārāddha-guruḥ ślathikṛta-dṛḍha-granthiḥ samāsādayat tv etat-tarkarasormni-majjana sukheṣv āsañjanam sajjanaḥ.

Khandana-khanda-khādya, p. 1341. Chowkhambā Sanskrit Book Depot, Benares, 1914.

Several commentaries have been written on this celebrated work by various people, e.g. Khandana-mandana by Paramānanda, Khandana-mandana by Bhavanātha, Dīdhiti by Raghunātha Siromani, Prakāša by Vardhamāna, Vidyāhharaṇa, Vidyā-sāgarī by Vidyāsāgara, Khandana-ṭīkā by Padmanābha Pandita, Ānanda-vardhana by Sankara Miśra, Śri-darpaṇa by Subhankara, Khandana-mahā-tarka by Caritrasiṃha, Khandana-khandana by Pragalbha Miśra, Śiṣya-hitaiṣinī by Padmanābha, Khandana-kuṭhāra by Gokulanātha Upādhyāya. At least one refutation of it was attempted by the Naiyā-yikas, as is evidenced by the work of a later Vācaspati (A.D. 1350) from Bengal, called Khandanaoddhāra.

whatever is known has a well-defined real existence, and Śrīharsa's main point is to prove that all that is known is indefinable and unreal, being only of a phenomenal nature and having only a relative existence based on practical modes of acceptance, customs and conventions. But, though his chief polemic is against the Nyāya, yet, since his criticisms are almost wholly of a destructive nature like those of Nāgārjuna, they could be used, with modifications, no less effectively against any other system. Those who criticize with the object of establishing positive definitions would object only to certain definitions or views of other schools; but both Śrīharsa and the nihilists are interested in the refutation of all definitions as such, and therefore his dialectic would be valid against all views and definitions of other systems1.

He starts with the proposition that none of our awarenesses ever stand in need of being further known or are capable of being the objects of any further act of knowledge. The difference of the Vedanta from the idealistic Buddhists consists in this, that the latter hold that everything is unreal and indefinable, not even excepting cognitions (vijñāna); while the Vedānta makes an exception of cognitions and holds that all the world, excepting knowledge or awareness, is indefinable either as existent or non-existent (sad-asadbhyām vilakṣaṇam) and is unreal2. This indefinableness is in the nature of all things in the world and all experiences (meyasvabhāvānugāminyām anirvacanīyatā), and no amount of ingenuity or scholarship can succeed in defining the nature of that which has no definable nature or existence. Śrīharsa undertakes to show that all definitions of things or categories put forward by the Nyāya writers are absolutely hollow and faulty even according to the canons of logical discussions and definitions accepted by the Naiyāyika; and, if no definition can stand or be supported, it necessarily follows that there can be no definitions, or, in other words, that no definitions of the phenomenal world are possible and that the world of phenomena and all our so-called experiences

Lankāvatāra, from which he quotes the following verse:

Srīharşa himself admits the similarity of his criticisms to those of Nāgārjuna and says: "tathā hi yadi darśaneşu śūnya-vādānirvacanīya-pakṣayor āśrayanam tada tāvad amūṣām nir-bādhaiva sārva-pathinatā," etc. Khandana-khanda-khādya, pp. 229-230, Chowkhambā Sanskrit Book Depot, Benares, 1914.

^a By the idealistic Buddhists Śrīharşa here means the idealism of the

of it are indefinable. So the Vedantist can say that the unreality of the world is proved. It is useless for any one to attempt to find out what is true by resorting to arguments; for the arguments can be proved to be false even by the canons on which they are based. If anyone, however, says that the arguments of Śriharsa are open to the same objection and are not true, then that would only establish his own contention. For Śrīharsa does not believe in the reality of his arguments and enters into them without any assumption of their reality or unreality. It can be contended that it is not possible to argue without first admitting the reality of the arguments. But such reality cannot be established without first employing the pramanas or valid means of proof; and the employment of the pramanas would require further arguments, and these further employment of the pramanas and so on until we have vicious infinite regress. If, however, the very arguments employed in accordance with the canons of the opponents to destroy their definitions be regarded as false, this would mean that the opponents reject their own canons, so that the Vedantic arguments in refuting their position would be effective. The Vedanta is here interested only in destroying the definitions and positions of the opponents; and so, unless the opponents are successful in defending their own positions against the attacks of the Vedanta, the Vedanta point of view is not refuted. So the manifold world of our experience is indefinable, and the one Brahman is absolutely and ultimately real.

Regarding the proof that may be demanded of the ultimate oneness Śrīharṣa says that the very demand proves that the idea of ultimate oneness already exists, since, if the idea were not realized, no one could think of asking for a proof of it. Now, if it is admitted that the idea of absolute oneness is realized (pratīta), then the question arises whether such realization is right knowledge (pramā) or error (apramā). If it is a right idea, then, whatever may have produced it, this right idea is to be regarded as valid proof. If such an idea is false, one cannot legitimately ask the Vedāntist to adduce any proofs to demonstrate what is false. It may be urged that, though the Naiyāyika considers it false, it is regarded by the Vedāntist as true and hence the Vedāntist may be called upon to prove that the way in which or the means of proof through which he came to have his idea was true. This, however, the Vedāntist would readily deny; for, even though the idea of the absolute oneness may

be right, yet the way in which one happened to come by this idea may be wrong. There may be a fire on a hill; but yet, if one infers the existence of such a fire from fog appearing as smoke, then such an inference is false, even though the idea of the fire may itself be right. Leaving aside the discussion of the propriety of such demands on the part of the opponents, the Vedāntist says that the Upaniṣadic texts demonstrate the truth of the ultimate oneness of reality.

The ultimate oneness of all things, taught in the Upanisad texts, cannot be said to be negatived by our perceptual experience of "many." For our perception deals with individual things of the moment and therefore cannot apply to all things of the past, present, and future and establish the fact of their all being different from one another. Perception applies to the experience of the immediate present and is therefore not competent to contradict the universal proposition of the oneness of all things, as taught by the Upanisads. Again, as Śrīharsa says, in our perception of the things of experience we do not realize the differences of the perceptual objects from ourselves, but the differences among the objects themselves. The self-revelation of knowledge also fails to show its difference from all objects of the world. The difference, again, of the perceived objects from all other things is not revealed in the nature of the perceived objects themselves as svarūpa-bheda, or difference as being of the nature of the objects which are differenced—if that were the case, then the false and erroneous perception of silver would also at once manifest its difference from the object (the conch-shell) on which the false silver is imposed. In this way Sriharsa tried to prove that the purport of non-duality, as asserted in the Vedic texts, is not contradicted by any other, stronger, proof. Most of these arguments, being of a verbal nature, may better here be dropped. The main stress seems to rest on the idea that the immediate differences between the things perceived do not in the least suggest or imply that they, in their essence or in their totality, could not ultimately, as a result of our progressive and better knowledge of things, be considered as one identical reality (as is asserted in the Upanisads). If perception cannot prove anything, inferences by themselves cannot stand alone or contradict the non-duality taught in the Upanisads. In our world of phenomenal experience our minds are always impressed with the concept of difference; but Śrīharsa says that the

mere existence of an idea does not prove its reality. Words can give rise to ideas relating even to absolutely non-existing things.

Again, the concept of "difference" can hardly be defined. If it lies involved within the essential nature of all things that differ, then difference would be identical with the nature of the things that differ. If difference were different from the things that differ, then it would be necessary to find out some way of establishing a relation between "difference" and the things that differ, and this might require another connection, and that another, and so we should have a vicious endless series. He says that "difference" may be looked upon from a number of possible points of view. Firstly, "difference" is supposed to be of the nature of things. But a "difference" which is of the nature of the things which differ must involve them all in one; for there cannot be any difference without referring to the things from which there is difference. If by "book" we mean its difference from table, then the table has to enter into the nature of the book, and that would mean the identity of the table and the book. There is no meaning in speaking of "difference" as being the thing, when such differences can only be determined by a reference to other things. If "difference" be the nature of a thing, such a nature cannot be in need of being determined by other things. One thing, say a book, is realized as being different from a table—the nature of the difference may here be described as being "the quality of being distinguished from a table"; but "the quality of being distinguished" would have no meaning or locus standi, unless "the table" were also taken with it. If anyone says that a book is identical with "the quality of being distinguished from," then this will invariably include "the table" also within the essence of the book, as "the table" is a constituent of the complex quality "to be distinguished from," which necessarily means "to be distinguished from a table." So on this view also "the table" and all other things which could be distinguished from the book are involved in the very essence of all things—a conclusion which contradicts the very concept of difference. It may also be pointed out that the concept of difference is entirely extraneous to the concept of things as they are understood or perceived. The notion of "difference" is itself different from the notion of the book and the table, whether jointly or separately. The joint notion of the book and the table is different

from the notion that "the book differs from the table." For understanding the nature of a book it is not necessary that one should understand previously its difference from a table. Moreover, even though the notion of difference may in some sense be said to lead to our apprehension of individual things, the apprehension of such individual things does not carry with it the idea that it is on account of such difference that the individual things are perceived. It is through similarity or resemblance between two things-say between a wild cow (gavaya) and the domestic cow (go)—that a man can recognize an animal as a wild cow; but yet, when he so considers an animal as a wild cow, he does not invariably because of such a resemblance to a cow think the animal to be a wild cow. The mental decision regarding an animal as a cow or a wild cow takes place immediately without any direct participation of the cause which produced it. So, even though the notion of difference may be admitted to be responsible for our apprehension of the different individual things, an apprehension of an individual thing does not involve as a constituent any notion of difference. It is therefore wrong to think that things are of the nature of difference.

In another view, wherein difference is interpreted as "mental negation" or "otherness" (anyonyābhāva), this "otherness" (say of the book from the table) is explained as being the negation of the identity of one with the other. When one says that the book is other than the table, what is meant is that identity of the book with the table is denied. Śriharsa here raises the objection that, if the identity of the book with the table was absolutely chimerical, like the hare's horn, such a denial of identity would be absolutely meaningless. It cannot, again, be suggested that this mental negation or negation as otherness, means the denial of one class-concept in respect of another (e.g. that of book on the table); for there is in these class-concepts no such special characteristic (dharma) by virtue of which one could be denied of the other or they could be distinguished from each other, since the Naiyāyika, against whom Śrīharsa's arguments are directed, does not admit that class-concepts possess any distinguishing qualities. In the absence of such distinguishing qualities they may be regarded as identical: but in that case the denial of one class-concept (say of the table) would involve the denial of the class-concept of the thing itself (e.g. the book), since the class-concepts of the book and the table, not having

any distinguishing qualities, are identical; and, further, through mental denial both the book and the table would be devoid of the class-concepts of book and table, and so there would be no way of distinguishing one thing from another, book from table. It is easy to see therefore that there is no way of making a special case regarding negation as otherness (anyonyābhāva). Again, if difference is regarded as the possession of opposite characters (vaidharmya), then also it may be asked whether the opposite characters have further opposite characters to distinguish them from one another, and these again others, and so there is a vicious infinite; if these are supposed to stop anywhere, then the final characters at that stage, not having any further opposite characters to distinguish them, would be identical, and hence all opposite characters in the backward series would be meaningless and all things would be identical. If on the contrary it is admitted at the very first stage that opposite or differing characters have no differing characters to distinguish them from one another, then the characters will be identical. Again, it may be asked whether these distinguishing characters are themselves different from the objects which possess them or not. If they are different, one may again ask concerning the opposing characters which lead to this difference and then again about other opposing characters of these, and so on. If these infinite differences were to hold good, they could not arrive in less than infinite time, whereas the object is finite and limited in time. If, again, they came all at once, there would be such a disorderly medley of these infinite differences that there would be no way of determining their respective substrates and their orderly successive dependence on one another. And, since in the series the earlier terms of difference can only be established by the establishment of the later terms of difference, the forward movement in search of the later terms of difference, in support of the earlier terms of difference, makes these earlier terms of difference unnecessarv1.

It cannot, therefore, be said that our perception of differences has any such intrinsic validity that it can contradict the ultimate unity taught in the Upanişad texts. Śrīharṣa does not deny that we perceive seeming differences in all things, but he denies their

¹ prathama-bhedāsvīkāra-prayojanasya bheda-vyavahārāder dvitīya-bhedād eva siddheh prathama-bhedo vyarthah syād eva, dvitīya-bhedādi-prayojanasya trtīya-bhedādinaiva siddheh so pi vyarthah syāt. Vidyā-sāgarī on Khaṇḍana-khaṇḍa-khādya, p. 206. Chowkhambā Sanskrit Book Depot, Benares, 1914.

ultimate validity, since he considers them to be due to avidyā or nescience alone¹.

The chief method of Śrīharṣa's dialectic depends upon the assumption that the reality of the things that one defines depends upon the unimpeachable character of the definitions; but all definitions are faulty, as they involve the fallacy of argument in a circle (cakraka), and hence there is no way in which the real nature of things can be demonstrated or defined. Our world of experience consists of knower, known and knowledge; if a knower is defined as the possessor of knowledge, knowledge can only be understood by a reference to the knower; the known, again, can be understood only by a reference to knowledge and the knower, and so there is a circle of relativity which defies all attempts at giving an independent definition of any of these things. It is mainly this relativity that in specific forms baffles all attempts at definition of all categories.

Application of the Dialectic to the Different Categories and Concepts.

Śrīharṣa first takes for his criticism the definitions of right cognition. Assuming the definition of right cognition to be the direct apprehension of the real nature of things, he first urges that such a definition is faulty, since, if one accidentally guesses rightly certain things hidden under a cover and not perceived, or makes a right inference from faulty data or by fallacious methods, though the awareness may be right, it cannot be called right cognition². It is urged that cognition, in order to be valid, must be produced through unerring instruments; here, however, is a case of chance guesses which may sometimes be right without being produced by unerring instruments of senses. Nor can correspondence of the cognition with its object (yathārthānubhavaḥ pramā) be regarded as a proper definition of right cognition. Such correspondence can be defined as meaning either that which represents the reality of the object itself or similarity to the object. The real nature of

¹ na vayam bhedasya sarvathaivāsattvam abhyupagacchāmah, kim nāma na pāramārthikam sattvam; avidyā-vidyamānatvam tu tadīyam iṣyata eva. Khandana-khanda-khādya, p. 214.

² E.g. when a man rightly guesses the number of shells closed in another man's hand, or when one makes a false inference of fire on a hill from a fog looking like smoke from a distance and there is fire on the hill by chance—his judgment may be right though his inference may be false.

an object is indeterminable, and so correspondence of awareness with the object may rather be defined as similarity of the former to the latter. If this similarity means that the awareness must have such a character as is possessed by the object (jñānavisayikrtena rūpena sādrśyam), then this is clearly impossible; for qualities that belong to the object cannot belong to the awareness -there may be an awareness of two white hard marbles, but the awareness is neither two, nor white, nor hard1. It may be urged that the correspondence consists in this, that the whiteness etc. belong to the object as qualities possessed by it, whereas they belong to awareness as being qualities which it reveals2. But that would not hold good in the case of illusory perception of silver in a conch-shell; the awareness of "before me" in the perception of "before me the silver" has to be admitted as being a right cognition. If this is admitted to be a right cognition, then it was meaningless to define right cognition as true correspondence; it might as well have been defined as mere cognition, since all cognition would have some object to which it referred and so far as that only was concerned all cognitions would be valid. If, however, entire correspondence of thought and object be urged, then partial correspondence like the above can hardly be considered satisfactory. But, if entire correspondence is considered indispensable, then the correctness of the partial correspondence has to be ignored, whereas it is admitted by the Naivāvika that, so far as reference to an object is concerned, all cognitions are valid; only the nature of cognition may be disputed as to right or wrong, when we are considering the correspondence of the nature of the object and the nature characterized by the awareness of the object. If entire correspondence with the object is not assured, then cognition of an object with imperfect or partial correspondence, due to obstructive circumstances, has also to be rejected as false. Again, since the correspondence always refers to the character, form or appearance of the thing, all our affirmations regarding the objects to which the characters are supposed to belong would be false.

Referring to Udayana's definition of right cognition as samvak paricchitti, or proper discernment, Śrīharsa says that the word

jñānasyāpi tad-visesaņam bhavaty eva. Khandana, p. 300.

¹ dvau ghatau śuklav ityatra rūpa-samkhyādi-samavāyitvam na iñānasva guņatvād atah prakāśamāna-rūpeņa artha-sādršyam jñānasya nāsti—asti ca tasya pranasava tatra ghatayoh pramattuam. Vidyā-sāgarī on Khaṇḍana, p. 398.

arthasya hi yathā samavāyād rūpam visesaṇībhavati tathā visayabhāvāj

"samyak" (proper) is meaningless; for, if samyak means "entire," then the definition is useless, since it is impossible to see all the visible and invisible constituent parts of a thing, and no one but an omniscient being could perceive a thing with all its characters. properties or qualities. If right discernment means the discernment of an object with its special distinguishing features, this again is unintelligible; for even in wrong cognition, say of conch-shell as silver, the perceiver seems to perceive the distinguishing marks of silver in the conch-shell. The whole point lies in the difficulty of judging whether the distinguishing marks observed are real or not, and there is no way of determining this. If, again, the distinguishing features be described as being those characteristics without the perception of which there can be no certain knowledge and the perception of which ensures right cognition, then it may well be pointed out that it is impossible to discover any feature of any cognition of which one can be positively certain that it is not wrong. A dreamer confuses all sorts of characters and appearances and conceives them all to be right. It may be urged that in the case of right perception the object is perceived with its special distinguishing features, as in the case of the true perception of silver, whereas in the case of the false perception of silver in the conch-shell no such distinguishing features are observed. But even in this case it would be difficult to define the essential nature of the distinguishing features; for, if any kind of distinguishing feature would do, then in the case of the false perception of silver in the conch-shell the distinguishing feature of being before the eyes is also possessed by the conch-shell. If all the particular distinguishing features are insisted on, then there will be endless distinguishing features, and it would be impossible to make any definition which would include them all. The certitude of a cognition which contradicts a previous wrong cognition would often be liable to the same objection as the wrong cognition itself, since the nature of the special distinguishing features which would establish its validity cannot be established by any definition of right knowledge.

Arguing against the definition of right cognition as "apprehension which is not incorrect or not defective" (avyabhicārā anubhavaḥ), Śrīharṣa says that "not incorrect" or "not defective" cannot mean that the cognition must exist only at the time when the object exists; for then inferential cognition, which often refers

to past and future things, would be false. Neither can it mean that the cognition coexists in space with its objects; nor can it mean that the right cognition is similar to its object in all respects, since cognition is so different in nature from the object that it is not possible that there should be any case in which it would be similar thereto in all respects. And, if the view that an awareness and its object are one and the same be accepted, then this would apply even to those cases where one object is wrongly perceived as another; and hence the word "avyabhicārī" is not sufficient to distinguish right knowledge from wrong cognition.

Arguing against the Buddhist definition of right cognition as "an apprehension which is not incompatible (avisamvādi) with the object known," Sriharsa tries to refute the definition in all the possible senses of incompatibility of cognition with object which determines wrong knowledge. If the definition is supposed to restrict right cognition to cognition which is cognized by another cognition as being in agreement with its object, then a wrong cognition, repeated successively through a number of moments and found to be in agreement with its object through all the successive moments until it is contradicted, would also have to be admitted as right, because in this case the previous cognition is certified by the cognition of the succeeding moments. If, again, right cognition is defined as a cognition the incompatibility of which with its object is not realized by any other cognition, then also there are difficulties in the way. For even a wrong cognition may for some time be not contradicted by any other cognition. Moreover, the vision of the conch-shell by the normal eye as white may be contradicted by the later vision by the jaundiced eye as yellow. If it is urged that the contradiction must be by a faultless later cognition, then it may be pointed out that, if there had been any way of defining faultless cognition, the definition of right cognition would have been very easy. On the other hand, unless right cognition is properly defined, there is no meaning in speaking of faulty or wrong cognition. If right cognition is defined as a cognition which has causal efficiency, that in fact is not a proper definition; for even the wrong cognition of a snake might cause fear and even death. If it is urged that the causal efficiency must be exercised by the object in the same form in which it is perceived, then it is very difficult to ascertain this; and there may be a false cognition of causal effi-

ciency also; hence it would be very difficult to ascertain the nature of right cognition on the basis of causal efficiency. Śrīharsa points out again that in a similar way Dhacmakirti's definition of right cognition as enabling one to attain the object (arthu prāpakate a) is also unintelligible, since it is difficult to determine which object can be actually attained and which not, and the notion that the thing may be attained as it is perceived may be present even in the case of the wrong perception of silver in the conch-shell. If right cognition is defined as cognition which is not contradicted, then it may be asked whether the absence of contradiction is at the time of perception only, in which case even the wrong perception of silver in the conch-shell would be a right cognition, since it is uncontradicted at least at the time when the illusion is produced. If it is urged that a right cognition is that which is not contradicted at any time, then we are not in a position to assert the rightness of any cognition; for it is impossible to be certain that any particular cognition will never at any time be contradicted.

After showing that it is impossible to define right cognition (pramā) Śrīharṣa tries to show that it is impossible to define the idea of instruments (karaṇa) or their operative action (vyāpāra) as involved in the idea of instruments of cognition (pramāṇa). Śrīharṣa attempts to show that instrumentality as an agent cannot be separately conceived as having an independent existence, since it is difficult to determine its separate existence. It would be a long tale to go into all the details of this discussion as set forth by Śrīharṣa, and for our present purposes it is enough to know that Śrīharṣa refuted the concept of "instrumentality" as a separate agent, both as popularly conceived or as conceived in Sanskrit grammar. He also discusses a number of alternative meanings which could be attributed to the concept of "karaṇa," or instrument, and shows that none of these meanings can be satisfactorily justified.

In refuting the definition of perception he introduces a long discussion showing the uselessness of defining perception as an instrument of right knowledge. Perception is defined in the Nyāya as cognition which arises through the contact of a particular sense with its object; but it is impossible to know whether any cognition has originated from sense-contact, since the fact of the production

¹ Among many other definitions Srīharşa also refutes the definition of karaņa as given by Uddyotakara—"yadvān eva karoti tat karaṇam." Khaṇḍana, p. 506.

of knowledge from sense-contact cannot itself be directly perceived or known by any other means. Since in perception the senses are in contact on the one hand with the self and on the other hand with the external objects, Śrīharṣa urges by a series of arguments that, unless the specific object with which the sense is in contact is mentioned in each case, it would be difficult to formulate a definition of perception in such a way that it would imply only the revelation of the external object and not the self, which is as much in contact with the sense as is the object. Again, the specification of the object in the case of each perception would make it particular, and this would defeat the purposes of definition, which can only apply to universal concepts. Arguing against a possible definition of perception as immediateness, Śrīharsa supposes that, if perception reveals some specific quality of the object as its permanent attribute, then, in order that this quality may be cognized, there ought to be another attribute, and this would presuppose another attribute, and so there would be an infinite regress; and, if at any stage of the infinite regress it is supposed that no further attribute is necessary, then this involves the omission of the preceding determining attributes, until the possibility of the perception is also negatived. If this immediateness be explained as a cognition produced by the instrumentality of the sense-organs, this again is unintelligible; for the instrumentality of sense-organs is incomprehensible. Śriharsa takes a number of alternative definitions of perceptions and tries to refute them all more or less in the same way, mostly by pointing out verbal faults in the formulation of the definitions.

Citsukha Ācārya, a commentator on Śrīharṣa's Khaṇḍana-khaṇḍa-khādya, offers a refutation of the definition of perception in a much more condensed form. He points out that the definition of perception by Akṣapāda as an uncontradicted cognition arising out of sense-contact with the object is unintelligible. How can we know that a cognition would not be contradicted? It cannot be known from a knowledge of the faultlessness of the collocating circumstances, since the faultlessness can be known only if there is no contradiction, and hence faultlessness cannot be known previously and independently, and the collocating circumstances would contain many elements which are unperceivable. It is also impossible to say whether any experience will for ever remain uncontradicted. Nor can it again be urged that right cognition is that which can

produce an effort on the part of the perceiver (pravṛtti-sāmarthya); for even an illusory knowledge can produce an effort on the part of the perceiver who is deceived by it. Mere achievement of the result is no test for the rightness of the cognition; for a man may see the lustre of a gem and think it to be a gem and really get the gem, yet it cannot be doubted that his apprehension of the ray of the gem as the gem was erroncous¹. In the case of the perception of stars and planets there is no chance of any actual attainment of those objects, and yet there is no reason to deny the validity of the cognitions.

Passing over the more or less verbal arguments of Śrīharṣa in refutation of the definitions of inference (anumāna) as linga-parāmarsa or the realization of the presence in the minor term (paksa, e.g. the mountain) of a reason or probans (linga, e.g. smoke) which is always concomitant with the major term (sādhya, e.g. fire), or as invariable concomitance of the probans with the probandum or the major term (sādhya, e.g. fire), and its other slightly modified varieties, I pass on to his criticism of the nature of concomitance (vyāpti), which is at the root of the notion of inference. It is urged that the universal relationship of invariable concomitance required in vyāpti cannot be established unless the invariable concomitance of all the individuals involved in a class be known, which is impossible. The Najvāvika holds that the mind by a sort of mental contact with class-concepts or universals, called sāmānyapratyāsatti, may affirm of all individuals of a class without actually experiencing all the individuals. It is in this way that, perceiving the invariable concomitance of smoke and fire in a large number of cases, one understands the invariable concomitance of smoke with fire by experiencing a sort of mental contact with the class-concept "smoke" when perceiving smoke on a distant hill. Srīharsa argues in refutation of such an interpretation that, if all individual smoke may be known in such a way by a mental contact with class-concepts, then by a mental contact with the class-concept "knowable" we might know all individual knowables and thus be omniscient as well. A thing is knowable only as an individual with its specific qualities as such, and therefore to know a thing as a knowable would involve the knowledge of all such specific qualities; for the

¹ drśyate hi mani-prabhāyām mani-buddhyā pravartamānasya mani-prāpteh pravrtti-sāmarthyam na cāvyabhicāritvam. Tattva-pradīpikā, p. 218. Nirnaya-Sāgara Press, Bombay, 1915.

class-concept "knowable" would involve all individuals which have a specific knowable character. It may be urged that knowability is one single character, and that things may be otherwise completely different and may yet be one so far as knowability is concerned, and hence the things may remain wholly unknown in their diversity of characters and may yet be known so far as they are merely knowable. To this Śriharṣa answers that the class-concept "knowable" would involve all knowables and so even the diversity of characters would be involved within the meaning of the term "knowable."

Again, assuming for the sake of argument that it is possible to have a mental contact with class-concepts through individuals, how can the invariable concomitance itself be observed? If our senses could by themselves observe such relations of concomitance, then there would be no possibility of mistakes in the observation of such concomitance. But such mistakes are committed and corrected by later experience, and there is no way in which one can account for the mistake in the sense-judgment. Again, if this invariable concomitance be defined as avinābhāva, which means that when one is absent the other is also absent, such a definition is faulty; for it may apply to those cases where there is no real invariable concomitance. Thus there is no real concomitance between "earth" and "possibility of being cut"; yet in ākāśa there is absence of earth and also the absence of "possibility of being cut." If it is urged that concomitance cannot be determined by a single instance of the absence of one tallying with the absence of the other, it must be proved that universally in all instances of the absence of the one, e.g. the fire, there is also the absence of the other, e.g. the smoke. But it is as difficult to ascertain such universal absence as it is to ascertain universal concomitance. Again, if this concomitance be defined as the impossibility of the presence of the middle term, the reason or the probans, where the major term or the probandum is also absent, then also it may be said that it is not possible to determine such an impossibility either by senseknowledge or by any other means.

Now tarka or eliminatory consideration in judging of possibilities cannot be considered as establishing invariable concomitance; for all arguments are based on invariable concomitance, and such an assumption would lead to a vicious mutual interdependence. The great logician Udayana objects to this and says that, if invariable concomitance between smoke and fire be denied, then

there are strong arguments (tarka) against such a denial (bādhakas tarkah), namely, that, if smoke is not regarded as concomitant with fire, then smoke would either exist without any cause or not exist at all, which is impossible. But Śrīharsa says that there is room for an alternative proposition which Udayana misses, namely, that smoke is due to some cause other than fire. It may be that there are smokes which are not caused by fire. How can one be sure that all smokes are caused by fire? There may be differences in these two classes of fire which remain unnoticed by us, and so there is always room for the supposition that any particular smoke may not be caused by fire, and such doubts would make inference impossible. Udayana had however contended that, if you entertain the doubt, with regard to a future case, that it is possible that there may be a case in which the concomitance may be found wrong, then the possibility of such a doubt $(\dot{s}a\dot{n}k\bar{a})$ must be supported by inference, and the admission of this would involve the admission of inference. If such an exaggerated doubt be considered illegitimate. there is no obstruction in the way of inference. Doubts can be entertained only so long as such entertainment of doubts is compatible with practical life. Doubts which make our daily life impossible are illegitimate. Every day one finds that food appeases hunger, and, if in spite of that one begins to doubt whether on any particular day when he is hungry he should take food or not, then life would be impossible. Śriharsa, however, replies to this contention by twisting the words of Udayana's own kārikā, in which he says that, so long as there is doubt, inference is invalid; if there is no doubt. this can only be when the invalidity of the inference has been made manifest, and until such invalidity is found there will always be doubts. Hence the argument of possibilities (tarka) can never remove doubts2.

Śrīharṣa also objects to the definition of "invariable concomitance" as a natural relation (svābhāvikaḥ sambandhaḥ). He rejects the term "natural relation" and says that invariable concomitance

sankā ced anumāsty eva
na cec chankā tatastarām
vyāghātāvadhir āšankā
tarkah šankāvadhir mataḥ.
Kusumānjali, 111, 7. Chowkhambā Sanskrit Book Depot, Benares, 1912.
vyāghāto yadi šankāsti
na cec chankā tatastarām
vyāghātāvadhir āšankā
tarkah šankāvadhir kutaḥ.
Khanḍana-khanḍa-khādya, p. 693.

would not be justifiable in any of its possible meanings, such as (i) depending on the nature of the related (sambandhi-svabhāvaśrita), (ii) produced by the nature of the related (sambandhi-svabhāva-janya), (iii) not different from the nature constituting the relatedness, since, as these would be too wide and would apply even to those things which are not invariable concomitants, e.g. all that is earthen can be scratched with an iron needle. Though in some cases earthen objects may be scratched with an iron needle, not all earthen objects can be so scratched. He further refutes the definition of invariable concomitance as a relation not depending upon conditional circumstances (upādhi). Without entering into the details of Sriharsa's argument it may be pointed out that it rests very largely on his contention that conditionality of relations cannot be determined without knowledge of the nature of invariable concomitance and also that invariable concomitance cannot be determined without a previous determination of the conditionality of relations.

Śriharsa's brief refutation of analogy, implication and testimony, as also his refutation of the definitions of the different fallacies of inference, are not of much importance from a philosophical point of view, and need not be detailed here.

Turning now to Śrīharṣa's refutation of the Nyāya categories, we note that he begins with the refutation of "being" or positivity (bhāvatva). He says that being cannot be defined as being existent in itself, since non-being is also existent in itself; we can with as much right speak of being as existing as of non-being as existing; both non-being and being may stand as grammatical nominatives of the verb "exists." Again, each existing thing being unique in itself, there is no common quality, such as "existence" or "being," which is possessed by them all. Again, "being" is as much a negation of "non-being" as "non-being" of "being"; hence "being" cannot be defined as that which is not a negation of anything. Negation is a mere form of speech, and both being and non-being may be expressed in a negative form.

Turning to the category of non-being (abhāva), Śrīharṣa says that it cannot be defined as negation of anything; for being may as well be interpreted as a negation of non-being as non-being of being (bhāvābhāvayor dvayor api paraspara-pratikṣepātmakatvāt). Nor again can non-being be defined as that which opposes being; for not all non-being is opposed to all being (e.g. in "there is no jug

on the ground" the absence of jug does not oppose the ground in respect of which the jug is denied); if non-being opposes some existent things, then that does not differentiate negation; for there are many existent things which are opposed to one another (e.g. the horse and the bull).

In refuting the Nyāya definition of substance (dravya) as that which is the support of qualities, Śrīharṣa says that even qualities appear to have numeral and other qualities (e.g. we speak of two or three colours, of a colour being deep or light, mixed or primary -and colour is regarded as quality). If it is urged that this is a mistake, then the appearance of the so-called substances as being endowed with qualities may also be regarded as equally erroneous. Again, what is meant by defining substance as the support (āśraya) of qualities? Since qualities may subsist in the class-concept of quality (gunatva), the class-concept of quality ought to be regarded as substance according to the definition. It may be urged that a substance is that in which the qualities inhere. But what would be the meaning here of the particle "in"? How would one distinguish the false appearance, to a jaundiced eye, of yellowness in a white conch-shell and the real appearance of whiteness in the conch-shell? Unless the falsity of the appearance of yellow in the conch-shell is realized, there can be no difference between the one case and the other. Again, substance cannot be defined as the inhering or the material cause (samavāyi-kārana), since it is not possible to know which is the inhering cause and which is not; for number is counted as a quality, and colour also is counted as a quality, and yet one specifies colours by numbers, as one, two, or many colours.

Furthermore, the Nyāya definition of quality as that which has a genus and is devoid of qualities is unintelligible; for the definition involves the concept of quality, which is sought to be defined. Moreover, as pointed out above, even qualities, such as colours, have numeral qualities; for we speak of one, two or many colours. It is only by holding to this appearance of qualities endowed with numeral qualities that the definition of quality can be made to stand, and it is again on the strength of the definition of quality that such appearances are to be rejected as false. If colours are known as qualities in consideration of other reasons, then these, being endowed with numeral qualities, could not for that very reason be called qualities; for qualities belong according to definition only to

substances. Even the numerals themselves are endowed with the quality of separateness. So there would not be a single instance that the Naiyāyika could point to as an example of quality.

Speaking of relations, Śrīharṣa points out that, if relation is to be conceived as something subsisting in a thing, then its meaning is unintelligible. The meaning of relation as "in" or "herein" is not at all clear; for the notion of something being a container (ādhāra) is dependent on the notion of the concept of "in" or "herein," and that concept again depends on the notion of a container, and there is no other notion which can explain either of the concepts independently. The container cannot be supposed to be an inhering cause; for in that case such examples as "there is a grape in this vessel" or "the absence of horns in a hare" would be unexplainable. He then takes a number of possible meanings which can be given to the notion of a container; but these, not being philosophically important, are omitted here. He also deals with the impossibility of defining the nature of the subject-object relation (viṣaya-viṣayi-bhāva) of knowledge.

In refuting the definition of cause Sriharsa says that cause cannot be defined as immediate antecedence; for immediate antecedence can be ascribed only to the causal operation, which is always an intervening factor between the cause and the effect. If, on the theory that what (e.g. the causal operation) belongs to a thing (e.g. the cause) cannot be considered as a factor which stands between it (cause) and that which follows it (effect), the causal operation be not regarded as a separate and independent factor, then even the cause of the cause would have to be regarded as one with the cause and therefore cause. But, if it is urged that, since the cause of the cause is not an operation, it cannot be regarded as being one with the cause, one may well ask the opponent to define the meaning of operation. If the opponent should define it as that factor without which the cause cannot produce the effect, then the accessory circumstances and common and abiding conditions, such as the natural laws, space, and so forth, without which an effect cannot be produced, are also to be regarded as operation, which is impossible. Further, "operation" cannot be qualified as being itself produced by the cause; for it is the meaning of the concept of cause that has still to be explained and defined. If, again, cause is defined as the antecedence of that which is other than the notcause, then this again would be faulty; for one cannot understand

the "not-cause" of the definition without understanding what is the nature of cause, and vice-versa. Moreover, space, being a permanent substance, is always present as a not-cause of anything. and is yet regarded as the cause of sound. If, again, cause is defined as that which is present when the effect is present and absent when the effect is absent, this would not explain the causality of space, which is never known to be absent. If, again, cause is defined as invariable antecedence, then permanent substances such as space are to be regarded as the sole causes of effects. If, however, invariable antecedence be understood to mean unconditional antecedence, then two coexistent entities such as the taste and the colour of an earthen pot which is being burnt must mutually be the cause of the colour and the taste of the burnt earthen pot; for neither does the colour condition taste, nor does the taste condition colour. Moreover, if mere invariable antecedents be regarded as cause, then the invariably preceding symptoms of a disease are to be regarded as the cause of the disease on account of their invariable antecedence. Again, causality cannot be regarded as a specific character or quality belonging to certain things, which quality can be directly perceived by us as existing in things. Thus we may perceive the stick of the potter's wheel to be the cause of the particular jugs produced by it, but it is not possible to perceive causality as a general quality of a stick or of any other thing. If causality existed only with reference to things in general, then it would be impossible to conceive of the production of individual things, and it would not be possible for anyone to know which particular cause would produce a particular effect. On the other hand, it is not possible to perceive by the senses that an individual thing is the cause of a number of individual effects; for until these individual effects are actually produced it is not possible to perceive them, since perception involves sense-contact as its necessary condition. It is not necessary for our present purposes to enter into all the different possible concepts of cause which Śrīharsa seeks to refute: the above examination is expected to give a fairly comprehensive idea of the methods of Śrīharṣa's refutation of the category of cause.

Nor is it possible within the limited range of the present work to give a full account of all the different alternative defences of the various categories accepted in Nyāya philosophy, or of all the various ways in which Śrīharsa sought to refute them in his

Khandana-khanda-khādya. I have therefore attempted to give here only some specimens of the more important parts of his dialectical argument. The chief defect of Śrīharsa's criticisms is that they often tend to grow into verbal sophisms, and lay greater stress on the faults of expression of the opponent's definitions and do not do him the justice of liberally dealing with his general ideas. It is easy to see how these refutations of the verbal definitions of the Nyāya roused the defensive spirit of the Naivāyikas into re-stating their definitions with proper qualificatory phrases and adjuncts, by which they avoided the loopholes left in their former definitions for the attack of Śrīharsa and other critics. In one sense, therefore, the criticisms of Śrīharsa and some of his followers had done a great disservice to the development of later Nyāya thought; for, unlike the older Nyāya thinkers, later Nyāya writers, like Gangeśa, Raghunātha and others, were mainly occupied in inventing suitable qualificatory adjuncts and phrases by which they could define their categories in such a way that the undesirable applications and issues of their definitions, as pointed out by the criticisms of their opponents, could be avoided. If these criticisms had mainly been directed towards the defects of Nyaya thought, later writers would not have been forced to take the course of developing verbal expressions at the expense of philosophical profundity and acuteness. Śrīharsa may therefore be said to be the first great writer who is responsible indirectly for the growth of verbalism in later Nyāya thought.

Another defect of Śriharṣa's criticisms is that he mainly limits himself to criticizing the definitions of Nyāya categories and does not deal so fully with the general ideas involved in such categories of thought. It ought, however, in all fairness to Śriharṣa to be said that, though he took the Nyāya definitions as the main objective of his criticisms, yet in dealing with the various alternative variations and points of view of such definitions he often gives an exhaustive treatment of the problems involved in the discussion. But in many cases his omissions become very glaring. Thus, for example, in his treatment of relations he only tries to refute the definitions of relation as container and contained, as inherence, and as subject-object relation of cognitions, and leaves out many other varieties of relation which might well have been dealt with. Another characteristic feature of his refutation is, as has already been pointed out, that he has only a destructive point of view and is

not prepared to undertake the responsibility of defining any position from his own point of view. He delights in showing that none of the world-appearances can be defined in any way, and that thus, being indescribable, they are all false. But incapacity to define or describe anything in some particular way cannot mean that the thing is false. Śrīharsa did not and could not show that the ways of definition which he attempted to refute were the only ways of defining the different categories. They could probably be defined in other and better ways, and even those definitions which he refuted could be bettered and improved by using suitable qualificatory phrases. He did not attempt to show that the concepts involved in the categories were fraught with such contradictions that, in whatever way one might try to define, one could not escape from those inner contradictions, which were inherent in the very nature of the concepts themselves. Instead of that he turned his attention to the actual formal definitions which had been put forward by the Nyāya and sometimes by Prabhākara and tried to show that these definitions were faulty. To show that particular definitions are wrong is not to show that the things defined are wrong. It is, no doubt, true that the refutation of certain definitions involves the refutation of the concepts involved in those definitions; but the refutation of the particular way of presentation of the concept does not mean that the concept itself is impossible. In order to show the latter, a particular concept has to be analysed on the basis of its own occurrences, and the inconsistencies involved in such an analysis have to be shown.

Citsukha's Interpretations of the Concepts of Sankara Vedānta.

Citsukha (about A.D. 1220), a commentator on Śrīharṣa, had all Śrīharṣa's powers of acute dialectical thought, but he not only furnishes, like Śrīharṣa, a concise refutation of the Nyāya categories, but also, in his *Tattva-pradīpikā*, commented on by Pratyagbhagavān (A.D. 1400) in his *Nayana-prasādinī*¹, gives us a very acute

¹ Citsukha, a pupil of Gaudeśvara Ācārya, called also Jñānottama, wrote a commentary on Ānandabodha Bhattārakācārya's Nyāya-makaranda and also on Śrīharṣa's Khandana-khanda-khādya and an independent work called Tattva-pradīpikā or Cit-sukhī, on which the study of the present section is based. In this work he quotes Udayana, Uddyotakara, Kumārila, Padmapāda, Va'labha (Lilāvatī), Šālikanātha, Sureśvara, Śivāditya, Kulārka Pandita and Śridhara

analysis and interpretation of some of the most important concepts of Śankara Vedanta. He is not only a protector of the Advaita doctrine of the Vedanta, but also an interpreter of the Vedantic concepts1. The work is written in four chapters. In the first chapter Citsukha deals with the interpretation of the Vedanta concepts of self-revelation (sva-prakāśa), the nature of self as consciousness (ātmanah samvid-rūpatva), the nature of ignorance as darkness, the nature of falsity (*mithvātva*), the nature of nescience ($avidv\bar{a}$), the nature of the truth of all ideas (sarva-pratyayānām yathārthatvam), the nature of illusions, etc. In the second chapter he refutes the Nyāya categories of difference, separateness, quality, action, classconcepts, specific particulars (visesa), the relation of inherence (samavāya), perception, doubt, illusion, memory, inference, invariable concomitance (vyāpti), induction (vyāpti-graha), existence of the reason in the minor term (paksa-dharmatā), reason (hetu), analogy (upamāna), implication, being, non-being, duality, measure, causality, time, space, etc. In the third chapter, the smallest of the book, he deals with the possibility of the realization of Brahman and the nature of release through knowledge. In the fourth chapter, which is much smaller than the first two, he deals with the nature of the ultimate state of emancipation.

Citsukha starts with a formal definition of the most fundamental concept of the Vedānta, namely the concept of self-revelation or self-illumination (sva-prakāśa). Both Padmapāda and Prakāśātman in the Panca-pādikā and Panca-pādikā-vivaraņa had distinguished the self from the ego as self-revelation or self-illumi-

(Nyāya-kandatī). In addition to these he also wrote a commentary on the Brahma-sütra-bhāṣya of Śaṅkara, called Bhāṣya-bhāva-prakāśikā, Vivaraṇatātparya-dīpikā, a commentary on the Pramāṇa mālā of Ānandabodha, a commentary on Mandana's Brahma-siddhi, called Abhiprāya-prakāśikā, and an index to the adhikaranas of the Brahma-sūtra, called Adhikarana-mañjarī. His teacher Jñānottama wrote two works on Vedānta, called Nyāya-sudhā and Jñānasiddhi; but he seems to have been a different person from the Jñanottama who wrote a commentary on Sureśvara's Naiskarmya-siddhi; for the latter was a householder (as he styles himself with a householder's title, miśra), and an inhabitant of the village of Mangala in the Cola country, while the former was an ascetic and a preceptor of the King of Gauda, as Citsukha describes him in his colophon to his Tattva-pradīpikā. He is also said to have written the Brahmastuti, Visnu-purana-tīkā, Sad-daršana-samgraha-vrtti, Adhikarana-sangati (a work explaining the inter-relation of the topics of the Brahma-sūtra) and a commentary on the Naişkarmya-siddhi, called the Naişkarmya-siddhi-tikā or the Bhava-tattva-prakāšikā. His pupil Sukhaprakāša wrote a work on the topics of the Brahma-sūtra, called Adhikaraņa-ratna-mālā.

¹ Thus Pandita Harinātha Śarmā in his Sanskrit introduction to the Tattvapradīpikā or Cit-sukhī speaks of this work as advaita-siddhānta-rakṣako 'py advaitasiddhānta-prakāśako vyuṭpādakaś ca.

nation (svayam-prakāśa). Thus Prakāśātman says that consciousness (samvid) is self-revealing and that its self-revelation is not due to any other self-revealing cause¹. It is on account of this natural self-revelation of consciousness that its objects also appear as selfrevealing2. Padmapāda also says the same thing, when he states that the self is of the nature of pure self-revealing consciousness; when this consciousness appears in connection with other objects and manifests them, it is called experience (anubhava), and, when it is by itself, it is called the self or atman³. But Citsukha was probably the first to give a formal definition of the nature of this selfrevelation.

Citsukha defines it as that which is entitled to be called immediate (aparoksa-vyavahāra-yogya), though it is not an object of any cognition or any cognizing activity (avedyatve 'pi)4. It may be objected that desires, feelings, etc. also are not objects of any cognition and yet are entitled to be regarded as immediate, and hence the definition might as well apply to them; for the object of cognition has a separate objective existence, and by a mind-object contact the mind is transformed into the form of the object, and thereby the one consciousness, which was apparently split up into two forms as the object-consciousness which appeared as material objects and the subject-consciousness which appeared as the cognizer, is again restored to its unity by the super-imposition of the subjective form on the objective form, and the object-form is revealed in consciousness as a jug or a book. But in the case of our experience of our will or our feelings these have no existence separate from our own mind and hence are not cognized in the same way as external objects are cognized. According to Vedanta epistemology these subjective experiences of will, emotions, etc. are different mental constituents, forms or states, which, being directly and illusorily imposed upon the self-revealing consciousness, become experienced. These subjective states are therefore not cognized in the same way as external objects. But, since the

samvedanam tu svayam-prakāśa eva na prakāśāntara-hetuh. Pañca-pādikāvivarana, p. 52.

² tasmād anubhavah sajātīya-prakāśāntara-nirapekṣah prakāśamāna eva viṣaye prakāśādi vyavahāra-nimittam bhavitum arhati avyavadhānena vişaye prakāśādi-vvavahāra-nimittatvāt. Ibid.

³ tasmāt cit-svabhāva evātmā tena tena prameya-bhedena upadhīyamāno 'nubhavābhidhānīyakam labhate avivaksitopādhir ātmādi-sabdaih. Pañca pādikā, p. 10. 4 avedyatve saty aparoksa-vyavahāra-yogyatvam svayam-prakāśa-lak-anam. Cit-sukhi, p. 9.

experience of these states is possible only through a process of illusory imposition, they are not entitled to be called immediate1. So, though they appear as immediate, they have no proper vogvatā, or, in other words, they are not entitled to be called immediate. But in the true sense even external objects are but illusory impositions on the self-revealing consciousness, and hence they also cannot be said to be entitled to be called immediate. There is therefore no meaning in trying to distinguish the selfrevealing consciousness as one which is not an object of cognition; for on the Vedanta theory there is nothing which is entitled to be called immediate, and hence the phrase avedvatve (not being an object of cognition) is unnecessary as a special distinguishing feature of the self-revealing consciousness; the epithet "immediate" is therefore also unnecessary. To such an objection Citsukha's reply is that the experience of external objects is only in the last stage of world-dissolution and Brahmahood found non-immediate and illusory, and, since in all our ordinary stages of experience the experience of world-objects is immediate, the epithet avedyatva successfully distinguishes self-revealing consciousness from all cognitions of external objects which are entitled to be called immediate and are to be excluded from the range of self-revealing consciousness only by being objects of cognition. In the field of ordinary experience the perceived world-objects are found to be entitled to be called immediate no less than the self-revealing consciousness, and it is only because they are objects of cognition that they can be distinguished from the self-revealing consciousness.

The main argument in favour of the admission of the category of independent self-revealing consciousness is that, unless an independent self-revealing consciousness is admitted, there would be a vicious series in the process preceding the rise of any cognition; for, if the pure experience of self-revealing consciousness has to be further subjected to another process before it can be understood, then that also might require another process, and that another, and so there would be an unending series. Moreover, that the pure experience is self-revealing is proved by the very fact of the experience itself; for no one doubts his own experience or stands in need of any further corroboration or confirmation as to whether he experienced or not. It may be objected

¹ avedyatve 'pi nāparokṣa-vyavahāra-yogyatā teṣām, adhyastatayaiva teṣām siddheḥ. Cit-sukhī, p. 10. Nirṇaya-Sāgara Press, Bombay, 1915.

that it is well known that we may be aware of our awareness of anything (anu-vyavasāya), and in such a case the self-revealing consciousness may become further cognized. Citsukha's reply to this is that, when one perceives a jug, there is the mental activity, then a cessation of that activity, then a further starting of new activity and then the knowledge that I know the jug, or rather I know that I know the jug-and hence such a cognition cannot be said to be directly and immediately cognizing the first awareness, which could not have stayed through so many moments1. Again, since neither the senses nor the external objects can of themselves produce the self-revelation of knowledge, if knowledge were not admitted as self-revealing, the whole world would be blind and there would be no self-revelation. When one knows that he knows a book or a jug, it is the cognized object that is known and not the awareness that is cognized; there can be no awareness of awareness, but only of the cognized object2. If the previous awareness could be made the object of subsequent awareness, then this would amount to an admission of the possibility of the self being known by the self (svasyāpi svena vedyatvāpātāt)—a theory which would accord not with the Vedanta idealism, but with the Buddhistic. It is true, no doubt, that the pure self-revealing consciousness shows itself only on the occasion of a mental state; but its difference from other cognitive states lies in the fact that it has no form or object, and hence, though it may be focussed by a mental state, yet it stands on a different footing from the objects illuminated by it.

The next point that Citsukha urges is that the self is of the nature of pure self-revealing consciousness ($\bar{a}tmanah$ samvid- $r\bar{u}patva$). This is, of course, no new contribution by Citsukha, since this view had been maintained in the Upaniṣads and repeated by Sankara, Padmapāda, Prakāśātman and others. Citsukha says that, like knowledge, the self also is immediately revealed or experienced without itself being the object of any cognizing activity or cognition, and therefore the self is also of the nature of knowledge. No one doubts about his own self; for the self always stands directly and

¹ ghaṭa-jñānodaya-samaye manasi kriyā tato vibhāgas tataḥ pūrva-samyoga-vi-nāsas tata uttara-samyogotpattis tato jñānāntaram iti aneka-kṣaṇa-vilambena utpa-dyamānasya jñānasya aparokṣatayā pūrva-jñāna-grāhakatvānupapatteḥ. Cit-sukht, p. 17.

² vidito ghața ity atra anuvyavasāyena ghațasyaiva viditatvam avasīyate na tu vitteh. Ibid. p. 18.

immediately self-revealed. Self and knowledge being identical, there is no relation between the two save that of identity (jñānātmanoḥ sambandhasyaiva abhāvāt).

Citsukha defines falsity (mithyātva) as the non-existence of a thing in that which is considered to be its cause¹. He shows this by pointing out that a whole, if it is to exist anywhere, must exist in the parts of which it is made, and, if it does not exist even there, it does not exist anywhere and is false. It is, however, evident that a whole cannot exist in the parts, since, being a whole, it cannot be in the parts2. Another argument adduced by Citsukha for the falsity of the world-appearance is that it is impossible that there should be any relation between the self-revealing consciousness, the knower (drk), and the objects which are cognized $(dr\dot{s}ya)$. Knowledge cannot be said to arise through sense-contact; for in the illusory perception of silver there is the false perception of silver without any actual sense-contact with silver. A reference to subject-object relation (visava-visavi-bhāva) cannot explain it, since the idea of subject-object relation is itself obscure and unexplainable. Arguing as to the impossibility of properly explaining the subject-object relation (visaya-visayi-bhāva) in knowledge, Citsukha says that it cannot be held that the subject-object relation means that knowledge produces some change in the object (visava) and that the knower produces such a change. For what may be the nature of such a change? If it be described as jñātatā, or the character of being known, how can such a character be by my knowledge at the present moment generated as a positive quality in an object which has now ceased to exist? If such a quality can be produced even in past objects, then there would be no fixed law according to which such qualities should be produced. Nor can such a relationship be explained on a pragmatic basis by a reference to actual physical practical action with reference to objects that we know or the internal volitions or emotions associated with our knowledge of things. For in picking up a piece of silver that we see in front of us we may quite unknowingly be drawing with it the dross contained in the silver, and hence the fact of the physical

² amśinah svāmśa-gātyantābhāvasya pratiyoginah amśitvād itarāmśīva... vimatah paṭah etat-tantu-mṣṭhātyantābhāva-pratiyogi avayavitvāt paṭāntaravat. Cit-sukhl, pp. 40, 41.

siddhi, a work composed much later than the Cit-sukhī.

sarvesām api bhāvānām āšrayatvena saņimate pratiyogitvam atyantābhāvaņi prati mīsātmatā. Cit-sukhī, p. 39. Some of these definitions of falsity are collected in Madhusūdana's Advaita-

drawing of the dross cannot on that ground alone make it an object of my knowledge, and hence the subject-object relation of knowledge cannot be defined as a mere physical action following cognition. The internal mental states of volition and the emotions associated with knowledge belong to the knower and have nothing to do with the object of knowledge. If, however, it is urged that objectivity consists in the fact that whatever is known appears in consciousness, the question arises, what does this appearing in consciousness mean? It cannot mean that consciousness is the container and the object is contained in it; for, consciousness being internal and the object external, the object cannot be contained in it. It cannot be a mere undefined relatedness; for in that case the object may as well be considered subject and the subject, object. If objectivity be defined as that which can induce knowledge, then even the senses, the light and other accessories which help the rise of knowledge may as well be regarded as objects. Object cannot be defined as that to which knowledge owes its particular form; for, knowledge being identical with its form, all that helps the rise of knowledge, the senses, light, etc., may as well be regarded as objects. So, in whatever way one may try to conceive the nature of the subject-object relation, he will be disappointed.

Citsukha follows the traditional view of nescience (ajñāna) as a positive entity without beginning which disappears with the rise of true knowledge¹. Nescience is different from the conception of positivity as well as of negativity, yet it is called only positive because of the fact that it is not negative². Ignorance or nescience is described as a positive state and not a mere negation of knowledge; and so it is said that the rise of right knowledge of any object in a person destroys the positive entity of ignorance with reference to that object and that this ignorance is something different from what one would understand by negation of right knowledge³. Citsukha says that the positive character of ignorance becomes apparent when we say that "We do not know whether what you say is true." Here there is the right knowledge of the fact that

¹ anādi-bhāva-rūpam yad-vijñānena viliyate tad ajñānam iti prājñā-lakṣaṇam sampracakṣate anāditve sati bhāva-rūpam vijñāna-nirāsyam ajñānam iti lakṣaṇam iha vivakṣitam. Cit-sukhī, p. 57.

² bhāvābhāva-vilakṣaṇasya ajñānasya abhāva-vilakṣaṇatva-mātreṇa bhāvatvo-pacārāt. Ibid.

³ vigītam Deva-datta-niṣṭha-pramāṇa-jñānam Devadatta-niṣṭha-pramāhhāvā-tiriktānādernivarttakam pramāṇatvād Yajñadattādigata-pramāṇa-jñānavad ity anumānam. Ibid. p. 58.

what is said is known, but it is not known whether what is said is valid. Here also there is a positive knowledge of ignorance of fact, which is not the same as mere absence of knowledge. Such an ignorance, however, is not experienced through sense-contact or sense-processes, but directly by the self-revealing consciousness—the $s\bar{a}ksin$. Just before the rise of right knowledge about an object there is ignorance ($ajn\bar{a}na$), and the object, as qualified by such an ignorance, is experienced as being unknown. All things are the objects of the inner unmoved intuitive consciousness either as known or as unknown. Our reference to deep dreamless sleep as a state in which we did not know anything (na kimcid-avedişam) is also referred to as a positive experience of ignorance in the dreamless state.

One of the chief tenets of Vedanta epistemology lies in the supposition that a presentation of the false is a fact of experience. The opposite view is that of Prabhākara, that the false is never presented in experience and that falsehood consists in the wrong construction imposed upon experience by the mind, which fails to note the actual want of association between two things which are falsely associated as one. According to this theory all illusion consists of a false association or a false relationing of two things which are not presented in experience as related. This false association is not due to an active operation of the mind, but to a failure to note that no such association was actually presented in experience (asamsargāgraha). According to Prabhākara, the great Mīmāmsā authority, the false is never presented in experience, nor is the false experience due to an arbitrary positive activity of wrong construction of the mind, but merely to a failure to note certain distinctions presented in experience. On account of such a failure things which are distinct are not observed as distinct, and hence things which are distinct and different are falsely associated as one, and the conch-shell is thus regarded as silver. But here there is no false presentation in experience. Whatever is known is true: falsehood is due to omissions of knowledge and failure in noting differences.

Citsukha objects to this view and urges that such an explanation

¹ tvadukte 'rthe pramāṇa-jñānam mama nāsti ity asya višiṣṭa-viṣaya-jñānasya pramātvāt. Cit-sukhī, p. 59.

² asman-mate ajñānasya sākṣi-siddhatayā pramāṇābodhyatvāt, pramāṇa-jñānodayāt prāk-kale ajñānaṃ tad-viśeṣito'rthaḥ sākṣi-siddhaḥ ajñāta ity anuvāda gocaraḥ ...sarvaṃ vastu jñātatayā ajñātatayā vā sākṣi-caitanyasya viṣayaḥ. Ibid. p. 60.

can never explain all cases of false apprehension. Take the proposition, "There are false apprehensions and false presentations": if this proposition is admitted to be correct, then Prabhākara's contention is false; if it is admitted to be false, then here is a false proposition, the falsehood of which is not due to a failure to note differences. If the falsity of all propositions be said to be due to a failure to note differences, then it would be hard to find out any true proposition or true experience. On the analogy of our false experience of the everchanging flame of a lamp as the same identical one all cases of true recognition might no less be regarded as false, and therefore all inferences would be doubtful. All cases of real and true association could be explained as being due to a failure to note differences. There could be no case in which one could assure himself that he was dealing with a real association and not a failure to apprehend the absence of association (asamsargāgraha). Citsukha therefore contends that it is too much to expect that all cases of false knowledge can be explained as being due to a mere non-apprehension of difference, since it is quite reasonable to suppose that false knowledge is produced by defective senses which oppose the rise of true knowledge and positively induce false appearance¹. Thus in the case of the illusory perception of conch-shell as silver it is the conch-shell that appears as a piece of silver. But what is the nature of the presentation that forms the object (alambana) of false perception? It cannot be regarded as absolutely non-existent (asat), since that which is absolutely non-existent cannot be the object of even a false perception, and moreover it cannot through such a perception (e.g. the tendency of a man to pick up the piece of silver, which is but a false perception of a piece of conch-shell) induce a practical movement on the part of the perceiver. Neither can it be regarded as existent; for the later experience contradicts the previous false perception, and one says that there is no silver at the present time and there was no silver in the past—it was only the conch-shell that appeared as silver. Therefore the false presentation, though it serves all the purposes of a perceptual object, cannot be described either as existent or as non-existent, and it is precisely this character that constitutes the indefinable nature (anirvacaniyatā) of all illusions².

² pratyekam sad asattvābhyām vicāra-padavīm na yad gāhate tad anirt ācyam āhur vedānta-vedinah. Ibid. p. 79.

¹ tathā doṣāṇām api yathārtha-jñāna-pratibandhakatvam ayathārtha-jñānajanakatvam ca kim na syāt. Cit-sukhī, p. 66.

It is unnecessary to deal with the other doctrines of Vedanta which Citsukha describes, since there is nothing new in them and they have already been described in chapter x of volume 1 of this work. It is therefore desirable to pass on to his dialectic criticism of the Nyāya categories. It will suffice, however, to give only a few of these criticisms, as they mostly refer to the refutation of such kinds of categories as are discussed in Sriharsa's great work Khandanakhanda-khādya, and it would be tedious to follow the refutation of the same kinds of categories by two different writers, though the arguments of Citsukha are in many cases new and different from those given by Śrīharsa. Citsukha's general approach to such refutations is also slightly different from that of Śrīharsa. For, unlike Śrīharsa, Citsukha dealt with the principal propositions of the Vedanta, and his refutations of the Nyāya categories were not intended so much to show that they were inexplicable or indefinable as to show that they were false appearances, and that the pure selfrevealing Brahman was the only reality and truth.

Thus, in refuting time (kāla), Citsukha says that time cannot be perceived either by the visual sense or by the tactual sense, nor can it be apprehended by the mind (manas), as the mind only operates in association with the external senses. Moreover, since there are no perceptual data, it cannot be inferred. The notions of before and after, succession and simultaneity, quickness and duration, cannot by themselves indicate the nature of time as it is in itself. It may be urged that, since the solar vibrations can only be associated with human bodies and worldly things, making them appear as young or old only through some other agency such as days, months, etc., such an agency, which brings about the connection of solar vibrations with worldly things, is called time¹. To this Citsukha replies that, since the self itself can be regarded as the cause of the manifestation of time in events and things in accordance with the varying conditions of their appearance, it is unnecessary to suppose the existence of a new category called time. Again, it cannot be said that the notions of before and after have time as their material cause; for the validity of these notions is challenged by the Vedantist. They may be regarded as the im-

¹ tarani-parispanda-visesānām yuva-sthavira-sarīrādi-pindesu māsādi-vicitra-buddhi-janana-dvārena tad-upahitesu paratvāparatvādi-buddhi-janakatvam na ca tair asambaddhānām tatra buddhi-janakatvam, na ca sāksāt sambandho ravi-parispandānām pindair asti atah tat-sambandhakatayā kaścid astadravya-vilakṣano dravya-visesah svīkartavyah, tasya ca kāla iti samjñā. (This is Vallabha's view of time.) Nayana-prasādinī commentary on Cit-sukhī, p. 321, by Pratyak-svarupa-bhagavat. Nirnaya-Sāgara Press, Bombay, 1915.

pressions produced by a greater or lesser quantity of solar vibrations. There is therefore no necessity to admit time as a separate category, since its apprehension can be explained on the basis of our known data of experience. From considerations of some data relative space (dik) has to be discarded; for relative space cannot be perceived by the senses or inferred for want of data of experience. Both time and relative space originate from a sense of relativity (apekṣā-buddhi), and, given that sense of relativity, the mind can in association with our experience of bodily movements form the notion of relative space. It is therefore unnecessary to admit the existence of relative space as a separate category.

In refuting the atomic theory of the Vaisesikas Citsukha says that there is no ground for admitting the Vaisesika atoms. If these atoms are to be admitted on the ground that all things are to be conceived as being divisible into smaller and smaller parts, then the same may apply to the atoms as well. If it is urged that one must stop somewhere, that the atoms are therefore regarded as the last state, and are uniform in size and not further divisible, then the specks of dust that are seen in the windows when the sun is shining (called trasarenus) may equally be regarded as the last stage of divisible size. If it is contended that, since these are visible, they have parts and cannot therefore be considered as indivisible, it may be said in reply that, since the Nyāya writers admit that the atoms can be perceived by the yogins, visibility of the trasarenus could not be put forward as a reason why they could not be regarded as indivisible. Moreover, if the atoms were partless, how could they be admitted to combine to produce the grosser material forms? Again, it is not indispensable that atoms should combine to form bigger particles or make grosser appearances possible; for, like threads in a sheet, many particles may make gross appearances possible even without combining. Citsukha then repeats Sankara's refutation of the concept of wholes and parts, saying that, if the wholes are different from the parts, then they must be in the parts or they would not be there; if they are not in the parts, it would be difficult to maintain that the wholes were made of parts; if they are in the parts, they must be either wholly or partly in them; if they are wholly in the parts, then there would be many such wholes, or in each part the whole would be found; and, if they are partly in the parts, then the same difficulty of wholes and parts would appear.

Again, the concept of contact (samyoga) is also inexplicable. It

cannot be defined as the coming together of any two things which are not in contact (aprāptayoh prāptih samyogah); for, until one knows the meaning of the concept of contact, one cannot understand the meaning of the phrase "not in contact." If it is defined as the coming together of two things which are unrelated, then contact (samyoga) would include even the relation of inherence, such as that which exists between a piece of cloth and the threads. If it is defined as a relation which is produced in time and is transitory (anityah sambandhah janyatva-viśesito vā), then cases of beginningless contact would not be included, and even the possession of an article by purchase would have to be included as contact, since this relation of possession is also produced in time. It cannot be objected that "possession" is not a relation, since a relation to be such must be between two things; for, if the objection were valid, the relation between substance and quality would not be a relation, since quality and substance exist together, and there are no two separate things which can be related. If the objector means that the relation must be between two terms, then there are two terms here also, namely, the article possessed and the possessor. Moreover, if contact is defined as relation which does not connect two things in their entirety (avvāpya-vrttitva-visesito), then again it would be wrong, since in the case of partless entities the relation of contact cannot connect the parts, as they have no parts. Citsukha refutes the concept of separation (vibhāga) on the same lines and passes over to the refutation of number, as two, three and the like.

Citsukha urges that there is no necessity of admitting the existence of two, three, etc. as separate numbers, since what we perceive is but the one thing, and then by a sense of oscillation and mutual reference (apekṣā-buddhī) we associate them together and form the notions of two, three, etc. These numbers therefore do not exist separately and independently, but are imaginatively produced by mental oscillation and association from the experience of single objects. There is therefore no necessity of thinking that the numbers, two, three, etc., are actually produced. We simply deal with the notions of two, three, etc. on the strength of our powers of mental association.

¹ āropita-dvitva-tritvādi-viśeşitaikatva-samuccayālambanā buddhir dvitvādijaniketi cet; na; tathābhūtāyā eva buddher dvitvādi-vyavahāra-janakatvopapattau dvitvādy-utpādakatva-kalpanā-vaiyarthyāt. Nayana-prasādinī, p. 300.

Citsukha then refutes the notion of class-concept (jāti) on the ground that it cannot be proved either by perception or by inference. The question is what exactly is meant by class-concept. If it is said that, when in perceiving one individual animal we have the notion of a cow, and in perceiving other individual animals also we have the same notion of cow, there is jāti, then it may be replied that this does not necessarily imply the admission of a separate class-concept of cow; for, just as one individual had certain peculiarities which entitled it to be called a cow, so the other individuals had their peculiarities which entitled them to be called cows. We see reflections of the moon in different places and call each of them the moon. What constitutes the essentials of the concept of cow? It is difficult to formulate one universal characteristic of cows; if one such characteristic could be found, then there would be no necessity of admitting the class-concept of cow. For it would then be an individual characteristic, and one would recognize it as a cow everywhere, and there would be no necessity of admitting a separate class-concept. If one admits a class-concept, one has to point out some trait or quality as that which indicates the class-concept. Then again one could not get at this trait or quality independently of the class-concept or at the class-concept independently of it, and this mutual dependence would make the definition of either of them impossible. Even if one admits the class-concept, one has to show what constitutes the essentials of it in each case, and, if such essentials have to be found in each case, then those essentials would be a sufficient justification for knowing a cow as cow and a horse as horse: what then is the good of admitting a class-concept? Again, even if a class-concept be admitted, it is difficult to see how it can be conceived to be related to the individuals. It cannot be a relation of contact, identity, inherence or any other kind of relation existing anywhere. If all class-concepts existed everywhere, there would be a medley of all class-concepts together, and all things would be everywhere. Again, if it is held that the class-concept of cow exists only in the existing cows, then how does it jump to a new cow when it is born? Nor has the class-concept any parts, so as to be partly here and partly there. If each class-concept of cow were wholly existent in each of the individual cows, then there would be a number of classconcepts; and, if each class-concept of cow were spread out over all the individual cows, then, unless all the individual cows were

brought together, one could not have the notion of any class-concept.

Speaking of the refutation of cause (kārana), Citsukha says that cause cannot be defined as mere antecedence (pūrva-kāla-bhāvitva); for then the ass which is always found in the house of a washerman and on the back of which the washerman carries his clothes might be regarded as a thing antecedent to the smoky fire kindled in the washerman's house and thus as a cause of fire. If this antecedence be further qualified as that which is present in all cases of the presence of the effect and absent in all cases of the absence of the effect, then also the washerman's ass may be considered to satisfy the conditions of such an antecedence with reference to the fire in the washerman's house (when the washerman is away from the house with his ass, the fire in the washerman's house is also absent, and it is again kindled when he returns to his house with his ass). If "unconditionality" (ananyathā-siddha) is further added as a qualifying condition of antecedence, even then the ass and the common abiding elements such as space, ether and the like may be regarded as causes of the fire. If it be argued that the ass is present only because of the presence of other conditioning factors, the same may be said of seeds, earth, water, etc., which are all however regarded as being causes for the production of the shoots of plants. If objection be raised against the possibility of ether (ākāśa) being regarded as the cause of smoke on the ground of its being a common, abiding and all-pervasive element, then the same argument ought to stand as an objection against the soul (which is an all-pervasive entity) being regarded on the Nyāya view as the cause of the production of pleasure and pain. The cause cannot be defined as that which being there the effect follows; for then a seed cannot be regarded as the cause of the shoot of the plant, since the shoots cannot be produced from seeds without the help of other co-operating factors, such as earth, water, light, air, etc. Cause, again, cannot be defined as that which being present in the midst of the co-operating factors or even accessories (sahakāri), the effect follows; for an irrelevant thing, like an ass, may be present among a number of co-operating circumstances, but this would not justify anybody calling an irrelevant thing a cause. Moreover, such a definition would not apply to those cases where by the joint operation of many co-operating entities the effect is produced. Furthermore, unless the cause can be properly defined, there is

no way of defining the co-operating conditions. Nor can a cause be defined as that which being there the effect follows, and which not being there there is no effect (sati bhavo 'saty abhava eva); for such a maxim is invalidated by the plurality of causes (fire may be produced by rubbing two pieces of wood, by striking hard against a flint, or by a lens). It may be urged that there are differences in each kind of fire produced by the different agencies: to which it may be replied that, even if there were any such difference, it is impossible to know it by observation. Even when differences are noticeable, such differences do not necessarily imply that the different effects belong to different classes; for the differences might well be due to various attendant circumstances. Again, a cause cannot be defined as a collocation of things, since such a collocation may well be one of irrelevant things. A cause cannot be defined as a collocation of different causes, since it has not so far been possible to define what is meant by "cause." The phrase "collocation of causes" will therefore be meaningless. Moreover, it may be asked whether a collocation of causes (sāmagrī) be something different from the causes, or identical with them. If the former alternative be accepted, then effects would follow from individual causes as well, and the supposition of a collocation of causes as producing the effects would be uncalled-for. If the latter alternative be accepted, then, since the individuals are the causes of the collocation, the individuals being there, there is always the collocation and so always the effect, which is absurd. Again, what does this collocation of causes mean? It cannot mean occurrence in the same time or place; for, there being no sameness of time and place for time and place respectively, they themselves would be without any cause. Again, it cannot be said that, if the existence of cause be not admitted, then things, being causeless, would be non-existent; for the Nyāya holds that there are eternal substances such as atoms, souls, etc., which have no cause.

Since cause cannot be defined, neither can effect $(k\bar{a}rya)$ be satisfactorily defined, as the conception of effect always depends upon the notion of cause.

In refuting the conception of substance (dravya) Citsukha says that a substance can be defined only as being that in which the qualities inhere. But, since even qualities are seen to have qualities and a substance is believed by the Naiyāyikas to be without any quality at the moment of its origination, such a definition cannot

properly distinguish or define a substance. If a substance be defined in a roundabout way as that in which there is no presence of the absolute negation of possessing qualities (gunavattvātyantābhāvānadhikaraṇatā), then also it may be objected that such a definition would make us regard even negation (abhāva) as a quality, since the absence of the negation of qualities, being itself a negation, cannot exist in a negation¹. It may again be asked whether the absence of the negation of qualities refers to the negation of a number of qualities or the negation of all qualities: in either case it is wrong. For in the first case a substance, which contains only some qualities and does not possess others, would not be called a substance, and in the latter case it would be difficult to find anything that cannot be called a substance; for where is the substance which lacks all qualities? The fact also remains that even such a roundabout definition cannot distinguish a substance from a quality; for even qualities have the numerical qualities and the qualities of separateness2. If it is argued that, if qualities are admitted to have further qualities, there will be a vicious infinite, it may be said in reply that the charge of vicious infinite cannot be made, since the qualities of number and separateness cannot be said to have any further qualities. Substances, again, have nothing in common by virtue of which they could be regarded as coming under the class-concept of substances3. Gold and mud and trees are all regarded as substances, but there is nothing common in them by virtue of which one can think that gold is the same as mud or tree; therefore it cannot be admitted that in the substances one finds any characteristic which remains the same in them all4.

Referring to qualities (guṇa), Citsukha deals with the definition of guṇa in the Vaiśeṣika-bhāśya of Praśastapāda. There Praśastapāda defines guṇa as that which inheres in a substance, is associated with the class-concept of substance, is itself without any quality

¹ tatraiva atyantābhave'tivyāpteh; sopi hi guņavattvātyantābhāvas tasyādhikaranam svasya svasminnavrtteh. Cit-sukhī, p. 176.

² asminnapi vakra-lakşane gunādişu api samkhyā-pṛthaktva-gunayoh pratīteh katham nātivyāptih. Ibid. p. 177.

³-jātim abhyupagacchatā tajjāti-vyañjakam kincid-avasyam abhyupeyam na ca tannirupanam susakam. Ibid. p. 178.

dravyam dravyam iti anugata-pratyayah pramānam iti cenna suvarnamupalabhya mṛttikām-upalabhyamānasya laukikasya tad evedam dravyam iti pratyayā-bhāvāt parikṣakāṇām cānugata-pratyaye vipratipatteh. Ibid. p. 179.

and which has no motion (niskriya)¹. But the definition of a quality cannot involve the phrase "without a quality"; for quality is still to be defined. Again, unless the guna is properly defined, its difference from motion is not known, and so the phrase "which has no motion" is meaningless. The class-concept of quality, again, can be determined only when the general character of qualities is known and the nature of class-concepts also is determined. Hence, from whatever point of view one may look at the question, it is impossible to define qualities.

It is needless now to multiply examples of such refutation by Citsukha. It will appear from what has been adduced that Citsukha enters into detail concerning most concepts of particular categories and tries to show their intrinsic impossibility. In some cases, however, he was not equal to the task and remained content with criticizing the definitions given by the Naiyāyikas. But it may be well to point out here that, though Śrīharṣa and Citsukha carried out an elaborate scheme of a critique of the different categories in order to show that the definitions of these categories, as given by the Nyāya, are impossible, yet neither of them can be regarded as the originator of the application of the dialectic method in the Vedānta. Śaṅkara himself had started it in his refutation of the Nyāya and other systems in his commentary on the Vedānta-sūtras, 11. 11.

The Dialectic of Nāgārjuna and the Vedānta Dialectic.

The dialectic of Śrīharṣa was a protest against the realistic definitions of the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika, which supposed that all that was knowable was also definable. It aimed at refuting these definitions in order to prove that the natures of all things are indefinable, as their existence and nature are all involved in māyā. The only reality is Brahman. That it is easy to pick holes in all definitions was taught long ago by Nāgārjuna, and in that sense (except for a tendency to find faults of a purely verbal nature in Nyāya definitions) Śrīharṣa's method was a continuation of Nāgārjuna's, and an application of it to the actual definitions of the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika. But the most important part of Nāgārjuna's method was deliberately ignored by Śrīharṣa and his followers, who made no attempt to refute Nāgārjuna's conclusions. Nāgārjuna's main thesis is that all things are relative and hence indefinable in

¹ rūpādinām gunānām sarveṣām gunatvābhisambandho dravyāśritatvam nirgunatvam nişkriyatvam. Praśastapāda-bhāṣya, p. 94, The Vizianagram Sanskrit Series, Benares, 1895.

themselves, and so there is no way of discovering their essences; and, since their essences are not only indefinable and indescribable, but incomprehensible as well, they cannot be said to possess any essences of their own. Nāgārjuna was followed by Āryadeva, a Cevlonese by birth, who wrote a separate work on the same subject in 400 verses. For about two centuries after this the doctrines of Nagarjuna lay dormant, as is evidenced by the fact that Buddhaghosa of the fourth century A.D. does not refer to them. During the Gupta empire, in the fifth century A.D., Asanga and Vasubandhu flourished. In the sixth century A.D the relativist philosophy of Nāgārjuna again flourished in the hands of Buddhapālita, of Valabhī in Surat, and of Bhavva, or Bhāvaviveka, of Orissa. The school of Bhavya was called Mādhyamika-Sautrāntika on account of his supplementing Nāgārjuna's arguments with special arguments of his own. At this time the Yogācāra school of Mahāyāna monism developed in the north, and the aim of this school was to show that for the true knowledge of the one consciousness (vijnāna) all logical arguments were futile. All logical arguments showed only their own inconsistency1. It seems very probable that Śrīharsa was inspired by these Yogācāra authors, and their relativist allies from Nāgārjuna to Bhavva, and Candrakīrti, the master commentator on Nāgārjuna's Mādhyamika-kārikā. Buddhapalita sought to prove that the apprehension and realization of the idealistic monism cannot be made by any logical argument, since all logic is futile and inconsistent, while Bhāvaviveka sought to establish his idealistic monism by logical arguments. Candrakīrti finally supported Buddhapālita's scheme as against the scheme of Bhāvaviveka and tried to prove the futility of all logical arguments. It was this Mādhyamika scheme of Candrakīrti that finally was utilized in Tibet and Mongolia for the realization of idealistic monism.

In taking up his refutation of the various categories of being Nāgārjuna begins with the examination of causation. Causation in the non-Buddhistic systems of philosophy is regarded as being production from the inner changes of some permanent or abiding stuff or through the conglomeration (sāmagrī) of several factors or through some factors operating upon an unchangeable and abiding stuff. But Nāgārjuna denies not only that anything is ever produced, but also that it is ever produced in any one of the above ways. Buddhapālita holds that things cannot arise

¹ The Conception of Buddhist Nirvāṇa, pp. 66-67. Published by the Academy of Sciences of the U.S.S.R. Leningrad, 1927.

of themselves, since, if they are already existing, there is no meaning in their being produced; if things that are existing are regarded as capable of being produced again, then things would eternally continue to be produced. Bhavaviveka, criticizing Buddhapālita, says that the refutation of Buddhapālita should have been supplemented with reasons and examples and that his refutation would imply the undesirable thesis that, if things are not produced of themselves, they must be produced by other factors. But Candrakīrti objects to this criticism of Bhāvaviveka and says that the burden of proof in establishing the identity of cause and effect lies with the opponents, the Sāmkhvists, who hold that view. There is no meaning in the production of what already exists, and, if that which is existent has to be produced again, and that again, there will be an infinite regress. It is unnecessary to give any new argument to refute the Samkhva sat-kārva-vāda view: it is enough to point out the inconsistency of the Sāmkhya view. Thus Ārvadeva says that the Mādhyamika view has no thesis of its own which it seeks to establish, since it does not believe in the reality or unreality of anything or in the combination of reality and unreality1. This was exactly the point of view that was taken by Śrīharsa. Śrīharsa says that the Vedāntists have no view of their own regarding the things of the world and the various categories involved in them. Therefore there was no way in which the Vedanta view could be attacked. The Vedanta, however, is free to find fault with other views, and, when once this is done and the inconsistencies of other positions are pointed out, its business is finished; for it has no view of its own to establish. Nāgārjuna writes in his Vigraha-vyāvartanī thus:

When I have these (of my own to prove), I can commit mistakes just for the sake (of proving); But I have none. I cannot be accused (of being inconsistent). If I did (really) cognize some (separate) things, I could then make an affirmation or a denial Upon the basis of these things perceived or (inferred). But these (separate) things do not exist for me. Therefore I cannot be assailed on such a basis².

sad asat sad-asac ceti yasya pakşo na vidyate upālambhaś cireņāpi tasya vaktum na šakyate. Mādhyamika-vṛtti, p. 16. anyat pratītva vadi nāma paro 'bhavisyat

anyat pratitya yadi nāma paro 'bhaviṣyat jāyeta tarhi bahulah sikhino 'ndhakārah sarvasya janma ca bhavet khalu sarvatas ca tulyam paratvam akhile 'janake 'pi yasmāt.

Ibid. F. 36.

Candrakīrti thus emphasizes the fact that it is not possible for the Mādhyamikas to offer new arguments or new examples in criticizing any view, since they have no view of their own to support. They cannot even prove their own affirmations, and, if their affirmations contain any thesis, they quarrel with it also themselves. So the Mādhyamika scheme of criticism consists only in finding fault with all theses, whatever they may be, and in replying to the counter-charges so far as inconsistencies can be found in the opponents' theses and methods, but not in adducing any new arguments or any new counter-theses, since the Mādhyamikas have no theses of their own. In an argument one can only follow the principles that one admits; no one can be defeated by arguments carried on on the basis of principles admitted only by his opponents.

Things are not produced by any conglomeration of foreign factors or causes; for, were it so, there would be no law of such production and anything might come from any other thing, e.g. darkness from light¹. And, if a thing cannot be produced out of itself or out of others, it cannot be produced by a combination of them both. Again, the world could not have sprung into being without any cause (ahetutah).

The Buddhist logicians try to controvert this view by pointing out that, whatever a view may be, it must be established by proper proof. So, in order to prove the thesis that all existents are unproduced, the Mādhyamikas must give some proofs, and this would involve a further specification of the nature of such proofs and a specification of the number of valid proofs admitted by them. But, if the thesis that "all existents are unproved" is a mere assertion without any proof to support it, then any number of counterassertions may be made for which no proof need be shown; and, if proofs are not required in one case, they cannot be required in the other. So one could with equal validity assert that all existents are real and are produced from causes. The Mādhyamika answer to such an objection, as formulated by Candrakīrti, is that the Mādhyamika has no thesis of his own and so the question whether his thesis is supported by valid proof or not is as meaningless as the question regarding the smallness or the greatness of a mule's horn. Since there is no thesis, the Mādhyamika has nothing to

¹ Mādhyamika-vṛtti, p. 36. See also Stcherbatsky's The Conception of Buddhist Nirvāṇa, to which the author is indebted for the translation and some of the materials of the last two paragraphs.

say regarding the nature of valid proofs (pramāṇa) or their number. But it may well be asked why, if the Mādhyamika has no thesis of his own, should he hold the proposition that all existents are unproduced (sarve bhāvā anutpannāḥ)? To this the Mādhyamika replies that such propositions appear as definite views only to ordinary people, not to the wise. The proper attitude for the wise is always to remain silent. They impart instruction only from a popular point of view to those who want to listen to them. Their arguments are not their own or those which they believe to be right, but only such as would appeal to their hearers.

It is not out of place here to mention that the Mādhyamika school wishes to keep the phenomenal and the real or the transcendental views wide apart. In the phenomenal view things are admitted to be as they are perceived, and their relations are also conceived as real. It is interesting to refer to the discussion of Candrakīrti with Dinnāga regarding the nature of sense-perceptions. While Dinnaga urges that a thing is what it is in itself (sva-laksana), Candrakīrti holds that, since relations are also perceived to be true, things are relational as well. Phenomenally substances exist as well as their qualities. The "thing in itself" of Dinnaga was as much a relative concept as the relational things that are popularly perceived as true; that being so, it is meaningless to define perception as being only the thing in itself. Candrakīrti thus does not think that any good can be done by criticizing the realistic logic of the Naivāvikas, since, so far as popular perceptions or conceptions go, the Nyāya logic is quite competent to deal with them and give an account of them. There is a phenomenal reality and order which is true for the man in the street and on which all our linguistic and other usages are based. Dinnaga, in defining perception, restricts it to the unique thing in itself (sva-laksana) and thinks that all associations of quality and relations are extraneous to perceptions and should be included under imagination or inference. This however does violence to our ordinary experience and yet serves no better purpose; for the definition of perception as given by Dinnaga is not from the transcendental point of view. If that is so, why not accept the realistic conceptions of the Nyāya school, which fit in with the popular experience? This reminds us of the attitude of the Vedantists, who on the one hand accepted the view-point of popular experience and regarded all things as having a real objective existence, and on the other

hand considered them as false and unreal from the transcendental point of view of ultimate reality. The attitude of the Vedantists on this point seems to have been directly inspired by that of the Mādhyamikas. The attempts of Śrīharsa to refute the realistic definitions of the Nyāva were intended to show that the definitions of the Nyāya could not be regarded as absolute and true, as the Naiyāyikas used to think. But, while the Mādhyamikas, who had no view-points of their own to support, could leave the field of experience absolutely undisturbed and allow the realistic definitions of the Nyāya to explain the popular experience in any way they liked, the Vedanta had a thesis of its own, namely, that the self-luminous Brahman was the only reality and that it was through it that everything else was manifested. The Vedanta therefore could not agree with Nyāya interpretations of experience and their definitions. But, as the Vedanta was unable to give the manifold world-appearance a footing in reality, it regarded it as somehow existing by itself and invented a theory of perception by which it could be considered as being manifested by coming in touch with Brahman and being illusorily imposed on it.

Continuing the discussion on the nature of causation, Nāgār-juna and Candrakīrti hold that collocations of causal conditions which are different from the effect cannot produce the effect, as is held by the Hīnayāna Buddhists; for, since the effect is not perceived in those causal conditions, it cannot be produced out of them, and, if it is already existent in them, its production becomes useless. Production of anything out of some foreign or extraneous causes implies that it is related to them, and this relation must mean that it was in some way existent in them. The main principle which Nāgārjuna employs in refuting the idea of causation or production in various ways is that, if a thing exists, it cannot be produced, and, if it does not exist, it cannot be produced at all. That which has no essence in itself cannot be caused by anything else, and, having no essence in itself, it cannot be the cause of anything else¹.

Nāgārjuna similarly examines the concepts of going and coming and says that the action of going is not to be found in the space traversed, nor is it to be found in that which is not traversed; and apart from the space traversed and not traversed there cannot be any action of going. If it is urged that going is neither in the space

¹ Mādhyamika-vṛtti, p. 90, l. 6.

traversed nor in the space untraversed, but in the person who continues to go, since going is in him in whom there is the effort of going, then this again cannot be right. For, if the action of going is to be associated with the person who goes, it cannot be associated with the space traversed. One action cannot be connected with both; and, unless some space is gone over, there cannot be a goer. If going is in the goer alone, then even without going one could be called a goer, which is impossible. If both the goer and the space traversed have to be associated with going, then there must be two actions and not one; and, if there are two actions, that implies that there are also two agents. It may be urged that the movement of going is associated with the goer and that therefore going belongs to the goer; but, if there is no going without the goer and if there is no goer without going, how can going be associated with the goer at all? Again, in the proposition "the goer goes" (gantā gacchati) there is only one action of going, and that is satisfied by the verb "goes"; what separate "going" is there by virtue of association with which a "goer" can be so called? and, since there are no two actions of going, there cannot be a goer. Again, the movement of going cannot even be begun; for, when there is the motion of going, there is no beginning and when there is no motion of going, there cannot be any beginning. Again, it cannot be urged that "going" must exist, since its opposite, "remaining at rest" (sthiti), exists; for who is at rest? The goer cannot be at rest, since no one can be a goer unless he goes; he who is not a goer, being already at rest, cannot be the agent of another action of being at rest. If the goer and going be regarded as identical, then there would be neither verb nor agent. So there is no reality in going. "Going" stands here for any kind of passage or becoming, and the refutation of "going" implies the refutation of all kinds of passage (niskarsana) as well. If seeds passed into the state of shoots (ankura), then they would be seeds and not shoots; the shoots neither are seeds nor are different from them; yet, the seeds being there, there are the shoots. A pea is from another pea, yet no pea becomes another pea. A pea is neither in another pea nor different from it. It is as one may see in a mirror the beautiful face of a woman and feel attracted by it and run after her, though the face never passed into the mirror and there was no human face in the reflected image. Just as the essenceless reflected image of a woman's face may rouse attachment in fools,

so are world-appearances the causes of our delusion and attachment.

It is needless to multiply examples and describe elaborately Nāgārjuna's method of applying his dialectic to the refutation of the various Buddhistic and other categories. But from what has been said it may be possible to compare or contrast Nāgārjuna's dialectic with that of Śrīharsa. Neither Nāgārjuna nor Śrīharsa is ' interested to give any rational explanation of the world-process, nor are they interested to give a scientific reconstruction of our world-experience. They are agreed in discarding the validity of world-experience as such. But, while Nāgārjuna had no thesis of his own to uphold, Śrīharsa sought to establish the validity and ultimate reality of Brahman. But, it does not appear that he ever properly tried to apply his own dialectic to his thesis and attempted to show that the definition of Brahman could stand the test of the criticism of his own dialectic. Both Nāgārjuna and Śrīharşa were, however, agreed in the view that there was no theory of the reconstruction of world-appearance which could be supported as valid. But, while Śrīharsa attacked only the definitions of the Nyāya, Nāgārjuna mainly attacked the accepted Buddhistic categories and also some other relevant categories which were directly connected with them. But the entire efforts of Śrīharsa were directed to showing that the definitions of the Nyāya were faulty and that there was no way in which the Nyāya could define its categories properly. From the fact that the Nyāya could not define its categories he rushed to the conclusion that they were intrinsically indefinable and that therefore the world-appearance which was measured and scanned in terms of those categories was also false. Nāgārjuna's methods differ considerably from those of Śrīharsa in this, that the concepts which he criticized were shown by him to have been intrinsically based and constructed on notions which had no essential nature of their own, but were understood only in relation to others. No concept revealed any intrinsic nature of its own, and one could understand a concept only through another. and that again through the former or through another, and so on. The entire world-appearance would thus be based on relative conceptions and be false. Nagarjuna's criticisms are, however, largely of an a priori nature, and do not treat the concepts in a concrete manner and are not based on the testimony of our psychological experience. The oppositions shown are therefore

XI] Dialectical criticisms of Sāntarakṣita and Kamalaśīla 171

very often of an abstract nature and occasionally degenerate into verbalism. But as a rule they are based on the fundamentally relative nature of our experience. They are never half so elaborate as the criticisms of Śrīharṣa; but at the same time they are fundamentally more convincing and more direct than the elaborate roundabout logical subtleties of Śrīharṣa's dialectic. It cannot be denied that, based on the dialectical methods of Nāgārjuna, Buddhapālita and Candrakīrti, Śrīharṣa's criticisms, following an altogether different plan of approach, show wonderful powers of logical subtlety and finesse, though the total effect can hardly be regarded as an advance from the strictly philosophical point of view, while the frequent verbalism of many of his criticisms is a discredit to his whole venture.

Dialectical criticisms of Śāntarakṣita and Kamalaśīla (A.D. 760) as forerunners of Vedānta Dialectics.

(a) Criticisms of the Sāmkhya Parināma Doctrine.

In tracing the history of the dialectical ways of thinking in the Vedanta it has been pointed out in the previous sections that the influence of Nagarjuna and Candrakirti on Sankara and some of his followers, such as Śrīharsa, Citsukha and others, was very great. It has also been pointed out that not only Nagarjuna and Candrakīrti, but many other Buddhist writers, had taken to critical and dialectical ways of discussion. The criticism of the different schools of Indian thought, as contained in Santaraksita's Tattva-samgraha with Kamalaśīla's commentary Panjikā, is a remarkable instance of this. Santaraksita lived in the first half of the eighth century A.D., and Kamalaśīla was probably his junior contemporary. They refuted the views of Kambalāśvatara, a follower of the Lokāyata school, the Buddhist Vasumitra (A.D. 100), Dharmatrāta (A.D. 100), Ghosaka (A.D. 150), Buddhadeva (A.D. 200), the Naiyāyika Vātsyāyana (A.D. 300), the Mīmāmsist Sabarasvāmin (A.D. 300), the Sāmkhyist Vindhyasvāmin (A.D. 300), the Buddhist Sanghabhadra (A.D. 350), Vasubandhu (A.D. 350), the Sāmkhyist Iśvarakṛṣṇa (A.D. 300), the Buddhist Dinnaga (A.D. 400), the Jaina Ācaryasūri (A.D. 478), the Sāmkhyist Māthara Ācārya (A.D. 500), the Naiyāyika Uddyotakara (A.D. 600), the rhetorician Bhāmaha (A.D. 640), the Buddhist Dharmakīrti (A.D. 650), the grammarian-philosopher Bhartrhari (A.D. 650), the Mīmāmsist Kumārila Bhatta (A.D. 680),

the Jaina Subhagupta (A.D. 700), the Buddhist Yugasena (A.D. 700), the Naiyāyika Āviddhakarņa (A.D. 700), Saṅkarasvāmin (A.D. 700), Praśastamati (A.D. 700), Bhāvivikta (A.D. 700), the Jaina Pātrasvāmin (A.D. 700), Āhrika (A.D. 700), Sumati (A.D. 700), and the Mīmāmsist Uveyaka (A.D. 700)¹. It is not possible here, of course, to enter into a complete analysis of all the criticisms of the different philosophers by Sāntarakṣita and Kamalaśīla; yet some of the important points of these criticisms may be noted in order to show the nature and importance of this work, which also reveals the nature of the critical thinking that prevailed among the Buddhists before Saṅkara and by which Saṅkara and his followers, like Śrīharṣa, Citsukha or Ānandajñāna, were in all probability greatly influenced.

In criticizing the Sāmkhya views they say that, if the effects, the evolutes, be identical with the cause, the pradhana, why should they be produced from the pradhana? If they are identical, then the evolutes themselves might be regarded as cause or the pradhana as effect. The ordinary way of determining causality is invariable antecedence, and that is avowedly not available here. The idea of parināma, which means identity in diversity, the causal scheme of the Sāmkhva, is also inadmissible; for, if it is urged that any entity changes into diverse forms, it may be asked whether the nature of the causal entity also changes or does not change. If it does not change, then the causal and the effect states should abide together in the later product, which is impossible; if it changes, then there is nothing that remains as a permanent cause; for this would only mean that a previous state is arrested and a new state is produced. If it is urged that causal transformation means the assumption of new qualities, it may be asked whether such qualities are different from the causal substance or not; if they are, then the occurrence of new qualities cannot entitle one to hold the view that the causal substance is undergoing transformations (parināma). If the changing qualities and the causal substance are identical, then the first part of the argument would reappear. Again, the very arguments that are given in favour of the sat-kārya-vāda (existence of the effect in the cause) could be turned against it. Thus, if curds, etc. already exist

¹ These dates are collected from Dr B. Bhattacharya's foreword to the *Tattva-samgraha*. The present author, though he thinks that many of these dates are generally approximately correct, yet, since he cannot spare the room for proper discussions, does not take responsibility for them.

in the nature of the milk, then what is the meaning of their being produced from it? If there is no idea of production, there is no idea of causality. If it is urged that the effects are potentially existent in the cause, and causal operations only actualize them. then it is admitted that the effects are actually nor-existent in the cause, and we have to admit in the cause some specific characteristic, brought about by the causal operation, on account of the absence of which the effects remained in the potential state in the cause, and that the causal operations which actualize the effects produce some specific determinations in the cause, in consequence of which the effect, which was non-existent before, is actualized; this would mean that what was non-existent could be produced, which would be against the sat-kārva-vāda theory. In the light of the above criticisms, since according to the sat-kārya-vāda theory causal productions are impossible, the arguments of Sāmkhya in favour of sat-kārva-vāda, that only particular kinds of effects are produced from particular kinds of causes, are also inadmissible.

Again, according to Sāmkhya, nothing ought to be capable of being definitely asserted, since according to the sat-kārya-vāda theory doubts and errors are always existent as a modification of either buddhi, manas or caitanya. Again, the application of all Sāmkhva arguments might be regarded as futile, since all arguments are intended to arrive at decisive conclusions; but decisive conclusions, being effects, are already existent. If, however, it is contended that decisive conclusions were not existent before, but were produced by the application of arguments, then there is production of what was non-existent, and thus the sat-kārya-vāda theory fails. If it is urged that, though the decisive conclusion (niścaya) is already existent before the application of the argumentative premises, yet it may be regarded as being manifested by the application of those premises, the Samkhyist may be asked to define what he means by such manifestation (abhivyakti). This manifestation may mean either some new characteristic or some knowledge or the withdrawal of some obscuration to the comprehension. In the first alternative, it may again be asked whether this new character (svabhāvātiśaya) that is generated by the application of the premises is different from the decisive conclusion itself or identical with it. If it is identical, there is no meaning in its introduction; if it is different, no relation is admissible between these two, since any attempt to introduce a relation between

two unrelated entities would launch us into a vicious infinite (anavasthā). It cannot mean the rise of the knowledge about that particular object for the manifestation of which the premises are applied; for, according to the sat-kārya-vāda theory, that knowledge is already there. Again, it cannot mean the removal of the obscuration of knowledge; for, if there is obscuration, that also must be ever-existent. As a matter of fact, the whole of the teachings of Sāmkhya philosophy directed to the rise of true knowledge ought to be false, for true knowledge is ever-existent, and therefore there ought to be no bondage, and therefore all persons should always remain emancipated. Again, if there is any false knowledge, it could not be destroyed, and therefore there could be no emancipation.

Sāntaraksita and Kamalaśīla then urge that, though the above refutation of the sat-kārya-vāda ought naturally to prove the a-satkārya-vāda (the production of that which did not exist before) doctrine, yet a few words may be said in reply to the Sāmkhya refutation of a-sat-kārva-vāda. Thus the argument that that which is nonexistent has no form (nairūpya) and therefore cannot be produced is false; for the operation of production represents itself the character of the thing that is being produced. As the Satkaryavadins think that out of the same three gunas different kinds of effects may be produced according to causal collocations, so here also, according to the law of different kinds of causal forces (karana-śakti-pratiniyamāt), different kinds of non-existing effects come into being. It is meaningless to hold that the limitation of causal forces is to be found in the pre-existence of effects; for, in reality, it is on account of the varying capacities of the causal forces that the various effects of the causes are produced. The production of various effects is thus solely due to the diverse nature of the causal forces that produce them. The law of causal forces is thus ultimately fundamental. The name a-sat-kārya-vāda, however, is a misnomer; for certainly there is no such non-existent entity which comes into being1. Production in reality means nothing more than the characteristic of the moment only, divested from all associations of a previous and a succeeding point of time2. The meaning of a-satkārya-vāda is that an entity called the effect is seen immediately

² vastūnām pūrvāpara-koţi-sūnya-kṣana-mātrāvasthāyī svabhāva eva utpādah ity ucyate. Ibid.

¹ na hy asan-nāma kiñcid asti yad utpattim āvišet, kintu kālpaniko 'yam vyavahāro yad asad utpadyata iti yāvat. Tattva-saṃgraha-pañjikā, p. 33.

x1] Dialectical criticisms of Sāntarakṣita and Kamalaśīla 175

after a particular causal operation; and it certainly did not exist before this second moment, since, if it did exist at the first moment of the causal operation, it would have been perceived; it is therefore said that the effect did not exist before; but this should not be interpreted to mean that the Buddhists believed in the non-existing existence of the effect, which suddenly came into being after the causal operation.

Refuting the other Samkhya doctrines, Santaraksita and Kamalasīla point out that, if an effect (e.g. curd) is said to exist in the cause (e.g. milk), it cannot do so in the actual form of the effect, since then milk would have tasted as curd. If it is said to exist in the form of a special capacity or potency (śakti), then the existence of the effect in the cause is naturally denied; for it is the potency of the effect that exists in the cause and not the effect itself. Again, the Sāmkhyists believe that all sensible things are of the nature of pleasure and pain; this, however, is obviously impossible, since only conscious states can be regarded as pleasurable or painful. There is no sense at all in describing material things as of the nature of pleasure or pain. Again, if objective material things were themselves pleasurable or painful, then the fact that the same objects may appear pleasurable to some and painful to others would be unexplainable. If, however, it is held that even pleasurable objects may appear painful to someone, on account of his particular state of mind or bad destiny, then the objects themselves cannot be pleasurable or painful. Again, if objects are regarded as being made up of three gunas, there is no reason for admitting one eternal prakrti as the source of them all. If causes are similar to effects, then from the fact that the world of objects is many and limited and non-eternal one ought to suppose that the cause of the objects also should be many, limited and noneternal. It is sometimes held that, as all earthen things are produced from one earth, so all objects are produced from one prakrti; but this also is a fallacious argument, since all earthen things are produced not out of one lump of earth, but from different lumps. Thus, though it may be inferred that the world of effects must have its causes, this cannot lead us to infer that there is one such cause as the prakrti of the Samkhyists.

(b) Criticism of Iśvara.

One of the chief arguments of the Naiyāyika theists in favour of the existence of God is based on the fact that the specific forms and shapes of the different objects in the world cannot be explained except on the supposition of an intelligent organizer or shaper. To this Santaraksita and Kamalasila reply that we perceive only the different kinds of visual and tactile sensibles and that there are no further shaped wholes or so-called objects, which men fancy themselves to be perceiving. It is meaningless to think that the visual sensibles and tactile sensibles go together to form one whole object. When people say that it is the same coloured object, seen in the day, that we touched in the night when we did not see it, they are wrong; for colour sensibles or sense-data are entirely different kinds of entities from tactile sense-data, and it is meaningless to say that it is the same object or whole which has both the colour and tactile characteristics. If two colour sensibles, say vellow and blue, are different, then still more different are the colour sensibles and the tactile ones. What exist therefore are not wholes having colour and tactile characters, but only discrete elements of colour and tactile sense-data; the combining of them into wholes is due only to false imagination. There are no objects which can be perceived by the two senses; there is no proof that it is one identical object that is perceived by the eye as well as touched. There exist therefore only loose and discrete sensedata. There being thus no shaped wholes, the supposition of the existence of God as shaper and organizer is inadmissible. The mere fact that there are the effects cannot lead to the inference that there is one intelligent creator and organizer, since a causal inference cannot be made from mere similarity of any description; there must be a law of unconditional and invariable connection (pratibandha). The argument that, since jugs, etc. are made by an intelligent potter, so trees, etc. must also have been made by an intelligent creator, is faulty; for trees, etc., are so different in nature from jugs, etc., that it is wrong to make any assertion from the former to the latter. The general Buddhist arguments against the existence of any eternal entity will also apply against the existence of any eternal God. The argument that, since a state of arrest breaks up into a state of motion or production in all natural phenomena, there must be an intelligent creator, is wrong;

for there is no state of arrest in nature; all things in the world are momentary. Again, if things are happening in succession, at intervals, through the operation of a causal agent, then God also must be operating at intervals and, by the arguments of the opponents themselves, He must have another being to guide His operations, and that another, and that another, and there would thus be a vicious infinite. If God had been the creator, then everything would have sprung into being all at once. He ought not to depend on accessory assistance; for, He being the creator of all such accessory circumstances, they could not render Him any assistance in His creation. Again, if it is urged that the above argument does not hold, because God only creates when He wishes, then it may be replied that, since God's will is regarded as eternal and one, the old objection of simultaneous production holds good. Moreover, since God is eternal and since His will depends only on Him and Him alone, His will cannot be transitory. Now, if He and His will be always present, and yet at the moment of the production of any particular phenomenon all other phenomena are not produced, then those phenomena cannot be regarded as being caused by God or by His will. Again, even if for argument's sake it may be granted that all natural objects, such as trees, hills, etc., presuppose intelligent creators, there is no argument for supposing that one intelligent creator is the cause of all diverse natural objects and phenomena. Therefore there is no argument in favour of the existence of one omniscient creator.

The arguments urged in refutation of prakṛti and Iśvara would also apply against the Pātañjala-Sāṃkhya, which admits the joint causality of Iśvara and prakṛti; for here also, prakṛti and Iśvara being eternal causes, one would expect to have simultaneous production of all effects. If it is urged that the three guṇas behave as accessory causes with reference to God's operation, then also it may be asked whether at the time of productive activity (sarga) the activity of dissolution or of maintenance (sthiti) may also be expected to be operated, or whether at the time of dissolution, there might be productive operation as well. If it is urged that, though all kinds of forces are existent in prakṛti, yet it is only those that become operative that take effect, it may be objected that some other kind of cause has to be admitted for making some powers of prakṛti operative, while others are inoperative, and this would introduce a third factor; thus the joint causality of puruṣa

and prakrti is also easily refuted. Again, the view that God produces the world through kindness is also false; for, had it been so, the world would not have been so full of misery. Again, there being before creation no beings, God could not feel kindness to nonexistent beings. He would not have destroyed the world had He been so kind; if He created and destroyed the world in accordance with the good or bad deeds, then He would not be independent. Had He been independent, He would not have allowed Himself to be influenced by the consequences of bad deeds in producing misery in the world. If He created the world out of mere playful instincts, then these playful instincts would be superior to Him. If He derived much enjoyment from His productive and destructive play, then, if He were able, He would have created and destroyed the world simultaneously. If He is not capable of creating and destroying the world simultaneously, then there is no reason to suppose that He would be able to do it at intervals. If it is urged that the world was produced naturally by His own existence, then there would be simultaneous production. If it is objected that, just as spiders, though they naturally go on producing webs, yet do not produce them all at once, so God also may be producing the world gradually and not all at once, it may then be pointed out that the analogy of spider's webs is false, since the spider does not naturally produce webs, but only through greed for eating insects, and its activities are determined by such motives. God, however, is One who can have only one uniform motive. If it is urged that creation flows from God unconsciously, as it were, it may readily be objected that a being who creates such a great universe without any intelligent purpose would indeed be very unintelligent.

(c) Refutation of the Soul Theory.

The Nyāya view of the soul, that our thoughts must have a knower and that our desires and feelings must have some entity in which they may inhere and that this entity is soul and that it is the existence of this one soul that explains the fact of the unity of all our conscious states as the experience of one individual, is objected to by Śāntarakṣita and Kamalaṣīla. They hold that no thought or knowledge requires any further knower for its illumination; if it had been so, there would be a vicious infinite. Again, desires, feelings, etc., are not like material objects, which would

XI] Dialectical criticisms of Santarakșita and Kamalaśila 179

require a receptacle in which they might be placed. The so-called unity of consciousness is due to a felse unifying imagination of the momentary ones as one. It is also well known that different entities may be regarded as combined on account o their fulfilling the same kinds of functions. It is knowledge in its aspect of ego that is often described as the self, though there is no objective entity corresponding to it. It is sometimes argued that the existence of the soul is proved by the fact that a man is living only so long as his vital currents are connected with the soul, and that he dies when they are disconnected from it; but this is false, since, unless the existence of soul be proved, the supposition of its connection with vital currents as determining life is untenable. Some, however, say that the self is directly perceived in experience; if it had not been, there would not have been such diversity of opinion about its existence. The sense of ego cannot be said to refer to the self; for the sense of ego is not eternal, as it is supposed to be. On the other hand, it refers sometimes to our body (as when I say, "I am white"), sometimes to the senses (as when I say, "I am deaf"), and sometimes to intellectual states. It cannot be said that its reference to body or to senses is only indirect; for no other permanent and direct realization of its nature is found in experience. Feelings, desires, etc., also often arise in succession and cannot therefore be regarded as inhering in a permanent self. The conclusion is that, as all material objects are soulless, so also are human beings. The supposed eternal soul is so different from the body that it cannot be conceived how one can help the other or even be related to it. Thus there is hardly any argument in favour of the soul theory of the Nyāya and Vaiśesika.

(d) Refutation of the Mīmāmsā Theory of the Self.

Kumārila believed that, though the nature of the self as pure consciousness was eternal and unchangeable, yet it passed through various changing phases of other feeling and volitional states. That the self was of the nature of pure consciousness was proved by the fact that it perceives itself to be knower in the past and in the present. So the existence of the self is proved by the fact of self-consciousness. To this Sāntarakṣita and Kamalaśīla reply that, if the self is regarded as one eternal consciousness, then knowledge or the knowing faculty (buddhi) ought also to be regarded as similarly one and eternal; but seemingly Kumārila does not

consider buddhi to be such. If the knowing faculty be regarded as eternal and one, how are the varying states of cognition, such as colour-cognition, taste-cognition, etc., to be explained? If it is urged that, though the knowing faculty is one, yet (just as a fire, though it has always a capacity of burning, yet burns only when combustible substances are put in it) it only passes through various kinds of perception according as various kinds of objects are presented to it; or, just as a mirror, though it has always the power of reflecting, yet only reflects when the objects are presented to it, so the selves are eternally conscious and yet operate only in connection with their specific bodies and grasp the various kinds of sense-data, and all cognitions are forged from them(selves). If the change of cognitions is due to the changing operations of the senses and the sense-objects, then such a cognizing faculty cannot be regarded as eternal and one. If the knowing faculty is to be regarded as eternal owing to an experience of continuity of consciousness, then how can one explain the variety of cognitions? If it is urged that the variety of cognitions is due to the assumption by the cognizing faculty of various forms of objects, then how can one explain the experience of the variety of cognitions in hallucinations, when there are no objects? Moreover the Mīmāmsist does not think that the cognizing faculty assumes the forms of the objects cognized, but believes that cognition reveals the objects in the objective world and the cognizing faculty has itself no forms (nirākārā buddhih). The fact that there may be cognitions without a corresponding real objective presentation proves that our cognitions are subjective and self-revealed and that they do not reveal objective entities. If it is urged that the knowing faculty has always the power of revealing all things, then sound-cognition would be the same as colour-cognition. The analogy of fire is also false, since there is not one fire that is constant; the analogy of the reflecting mirror is also false, since there is really no reflection in the mirror itself; one can see a reflection in a mirror at a particular angle. the mirror therefore is only an apparatus for producing an illusory cognition. Again, the buddhi cannot be compared to a mirror as an apparatus for producing illusory images; for then some other buddhi would be necessary for perceiving illusory images. Again, if the self is regarded as one and eternal, then it cannot pass through the varying feeling and volitional states. If these states are not entirely different from the self, then their changes would imply the change of the self; and again, if they are entirely different from

XI] Dialectical criticisms of Sāntarakṣita and Kamalaśīla 181

the self, how should their change affect the self? Again, if these states all belong to the self and it is urged that it is when the pleasurable state is submerged in the nature of the common self, that the painful state may arise, it may be pointed out in objection that, if the pleasurable states could be submerged in the nature of the self in identity with itself, then they would be identical with the nature of the self. It is also wrong to suppose that the sense of self-consciousness refers to a really existing entity corresponding to it. It has in reality no specific object to refer to as the self. It may therefore be safely asserted that the existence of the self is not proved by the evidence of self-consciousness.

(e) Refutation of the Sāmkhya View of the Self.

Against the Sāmkhya view of the self it is pointed out that the Sāmkhya regards the self as pure consciousness, one and eternal, and that, as such, it ought not to be able to enjoy diverse kinds of experiences. If it is held that enjoyment, etc., all belong to buddhi and the purusa only enjoys the reflections in the buddhi, it may well be objected that if the reflections in the buddhi are identical with purusa, then with their change the purusa also undergoes a change; and if they are different, the purusa cannot be considered to be their enjoyer. Again, if the prakrti concentrates all its activities for the enjoyment of the purusa, how can it be regarded as unconscious? Again, if all actions and deeds belong to buddhi, and if buddhi be different from purusa, why should the purusa suffer for what is done by the buddhi? If, again, the nature of purusa cannot be affected by the varying states of pleasure and pain, then it cannot be regarded as an enjoyer; and, if it could be affected, it would itself be changeable.

(f) The Refutation of the Upanisad View of the Self.

The Upaniṣadic thinkers hold that it is one eternal consciousness that illusorily appears as all objects, and that there is in reality no perceiver and perceived, but only one eternal consciousness. Against this view it is urged by Śāntarakṣita and Kamalaśīla that, apart from the individual cognitions of colour, taste, etc., no eternal, unchangeable consciousness is experienced. If one eternal consciousness is the one reality, then there cannot be a distinction of false knowledge and right knowledge, bondage and emancipation. There being only one reality, there is no right knowledge which need be attained.

(g) Refutation of the Theory of the Persistence of Existing Entities.

Sāntarakṣita and Kamalasīla point out that the Naiyāyikas divide existing entities into two classes, as produced (krtaka) and unproduced (a-krtaka), and they hold that those which are produced are destructible. The Vatsiputrivas also similarly divide existing entities into momentary (e.g. ideas, sound, flame, etc.) and non-momentary (e.g. earth, sky, etc.). On this point Santaraksita and Kamalasīla urge that whatever is produced is momentary, since the destructibility of momentary things does not depend on any cause excepting the fact that they are produced; for, had the destructibility of such entities depended on conditions or causes other than the fact of their being produced, then the premise that whatever is produced is necessarily destructible would be false. The Naiyāyika view, therefore, that produced entities depend for their destruction on other conditions, is false. If produced entities do not depend for their destruction on any other condition or cause than the fact of their being produced, then they must be destroyed the moment they are produced, or in other words they are momentary. Moreover, destruction, being negation, is not a positive entity and is absolutely contentless, and only positive entities depend on other conditions or causes for their production. Destruction, being negation, is not produced by any conditions or causes like a positive entity. Destruction therefore is not generated by any separate causal apparatus, but the very causes that lead to the production of an entity lead also to its destruction the next moment. Destructibility being a necessary characteristic of productibility, destruction cannot need the interference of any causes. It has also been stated above that destruction is pure negation and has therefore no characteristics which have to be generated by any positive set of causes or conditions¹.

¹ The word kṣaṇika, which is translated as "momentary," is, according to Sāṇtarakṣita, a technical term. The character in an entity of dying immediately after production, is technically called kṣaṇa, and whatever has this quality is called kṣaṇika (utpādāṇāntara-vināši-srabhāvo vastunāh kṣaṇa ucyate, sa yaṣyāsti sa kṣaṇika iti. Tattva-saṇgraha, p. 142); kṣaṇa therefore does not mean timemoment. It means the character of dying immediately after being produced. The objection of Uddyotakara that what only stays for a moment of time (kṣaṇa) cannot be called kṣaṇika, because at the expiry of the moment nothing remains which can be characterized as momentary, is therefore inadmissible. There is, however, no entity separate from the momentary character, and the use of the term kṣaṇika, which grammatically distinguishes the possessor of the momentary character from the momentary character itself, is due only to verbal license.

XI] Dialectical criticisms of Santaraksita and Kamalasila 183

Kumalasīla and Sāntaraksita urge that existence (sattva) can be affirmed only of those entities which are capable of serving a purpose (artha-krivā-samarthā). They urge that entities can only serve a purpose, if they are momentary. Entities that persist cannot serve any purpose and therefore cannot have any existence. In order to prove their thesis they enter into the following argument. If any purpose is to be served, then that can be citizen in succession or simultaneously, and no middle alternative is possible. If an existing entity persists in time, then all its effects ought to come about simultaneously; for, the complete cause being there, the effects must also be there, and there is no reason why the effects should happen in succession; but it is well known in experience that effects happen only in succession and not simultaneously. If, however, it is objected that even a persisting entity can perform actions in succession owing to its association with successive accessories (kraminah sahakārinah), then one may well enquire as to the nature of the assistance given by the successive accessories to the persisting entity in the production of the effect; is it by producing a special modification (atiśayādhāna) of the persisting cause or by independent working in consonance with the productive action of the persisting entity? In the first alternative, the special modification may be either identical with or different from the nature of the persisting entity, and both these alternatives are impossible; for, if it is identical; then, since the effect follows in consequence of the special modification of the accessories, it is the element of this special modification that is to be regarded as the cause of the effect, and not the persisting entity. If it is again urged that the effect is due to the association of the special modification with the persisting entity, then it would be impossible to define the nature of such association; for an association may be either of identity or of productivity (tādātmya and tad-utpatti), and neither of them is possible in the present case, since the special modification is recognized as being different from the persisting entity and is acknowledged by assumption to be produced by the accessories. Again, such association cannot be regarded as being of the nature of samavāya; for this special modification, being of the nature of an additional assistance (upakāra), cannot be regarded as being of the nature of inseparable inherence (samavāya). If this special modification be regarded as being neither of the nature of an additional assistance (upakāra) nor of the nature of an essence

identical with the persisting entity, and if it is still regarded as being associated with the persisting entity in a relation of samavāya, then anything in the world could be regarded as being in the samavāya relation with anything else. In the other alternative, in which it is maintained that the persisting entity awaits only the independent working of the accessories, it may well be asked whether the causal nature of the persisting entity is the same together with the totality of the accessories as it is without them? In the former case, the accessories would also be persistent. In the latter case, the persisting entity can no longer be regarded as persisting.

Regarding the objection of Bhadanta Yogasena, that the same difficulties would arise in the assumption of entities as momentary, Sāntarakṣita and Kamalaṣila reply that in their view the accessories behave in two ways, firstly, as independent co-operation (ekārtha-kriyā-kāritā) and, secondly, as mutual help (parasparopakāritā). Thus in the first moment the different accessory-units are only independently co-operant, since, in one moment, their mutual actions cannot help one another; but in the second moment, the effects may be regarded as being of a joint nature, and therefore mutually determining one another, in the production of the effect of the third moment. In this view, though each entity operates independently, yet none of their operations are irrelevant. They are all being produced and determined by the respective causes and conditions in a beginningless series.

The objection against the momentariness of all things on the ground that things are perceived and recognized to be the same, and as persisting, is not a valid one. For the fact of persistence cannot be perceived by the senses and must be regarded as due to false imagination. All recognition is due to the operation of memory, which is almost universally recognized as invalid for purposes of right knowledge. On this point it may be argued that in recognition, if the entity now perceived be the same as the entity perceived at a previous time, then how can a cognition in the past comprehend an entity of the present time? If they are held to be different, then it is acknowledged that the entities perceived as the same in recognition are not really the same. The objector's argument that, since things pass by the same name, they must be persistent is invalid; for it is well known that even in ordinary perception, where a flame is known to be destroyed every moment. and produced anew, it is still said in common verbal usage to be XI] Dialectical criticisms of Santarakṣita and Kamalasīla 185 the same flame. Thus all existing things must be regarded as momentary.

(h) Refutation of Criticisms of the Non-permanency of Entities.

It is objected by the Naiyāyikas and others that, if things are momentary, then the theory of karma would fail; for how can it be understood that the deeds be performed by one, and the fruits reaped by another? How, again, can it be understood that a momentary cause which does not abide till the rise of the effect should produce the same? Again, if objects are momentary, how can they be perceived by the eye? The phenomena of recognition would also be inexplicable, as there would be no permanent perceiver who would identify the present and the past as being one. How, again, would the phenomenon of bondage and of emancipation apply to a non-permanent being? In reply to this Santaraksita and Kamalasīla say that, just as a seed by means of its invariable power produces the shoots, without being superintended by any conscious agent, so the inner states of a man may generate other states, without being superintended by any permanent conscious agent; the formula (dharma-samketa) for all production is, "this happening, that happens"; "this being produced, that is produced." It is through ignorance that a man cannot discern that all subsequent states are determined by the natural forces of the preceding ones and thinks of himself as performing this or that action or as striving for emancipation. The true nature of things cannot be determined by the illusory experience of ignorant people. It is sometimes objected that the parts of a seed attain a due constitution by assimilating nutritive elements at the second stage, and then again at the third stage attain a new constitution by further accretion of new nutritive elements, and that therefore it cannot be held that the parts of the seed are entirely destroyed at the second stage. To this the reply of Santaraksita is that in the second moment the effect is produced in dependence on the undestroyed causal efficiency of the first causal moment; so that the effect is produced by the causal efficiency of the first moment, when the cause is not destroyed. The cause however perishes in the second moment; for, once the cause has produced the effect, it cannot be producing it again and again; if it did, there would be a vicious infinite. It must therefore be admitted that the causal

viiñāna-vādin.

efficiency of the cause ceases immediately after production¹. The view that the effect is produced simultaneously with the cause (sahabhūtam kārvam) is unreasonable, since the cause cannot produce the effect before it is itself produced; again, it cannot produce after it is itself produced; for then the effect also has to be acknowledged to be of the same nature as the cause; but at the same moment it can have no scope for its efficiency. Thus the cause and effect cannot be produced simultaneously. There is no necessity also for admitting a causal operation (vyāpāra), as separate and distinct from the cause. Invariable antecedence is the only qualification of cause². If a causal operation has to be admitted for connecting the cause with the effect, then that would require another operation, and that another, and there would be a vicious infinite. If the causal operation is admitted to be able to generate the effect independently by itself, so can the cause be also admitted to be able to produce the effect. The objection that, if antecedence be admitted to be alone the determinant of causality, then the fact, that a thing is smelled after it is seen may also lead one to infer that colour is the cause of smell, is invalid, for the Buddhists have no objection to regarding colour as an accessory cause of smell. It must also be remembered that the Buddhists do not regard mere antecedence as the definition of cause, but invariable and necessary antecedence³. Again, no difficulty need be experienced in perception, if the objects are admitted to be momentary; for ideas may be considered to have forms akin to the objects, or to be formless, but revealing the objects. In either case the ideas are produced by their causes, and the momentariness or permanence of objects has nothing to do with their determination⁴. There are in reality no agent and no enjoyer, but only the series of passing mental phenomena. Causality consists in the determination of the succeeding states by the previous ones. The objection of Uddyotakara, that, if the mind is momentary, it cannot be modified (vāsanā) by deeds (karma), is invalid; for, in the Buddhist view, this modification

¹ The Vaibhāṣikas are spoken of by Śāntarakṣita as holding the view that the effect is produced at the third moment. In this view the effect is produced by the destroyed cause.

¹ idam eva hi kāryasya kāranāpekṣā yat tad-anantara-bhāvitvam. Tattva-samgraha, p. 177.

na hi vayam ānantarya-mātram kārya-kāraņa-bhāvādhigati-nibandhanam
 yasyaivānantaram yad bhavati tat tasya kāraņam işyate, Ibid. p. 180.
 Sāntaraksita and Kamalasīla are Buddhists who style themselves nirākāra-

XI] Dialectical criticisms of Santarakșita and Kamalaśīla 187

 $(v\bar{a}san\bar{a})$ means nothing more than the production of a new mental state of a modified nature. There is again no permanent perceiver who remembers and recognizes; it is only when in a particular series of conscious states, on account of the strength of a particular perception, such particularly modified mental states are generated as may be said to contain seeds of memory, that memory is possible. The Buddhists also do not consider that there is one person who suffers bondage and is liberated; they think that bondage means nothing more than the production of painful states due to ignorance $(avidy\bar{a})$ and other mental causes, and that liberation also means nothing more than purity of the mental states due to cessation of ignorance through right knowledge.

(i) Refutation of the Nyāya Vaiśeṣika Categories.

Śāntarakṣita and Kamalaśīla attempt to refute the categories of substance (dravya) with its subdivisions, quality (guṇa), action (karma), generality, or class concepts (sāmānya), specific peculiarities (viśeṣa), relation of inherence (samavāya), and the connotation and denotation of words (śabdārtha). This refutation may briefly be set out here.

Speaking against the eternity of atoms, they hold that, since no special excellence can be produced in eternal entities, no conditions or collocations of any kind can produce any change in the nature of the atoms; thus, the atoms being always the same in nature, all objects should be produced from them either at once, or not at all. The mere fact that no cause of atoms is known is no ground for thinking that they are causeless. Again, substance, as different from characters and qualities, is never perceived. The refutation of wholes (avayavi), which has already been effected, also goes against the acceptance of substantive wholes, and so the four substances earth, water, air and fire, which are ordinarily regarded as substantive-wholes made up of atoms-also stand refuted. Again, it is not easy to prove the existence of separate and independent time and space entities; for spatial and temporal determinations may well be explained as mental modifications due, like other facts of experience, to their specific causes. The Buddhists of course accept the existence of manas as an instrument separate from the sense-organs, but they do not admit its existence as an eternal and single entity.

The refutation of substances implies the refutation of gunas,

which are supposed to be dependent on substances. If the substances do not exist, there can also be no relation of inherence, in which relation the *guṇas* are supposed to exist in substances. There is, again, no meaning in acknowledging colours, etc., as different from the atoms in which they are supposed to exist. The perception of numbers also ought to be regarded as due to mental modifications associated with particular cognitions. There is no reason for holding that numbers should stand as separate qualities. In a similar manner Śāntarakṣita and Kamalaṣīla proceed with the refutation of the other Nyāya qualities.

Proceeding with the refutation of action (karma), they hold that, if all things are admitted to be momentary, then action cannot be attributed to them; for action, involving as it does successive separation of parts and association of contact-points, implies many moments for its execution. If things are admitted to be persistent or eternal, then also movement cannot be explained. If things are admitted to be always moving, then they will be in motion while they are perceived to be at rest, which is impossible. If things are at rest by nature, there cannot be any vibratory movement in them. The main principle involved in the refutation of gunas and karmas consists in the fact that the gunas and karmas are regarded by the Buddhists as being identical with the particular sense-data cognized. It is wrong, in their view, to analyse the sense-data as substances having qualities and motion as different categories inhering in them. Whatever may be the substance, that is also the quality which is supposed to be inhering in it, as also the motion which it is supposed to execute.

Regarding the refutation of class-concepts the main drift of Buddhist argument is that, though the perception of class-natures may be supposed to be due to some cause, yet it is wrong to assume the existence of eternal class-nature existing constantly in all the changing and diverse individual members of a class. For, howsoever we may try to explain it, it is difficult to see how one thing can remain constantly the same, though all the individual members in which it is supposed to exist are constantly changing. If class-natures are said to inhere owing to specific qualities, e.g. cooking in the cook, then also it may be objected that, since the operation of cooking is different in each case, there is no one character "cooking" by virtue of which the class-nature of cook is admissible. Moreover, a cook is called a cook even when

he is not cooking. Considerations like these should lead any thinking person to deny the existence of eternal class-natures.

Regarding the refutation of specific qualities (višesa) it is held that, if yogins can perceive the ultimate specific qualities as different from one another, they might equally perceive the atoms to be different from one another; if the atoms cannot be perceived as different except through some other properties, then the same may be required of the specific properties themselves.

Regarding the refutation of $samav\bar{a}ya$, or relation of inherence, the Buddhist objects mainly to the admission of a permanent $samav\bar{a}ya$ relation, though all the individuals in which this relation may be supposed to exist should be changing or perishing. It is a false supposition that the relation of inherence, such as that of the cloth in the thread, is ever felt to be, as if the one (e.g. the cloth) was existing in the other (threads), as the Naiyāyikas suppose.

Dialectic of Śankara and Anandajñāna.

It is well known that Sankarācārya in his commentary on the Brahma-sūtra, II. ii II-17, criticizes the atomic theory of the Vaisesikas. His first thesis is that the production of an effect different in nature from the cause, as in the case of the production of the impure world from pure Brahman, can be justified on the analogy of even the critics of the Vedanta, the Vaisesikas. The Vaisesikas hold that in the production of the dvy-anuka (containing two atoms) from the paramānu (single atom) and of the catur-anuka (containing four atoms) from the dvy-anuka, all other qualities of the paramānu and the dvv-anuka are transferred to the dvv-anuka and catur-anuka respectively, excepting the specific measures of pārimāndalya (specific atomic measure) and anu-hrasva (specific measure of the dyads), which are peculiar to paramāņu and dvyanuka respectively. Thus, though all other qualities of paramanus pass over to dvy-anukas produced by their combination, yet the specific pārimāndalya measure of the paramānus does not pass to the dvy-anukas, which are of the anu-hrasva parimāna. So also, though all the qualities of dvy-anukas would pass on to the caturanukas made out of their combination, yet their own specific anu-hrasva parimāna would not pass on to the catur-anukas, which are possessed of their own measure, viz. the mahat parimāna, uncaused by the parimana of the dvy-anukas. This shows that the

Vaisesikas believe that the pārimāndalya measure (parimāna) of the paramānus may produce an altogether different measure in their product, the dvy-anukas, and so the anu-hrasva measure of the dvy-anukas may produce an altogether different measure in their product, the catur-anukas, viz. the mahat parimana. On this analogy it may be contended that the Vaisesikas have nothing to object to in the production of an altogether different effect (viz. the impure world) from an altogether different cause, the pure Brahman. If it is urged that the measure of the paramānu cannot pass on to the dvy-anuka only because its passage is rendered impossible by the taking possession of it by an opposite quality (the anu-hrasva parimāna), then a similar reply may be given in the case of the difference between the world and Brahman. Moreover, since, according to the Vaisesika theory, all products remain for a moment without qualities, there is no reason why, when the dvy-anuka was produced, the pārimāndalya measure should not pass on to it. At that moment, since the pārimāndalva measure did not pass on to it as did the other qualities, it follows, not that the passing of the pārimāndalva measure is opposed by the other parimāna, but that it naturally did not pass on to it. Again, it cannot be objected that the analogy of dissimilarity of qualities (guna) cannot be cited in support of the dissimilarity of substances.

Sankara's second thesis is that the Vaisesika view that atoms combine is wrong, because, since the atoms are partless, and since combination implies contact and contact implies parts which come in contact, there cannot be any combination of atoms. Moreover, since before creation there is no one who can make an effort, and since the contact of atoms cannot be effected without effort. and since the selves, being unconscious at that time, cannot themselves make any effort, it is impossible to account for the activity without which the contact of the atoms would also be impossible. So the atoms cannot combine, for want of the effort needed for such a contact. Sankara's third point is that the relation of samavāya upheld by the Vaisesikas cannot be admitted; for, if to unite two different objects the relation of samavāya is needed, then samavāya. being itself different from them, would require another samavāva to connect itself with them, and that another, and that another, and so on ad infinitum. If the relation of contact requires a further relation of samavāya to connect it with the objects in contact, there is no reason why samavāya should not require some other relation

in its turn. Again, if the atoms are regarded as always operative and combining, then there can be no dissolution (pralava), and, if they are always disintegrating, then creation would be impossible. Again, since the atoms possess the qualities of colour, etc., they must be the product of some simpler causes, just as other objects having qualities are made up of simpler entities. Moreover, it is not right to suppose that, since we have the idea of non-eternality, this must imply eternality and that therefore the atoms must be eternal: for, even though it implies the existence of eternality, it does not imply that the atoms should be eternal, since there is such an eternal thing as Brahman. Again, the fact that the cause of the destruction of the atoms is not known does not imply that they are eternal; for mere ignorance of the ways of destruction does not imply eternality. Again, the Vaisesikas are wrong in speaking of six different categories and yet hold that all the five other categories depend on substance for their existence or manifestation. A substance and its quality do not appear to be as different as two substances. A substance appears black or white, and this implies that the qualities are at bottom identical with the substance (dravyātmakatā guņasya). It cannot, moreover, be urged that the dependence of other categories on substance consists in their inseparableness (ayuta-siddhatva) from it. This inseparableness cannot be inseparableness of space; for, when threads constitute as their product a piece of cloth, then the threads and the cloth cannot be regarded as having the same space, yet, being cause and effect, they are to be regarded as ayuta-siddha, or inseparable; and yet the whiteness of the cloth is not regarded as abiding in the threads. If inseparableness means inseparableness of time, then the two horns of a bull, which exist at the same time, should also be regarded as inseparable; and, if inseparableness means inseparableness of character or sameness of character, then quality cannot be regarded as being different from substance. Again, since the cause exists prior to the effect, it cannot be regarded as inseparable from the cause, and yet it is asserted by the Vaisesikas that their relation is one of samavāva, since they are inseparable in their nature.

Sankara, however, seldom indulges in logical dialectic like the above, and there are only a few rare instances in which he attacks his opponents from a purely logical point of view. But even here he does not so much criticize the definitions of the Vaisesikas as point out the general logical and metaphysical confusions that

result from some of the important Vaisesika theories. It is easy to note the difference of a criticism like this from the criticism of Śrīharşa in his Khandana-khanda-khādya, where he uses all the power of his dialectical subtleties to demolish the cherished principles of pure logic as formulated by the Nyāya logicians. It is not a criticism of certain doctrines in support of others, but it is a criticism which aims at destroying the possibility of logical or perceptual knowledge as a whole. It does not touch any specific metaphysical views, but it denies the power of perception and inference to give us right knowledge, and it supposes that it achieves its purpose by proving that the Nyāya modes of definition of perception and inference are faulty and self-contradictory. Citsukha's attempts are more positive; for he criticizes not only the Nyāya categories of logic, but also the categories of Vaiśeşika metaphysics, and makes some positive and important statements, too, about the Vedanta doctrine itself. Anandajñana's Tarkasamgraha is another important work of negative criticism of the Vaisesika categories and in that sense a continuation on a more elaborate scale of Citsukha's criticisms of the Vaisesika categories. The importance of the Vaisesika was gradually increasing, as it was gradually more and more adopted by Vaisnava realistic writers. such as Madhva and his followers, and it was supposed that a refutation of the Vaisesika would also imply a refutation of the dualistic writers who draw their chief support from Vaisesika physics and metaphysics.

Anandajñāna, also called Ānandagiri, was probably a native of Gujarat and lived in the middle of the thirteenth century. Mr Tripathi points out in his introduction to Ānandajñāna's Tarkasamgraha that Ānandajñāna was a spiritual head of the Dvārakā monastery of Sankara, of which Sureśvarācārya was the first teacher. He was a pupil of two teachers, Anubhūtisvarūpācārya and Suddhānanda. Anubhūtisvarūpācārya wrote five works, viz. (1) a grammatical work called Sārasvata-prakriyā, (2) a commentary on Sankara's commentary on Gaudapāda's Māṇḍūkya-kārikā, (3) a commentary on Ānandabodha Yati's Nyāya-makaranda, called Nyāya-makaranda-saṃgraha, (4) a commentary, called Candrikā, on Ānandabodha's Nyāya-dīpāvalī, and (5) another commentary, called Nibandha, on Ānandabodha's Pramāṇa-mālā. Nothing is known about his other teacher, Suddhānanda, who is different from the other Suddhānanda, the teacher of Svayamprakāśa of the

seventeenth century, author of the Advaita-makaranda-tīkā. One of the most distinguished of Anandagiri's pupils was Akhandananda. author of the Tattva-dīpana, a commentary on Prakāśātman's Pañca-pādikā-vivarana, as he refers to him as sumad-anandaśailāhva-pañcāsyam satatam bhaje in the fourth verse of his Tattvadipana. Anandagiri wrote a large number of works, which are mostly commentaries. Of these his Isavasya-bhāsya-tippaņa, Kenopanisadbhāsva-tippana, Vākya-vivaraņa-vyākhyā, Kuthopanisad-bhāsvatīkā, Mundaka-bhāsya-vyākhyāna, Māndūkya-Gaudapādīya-bhāsyavyākhyā, Taittirīya-bhāsya-tippaņa, Chāndogya-bhāsya-tīkā, Taittirīva-bhāsva-vārttika-tīkā, Šastra-prakāsikā, Brhad-āranyakabhāsya-vārttika-ṭīkā, Brhad-āraņyaka-bhāsya-tīkā, bhāsva-tīkā (called also Nyāva-nirnaya), Gītā-bhāsva-vivecana. Pañcîkarana-vivarana, with a commentary called Tattva-candrikā by Rāma Tīrtha, a pupil of Jagannāthāśrama (latter part of the fifteenth century), and Tarka-samgraha have already been printed. But some of his other works, such as Upadeśa-sāhasrī-vivrti, Vākva-vrtti-tīkā, Ātma-jñānopadeśa-tīkā, Svarūpa-nirnava-tīkā, Tripurī-prakarana-tīkā, Padārtha-tattva-nirnaya-vivarana Tattvāloka, still remain to be printed. It will thus be seen that almost all his works are but commentaries on Sankara's commentaries and other works. Tarka-sampraha and The Tattvāloka (attributed to "Janārdana," which was probably the name of Anandagiri when he was a householder) seem to be his only two independent works1. Of these the manuscript of the second work, in which he refutes the doctrines of many other philosophers, including Bhāskara's parināma doctrines, has, unfortunately, not been available to the present writer. The Tarkasamgraha is devoted almost wholly to a detailed refutation of the Vaiseşika philosophy. The book is divided into three chapters. In the first chapter, dealing with the criticism of substances (dravva). he starts with a refutation of the concepts of duality, reality (tattva), existence (sattva), non-existence, positivity (bhāva) and negativity (abhāva). Ānandojñāna then passes on to a refutation of the definition of substance and its division into nine kinds (according to the Vaisesika philosophy). He then criticizes the first substance, earth, and its diverse forms, as atoms (paramānu) and molecules (dvyanuka), and its grosser forms and their modified states,

¹ See Mr Tripathi's introduction to his edition of the *Tarka-samgraha*, Baroda, 1917.

as bodies, senses and sense-objects, and continues to criticize the other substances such as water, fire, air, and the theory of creation and dissolution, akaśa, time, space, self (atman) and manas. In the second chapter he goes on to the criticism of qualities (guna), such as colour (rūpa), taste (rasa), smell (gandha), touch (sparśa), the effects of heat on the transformations of objects through molecular or atomic changes (pīlu-pāka and piţhara-pāka), number (sankhyā), measure (parimāna), separateness (prthaktva), contact (samyoga), separation (vibhāga), the nature of knowledge, illusion and dreams, the nature of right knowledge and its means (pramāna and pramā), perception (pratyaksa), inference (anumāna), concomitance (vyāpti), reason (hetu), fallacies (hetv ābhāsa), examples (drstānta), discussions, disputations and wranglings, testimony of the scriptures (agama), analogy (upamana), memory, pleasure, pain, will, antipathy (dvesa), effort (prayatna), heaviness, liquidity (dravatva), virtue, vice, etc. In the third chapter he refutes the notion of action, class-concept or universality (jāti), the relation of inherence (samavāya) and different kinds of negation. The thesis designed to be proved in all these refutations is the same as that of Śrīharşa or Citsukha, viz. that in whatsoever manner the Vaisesikas have attempted to divide, classify or define the world of appearances they have failed.

The conclusion at which he arrives after this long series of criticisms and refutations reminds us of Anandabodha's conclusions in his Nyāya-makaranda, on which a commentary was written by his teacher Anubhūtisvarūpa Ācārya, to which reference has already been made when Anandabodha's views were under discussion. Thus Anandajñāna says that an illusory imposition cannot be regarded as existent (sat); for, since it is non-existent in the substratum (adhisthāna) of its appearance, it cannot be existent anywhere else. Neither can it be regarded as absolutely non-existent (atyantāsat); for, had it been so, it would not have appeared as immediately perceived (aparokṣa-pratīti-virodhāt); nor can it be regarded as existent and non-existent in the same object. The only alternative left is that the illusory imposition is indescribable in its nature¹. This indescribability (anirvacyatva) means that, in whichever way one may try to describe it, it is found that none of those ways can be affirmed of it or, in other words, that it is indescribable

¹ pārišeṣyād anirvācyam āropyam upagamyatām sattvādīnām prakārāṇām prāg-ukta-nyāya-bādhanāt. Tarka-saṃgraha, p. 135.

in each and every one of those ways¹. Now, since all appearances must have something for their cause and since that which is not a real thing cannot have a real thing as its material cause (na ca avastuno vastu upādānam upapadyate), and, since they are all indescribable in their nature, their cause must also be of that nature, the nescience of the substratum².

He then asserts that this nescience (aiñāna), which is the material out of which all appearances take their form, is associated with Brahman; for Brahman could not be regarded as omniscient or the knower of all (sarva-jña) without its association with ajñāna, which is the material stuff of the all (the knower, the means of knowledge, the objects and their relations)3. Everything else that appears except the one reality, the self, the Brahman, is the product of this ajñāna. This one ajñāna then can explain the infinite kinds of appearances, and there is not the slightest necessity of admitting a number of aiñānas in order to explain the diversity or the plurality of appearances 'The many selves are thus but appearances produced by this one ajñāna in association with Brahman4. It is the one ajñāna that is responsible for appearances of the dream state as well as of the waking state. It is the one ajñāna which produces all kinds of diversity by its diversity of functions or modes of operation. If there is only one reality, which through one ainana appears in all diverse forms of appearances, how is the phenomenon of self-consciousness or self-recognition to be explained? To this difficulty Anandajñāna's reply is that both the perceiving and the perceived self are but false appearances in the antahkarana (an ajñāna product), and that it does not in any way infect the one true self with any kind of activity. Thus there is the one Brahman and there is one beginningless, indescribable ajñāna in connection with it, which is the cause of all the infinitely diverse appearances through which the former appears impure and suffers bondage, as it were, and again appears liberated, as it were, through the

yena yena prakāreņa paro nirvaktum icchati

tena tenātmanā 'yogas tad-anirvācyatā matā. Tarka-samgraha, p. 136. ² tasmād rūpyādi-kāryasyānirvācyatvāt tad-upādānam api adhisthānājñānam upādeyam. Ibid. p. 137.

upādeyam. Ibid. p. 137.

* pramāṇatch sarvajñatve 'pi pramāṭrtvasya pramāṇa-prameya-sambandhasya cājñāna-sambandham antareṇāṣiddheh tasmin ajñānavattvam avasyam āṣrayita-vyam anyathā ṣarvajñatvāyogāt. Ibid. pp. 137, 138.

* ekas tāvad ātmā dvayor api āvayoh sampratipanno 'sti, tasya svājñānād eva

^{*} ekas tāvad ātmā dvayor api āvayoh sampratipanno sti, tasya svājñānād eva avivāda-siddhād ekasmād atiriktam sarvam pratibhāti;...samastasyaiva bhedabhānasyāpāramārthikasyaikajñāna-sāmarthyād eva sambhavān nājñāna-bhede hetur asti. Ibid. pp. 138, 139.

realization of the Vedāntic truth of the real nature of the self¹. In fact there is neither bondage nor emancipation.

In view of the above it may be suggested that Ānandajñāna is following the same line of interpretation of the relation of ajñāna to Brahman which was upheld by Vācaspati and Ānandabodha. Ānandajñāna's position as an interpreter of Śańkara's philosophy is evident from the number of able commentaries which he wrote on the commentaries of Śańkara and also from the references made to him by later writers. Mr Tripathi collects the names of some of these writers, as Prajñānānanda, Śeṣa Śarngadhara, Vādivāgīśvara, Vādīndra, Rāmānanda Sarasvatī, Sadānanda Kāśmīraka (A.D. 1547), Kṛṣṇānanda (A.D. 1650), Maheśvara Tīrtha (A.D. 1650) and others.

Philosophy of the Prakaţārtha-vivaraṇa (A.D. 1200).

The Prakaţārtha-vivaraṇa (as the writer himself calls it in the colophon of the work—prārabhyate vivaraṇaṇ prakaṭārtham etat) is an important commentary still in manuscript on Saṅkara's commentary on the Brahma-sūtra, which the present writer had an opportunity of going through from a copy in the Adyar Library, Madras, through the kind courtesy of the Librarian, Mr T. R. Chintamani, who is intending to bring out an edition. The author, however, does not anywhere in the work reveal his own name and the references which can be found in other works are all to its name as Prakaṭar or to the author of the Prakaṭārtha (prakaṭārtha-kāra), and not to the author's personal name². This work has been referred to by Ānandajñāna, of the thirteenth century (Muṇḍaka, p. 32; Kena, p. 23; Ānandā-śrama editions A.D. 1918 and 1917), and it may well be supposed that the author of the work lived in the latter half of the twelfth

jñātvāpi yasya bahu-kālam acintanena vyākhyātum akṣamatayā paritāpi cetaḥ tasyopatāpa-haraṇāya mayeha bhāṣye prārabhyate vivaraṇam prakaṭārtham etat. MS. No. I, 38. 27, Govt. MSS. Library, Madras.

¹ Advitiyam ātma-tattvam, tatra ca anādy anirvācyam ekam ajūānam anantabheda-pratibhāna-nidānam, tatas cānekārtha-kaluṣitam ātma-tattvam baddham ivānubhūyamānam, vedānta-vākyottha-tattva-sākṣātkāra-parākṛta-sakāryājūānam muktam iva bhāti; paramārthato na bandho na muktir iti sakaryājūāna-nivṛttyupalakṣitam paripūrṇam ātma-tattvam eva parama-puruṣārtha-rūpaṃ sidhyati. Tarka-saṃgraha, p. 141.

² The colophon of the work runs as follows:

century. He certainly preceded Rāmādvava, the author of the Vedānta-kaumudī, who not only refers to the Prakatārtha, but has been largely influenced in many of his conceptions by the argument of this work1. The author of the latter holds that the indefinable māyā in association with pure consciousness (cinmātra-sambandhinī) is the mother of all existence (bhūta-prakṛti). Through the reflection of pure consciousness in $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ is produced Iśvara (God), and by a transformation of Him there arises the creator Brahmā, and it is by the reflection of the pure consciousness in the infinite parts of this Brahmā that there arise the infinite number of individual souls through the veiling and creating functions of the $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$. $M\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ or $aj\tilde{n}\bar{a}na$ is not negation, but a positive material cause, just as the earth is of the jug (ajñānam nābhāva upādānatvān mṛdvat). But, being of the nature of veiling (āvaranatvāt) and being destructible through right knowledge (prakāśa-heyatvāt), it cannot be known as it is: still it may well be regarded as the positive cause of all illusions². The wellknown Vedantic term svaprakāśa is defined in the Prakaţārtha as illumination without the cognition of its own idea (sva-samvinnairapeksena sphuranam). The self is to be regarded as selfrevealing; for without such a supposition the revelation of the self would be inexplicable³. The author of the Prakaţārtha then criticizes the Kumārila view of cognition as being a subjective act, inferable from the fact of a particular awareness, as also the Nyāyā-Vaiśesika and Prabhākara views of knowledge as an illumination of the object inhering in the subject (ātma-samavāyī visaya-prakāśo jñānam), and the Bhāskara view of knowledge as merely a particular kind of activity of the self; and he ultimately holds the view that the mind or manas is a substance with a preponderance of sattva, which has an illuminating nature, and that it is this manas which, being helped by the moral destiny (adrstādi-sahakrtam), arrives at the place where the objects stand like a long ray of light and comes in contact with it, and then as a result thereof pure consciousness is reflected upon the object, and this leads to its cognition. Perceptual cognition, thus defined, would be a mental transformation which can excite the

¹ Vedānta-kaumudī, MS. transcript copy, p. 99.

² āvaraņatvāt prakāša-heyatvād vā tamovat-svarūpeņa pramāņa-yogyatve 'py abhāva-vyāvṛtti-bhrama-kāraṇatvādi-dharma-viśiṣṭasya prāmāṇikatvam na viru-dhyate. MS. p. 12.

³ ātmā sva-prakāśas tato 'nyathā'nupapadyamānatve sati prakāśamānatvān na ya evam na sa evam yathā kumbhah. Prakaţārtha MS.

revelation of an object (manah-parināmah samvid-vyañjako jñānam)¹. In the case of inference, however, the transformation of manas takes place without any actual touch with the objects; and there is therefore no direct excitation revealing the object; for the manas there, being in direct touch with the reason or the linga, is prevented from being in contact with the object that is inferred. There is here not an operation by which the knowledge of the object can be directly revealed, but only such a transformation of the manas that a rise of the idea about the object may not be obstructed². The author of the Prakaṭārtha accepted the distinction between $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ and $aj\bar{n}ana$ as conditioning $\bar{I}svara$ and $j\bar{v}va$.

Vimuktātman (A.D 1200).

Vimuktātman, a disciple of Avyayātman Bhagavat Pūjyapāda, wrote his Ista-siddhi probably not later than the early years of the thirteenth century. He is quoted and referred to by Madhusūdana in his Advaita-siddhi and by Rāmādvaya in his Vedānta-kaumudī of the fourteenth century. It was commented upon by Jñanottama, the teacher of Citsukha, and this commentary is called Istasiddhi-vyākhyā or Ista-siddhi-vivarana. For reasons stated elsewhere Iñanottama could not have flourished later than the latter half of the thirteenth century. Vimuktātman wrote also another work, called Pramana-vrtti-nirnaya, to which he refers in his Ista-siddhi (MS. p. 72). The work has not yet been published, and the manuscript from the Advar Library, which is a transcript copy of a manuscript of the Nāduvil Matham, Cochin State, and which has been available to the present writer, is very fragmentary in many parts; so much so, that it is often extremely difficult to follow properly the meaning of the discussions. The work is divided into eight chapters, and is devoted in a very large part to discussions relating to the analysis of illusions in the Vedanta school and in the other schools of philosophy. This work is to be regarded as one of the four traditional Siddhis, such as the Brahma-siddhi by Mandana, the Naiskarmya-siddhi by Sureśvara,

MS. p. 54.

upalabdha-sambandhārthā kāreṇa parinatam mano 'nāvabhāsa-vyāvṛtti-mātraphalam, na tu samvid-vyañjakam lingādi-samvid-vyavadhāna-pratibandhāt. MS. p. 54.

It is easy to see how Dharmarājādhvarīndra elaborated his Vedāntic theory of perception and inference with these and other data worked out by his predecessors.

the *Iṣṭa-siddhi* by Vimuktātman and the *Advaita-siddhi* by Madhusūdana. Hitherto only the *Naiṣkarmya-siddhi* and the *Advaita-siddhi* have been published. The *Brahma-siddhi* is expected to be published soon in Madras; but as yet the present writer is not aware of any venture regarding this important work.

The work begins with the interpretation of a salutation made by the author, in which he offers his adoration to that birthless, incognizable, infinite intuitive consciousness of the nature of selfjoy which is the canvas on which the illusory world-appearance has been painted. Thus he starts the discussion regarding the nature of the ultimate reality as pure intuitive consciousness (anubhūti). Nothing can be beginningless and eternal, except pure consciousness. The atoms are often regarded as beginningless; hut, since they have colours and other sense-properties, they are like other objects of nature, and they have parts also, as without them no combination of atoms would be possible. Only that can be indivisible which is partless and beginningless, and it is only the intuitive consciousness that can be said to be so. The difference between consciousness and other objects is this, that, while the latter can be described as the "this" or the object, the former is clearly not such. But, though this difference is generally accepted, dialectical reasoning shows that the two are not intrinsically different. There cannot logically be any difference between the perceiving principle (drk) and the perceived (drśva); for the former is unperceived (adrśvatvāt). No difference can be realized between a perceived and an unperceived entity; for all difference relates two cognized entities. But it may be argued that, though the perceiver may not be cognized, yet he is self-luminous, and therefore the notion of difference ought to be manifested. A reply to this objection involves a consideration regarding the nature of difference. If difference were of the nature of the entities that differed, then difference should not be dependent on a reference to another (na svarūpa-drstih prati-yogy-apeksā). The difference has thus to be regarded as a characteristic (dharma) different from the nature of the differing entities and cognized by a distinct knowing process like colours, tastes, etc. 1 But this view also is not correct, since it is difficult to admit "difference" as an entity different from the

¹ tasmāt kathañcit bhinno jñānāntara-gamyo rūpa-rasādivad bhedo 'bhyupeyaḥ. Adyar Iṣṭa-siddhi MS. p. 5.

differing entities; for such a difference would involve another difference by which it is known, and that another and that another, we should have an infinite regress; and the same objection applies to the admission of mutual negation as a separate entity. This being so, it is difficult to imagine how "difference" or mutual negation between the perceiver and the perceived can be cognized; for it is impossible that there should be any other cognition by which this "difference," or mutual negation which has the perceiver as one of its alternating poles, could be perceived. Moreover, the selfluminous perceiving power is always present, and it is impossible that it could be negated—a condition without which neither difference nor negation could be possible. Moreover, if it is admitted that such a difference is cognized, then that very fact proves that it is not a characteristic of the perceiving self. If this difference is admitted to be self-luminous, then it would not await a reference to another, which is a condition for all notions of difference or mutual negation. Therefore, "difference" or "mutual negation" cannot be established, either as the essence of the perceiving self or as its characteristics; and as there is no other way in which this difference can be conceived, it is clear that there is no difference between the perceiving self and its characteristics.

Again, negation is defined as the non-perception of a perceivable thing; but the perceiving self is of the very nature of perception, and its non-perception would be impossible. Admitting for the sake of argument that the perceiving self could be negated, how could there be any knowledge of such a negation? for without the self there could be no perception, as it is itself of the nature of perception. So the notion of the negation of the perceiving self cannot be anything but illusion. Thus the perceiving self and the perceived (drk and drśya) cannot be differentiated from each other. The difficulty, however, arises that, if the perceiving self and the perceived were identical, then the infinite limitations and differences that are characteristic of the perceived would also be characteristic of the perceiver; and there are the further objections to such a supposition that it is against all ordinary usage and experience. It may be argued that the two are identical, since they are both

evam ca sati na drg-drśyayor bhedo drastum śakyah nāpy anyonyābhāvah na hi drśah svayam drsteh prati-yogy-apekṣa-drṣṭy-antara-drśyam rūpāntaram svam samasti svayam drṣṭitva-hānāt. MS. p. 6.

experienced simultaneously (sahopalambha-niyamāt); but the reply is that, as two are experienced and not one, they cannot be regarded as identical, for in the very experience of the two their difference is also manifested¹. In spite of such obvious contradiction of experience one could not venture to affirm the identity of the perceiver and the perceived2. The maxim of identity of the perceiver and the perceived because of simultaneous perception cannot be regarded as true; for, firstly, the perceiver is never a cognized object, and the perceived is never self-luminous, secondly, the perceiver is always self-revealing, but not so the perceived, and, thirdly, though the "perceived" cannot be revealed without the perceiver, the latter is always self-revealed. There is thus plainly no simultaneity of the perceiver and the perceived. When a perceived object A is illuminated in consciousness, the other objects B, C, D, etc. are not illuminated, and, when the perceived object B is illuminated, A is not illuminated. but the consciousness (samvid) is always self-illuminated; so no consciousness can be regarded as being always qualified by a particular objective content; for, had it been so, that particular content would always have stood self-revealed3. Moreover, each particular cognition (e.g. awareness of blue) is momentary and self-revealed and, as such, cannot be the object of any other cognition; and, if any particular awareness could be the object of any other awareness, then it would not be awareness, but a mere object, like a jug or a book. There is thus an intrinsic difference between awareness and the object, and so the perceiver, as pure awareness, cannot be identified with its object4. It has already been pointed out that the perceiver and the perceived cannot be regarded as different, and now it is shown that they cannot be regarded as identical. There is another alternative, viz. that they may be both identical and different (which is the bhedābheda view of Bhāskara and Rāmānuja and others), and Vimuktātman tries to show that this alternative is also impossible and that the perceiver and the

¹ abhede saha-bhānāyogād dvayor hi saha-bhānam na ekasyaiva na hi dršaiva drk saha bhātīti bhavatāpy ucyate, nāpi dršyenaiva dršyam saha bhātīti kintu drg-dršyayoḥ saha bhānam ucyate atas tayor bhedo bhāty eva. MS. p. 25.

² tasmāt sarva-vyavahāra-lopa-prasangān na bhedo dṛg-dṛṣyaoḥ. Ibid.

³ kim vidyud-viśesitatā nāma samvidah svarūpam uta samvedyasya, yadi samvidah sāpi bhāty eva samvid-bhānāt samvedya-svarūpam cet tadā bhānān na samvido bhānam. Ibid, p. 27.

⁴ asamvedyaiva samvit samvedyam cāsamvid eva, atah samvedyasya ghaṭa-sukhādeh samvidas cābheda-gandho pi na pramāṇavān. Ibid. p. 31.

perceived cannot be regarded as being both identical and different. The upholder of the bhedābheda view is supposed to say that, though the perceiver and the perceived cannot, as such, be regarded as identical, yet they may be regarded as one in their nature as Brahman. But in reply to this it may be urged that, if they are both one and identical with Brahman, there would be no difference between them. If it is argued that their identity with Brahman is in another form, then also the question arises whether their forms as perceiver and perceived are identical with the form in which they are identical with Brahman; and no one is aware of any form of the perceiver and the perceived other than their forms as such, and therefore it cannot be admitted that in spite of their difference they have any form in which they are one and identical. If again it is objected that it is quite possible that an identical entity should have two different forms, then also the question arises whether these forms are one, different or both identical with that entity and different. In the first alternative the forms would not be different; in the second they would not be one with the entity. Moreover, if any part of the entity be identical with any particular form, it cannot also be identical with other forms; for then these different forms would not be different from one another; and, if again the forms are identical with the entity, how can one distinguish the entity $(r\bar{u}pin)$ from the forms $(r\bar{u}pa)$? In the third alternative the question arises whether the entity is identical with one particular form of it and different from other forms, or whether it is both identical with the same form and different. In the first case each form would have two forms, and these again other two forms in which they are identical and different, and these other two forms, and so on, and we should have infinite regress: and the same kind of infinite regress would appear in the relation between the entity and its forms. For these and similar reasons it is impossible to hold that the perceiver and the perceived are different as such and vet one and identical as Brahman.

If the manifold world is neither different nor identical nor both different and identical with the perceiver, what then is its status? The perceiver is indeed the same as pure perception and pure bliss, and, if it is neither identical nor different nor both identical with the manifold world and different, the manifold world must necessarily be unsubstantial (avastu); for, if it had any substantiality, it might have been related in one of the above three

ways of relation. But, if it is unsubstantial, then none of the above objections would apply. But it may again be objected that, if the world were unsubstantial, then both our common experience and our practical dealing with this world would be contradicted. To this Vimuktatman's reply is that, since the world is admitted to be made up of māyā (māyā-nirmitatvābhyupagamāt), and since the effects of māvā canot be regarded either as substantial or as unsubstantial, none of the above objections would be applicable to this view. Since the manifold world is not a substance, its admission cannot disturb the monistic view, and, since it is not unsubstantial, the facts of experience may also be justified1. As an instance of such an appearance which is neither vastu (substance) nor avastu, one may refer to dream-appearances, which are not regarded as unreal because of their nature as neither substance nor notsubstance, but because they are contradicted in experience. Just as a canvas is neither the material of the picture painted on it nor a constituent of the picture, and just as the picture cannot be regarded as being a modification of the canvas in the same way as a jug is a modification of clay, or as a change of quality, like the redness in ripe mangoes, and just as the canvas was there before the painting, and just as it would remain even if the painting were washed away, whereas the painting would not be there without the canvas, so the pure consciousness also is related to this worldappearance, which is but a painting of $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ on it².

 $M\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ is unspeakable and indescribable (anirvacanīyā), not as different from both being and non-being, but as involving the characters of both being and non-being. It is thus regarded as a power of ignorance (avidyā-śakti) which is the material cause of all objects of perception otherwise called matter (sarva-jadopādāna-bhūtā). But, just as fire springing from bamboos may burn up the same bamboos even to their very roots, so Brahma-knowledge, which is itself a product of ignorance and its processes, destroys the self-same ignorance from which it was produced and its processes and at last itself subsides and leaves the Brahman to

¹ prapañcasya vastutvābhāvān nādvaita-hānih avastutvābhāvāc ca pratyakṣādy-aprāmānyam apy-ukta-doṣābhāvāt. MS. p. 64.

² yatha citrasya bhittih sāksāt nopādānam nāpi sahajam citram tasyāh nāpyavasthāntaram mṛda iva ghaṭādih nāpi gunāntarāgamah āmrasyeva raktatādih na cāsyāh janmādis citrāt prāg ūrdham ca bhāvāt, yady api bhittim vinā citram na bhāti tathāpi na sā citram vinā bhāti ity evam-ādy-anubhūtir bhitti-jagac-citrayor yojyam. Ibid, p. 73.

shine in its own radiance1. The functions of the pramānas, which are all mere processes of ignorance, ajñāna or avidyā, consist only in the removal of obstructions veiling the illumination of the selfluminous consciousness, just as the digging of a well means the removal of all earth that was obstructing the omnipresent ākāśa or space; the pramānas have thus no function of manifesting the self-luminous consciousness, and only remove the veiling ajñāna2. So Brahma-knowledge also means the removal of the last remnants of ajñāna, after which Brahma-knowledge as conceptual knowledge, being the last vestige of ajñāna, also ceases of itself. This cessation of ajñāna is as unspeakable as ajñāna itself. Unlike Mandana, Vimuktātman does not consider avidyā to be merely subjective, but regards it as being both subjective and objective, involving within it not only all phenomena, but all their mutual relations and also the relation with which it is supposed to be related to the pure consciousness, which is in reality beyond all relations. Vimuktātman devotes a large part of his work to the criticism of the different kinds of theories of illusion (khyāti), and more particularly to the criticism of anyathākhyāti. These contain many new and important points; but, as the essential features of these theories of illusion and their criticisms have already been dealt with in the tenth chapter of the first volume, it is not desirable to enter into these fresh criticisms of Vimuktatman, which do not involve any new point of view in Vedantic interpretation. He also deals with some of the principal Vedantic topics of discussion, such as the nature of bondage, emancipation, and the reconciliation of the pluralistic experience of practical life with the monistic doctrine of the Vedanta; but, as there are not here any strikingly new modes of approach, these may be left out in the present work.

Rāmādvaya (A.D. 1300).

Rāmādvaya, a pupil of Advayāśrama, wrote an important work, called *Vedānta-kaumudī*, in four chapters, in which he discussed in a polemical way many Vedāntic problems while dealing with the subject matter of Śańkara's commentary on the first four topics of the *Brahma-sūtra*. The work has not yet been published; but at least one manuscript of it is available in the Government

Oriental Manuscript Library, Madras: this through the kindness of the Curator the present author had the opportunity of utilizing. Rāmādvava also wrote a commentary on his Vedānta-kaumudī. called Vedānta-kaumudī-vyākhyāna, a manuscript of the first chapter of which has been available to the present writer in the library of the Calcutta Asiatic Society. These are probably the only manuscripts of this work known till now. The date of the writing of the copy of the Vedānta-kaumudī-vyākhyāna is given by the copyist Sesanrsimha as A.D. 1512. It is therefore certain that the work cannot have been written later than the fifteenth century. Rāmādvava in the course of his discussions refers to many noted authors on Nyāya and Vedānta, none of whom are later than the thirteenth century. Vimuktātman, author of the Ista-siddhi, has been placed by the present author in the early half of the thirteenth century; but Rāmādvava always refers to him approvingly, as if his views were largely guided by his; he also in his Vedānta-kaumudī-vyākhyāna (MS. p. 14) refers to Janārdana, which is Ānandajñāna's name as a householder; but Janārdana lived in the middle of the thirteenth century; it seems therefore probable that Rāmādvaya lived in the first half of the fourteenth century.

In the enunciation of the Vedāntic theory of perception and inference Rāmādvaya seems to have been very much under the influence of the views of the author of the *Prakaṭārtha*; for, though he does not refer to his name in this connection, he repeats his very phrases with a slight elaboration. Just as the cloudless sky covers itself with clouds and assumes various forms, so the pure consciousness veils itself with the indefinable *avidyā* and appears in diverse limited forms. It is this consciousness that forms the real ground of all that is known. Just as a spark of fire cannot manifest itself as fire if there are no fuels as its condition, so the pure consciousness, which is the underlying reality of all objects, cannot illuminate them if there are not the proper conditions to help it in its work. Such a conditioning factor is found in

¹ See Vedānta-kaumudī, MS. transcript copy, pp. 36 and 47.

² Rāmādvaya refers here to the daharādhikaraņa of Sankara's commentary on the Brahma-sūtra, presumably to 1. 3, 19, where Sankara refers to the supposed distinction between the individual soul (jīva) and Brahman. Here Sankara says that his commentary is directed towards the regulation of those views, both outside and inside the circle of Upaniṣadic interpreters, which regard individual souls as real (apare tu vādinaḥ pāramārthikam eva jaivam rūpam iti manyante asmadīyāś ca kecit). Such a view militates against the correct understanding of

manas, which is of the stuff of pure sattva: on the occasion of sense-object contact this manas, being propelled by the moral destiny (adrstādi-ksubdham), transforms itself into the form of a long ray reaching to the object itself1. The pure consciousness, as conditioned or limited by the antahkarana (antahkaranāvacchinnam caitanyam), does by such a process remove its veil of avidyā, (though in its limited condition as individual soul this avidyā formed its own body), and the object also being in contact with it is manifested by the same process. The two manifestations of the subject and the object, having taken place in the same process (vrtti) there, are joined together in the same cognition as "this object is known by me" (vrtter ubhayasamlagnatvāc ca tad-abhivyakta-caitanyasvāpi tathātvena mayedam viditam iti samslesa-pratyayah); and, as its other effect, the consciousness limited by the antahkarana, transformed into the form of the process (vrtti) of right knowledge (pramā), appears as the cognizer (vrtti-lakṣaṇa-pramāśrayāntahkaranāvacchinnas tat-pramātetyapi vyapadišvate)2. The object also attains a new status in being manifested and is thus known as the object (karma-kārakābhivyaktam ca tat prakāśātmanā phalavyapadeśa-bhāk). In reality it is the underlying consciousness that manifests the vrtti transformation of the antahkarana; but, as it is illusorily identified with the antahkarana (antahkarana-caitanyayor aikyādhyāsāt), like fire and iron in the heated iron, it is also identified with the vrtti transformation of the antahkarana, and, as the vrtti becomes superimposed on the object, by manifesting the vrtti it also manifests the object, and thus apart from the subjective illumination as awareness, there is also the objective fact of an illumination of the object (evam vṛtti-vyañjakam api taptāvah-pinda-nyāyena tad-ekatām ivāptam vrttivad-visaya-prākatyātmanā sampadyate)3. The moments in the cognitive process in perception according to Rāmādvaya may thus be described. The

the self as the only reality which through avidyā manifests itself as individual souls and with its removal reveals itself in its real nature in right knowledge as parameśvara, just as an illusory snake shows itself as a piece of rope. Parameśvara, the eternal unchangeable and upholding consciousness, is the one reality which, like a magician, appears as many through avidyā. There is no consciousness other than this (eka eva parameśvaraḥ kūṭastha-nityo vijñāna-dhātur avidyayā-māyayā māyāvivad anekadhā vibhāvyate nānyo vijñāna-dhātur asti).

¹ This passage seems to be borrowed directly from the *Prakaṭārtha*, as may be inferred from their verbal agreement. But it may well be that both the *Vedānta-kaumudī* and the *Prakaṭārtha* borrowed it from the *Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa*.

² Vedānta-kaumudī, MS. transcript copy, p. 36.

^{*} Ibid. p. 37.

sense-object contact offers an occasion for the moral destiny (adrsta) to stir up the antahkarana, and, as a result thereof, the antahkarana or mind is transformed into a particular state called vrtti. The pure consciousness underlying the antahkarana was lying dormant and veiled, as it were, and, as soon as there is a transformation of the antahkarana into a vrtti, the consciousness brightens up and overcomes for the moment the veil that was covering it. The vrtti thus no longer veils the underlying consciousness, but serves as a transparent transmitter of the light of consciousness to the object on which the vrtti is superimposed, and, as a result thereof, the object has an objective manifestation, separate from the brightening up of consciousness at the first moment of the vrtti transformation. Now, since the vrtti joins up the subjective brightening up of consciousness and the objective illumination of the object, these two are joined up (samślesa-pratyaya) and this results in the cognition "this object is known by me"; and out of this cognition it is possible to differentiate the knower as the underlying consciousness, as limited by the antahkarana as transformed into the vrtti, and the known as that which has been objectively illuminated. In the Vedānta-paribhāṣā we hear of three consciousnesses (caitanya), the pramātr-caitanya (the consciousness conditioned by the antahkarana), the pramāna-caitanya (the same consciousness conditioned by the vrtti of the antahkarana), and the visaya-caitanya (the same consciousness conditioned by the object). According to this perception (pratyaksa) can be characterized either from the point of view of cognition (iñānagata-pratyakṣatva) or from the point of view of the object, both being regarded as two distinct phases, cognitional and objective, of the same perceptual revelation. From the point of view of cognition it is defined as the non-distinction (abheda) of the pramāṇa-caitanya from the viṣaya-caitanya through spatial superimposition of the vrtti on the object. Perception from the point of view of the object (visaya-gata-pratyaksatva) is defined as the non-distinction of the object from the pramātr-caitanya or the perceiver, which is consciousness conditioned by the antahkarana. This latter view, viz. the definition of perception from the point of view of the object as the non-distinction of the object from the consciousness as limited by antahkarana (ghațāder antahkaranāvacchinna-caitanyābhedah), is open to the serious objection that really the non-distinction of the object (or the consciousness conditioned

by the antahkarana—antahkaranāvacchinna-caitanya) but with the cognition (pramāna-caitanya or vrtti-caitanya); for the cognition or the vrtti intervenes between the object and the perceiver, and the object is in immediate contact with the vrtti and not with the perceiver (antaḥkaraṇāvacchinna-caitanya). That this is so is also admitted by Dharmaraja Adhvarindra, son of Ramakṛṣṇa Adhvarin, in his Sikhā-mani commentary on the Vedānta-paribhāṣā1. But he tries to justify Dharmaraja Adhvarindra by pointing out that he was forced to define visaya-gata-pratyaksatva as non-distinction of the object from the subject, since this view was taken in Prakāśātman's Vivarana and also in other traditional works on Vedānta². This however seems to be an error. For the passage of the Vivarana to which reference is made here expounds an entirely different view3. It says there that the perceptibility of the object consists in its directly and immediately qualifying the cognitional state or sense-knowledge (samvid)4. That other traditional Vedantic interpreters entirely disagreed with the view of Dharmaraja Adhvarindra is also evident from the account of the analysis of the perceptual process given by Rāmādvaya. Rāmādvaya says, as has just been pointed out, that it is the illuminated cognitive process, or the vrtti, that has the subject and the object at its two poles and thus unites the subject and the object in the complex subjectpredicate form "this is known by me." The object is thus illuminated by the vrtti, and it is not directly with the subject, but with the ertti, that the object is united. Dharmaraja Adhvarindra himself raises an objection against his interpretation, that it might be urged, if in perception there was non-distinction of the object from the subject, then in perceiving an object, e.g. a book, one should feel "I am the book," and not "I perceive the book"; in reply to such an objection he says that in the perceptual process

¹ yad vā yogyatve sati vişaya-caitanyābhinna-pramāṇa-caitanya-viṣayatvam ghatāder viṣayasya pratyakṣatvam tathāpi viṣayasyāparokṣatvam samvida-bhedāt iti viṣayaspa tatra tatra ca sāṃpradāyikaiḥ pramātrabhedasyaiva viṣaya-pratyakṣa-lakṣaṇatvenābhidhānād evam uktam. Sikhā-mani on Vedānta-pari-bhāṣā, p. 75, Bombay, 1911, Venkatesvara Press.

² Ibid.

³ Tasmād avyavadhānena samvid-upādhitayāparokṣatā viṣayasya. Pañca-pādikā-vivaraņa, p. 50, Benares, 1892.

⁴ It should be noted here that samvid means cognitional idea or sense-knowledge and not the perceiver (antahkaranāvacchinna-caitanya), as the author of the Śikhāmani says. Thus Akhandānanda in his Tattva-dīpana commentary explains the word samvid as samvic-chabdena indriyārtha-samprayoga-ja-jñānasya vivakṣitatvāt. Tattva-dīpana, p. 194, Benares, 1902.

there is only a non-distinction between the consciousness underlying the object and the consciousness underlying the perceiver, and this non-distinction, being non-relational, does not imply the assertion of a relation of identity resulting in the notion "I am the book". This is undoubtedly so, but it is hardly an answer to the objection that has been raised. It is true that the object and the subject are both but impositions of avidvā on one distinctionless pure consciousness; but that fact can hardly be taken as an explanation of the various modes of experiences of the complex world of subjectobject experience. The difference of the Vedantic view of perception, as expounded in the Pañca-pādikā-vivarana, from the Buddhist idealism (vijnāna-vāda) consists in this, that, while the Buddhists did not accord any independent status to objects as outside the ideas or percepts, the Vedanta accepted the independent manifestation of the objects in perception in the external world². There is thus a distinction between visional percept and the object; but there is also a direct and immediate connection between them, and it is this immediate relationship of the object to its awareness that constitutes the perceptivity of the object (avyavadhānena samvid-upādhitā aparokṣatā viṣayasya—Vivaraṇa, p. 50). The object is revealed in perception only as an object of awareness, whereas the awareness and the subject reveal themselves directly and immediately and not as an object of any further intuition or inference (prameyam karmatvena aparoksam pramātr-pramitī punar aparokse eva kevalam na karmatayā)3.

The views of the Vedānta-kaumudī, however, cannot be regarded as original in any sense, since they are only a reflection of the exposition of the subject in Padmapāda's Pañca-pādikā and Prakā-śātman's Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa. The development of the whole theory of perception may be attributed to the Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa, since all the essential points of the perceptual theory can be traced in that work. Thus it holds that all the world objects are veiled by avidyā; that, as the antahkaraṇa is transformed into states by superimposition on objects, it is illuminated by the underlying consciousness; and that through the spatial contact with the objects the veil of the objects is removed by these antahkaraṇa transformations; there are thus two illuminations, namely

1 Vedānta-paribhāṣā, pp. 76, 77.

³ Pañca-pādikā, p. 17, Benares, 1891.

² na ca vijňänäbhedād eva āparokṣyam avabhāsate bahiṣṭvasyāpi rajatāder āparokṣyāt. Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa, p. 50.

of the antahkarana transformations (called vrtti in the Vedäntakaumudi, and Vedānta-paribhāsā and pure consciousness); to the question that, if there were unity of the consciousness underlying the object and the consciousness underlying the antahkarana (i.e. the subject) and the consciousness underlying the antahkarana modification (or vrtti), there would be nothing to explain the duality in perception (e.g. "I perceive the book," and not "I am the book," and it is only the latter form that could be expected from the unity of the three consciousnesses), Prakaśātman's reply is that, since the unity of the object-consciousness with the antahkarana-consciousness (subject) is effected through the modification or the vrtti of the antahkarana and, since the antahkarana is one with its vrtti, the vrtti operation is rightly attributed to the antahkarana as its agent, and this is illuminated by the consciousness underlying the antahkarana resulting in the perception of the knower as distinguished from the illumination of object to which the operation of the vrtti is directed in spatial superimposition—the difference between the subject and the object in perception is thus due to the difference in the mode or the condition of the vrtti with reference to the subject and the object¹. This is exactly the interpretation of the Vedānta-kaumudī, and it has been pointed out above that the explanations of the Vedānta-paribhāsā are largely different therefrom and are in all probability inexact. As this unity is effected between individual subjects (consciousness limited by specific antahkaranas) and individual objects (consciousness limited by specific avidyā materials constituting the objects) through the vrtti, it can result only in revelation of a particular subject and a particular object and not in the revelation of all subjects and all objects2. This has been elaborated into the view that there is an infinite number of ajñāna-veils, and that each cognitive illumination removes only one ajñāna corresponding to the illumination of one object3. But this also is not an original contribution of Rāmādvaya, since it was also propounded by his predecessor Anandajñāna in his Tarka-

¹ See *Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa*, p. 70, and *Tattva-dīpana*, pp. 256-259, Benares, 1902.

² etat pramātṛ-caitanyābhinnatayaiva abhivyaktam tad viṣaya-caitanyam na pramātṛ-antara-caitanyābhedena abhivyaktam ato na sarveṣām avabhāsyatvam. Pañca-pādikā-vivarana, p. 71.

³ yāvanti jñānāni tāvanti sva-tantrāņi para-tantrāņi vā ajñānāni tato na doşah. Vedānta-kaumudī, MS. copy, p. 43.

samoraha and by others¹. The upshot of the whole discussion is that on the occasion of a cognitive operation of the mind both the mind and the cognitive operation become enlivened and illuminated by the indwelling pure consciousness as subject-consciousness and awareness, and through contact with this cognitive operation the object also becomes revealed not as a mere content of awareness, but as an objective fact shining forth in the external world. Cognition of objects is thus not a mere quality of the self as knower, as the Nyāya holds, nor is there any immediate contact of the self with the object (the contact being only through the cognitive operation); the cognition is also not to be regarded as unperceived movement, modification or transformation of the self which may be inferred from the fact of the enlightenment of the object (jñātatā), as Kumārila held, nor is the illumination of the object to be regarded mere form of awareness without there being a corresponding as a objective entity (vişayābhivyaktir nāma vijñāne tad-ākārollekhamātram na bahir-anga-rūpasya vijnānābhivyāptih), as is held by the Buddhist subjective idealists. The cognitive operation before its contact with the object is a mere undifferentiated awareness, having only an objective reference and devoid of all specifications of sense characters, which later on assumes the sense characteristics in accordance with the object with which it comes in contact. It must be noted, however, that the cognitive operation is not an abstract idea, but an active transformation of a real sattva stuff, the mind (antahkarana)2. Since in the continuous perception of the same object we have only a rapid succession of cognitive acts, each

¹ The theory is that there is an infinite number of the ajñāna-veils; as soon as there is the vrtti-object contact, the veil is removed and the object is illuminated; the next moment there is again an ajūāna-veil covering the object, and again there is the vrtti-object contact, and again illumination of the object, and thus there is very quick succession of veils and their removals, as the perception of the object continues in time. On account of the rapidity of this succession it is not possible to notice it (vrtti-vijnanasya savayavatvac ca hrasa-dasayam dīpa-jvālāyā iva tamo 'ntaram mohāntaram āvaritum vişayam pravartate tato ำง kramamanam kṣaṇāntare sāmagry-anusāreņa vijnānāntaram viṣay īvaraṇabhangenaiva sva-kāryam karoti, tathā sarvāny api atisaighryāt tu jñāna-bhedavad āvaranāntaram na lakşyate. Vedānta-kaumudī, MS. copy, p. 46). This view of the Vedānta-kaumudī is different from the view of the Vedānta-paribhāsā, which holds that in the case of continuous perception of the same object there are not different successive awarenesses, but there is one unchanged continuous vrtti and not different vrttis removing different ajñānas (kiñ ca siddhānte dhārāvāhika-buddhi-sthale na jñānā-bhedah kintu yāvād ghaṭa-sphuraṇam tāvad ghaṭākārāntaḥkaraṇa-vrttir ekaiva na tu nānā vṛtteh sva-virodhi-vṛtty-utpattiparyantam sthāyitvābhyupagamāt. Vedānta-paribhāṣā, pp. 26, 27, Bombay, 1911). ² ataḥ sāvayava-sattvātmakam antahkaraṇam eva anudbhūta-rūpa-sparsam adrśyam asprśyam ca vişayākārena parinamate. Vedānta-kaumudi, MS. copy, p. 42.

dispelling an intellectual darkness enfolding the object before its illumination, there is no separate perception of time as an entity standing apart from the objects; perception of time is but the perception of the succession of cognitive acts, and what is regarded as the present time is that in which the successive time-moments have been fused together into one concrete duration: it is this concrete duration, which is in reality but a fusion of momentary cognitive acts and awarenesses, that is designated as the present time. According to Rāmādvaya the definition of perception would not therefore include the present time as a separate element over and above the object as a separate datum of perception; for his view denies time as an objective entity and regards it only as a mode of cognitive process.

Rāmādvaya's definition of right knowledge is also different from that of Dharmarāja Adhvarīndra. Rāmādvava defines right knowledge (pramā) as experience which does not wrongly represent its object (yathārthānubhavah pramā), and he defines the instrument of right knowledge as that which leads to it2. Verbally this definition is entirely different from that of Dharmarāja Adhvarīndra, with whom the two conditions of pramā or right knowledge are that it should not be acquaintance with what was already known (anadhigata) and that it should be uncontradicted3. The latter condition, however, seems to point only to a verbal difference from Rāmādvaya's definition; but it may really mean very much more than a verbal difference. For, though want of contradiction (Dharmarāja Adhvarīndra's condition) and want of wrong representation (Rāmādvaya's condition) may mean the same thing, yet in the former case the definition of truth becomes more subjective than in the latter case; for want of wrong representation refers to an objective correspondence and objective certainty. An awareness may wrongly represent an object, but yet may not be found contradicted in the personal history of one or even many observers. Such a definition of truth becomes very relative, since its limits are not fixed by correspondence with its object. Considering the fact

¹ na kālah pratyakṣa-gocarah...stambhādir eva prāg-abhāva-nivrtti-pradhvaṃ-sānutpatti-rūpo vartamānah tad-avacchinah kālo 'pi vartamānah sa ca tathāvidho 'neka-jñāna-sādhāraṇa eva, na caitāvatā jñāna-yaugapadyāpattih sūksma-kālāpekṣayā kraṇa-sambhavāt, na ca sūkṣma-kālopādhīnām apratītih kārya-krameṇaiva unnīyamānatvāt. Vedānta-kaumudī, MS. copy, pp. 20–22.

² Ibid. p. 16

³ tatra smṛti-vyāvṛttam pramātvam anadhigatābādhitārtha-vişaya-jñānatvam. Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 20.

that the Vedānta speaks of a real spatial superimposition of the modification of the antaḥkaraṇa (which is its cognitive operation) on the object, a Vedānta definition of truth might well be expected to be realistic and not subjectivistic or relativistic. The idealism of the Vedānta rests content in the view that, however realistic these cognitive relations to objects may be, they are impositions and appearances which have as their ultimate ground one changeless consciousness. The definition of pramā by Ramādvaya as an awareness which does not give a wrong representation (yathārthānubhava) of objects could not be found faulty because of the fact that according to the Vedānta all dual experience of the world was false; for, though it was ultimately so, for all practical purposes it had a real existence, and Rāmādvaya refers to the Īṣṭa-siddhi to justify his view on this point.

As to the other point, viz. that a pramā must always be that which acquaints us with what is unknown before (anadhigata), Rāmādvaya definitely repudiates such a suggestion¹. He says that it often happens that we perceive things that we perceived before. and this makes recognition possible, and, if we deny that these are cases of right knowledge, we shall have to exclude much that is universally acknowledged as right knowledge. Also it cannot be conceived how in the case of the continuous perception of an object there can be new qualities accruing to the object, so as to justify the validity of the consciousness as right knowledge at every moment; nor can it be said that the sense-organs after producing the right knowledge of an object (which lasts for some time and is not momentary) may cease to operate until a new awareness is produced. There is therefore no justification for introducing anadhigatatva as a condition of perception. Turning to the difference between perception and inference, Rāmādvaya says that in inference the inferred object does not form a datum and there is no direct and immediate contact of the antahkarana with the inferred object (e.g. fire). In inference the antahkarana is in touch only with the reason or the linga (e.g. smoke), and through this there arises (lingādibala-labdhākārollekha-mātrena) an idea in the mind (e.g. regarding the existence of fire) which is called inference².

¹ ajñāta-jñāpanam pramānam iti tad asāram. Vedānta-kaumudī, MS. copy, p. 18.

² Ibid. p. 47. One of the earliest explanations of the Vedantic view of inference occurs in the *Prakaṭārtha-vivaraṇa*, to which the *Vedanta-kaumudī* is in all probability indebted.

On the subject of the self-validity of knowledge (svatahprāmānya) Rāmādvaya does not, like Dharmarājādhvarīndra, include the absence of defects (dosābhāva) in the definition of svataḥ-prāmāṇya. It may well be remembered that Dharmarāja Adhvarindra defines validity (prāmānya) of knowledge as an awareness that characterizes an object as it is (tadvati tat-prakārakaiñānatvam), while self-validity (svatah-prāmānya) is defined as the acceptance by the underlying sāksi consciousness of this validity in accordance with the exact modes of the awareness (of which the validity is affirmed), and in accordance with the exact objective conditions of the awareness, in absence of any defects1. Rāmādvaya, however, closely follows Kumārila's view of the self-validity of knowledge and defines it as that which, being produced by the actual data of that cognition, does not contain any element which is derived from other sources². Later knowledge of the presence of any defects or distorting elements may invalidate any cognition; but, so long as such defects are not known, each cognition is valid of itself for reasons similar to those held by Kumārila and already discussed3. In this connection Rāmādvaya points out that our cognitions are entirely internal phenomena and are not in touch with objects, and that, though the objects are revealed outside, yet it is through our own internal conditions, merit and demerit, that they may be perceived by us4.

Vidyāraņya (A.D. 1350).

In addition to the Sarva-darśana-saṃgraha Mādhava wrote two works on the Śaṅkara Vedānta system, viz. Vivaraṇa-prameya-saṃgraha and Pañcadaśī; and also Jīvan-mukti-viveka. Of these the former is an independent study of Prakāśātman's Pañca-pādikā-vivaraṇa, in which Mādhava elaborates the latter's arguments in his own way. His other work, Pañcadaśī, is a popular compendium in verse. Both these works attained great celebrity on account of

² vijnāna-sāmagri-janyatve sati yat tad-anya-janyatvam tad-abhāvasyaiva svatastvokty-angikārāt. Vedānta-kaumudī, MS. copy, p. 52.

¹ doşābhāve sati yāvat-svāsraya-grāhaka-sāmagrī-grāhyatvam; svāsrayo vṛtti-jñānam, tad-grāhakam sākṣi-jñānam tenāpi vṛtti-jñāne gṛhyamāne tad-gata-prāmānyam api gṛhyate. Vedānta-paribhāṣā, pp. 336, 337.

jñaptāvapi jñāna-jñāpaka-sāmagrī-mātra-jñāpyatvam svatastvam. Ibid. p. 61.

3 A History of Indian Philosophy, vol. 1, Cambridge, 1922, pp. 372-375.

¹ prākatyena yuktasyāpi tasya na sarvair viditatum sva-prakāšam api prākatyam kasyacid evādrsta-yogāt sphurati na gunatve jnānasya kathancid artha-yogah samastīti. Vedānta-kaumudī, MS. copy, pp. 67, 68.

Vidvāranya in his Pañcadasī repeats the Vivarana view of the Vedanta, that, whether in our awakened state or in our dreams or in our dreamless condition, there is no moment when there is no consciousness; for even in dreamless sleep there must be some consciousness, as is evident from the later remembrance of the experience of the dreamless state. The light of consciousness is thus itself ever present without any change or flickering of any kind. It should therefore be regarded as ultimately real. It is selfluminous and neither rises nor sets². This self is pure bliss, because nothing is so much loved by us as our own selves. If the nature of self had been unobscured, we could not have found any enjoyment in sense-objects. It is only because the self is largely obscured to us that we do not rest content with self-realization and crave for other pleasures from sense-objects. $M\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ is the cause of this obscuration, and it is described as that power by which can be produced the manifold world-appearance. This power (śakti), cannot be regarded either as absolutely real or as unreal. It is, however, associated only with a part of Brahman and not with the whole of it, and it is only in association with a part of Brahman that it transforms itself into the various elements and their modifications. All objects of the world are thus but a complex of Brahman and $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$. The existence or being of all things is the Brahman, and all that appears identified with being is the māyā part. Māvā as the power of Brahman regulates all relation and order of the universe. In association with the intelligence of Brahman this behaves as an intelligent power which is responsible for the orderliness of all qualities of things, their inter-relations and interactions³. He compares the world-appearance to a painting, where the white canvas stands for the pure Brahman, the white paste for the inner controller (antaryāmin), the dark colour for the dispenser of the crude elements (sūtrātman) and the coloration for

¹ Bhāratītīrtha and his teacher Vidyātīrtha also were teachers of Vidyāraṇya. Vidyāraṇya thus seems to have had three teachers, Bhāratī Tīrtha, Vidyā Tīrtha and Sankarānanda.

² nodeti nāstamety ekā samvid eṣā svayam-prabhā. Pañcadaśi, 1. 7, Basumati edition, Calcutta, 1907.

³ śaktir asty aiśvarł kācit sarva-vastu-niyāmikā. 38. ...cic-chāyāveśataḥ śaktiś cetaneva vibhāti sā. 40. Ibid. 111.

the dispenser of the concrete elemental world (virāt), and all the figures that are manifested thereon are the living beings and other objects of the world. It is Brahman that, being reflected through the māyā, assumes the diverse forms and characters. The false appearance of individual selves is due to the false identification of subjectivity—a product of māyā—with the underlying pure consciousness-Brahman. Vidyāranya then goes on to describe the usual topics of the Vedanta, which have already been dealt with. The chief and important feature of Vidyāranya's Pañcadaśī is the continual repetition of the well-established Vedantic principles in a clear, popular and attractive way, which is very helpful to those who wish to initiate their minds into the Vedantic ways of self-realization¹. His Vivarana-prameya-samgraha is a more scholarly work; but, as it is of the nature of an elaboration of the ideas contained in Pañca-pādikā-vivarana, which has generally been followed as the main guide in the account of Vedanta given in this and the preceding chapter, and there being but few ideas which can be considered as an original contribution of Vidyāranya to the development of Vedantic thought, no separate account of its contents need be given here2. The Jivan-mukti-viveka, the substance of which has already been utilized in section 17 of chapter x. volume 1 of the present work, is an ethical treatise, covering more or less the same ground as the Naiskarmya-siddhi of Sureśvara.

Nṛsiṃhāśrama Muni (A.D. 1500).

Nṛsimhāśrama Muni (A.D. 1500) was a pupil of Gīrvāṇendra Sarasvatī and Jagannāthāśrama and teacher of Nārāyaṇāśrama, who wrote a commentary on his Bheda-dhikkāra. He wrote many works, such as Advaita-dīpikā, Advaita-pañca-ratna, Advaita-bodha-dīpikā, Advaita-vāda, Bheda-dhikkāra, Vācārambhaṇa, Vedānta-tattva-viveka, and commentaries on the Saṃkṣepa-śārīraka and Pañca-

² He also wrote another work on the *Vivarana*, called *Vivaranopanyāsa*, which is referred to by Appaya Dīkṣita in his *Siddhānta-leśa*, p. 68—*Vivaranopanyāse* Bhāratītīrtha-vacanam.

¹ There are four commentaries on the Pañcadaśī:—Tattva-bodhinī, Vṛtti-prabhākara by Niścaladšsa Svāmin, Tātparya-bodhinī by Rāmakṛṣṇa and another commentary by Sadānanda. It is traditionally believed that the Pañcadaśī was written jointly by Vidyāraṇya and Bhāratī Tirtha. Niścaladšsa Svāmin points out in his Vṛtti-prabhākara that Vidyāraṇya was author of the first ten chapters of the Pañcadaśī and Bhāratī Tirtha of the other five. Rāmakṛṣṇa, however, in the beginning of his commentary on the seventh chapter, attributes that chapter to Bhāratī Tirtha, and this fits in with the other tradition that the first six chapters were written by Vidyāraṇya and the other nine by Bhāratītīrtha.

pādikā-vivarana, called Tattva-bodhinī and Pañca-pādikā-vivaranaprakāśikā. Nrsimhāśrama was very well reputed among his contemporaries, but it does not seem that he introduced any new ideas into the Vedanta. He is more interested in emphasizing the fact of the identity of Brahman with the self and the illusory character of the world-appearance than in investigating the nature and constitution of $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ and the way in which it can be regarded as the material stuff of world-appearance. He defines the falsehood of world-appearance as its non-existence in the locus in which it appears (pratipannopādhāv abhāva-pratiyogitva)1. When a piece of conch-shell appears to be silver, the silver appears to be existent and real (sat), but silver cannot be the same as being or existence (na tāvad rajata-svarūpam sat). So also, when we take the worldappearance as existent, the world-appearance cannot be identical with being or existence; its apparent identification with these is thus necessarily false². So also the appearance of subjectivity or egoistic characters in the self-luminous self is false, because the two are entirely different and cannot be identified. Nrsimhāśrama, however, cannot show by logical arguments or by a reference to experience that subjectivity or egoism (ahamkāra, which he also calls antahkarana or mind) is different from self, and he relies on the texts of the Upanisads to prove this point, which is of fundamental importance for the Vedanta thesis. In explaining the nature of the perceptual process he gives us the same sort of account as is given by his pupil Dharmarāja Adhvarīndra in his Vedānta-paribhāṣā, as described in the tenth chapter in the first volume of this work3. He considers the self to be bliss itself (sukha-rūpa) and does not admit that there is any difference between the self and bliss (sa cātmā sukhān na bhidyate)4. His definition of ajñāna is the same as that of Citsukha, viz. that it is a beginningless constitutive cause, which is removable by true knowledge⁵. There is thus practically

¹ Vedānta-tattva-viveka, p. 12. The Pandit, vol. xxv, May 1903. This work has two important commentaries, viz. Tattva-viveka-dīpana, and one called Tattva-viveka-dīpana-vyākhyā by Bhaţţojī.

² Vedānta-tattva-viveka, p. 15.

³ yadā antahkarana-vṛttyā ghatāvacchinnam caitanyam upadhīyate tadā antahkaranāvacchinna-ghatāvacchinna-caitanyayor vastuta ekatve 'py upādhi-bhedād bhinnayor abhedopādhi-sambandhena aikyād bhavaty abheda ity antahkaranāvacchinna-caitanyasya visayābhinna-tad-adhisthāna-caitanyasyābheda-siddhyartham vṛtter nirgamanam vācyam. Ibid. p. 22.

^{*} *Ibid*. p. 29

⁸ anādy upādānatve sati jñāna-nivartyam ajñānam, nikhila-prapañcopādānabrahma-gocaram eva ajñānam. Ibid. p. 43.

no new line of argument in his presentation of the Vedānta. On the side of dialectical arguments, in his attempts to refute "difference" (bheda) in his Bheda-dhikkāra he was anticipated by his great predecessors Śrīharsa and Citsukha.

Appaya Dīkṣita1 (A.D. 1550).

Appava Dīksita lived probably in the middle of the sixteenth century, as he refers to Nrsimhāśrama Muni, who lived early in that century. He was a great scholar, well-read in many branches of Sanskrit learning, and wrote a large number of works on many subjects. His grandfather was Ācārya Dīksita, who is said to have been famous for his scholarship from the Himalayas to the south point of India: the name of his father was Rangaraja Makhindra (or simply Raja Makhindra). There is, however, nothing very noteworthy in his Vedantic doctrines. For, in spite of his scholarship, he was only a good compiler and not an original thinker, and on many occasions where he had opportunities of giving original views he contents himself with the views of others. It is sometimes said that he had two different religious views at two different periods of his life, Saiva and the Vedanta. But of this one cannot be certain; for he was such an all-round scholar that the fact that he wrote a Saiva commentary and a Vedantic commentary need not lead to the supposition that he changed his faith. In the beginning of his commentary Śivārka-maņi-dīpikā on Śrīkantha's Saiva commentary to the Brahma-sūtra he says that, though the right interpretation of the Brahma-sūtra is the monistic interpretation, as attempted by Sankara and others, yet the desire for attaining this right wisdom of oneness (advaita-vāsanā) arises only through the grace of Siva, and it is for this reason that Vyāsa in his Brahma-sūtra tried to establish the superiority of the qualified Brahman Siva as interpreted by Śrīkanthācārya. This shows that even while writing his commentary on Śrīkantha's Śaira-bhāsya he had not lost respect for the monistic interpretations of Sankara, and he was somehow able to reconcile in his mind the Saiva doctrine of qualified Brahman (saguna-brahma) as Siva with the Sankara doctrine of unqualified pure Brahman. It is possible.

¹ He was also called Appayya Dīkṣita and Avadhāni Yajvā, and he studied Logic (tarka) with Yajūeśvara Makhīndra. See colophon to Appaya Dīkṣita's commentary on the Nyāya-siddhānta-mañjarī of Jānakīnātha, called Nyāya-siddhānta-mañjarī-eyākhyāna (MS.).

however, that his sympathies with the monistic Vedanta, which at the beginning were only lukewarm, deepened with age. He says in his Sivārka-mani-dīpikā that he lived in the reign of King Cinnabomma (whose land-grant inscriptions date from Sadāśiva, mahārāja of Vijayanagara, A.D. 1566 to 1575; vide Hultzsch, S.I. Inscriptions, vol. 1), under whose orders he wrote the Śivārkamani-dīpikā commentary on Śrīkantha's commentary. His grandson Nīlakantha Dīksita says in his Siva-līlārnava that Appaya Dīksita lived to the good old age of seventy-two. In the Oriental Historical Manuscripts catalogued by Taylor, vol. 11, it is related that at the request of the Pandya king Tirumalai Nayaka he came to the Pāndya country in A.D. 1626 to settle certain disputes between the Śaivas and the Vaisnavas. Kālahasti-śaraņa-Śivānanda Yogīndra, in his commentary on the Atmarpana-stava, gives the date of Appaya Dīksita's birth as Kali age 4654, or A.D. 1554, as pointed out by Mahāmahopādhyāya Kuppusvami Sastri in his Sanskrit introduction to the Siva-līlārnava. Since he lived seventy-two years, he must have died some time in 1626, the very year when he came to the Pandya country. He had for his pupil Bhattoii Dīksita, as is indicated by his own statement in the Tantrasiddhānta-dīpikā by the latter author. Bhattojī Dīksita must therefore have been a junior contemporary of Appaya Dīksita, as is also evidenced by his other statement in his Tattva-kaustubha that he wrote this work at the request of King Keladī-Venkatendra, who reigned from 1604 to 1626 (vide Hultzsch's second volume of Reports on Sanskrit Manuscripts)1.

It is said that Appaya Dīkṣita wrote about four hundred works. Some of them may be mentioned here: Advaita-nirnaya, Catur-mata-sāra-saṃgraha (containing in the first chapter, called Nyāya-muktāvalī, a brief summary of the doctrines of Madhva, in the second chapter, called Naya-mayūkha-mālikā, the doctrines of Rāmānuja, in the third chapter the decisive conclusions from the point of view of Śrīkaṇṭha's commentary called Naya-maṇi-mālā and in the fourth chapter, called Naya-maṇjarī, decisive conclusions in accordance with the views of Sankarācārya); Tattva-muktāvalī, a work on Vedānta; Vyākaraṇa-vāda-nakṣatra-mālā, a work on grammar; Pūrvottara-mīmāṃsā-vāda-nakṣatra-mālā (containing various separate topics of discussion in Mīmāṃsā and

¹ See Mahāmahopādhyāya Kuppusvami Sastri's introduction to the *Siva-tilārṇava*, Srirangam, 1911.

Vedanta); Nyāya-raksā-mani, a commentary on the Brahma-sūtra following the monistic lines of Sankara; Vedānta-kalpa-taruparimala, a commentary on Amalananda's Vedanta-kalpa-taru, a commentary on Vācaspati's Bhāmatī commentary; Siddhāntaleśa-samgraha, a collection of the views of different philosophers of the monistic school of Sankara on some of the most important points of the Vedanta, without any attempt at harmonizing them or showing his own preference by reasoned arguments, and comprising a number of commentaries by Acyutakṛṣṇānanda Tīrtha (Kṛṣṇālamkāra), Gangādharendra Sarasvatī (Siddhānta-bindu-śīkara), Rāmacandra Yajvan (Gūdhārtha-prakāśa), Viśvanātha Tīrtha, Dharmaya Diksita and others: Sivārka-mani-dipikā, a commentary on Śrīkantha's Śaiva-bhāsya on the Brahma-sūtra; Śivakarnāmrta; Siva-tattva-viveka; Siva-purāna-tāmasatva-khandana; Sivādvaita-nirnaya; Sivānanda-laharī-candrikā, a commentary on Sankara's Sivānanda-laharī: Sivārcana-candrikā: Sivotkarsa-candrikā; Śivotkarşa-manjarī; Śaiva-kalpa-druma; Siddhanta-ratnākara; Madhva-mukha-bhanga, an attempt to show that Madhva's interpretation of the Brahma-sūtra is not in accordance with the meaning of the texts of the Upanisads; Rāmānuja-mata-khandana; Rāmāyana-tātparya-nirnaya; Rāmāyana-tātparya-samgraha; Rāmāyaṇa-bhārata-sāra-samgraha; Rāmāyaṇa-sāra; Rāmāyaṇa-sārasamgraha; Rāmāyana-sāra-stava; Mīmāmsādhikarana-mālā Upakrama-parākrama, a short Mīmāmsa work; Dharma-mīmāmsāparibhāṣā; Nāma-samgraha-mālikā; Vidhi-rasāyana; Vidhi-rasāyanopajivani; Vrtti-vārttika, a short work on the threefold meanings of words; Kuvalayānanda, a work on rhetoric on which no less than ten commentaries have been written; Citra-mīmāmsā, a work on rhetoric; Jayollāsa-nidhi, a commentary on the Bhāgavata-purāna; Yādavābhyudaya-tīkā, a commentary on Venkata's Yādavābhyudaya; a commentary on the Prabodha-candrodaya nātaka, etc.

Prakāśānanda (A D. 1550—1600).

It has been pointed out that the Vedānta doctrine of monism as preached by Śaṅkara could not shake off its apparent duality in association with $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$, which in the hands of the later followers of Śaṅkara gradually thickened into a positive stuff through the evolution or transformation of which all the phenomena of world-appearance could be explained. The Vedāntists held that this $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$,

though it adhered to Brahman and spread its magical creations thereon, was unspeakable, indescribable, indefinable, changeable and unthinkable and was thus entirely different from the selfrevealing, unchangeable Brahman. The charge of dualism against such a system of philosophy could be dodged by the teachers of Vedanta only by holding that, since Brahman was the ultimate reality, $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ was unreal and illusory, and hence the charge of duality would be false. But when one considers that mayā is regarded as positive and as the stuff of the transformations of world-appearance, it is hardly intelligible how it can be kept out of consideration as having no kind of existence at all. The positive character of $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ as being the stuff of all world-appearance has to be given up, if the strictly monistic doctrine is to be consistently kept. Almost all the followers of Sankara had, however, been interpreting their master's views in such a way that the positive existence of an objective world with its infinite varieties as the ground of perceptual presentation was never denied. The whole course of the development of Vedanta doctrine in the hands of these Vedanta teachers began to crystallize compactly in the view that, since the variety and multiplicity of world-appearance cannot be explained by the pure changeless Brahman, an indefinable stuff, the māyā, has necessarily to be admitted as the ground of this world. Prakāśānanda was probably the first who tried to explain Vedānta from a purely sensationalistic view-point of idealism and denied the objective existence of any stuff. The existence of objects is nothing more than their perception (drsti). The central doctrine of Prakāśānanda has already been briefly described in chapter x, section 15, of volume 1 of the present work, and his analysis of the nature of perceptual cognition has already been referred to in a preceding section of the present chapter.

Speaking on the subject of the causality of Brahman, he says that the attribution of causality to Brahman cannot be regarded as strictly correct; for ordinarily causality implies the dual relation of cause and effect; since there is nothing else but Brahman, it cannot, under the circumstances, be called a cause. Nescience (avidyā), again, cannot be called a cause of the world; for causality is based upon the false notion of duality, which is itself the outcome of nescience. The theory of cause and effect thus lies outside the scope of the Vedānta (kārya-kāraṇa-vādasya vedānta-bahir-bhūtatvāt). When in reply to the question, "what is the cause of

the world?" it is said that nescience (ajñāna—literally, want of knowledge) is the cause, the respondent simply wants to obviate the awkward silence. The nature of this nescience cannot, however, be proved by any of the pramanas; for it is like darkness and the bramanas or the valid ways of cognition are like light, and it is impossible to perceive darkness by light. Nescience is that which cannot be known except through something else, by its relation to something else, and it is inexplicable in itself, yet beginningless and positive. It will be futile for any one to try to understand it as it is in itself. Nescience is proved by one's own consciousness: so it is useless to ask how nescience is proved. Yet it is destroyed when the identity of the self with the immediately presented Brahman is realized. The destruction of nescience cannot mean its cessation together with its products, as Prakāśātman holds in the Vivarana; for such a definition would not apply, whether taken simply or jointly. Prakāśānanda, therefore, defines it as the conviction, following the realization of the underlying ground, that the appearance which was illusorily imposed on it did not exist. This view is different from the anyathā-khyāti view, that the surmised appearance was elsewhere and not on the ground on which it was imposed; for here, when the underlying ground is immediately intuited, the false appearance absolutely vanishes, and it is felt that it was not there, it is not anywhere, and it will not be anywhere; and it is this conviction that is technically called $b\bar{a}dha$. The indefinability of nescience is its negation on the ground on which it appears (pratipannopādhau nisedha-pratiyogitvam). This negation of all else excepting Brahman has thus two forms; in one form it is negation and in another form this negation, being included within "all else except Brahman," is itself an illusory imposition, and this latter form thus is itself contradicted and negated by its former form. Thus it would be wrong to argue that, since this negation remains after the realization of Brahman, it would not itself be negated, and hence it would be a dual principle existing side by side with Brahman¹.

True knowledge is opposed to false knowledge in such a way

This idea, however, is not by any means a new contribution of Prakāšānanda. Thus Citsukha writes the same thing in his Tattva-dīpikā (also called Pratyak-tatt-

¹ Brahmany adhyasyamānam sarvam kālatraye nāstītiniscayasya asti rūpadvayam ekam bādhātmakam aparam adhyasyamānatvam; tatra adhyasy amānatvena rūpena sva-viṣayatvam; bādhatvena viṣayitvam iti nāṭmāśraya ity arthah tathā ca nādvaita-kṣatih. Compare also Bhāmatī on Adhyāsa-bhāṣya. Nānā Dīkṣita seems to have borrowed his whole argument from the Bhāmatī. See his commentary on the Siddhānta-muktāvalī. The Pandit, 1890, p. 108.

that, when the former dawns, the latter is dispelled altogether. An objection is sometimes raised that, if this be so, then the person who has realized Brahma knowledge will cease to have a bodily existence; for bodily existence is based on illusion and all illusion must vanish when true knowledge dawns. And, if this is so, there will be no competent Vedānta teacher. To this Prakāśānanda replies that, even though the Vedānta teacher may be himself an illusory production, he may all the same lead my one to the true path, just as the Vedas, which are themselves but illusory products, may lead any one to the right path¹.

On the subject of the nature of the self as pure bliss (ananda) he differs from Sarvajñātma Muni's view that what is meant by the statement that the self is of the nature of pure bliss is that there is entire absence of all sorrows or negation of bliss in the self. Bliss, according to Sarvajñātma Muni, thus means the absence of the negation of bliss (an-ānanda-vyavrtti-mātram ānandatvam)². He differs also from the view of Prakāśātman that ānanda, or bliss. means the substance which appears as blissful, since it is the object that we really desire. Prakāśātman holds that it is the self on which the character of blissfulness is imposed. The self is called blissful, because it is the ground of the appearance of blissfulness. What people consider of value and desire is not the blissfulness, but that which is blissful. Prakāśānanda holds that this view is not correct, since the self appears not only as blissful, but also as painful, and it would therefore be as right to call the self blissful as to call it painful. Moreover, not the object of blissfulness, which in itself is dissociated from blissfulness, is called blissful, but that which is endowed with bliss is called blissful (visistasyaiva ānanda $pad\bar{a}rthatv\bar{a}t)^3$. If blissfulness is not a natural character of the self, it cannot be called blissful because it happens to be the ground on which blissfulness is illusorily imposed. So Prakāśānanda holds that the self is naturally of a blissful character.

Prakāśānanda raises the question regarding the beholder of the

va-pradīpikā), p. 39, as follows: "sarveṣām api bhāvānām āsrayatvena sammate pratiyogitvam atyantābhāvam prati mṛṣātmatā," which is the same as pratipannopādhau niṣedha-pratiyogitvam. Compare also Vedānta-paribhāṣā, pp. 219 and 220, mithyātvam ca svāśrayatvenābhimata-yāvanniṣṭhātyantābhāva-pratiyogitvam. In later times Madhusūdana freely used this definition in his Advaita-siddhi.

kalpito 'pyupadestā syād yathā-sāstram samādiset na cāvinigamo doso 'vidyāvattvena nirnayāt.

The Pandit, 1890, p. 160.

² Samkşepa-śārīraka, 1. 1. 174.

³ Siddhanta-muktavalī. The Pandit, 1890, p. 215.

experienced duality and says that it is Brahman who has this experience of duality; but, though Brahman alone exists, yet there is no actual modification or transformation (parināma) of Brahman into all its experiences, since such a view would be open to the objections brought against the alternative assumptions of the whole of Brahman or a part of it, and both of them would land us in impossible consequences. The vivarta view holds that the effect has no reality apart from the underlying ground or substance. So vivarta really means oneness with the substance, and it virtually denies all else that may appear to be growing out of this one substance. The false perception of world-appearance thus consists in the appearance of all kinds of characters in Brahman, which is absolutely characterless (nisprakārikāyāh saprakārakatvena bhāvah). Since the self and its cognition are identical and since there is nothing else but this self, there is no meaning in saying that the Vedanta admits the vivarta view of causation; for, strictly speaking, there is no causation at all (vivartasya bāla-vyutpatti-prayojanatayā)1. If anything existed apart from self, then the Vedāntic monism would be disturbed. If one looks at $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ in accordance with the texts of the Vedas, $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ will appear to be an absolutely fictitious non-entity (tuccha), like the hare's horn; if an attempt is made to interpret it logically, it is indefinable (anirvacaniva), though common people would always think of it as being real (vāstavī)². Prakāśānanda thus preaches the extreme view of the Vedānta, that there is no kind of objectivity that can be attributed to the world, that $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ is absolutely non-existent, that our ideas have no objective substratum to which they correspond, that the self is the one and only ultimate reality, and that there is no causation or creation of the world. In this view he has often to fight with Sarvajñātma Muni, Prakāśātman, and with others who developed a more realistic conception of $m\bar{a}v\bar{a}$ transformation; but it was he who, developing probably on the lines of Mandana, tried for the first time to give a consistent presentation of the Vedanta from the most thorough-going idealistic point of view. In the colophon of his work he says that the essence of the Vedanta as

bālān prati vivarto 'yam brahmanah sakalam jagat avivarttitam ānandam āsthitāh krtinah sadā.

The Pandit, 1890, p. 326. tucchānirvacanīyā ca vāstavī cety asau tridhā jneyā māyā tribhir bodhaih śrauta-yauktika-laukikaih.

preached by him is unknown to his contemporaries and that it was he who first thoroughly expounded this doctrine of philosophy¹. Prakāśānanda wrote many other works in addition to his Siddhānta-muktāvalī, such as Tārā-bhakti-taranginī, Manoramā tantra-rāja-tīkā, Mahā-lakṣmī-paddhati and Śrī-vidyā-paddhati, and this shows that, though a thoroughgoing Vedāntist, he was religiously attached to tantra forms of worship. Nānā Dīkṣita wrote a commentary on the Muktāvalī, called Siddhānta-pradīpikā, at a time when different countries of India had become pervaded by the disciples and disciples of the disciples of Prakāśānanda².

Madhusūdana Sarasvatī (A.D. 1500)3.

Madhusūdana Sarasvatī, who was a pupil of Viśveśvara Sarasvatī and teacher of Purusottama Sarasvatī, in all probability flourished in the first half of the sixteenth century. His chief works are Vedānta-kalpa-latikā, Advaita-siddhi, Advaita-mañjarī, Advaita-ratna-rakṣaṇa, Ātma-bodha-ṭīkā, Ānanda-mandākinī, Kṛṣṇa-kutūhala nāṭaka, Prasthāna-bheda, Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, Bhagavad-gītā-gūdhārtha-dīpikā, Bhagavad-bhakti-rasāyana, Bhāgavata-purāṇa-prathama-śloka-vyākhyā, Veda-stuti-ṭikā, Sāṇḍilya-sūtra-ṭīkā, Śāstra-siddhānta-leśa-ṭīkā, Samkṣepa-śārīraka-sāra-samgraha, Siddhānta-tattva-bindu, Hari-līlā-vyākhyā. His most important work, however, is his Advaita-siddhi, in which he tries to refute the objections raised in Vyāsatīrtha's Nyāyāmṛta'

vedānta-sāra-sarvasvam ajñeyam adhunātanaiḥ aseşeṇa mayoktam tat purusottama-yatnataḥ.

The Pandit, 1890, p. 428.

yacchişya-sisya-sandoha-vyāptā bhārata-bhūmayah vande tam yatibhir vandyam Prakāšānandam īsvaram.

Ibid. p. 488.

⁴ The Advaita-siddhi has three commentaries, Advaita-siddhy-uponyāsa, Bṛhat-ṭīkā, and Laghu-candrikā, by Brahmānanda Sarasvatī.

³ Rāmājñā Pāndeya in his edition of Madhusūdana's Vedānta-kalpa-latikā suggests that he was a Bengali by birth. His pupil Purusottama Sarasvatī in his commentary on the Siddhānta-bindu-ṭīkā refers to Balabhadra Bhaṭṭācārya as a favourite pupil of his, and Pāndeya argues that, since Bhaṭṭācārya is a Bengali surname and since his favourite pupil was a Bengali, he also must have been a Bengali. It is also pointed out that in a family genealogy (Kula-pañjikā) of Kotalipara of Faridpur, Bengal, Madhusūdana's father is said to have been Pramodapurandara Ācārya, who had four sons—Srīnātha Cūḍāmaṇi, Yāda-vānanda Nyāyācārya, Kamalajanayana and Vāgtsa Gosvāmin. Some of the important details of Madhusūdana's philosophical dialectics will be taken up in the treatment of the philosophy of Madhva and his followers in the third volume of the present work in connection with Madhusūdana's discussions with Vvāsatītrha.

against the monistic Vedanta of Sankara and his followers. Materials from this book have already been utilized in sections 6, 7, 8, 9 and 10 of the tenth chapter of the present work. More will be utilized in the third volume in connection with the controversy between Vyāsatīrtha and Madhusūdana, which is the subjectmatter of Advaita-siddhi. Madhusūdana's Siddhānta-bindu does not contain anything of importance, excepting that he gives a connected account of the perceptual process, already dealt with in the tenth chapter and also in the section "Vedantic Cosmology" of the present volume. His Advaita-ratna-raksana deals with such subjects as the validity of the Upanisads: the Upanisads do not admit duality; perception does not prove the reality of duality; the duality involved in mutual negation is false; indeterminate knowledge does not admit duality; duality cannot be proved by any valid means of proof, and so forth. There is practically nothing new in the work, as it only repeats some of the important arguments of the bigger work Advaita-siddhi and tries to refute the view of dualists like the followers of Madhya, with whom Madhusūdana was in constant controversy. It is unnecessary, therefore, for our present purposes to enter into any of the details of this work. It is, however, interesting to note that, though he was such a confirmed monist in his philosophy, he was a theist in his religion and followed the path of bhakti, or devotion, as is evidenced by his numerous works promulgating the bhakti creed. These works, however, have nothing to do with the philosophy of the Vedanta, with which we are concerned in the present chapter. Madhusūdana's Vedānta-kalpa-latikā was written earlier than his Advaita-siddhi and his commentary on the Mahimnah stotra1. Rāmājñā Pāndeya points out in his introduction to the Vedāntu-kalpa-latikā that the Advaita-siddhi contains a reference to his Gitā-nibandhana: the Gitā-nibandhana and the Śrīmad-bhāgavata-tīkā contain references to his Bhakti-rasāyana, and the Bhakti-rasāyana refers to the Vedānta-kalpa-latikā; and this shows that the Vedānta-kalpa-latikā was written prior to all these works. The Advaita-ratna-raksana refers to the Advaita-siddhi and may therefore be regarded as a much later work. There is nothing particularly new in the Vedānta-kalpalatikā that deserves special mention as a contribution to Vedāntic thought. The special feature of the work consists in the frequent

¹ He refers to the Vedānta-kalpa-latikā and Siddhānta-bindu in his Advaita-siddhi, p. 537 (Nirṇaya-Sāgara edition). See also Mahimnah-stotra-ṭīkā, p. 5.

brief summaries of doctrines of other systems of Indian philosophy and contrasts them with important Vedanta views. The first problem discussed is the nature of enancipation (moksa) and the ways of realizing it: Madhusūdana attempts to prove that it is only the Vedantic concept of salvation that can appeal to men, all other views being unsatisfactory and invalid. But it does not seem that he does proper justice to other views. Thus, for example, in refuting the Sāmkhya view of salvation he says that, since the Sāmkhva thinks that what is existent cannot be destroyed, sorrow, being an existent entity, cannot be destroyed, so there cannot be any emancipation from sorrow. This is an evident misrepresentation of the Sāmkhya; for with the Sāmkhya the destruction of sorrow in emancipation means that the buddhi, a product of prakrti which is the source of all sorrow, ceases in emancipation to have any contact with purusa, and hence, even though sorrow may not be destroyed, there is no inconsistency in having emancipation from sorrow. It is unnecessary for our present purposes, however, to multiply examples of misrepresentation by Madhusūdana of the views of other systems of thought in regard to the same problem. In the course of the discussions he describes negation (abhāva) also as being made up of the stuff of nescience, which, like other things, makes its appearance in connection with pure consciousness. He next introduces a discussion of the nature of self-knowledge. and then, since Brahma knowledge can be attained only through the Upanisadic propositions of identity, he passes over to the discussion of import of propositions and the doctrines of abhihitānvaya-vāda, anvitābhidhāna-vāda and the like. He then treats of the destruction of nescience. He concludes the work with a discussion of the substantial nature of the senses. Thus the mind-organ is said to be made up of five elements, whereas other senses are regarded as being constituted of one element only. Manas is said to pervade the whole of the body and not to be atomic, as the Naivāvikas hold. Finally, Madhusūdana returns again to the problem of emancipation, and holds that it is the self freed from nescience that should be regarded as the real nature of emancipation.

CHAPTER XII

THE PHILOSOPHY OF THE YOGA-VĀSIŞŢIIA

THE philosophical elements in the various Purāṇas will be taken in a later volume. The Yoga-vāsistha-Rāmāyana may be included among the purānas, but it is devoid of the general characteristics of the puranas and is throughout occupied with discussions of Vedantic problems of a radically monistic type, resembling the Vedantic doctrines as interpreted by Sankara. This extensive philosophical poem, which contains twenty-three thousand seven hundred and thirty-four verses (ignoring possible differences in different manuscripts or editions) and is thus very much larger than the Śrimad-bhagavad-gitā, is a unique work. The philosophical view with which it is concerned, and which it is never tired of reiterating, is so much like the view of Sankara and of Vijnanavada Buddhism, that its claim to treatment immediately after Sankara seems to me to be particularly strong. Moreover, the various interpretations of the Vedānta-sūtra which will follow are so much opposed to Śańkara's views as to make it hard to find a suitable place for a treatment like that of the Yoga-vāsistha unless it is taken up immediately after the chapter dealing with Sankara.

The work begins with a story. A certain Brahmin went to the hermitage of the sage Agastya and asked him whether knowledge or work was the direct cause of salvation (moksa-sādhana). Agastva replied that, as a bird flies with its two wings, so a man can attain the highest (paramam padam) only through knowledge and work. To illustrate this idea he narrates a story in which Kārunya, the son of Agnivesya, having returned from the teacher's house after the completion of his studies, remained silent and did no work. When he was asked for the reason of this attitude of his, he said that he was perplexed over the question as to whether the action of a man in accordance with scriptural injunction was or was not more fitted for the attainment of his highest than following a course of self-abnegation and desirelessness (tyāga-mātra). On hearing this question of Kārunya Agniveśya told him that he could answer his question only by narrating a story, after hearing which he might decide as he chose. A heavenly damsel (apsarāh), Suruci by name, sitting on one of the peaks of the

Himālayas, once saw a messenger of Indra flying through the sky. She asked him where he was going. In reply he said that a certain king, Aristanemi by name, having given his kingdom to his son and having become free from all passions, was performing a course of asceticism (tapas), and that he had had to go to him on duty and was returning from him. The damsel wanted to know in detail what happened there between the messenger and the king. The messenger replied that he was asked by Indra to take a welldecorated chariot and bring the king in it to heaven, but while doing so he was asked by the king to describe the advantages and defects of heaven, on hearing which he would make up his mind whether he would like to go there or not. In heaven, he was answered, people enjoyed superior, medium and inferior pleasures according as their merits were superior, medium or inferior; when they had exhausted their merits by enjoyment, they were reborn again on earth, and during their stay there they were subject to mutual jealousy on account of the inequality of their enjoyments. On hearing this the king had refused to go to heaven, and, when this was reported to Indra, he was very much surprised and he asked the messenger to carry the king to Valmīki's hermitage and make Vālmīki acquainted with the king's refusal to enjoy the fruits of heaven and request him to give him proper instructions for the attainment of right knowledge, leading to emancipation (moksa). When this was done, the king asked Valmiki how he might attain mokṣa, and Vālmīki in reply wished to narrate the dialogue of Vasistha and Rāma (Vasistha-rāma-samvāda) on the subject.

Vālmīki said that, when he had finished the story of Rāma—the work properly known as Rāmāyaṇa—and taught it to Bharadvāja, Bharadvāja recited it once to Brahmā (the god), and he, being pleased, wished to confer a boon on him. Bharadvāja in reply said that he would like to receive such instructions as would enable people to escape from sorrow. Brahmā told him to apply to Vālmīki and went himself to him (Vālmīki), accompanied by Bharadvāja, and asked him not to cease working until he finished describing the entire character of Rāma, by listening to which people will be saved from the dangers of the world. When Brahmā disappeared from the hermitage after giving this instruction, Bharadvāja also asked Vālmīki to describe how Rāma and his wife, brother and followers behaved in this sorrowful and dangerous world and lived in sorrowless tranquillity.

In answer to the above question Vālmīki replied that Rāma, after finishing his studies, went out on his travels to see the various places of pilgrimage and hermitages. On his return, however, he looked very sad every day and would not tell anyone the cause of his sorrow. King Daśaratha, Rāma's father, became very much concerned about Rāma's sadness and asked Vaśiṣṭha if he knew what might be the cause of it. At this time the sage Viśvāmitra also visited the city of Ayodhyā to invite Rāma to kill the demons. Rāma's dejected mental state at this time created much anxiety, and Viśvāmitra asked him the cause of his dejection.

Rāma said in reply that a new enquiry had come into his mind and had made him averse from all enjoyments. There is no happiness in this world, people are born to die and they die to be born again. Everything is impermanent (asthira) in this world. All existent things are unconnected (bhāvāh...parasparam asanginah). They are collected and associated together only by our mental imagination (manah-kalpanayā). The world of enjoyment is created by the mind (manah), and this mind itself appears to be non-existent. Everything is like a mirage.

Vasistha then explained the nature of the world-appearance, and it is this answer which forms the content of the book. When Vālmīki narrated this dialogue of Vasistha and Rāma, king Aristanemi found himself enlightened, and the damsel was also pleased and dismissed the heavenly messenger. Kārunya, on hearing all this from his father Agnivesya, felt as if he realized the ultimate truth and thought that, since he realized the philosophical truth, and since work and passivity mean the same, it was his clear duty to follow the customary duties of life. When Agastya finished narrating the story, the Brahmin Sutīkṣṇa felt himself enlightened.

There is at least one point which may be considered as a very clear indication of later date, much later than would be implied by the claim that the work was written by the author of the $R\bar{a}m\bar{a}yana$. It contains a sloka which may be noted as almost identical with a verse of Kālidāsa's Kumāra-sambhava¹. It may, in my opinion, be almost unhesitatingly assumed that the author borrowed it from Kālidāsa, and it is true, as is generally supposed, that Kālidāsa

Yoga-vāsiştha, 111. 16. 50: atha tām atimātra-vihvalām sakrpākāsabhavā sarasvatī sapharim hrada-soşa-vihvalām prathamā vṛṣṭir ivānvakampata,

lived in the fifth century A.D. The author of the Yoga-vāsistha, whoever he may have been, flourished at least some time after Kālidāsa. It may also be assumed that the interval between Kālidāsa's time and that of the author of the Yoga-vāsistha had been long enough to establish Kālidasa's reputation as a poet. There is another fact which deserves consideration in this connection. In spite of the fact that the views of the Yoga-vāsistha and Sankara's interpretation of Vedanta have important points of agreement neither of them refers to the other. Again, the views of the Yoga-vāsistha so much resemble those of the idealistic school of Buddhists, that the whole work seems to be a Brahmanic modification of idealistic Buddhism. One other important instance can be given of such a tendency to assimilate Buddhistic idealism and modify it on Brahmanic lines, viz. the writings of Gaudapāda and Śańkara. I am therefore inclined to think that the author of the Yoga-vāsistha was probably a contemporary of Gaudapāda or Śańkara, about A.D. 800 or a century anterior to them.

The work contains six books, or prakaranas, namely, Vairāgya, Mumukşu-vyavahāra, Utpatti, Sthiti, Upaśama and Nirvāna. It is known also by the names of Ārṣa-Rāmāyaṇa, Jñāna-vāsiṣṭha, Mahā-Rāmāyaṇa, Vāsiṣṭha-Rāmāyaṇa or Vāsiṣṭha. Several commentaries have been written on it. Of these commentaries I am particularly indebted to the Tātparya-prakāśa of Ānandabodhendra.

The Yoga-vāsiṣtha is throughout a philosophical work, in the form of popular lectures, and the same idea is often repeated again and again in various kinds of expressions and poetical imagery. But the writer seems to have been endowed with extraordinary poetical gifts. Almost every verse is full of the finest poetical imagery; the choice of words is exceedingly pleasing to the ear, and they often produce the effect of interesting us more by their poetical value than by the extremely idealistic thought which they are intended to convey.

The Yoga-vāsiṣṭha had a number of commentaries, and it was also summarized in verse by some writers whose works also had commentaries written upon them. Thus Advayāraṇya, son of Narahari, wrote a commentary on it, called Vāsiṣṭha-Rāmāyaṇa-candrikā. Ānandabodhendra Sarasvatī, pupil of Gaṅgādharendra Sarasvatī of the nineteenth century, wrote the Tātparya-prakāśa. Gaṅgādharendra also is said to have written a commentary of the same name. Rāmadeva and Sadānanda also wrote two commentaries on

the work, and in addition to these there is another commentary. called Yoga-vāsistha-tātparya-samgraha, and another commentary. the Pada-candrikā, was written by Mādhava Sarasvatī. The names of some of its summaries are Brhad-yoga-vāsistha, Laghu-jñāna-vāsistha, Yoga-vāsistha-ślokāh and Yoga-vāsistha-samksepa by Gauda Abhinanda of the ninth century, Yoga-vāsistha-sāra or Jāāna-sāra, Yoga-vāsistha-sāra-samgraha and Vāsistha-sāra or Vāsistha-sāragūdhārthā by Ramānanda Tirthā, pupil of Advaitānanda. The Yoga-vāsistha-samksepa of Gauda Abhinanda had a commentary by Atmasukha, called Candrika, and another called Samsaratarani, by Mummadideva. The Yoga-vāsistha-sāra also had two commentaries by Pūrnānanda and Mahīdhara. Mr Sivaprasad Bhattacarya in an article on the Yoga-vāsistha-Rāmāyana in the Proceedings of the Madras Oriental Conference of 1924 says that the Moksopāya-sāra, which is another name for the Yoga-vāsistha-sāra, was written by an Abhinanda who is not to be confused with Gauda Abhinanda. But he misses the fact that Gauda Abhinanda had also written another summary of it, called Yoga-vāsisthasamksepa. Incidentally this also refutes his view that the Yogavāsistha is to be placed between the tenth and the twelfth centuries. For, if a summary of it was written by Gauda Abhinanda of the ninth century, the Yoga-vāsistha must have been written at least in the eighth century. The date of the Yoga-vāsistha may thus be regarded as being the seventh or the eighth century.

The Ultimate Entity.

The third book of the Yoga-vāsiṣtha deals with origination (utpatti). All bondage (bandha) is due to the existence of the perceptible universe (dṛśya), and it is the main thesis of this work that it does not exist. At the time of each dissolution the entire universe of appearance is destroyed, like dreams in deep sleep (suṣupti). What is left is deep and static (stimita-gambhīra), neither light nor darkness, indescribable and unmanifested (anākhyam anabhivyaktam), but a somehow existent entity. This entity manifests itself as another (svayam anya ivollasan); and through this dynamic aspect it appears as the ever-active mind (manas)—like moving ripples from the motionless ocean. But in reality whatever appears as the diversified universe is altogether non-existent; for, if it was existent,

it could not cease under any circumstances1. It does not exist at all. The ultimate indefinite and indescribable entity, which is pure extinction (nirvāṇa-mātra), or pure intelligence (paro bodhah). remains always in itself and does not really suffer any transformations or modifications. Out of the first movement of this entity arises ego (svatā), which, in spite of its appearance, is in reality nothing but the ultimate entity. Gradually, by a series of movements (spanda) like waves in the air, there springs forth the entire worldappearance. The ultimate entity is a mere entity of pure conceiving or imagining (samkalpa-purusa)². The Muni held that what appears before us is due to the imagination of manas, like dreamland or fairyland (yathā samkalpa-nagaram yathā gandharva-pattanam). There is nothing in essence except that ultimate entity, and whatever else appears does not exist at all-it is all mere mental creations, proceeding out of the substanceless, essenceless mental creations of the ultimate entity. It is only by the realization that this world-appearance has no possibility of existence that the false notion of ourselves as knowers ceases, and, though the false appearance may continue as such, there is emancipation (moksa).

This manas, however, by whose mental creations everything springs forth in appearance, has no proper form, it is merely a name, mere nothingness³. It does not exist outside or subjectively inside us; it is like the vacuity surrounding us everywhere. That anything has come out of it is merely like the production of a mirage stream. All characteristics of forms and existence are like momentary imaginations. Whatever appears and seems to have existence is nothing but manas, though this manas itself is merely a hypothetical starting-point, having no actual reality. For the manas is not different from the dreams of appearance and cannot be separated from them, just as one cannot separate liquidity from water or movement from air. Manas is thus nothing but the hypothetical entity from which all the dreams of appearance proceed, though these dreams and manas are merely the same and

¹ Yoga-vāsistha, III. 3.

sarveşām bhūta-jātānām samsāra-vyavahārinām prathamo 'sau pratispandas citta-dehah svatodayah asmāt pūrvāt pratispandād ananyaitat-svarūpinī iyam pravisītā sṛṣtih spanda-sṛṣtir ivāmilāt.

III. 3. 14, 15.
rāmāsya manaso rūpam na kimcid api dršyate
nāma-mātrād ṛte vyomno yathā śūnya-jadākṛteḥ.

^{111. 4. 38.}

it is impossible to distinguish between them1. Avidyā, samsṛti, citta, manas, bandha, mala, tamas are thus but synonyms for the same concept2. It is the perceiver that appears as the perceived, and it is but the perceptions that appear as the perceiver and the perceived. The state of emancipation is the cessation of this world-appearance. There is in reality no perceiver, perceived or perceptions, no vacuity (śūnya), no matter, no spirit or consciousness, but pure cessation or pure negation, and this is what we mean by Brahman³. Its nature is that of pure cessation (santa), and it is this that the Samkhyists call purusa, the Vedantins call "Brahman," the idealistic Buddhists call "pure idea" (vijñāna-mātra) and the nihilists "pure essencelessness" (śūnya)4. It is of the nature of pure annihilation and cessation, pervading the inner and the outer world⁵. It is described as that essencelessness (śūnya) which does not appear to be so, and in which lies the ground and being of the essenceless world-appearance (yasmin śūnyam jagat sthitam), and which, in spite of all creations, is essenceless⁶. The illusory worldappearance has to be considered as absolutely non-existent, like the water of the mirage or the son of a barren woman. The ultimate entity is thus neither existent nor non-existent and is both statical and dynamical (spandāspandātmaka)7; it is indescribable and unnameable (kimapy avyapadeśātmā) and neither being nor nonbeing nor being-non-being, neither statical being nor becoming (na bhāvo bhavanam na ca). The similarity of the philosophy of the Yoga-vāsistha to the idealistic philosophy of the Lankāvatārasūtra is so definite and deep that the subject does not require any elaborate discussion and the readers are referred to the philosophy of the Lankāvatāra in the first volume of the present work. On Vedānta lines it is very similar to Prakāśānanda's interpretation of the Vedanta in later times, called drsti-srsti-vada, which can probably be traced at least as far back as Gaudapāda or Mandana. Prakäśātman refers to the Yoga-vāsistha as one of his main authorities.

pūrņe pūrņam prasarati šānte šāntam vyavasthitam vyomany evoditam vyoma brahmani brahma tişthati na dršyam asti sad-rūpam na draṣṭā na ca daršanam na jādam no cic chāntam evedam ātatam.

² III. 4. 46. ³ III. 5. 6-7. ⁴ nāśa-rūpo vināśātmā. III. 5. 16. ⁵ III. 7. 22. ⁶ III. 9. 59. ⁷ III. 9. 49.

Origination.

The world as such never existed in the past, nor exists now, nor will exist hereafter; so it has no production or destruction in any real sense¹. But yet there is the appearance, and its genesis has somehow to be accounted for. The ultimate entity is, of course, of the nature of pure cessation (santa), as described above. The order of moments leading to the manifestation of the worldappearance can be described in this way: At first there is something like a self-reflecting thought in the ultimate entity, producing some indescribable objectivity which gives rise to an egohood. Thus, on a further movement, which is akin to thought, is produced a state which can be described as a self-thinking entity, which is clear pure intelligence, in which everything may be reflected. It is only this entity that can be called conscious intelligence (cit). As the thought-activity becomes more and more concrete (ghana-samvedana), other conditions of soul (jiva) arise out of it. At this stage it forgets, as it were, its subject-objectless ultimate state, and desires to flow out of itself as a pure essence of creative movement (bhāvanā-mātra-sāra). The first objectivity is ākāśa, manifested as pure vacuity. At this moment arise the ego (ahamtā) and time (kāla). This creation is, however, in no sense real, and is nothing but the seeming appearances of the self-conscious movement (sva-samvedana-mātrakam) of the ultimate being. All the network of being is non-existent, and has only an appearance of existing. Thought (samvit), which at this moment is like the ākāśa and the ego and which is the seed (bija) of all the conceivings of thought (bhāvanā), formulates by its movement air2. Again,

bandhyā-putra-vyoma-bane yathā na staḥ kadācana
jagad-ādy akkilam dršyam tathā nāsti kadācana
na cotpannam na ca dhvamsi yat kilādau na vidyate
utpattiḥ kīdršt tasya nāśa-śabdasya kā kathā. 111. 11. 4, 5.
manaḥ sampadyate lolam kalanā-kalanonmukham;
kalayantī manaḥ śaktir ādau bhāvayati kṣaṇāt.
ākāśa-bhāvanāmacchām śabda-bija-rasonmukhīm;
tatas tām ghanatām jātam ghana-spanda kramān manaḥ.
1V. 44. 16, 17.

2

A comparison of numerous passages like these shows that each mental creation is the result of a creative thought-movement called bhāvanā, and each successive movement in the chain of a succession of developing creative movements is said to be ghana, or concrete. Ghana has been paraphrased in the Tātparya-prakāsa as accretion (upacaya). Bhāvāna is the same as spanda; as the result of each thought-movement, there was thought-accretion (ghana), and corresponding to each ghana there was a semi-statical creation, and following each ghana there was a spanda (ghana-spanda-kramāt).

following the ākāśa moment and from it as a more concrete state (ghanībhūya), comes forth the sound-potential (kha-tan-mātra). This sound-potential is the root of the production of all the Vedas, with their words, sentences and valid means of proof. Gradually the conceivings of the other tan-mätras of sparsa, tejas, rasa and gandha follow, and from them the entire objective world, which has no other reality than the fact that they are conceptions of the self-conscious thought1. The stages then are, that in the state of equilibrium (sama) of the ultimate indescribable entity called the Brahman, which, though pure consciousness in essence, is in an unmanifested state, there first arises an objectivity (cetyatva) through its self-directed self-consciousness of the objectivity inherent in it (sataś cetyāmśa-cetanāt); next arises the soul, where there is objective consciousness only through the touch or connection of objectivity (cetya-samyoga-cetanāt) instead of the self-directed consciousness of objectivity inherent in itself. Then comes the illusory notion of subjectivity, through which the soul thinks that it is only the conscious subject and as such is different from the object (cetyaika-paratā-vaśāt). This moment naturally leads to the state of the subjective ego, which conceives actively (buddhitvākalanam), and it is this conceiving activity which leads to the objective conceptions of the different tan-matras and the world-appearance. These are all, however, ideal creations, and as such have no reality apart from their being as mere appearance. Since their nature is purely conceptual (vikalpa), they cannot be real at any time. All that appears as existent does so only as a result of the conceptual activity of thought. Through its desire, "I shall see," there comes the appearance of the two hollows of the eye, and similarly in the case of touch, smell, hearing and taste. There is no single soul, far less an infinite number of them. It is by the all-powerful conceptual activity of Brahman that there arises the appearance of so many centres of subjective thought, as the souls (jivas). In reality, however, the jivas have no other existence than the conceptualizing activity which produces their appearance. There is no materiality or form: these are nothing but the self-flashings of thought (citta-camatkāra).

Manas, according to this theory, is nothing but that function of pure consciousness through which it posits out of itself an object of itself. Here the pure conscious part may be called the spiritual

part and its objectivity aspect the material part¹. In its objectivity also the *cit* perceives nothing but itself, though it appears to perceive something other than itself (*svam evānyatayā dṛstvā*), and this objectivity takes its first start with the rise of egohood (*ahamtā*).

But to the most important question, namely, how the original equilibrium is disturbed and how the present development of the conceptual creation has come about, the answer given in the Yoga-vāsiṣtha is that it is by pure accident (kākatālīya-yogena) that such a course of events took place. It is indeed disappointing that such a wonderful creation of world-appearance should have ultimately to depend on accident for its origin². It is considered irrelevant to enquire into the possibility of some other cause of the ultimate cause, the Brahman³.

Karma, Manas and the Categories.

Karma in this view is nothing but the activity of the manas. The active states of manas are again determined by their preceding moments and may in their turn be considered as determining the succeeding moments. When any particular state determines any succeeding state, it may be considered as an agent, or kartā; but, as this state is determined by the activity of the previous state, otherwise called the karma, it may be said that the karma generates the karta, the karta by its activity again produces karma, so that karma and kartā are mutually determinative. As in the case of the seed coming from the tree and the tree coming from the seed, the cycle proceeds on from kartā to karma and from karma to kartā, and no ultimate priority can be affirmed of any one of them⁴. But, if this is so, then the responsibility of karma ceases; the root desire (vāsanā) through which a man is born also makes him suffer or enjoy in accordance with it; but, if kartā and karma spring forth together, then a particular birth ought not to be determined by the karma of previous birth, and this would mean

cito yac cetya-kalanam tan-manastvam udāhṛtam cid-bhāgo 'trājado bhāgo jādyam atra hi cetyatā.
 111. 91. 37.
 111. 96. 15, IV. 54. 7.

Brahmanah kāranam kim syād iti vaktum na yujyate svabhāvo nirvisesatvāt paro vaktum na yujyate. 1v. 18. 22. yathā karma ca kartā ca paryāyeneha samgatau karmanā kriyate kartā kartrā karma prantyate bijānkurādivan-nyāyo loka-vedokta eva sah. 111. 95. 19, 20.

that man's enjoyment and sorrow did not depend on his karma. In answer to such a question, raised by Rāmacandra, Vasiṣṭha says that karma is due not to atman, but to manas. It is the mental movement which constitutes karma. When first the category of manas rises into being from Brahman, karma also begins from that moment, and, as a result thereof, the soul and the body associated with it are supposed to be manifested. Karma and manas are in one sense the same. In this world the movement generated by action (kriyā-spanda) is called karma, and, as it is by the movement of manas that all effects take place, and the bodies with all their associated sufferings or enjoyments are produced, so even the body, which is associated with physical, external karma, is in reality nothing but the manas and its activity. Manas is essentially of the nature of karma, or activity, and the cessation of activity means the destruction of manas (karma-nāśe mano-nāśah)1. As heat cannot be separated from fire or blackness from collyrium, so movement and activity cannot be separated from manas. If one ceases, the other also necessarily ceases. Manas means that activity which subsists between being and non-being and induces being through non-being: it is essentially dynamic in its nature and passes by the name of manas. It is by the activity of manas that the subject-objectless pure consciousness assumes the form of a self-conscious ego. Manas thus consists of this constantly positing activity (ekānta-kalanah). The seed of karma is to be sought in the activity of manas (karma-bijam manah-spanda), and the actions (kriyā) which follow are indeed very diverse. It is the synthetic function (tad-anusandhatte) of manas that is called the functioning of the conative senses, by which all actions are performed, and it is for this reason that karma is nothing but manas. Manas, buddhi, ahamkāra, citta, karma, kalpanā, samsrti, vāsanā, vidvā. prayatna, smrti, indriya, prakrti, māyā and kriyā are different only in name, and they create confusion by these varied names; in reality, however, they signify the same concept, namely, the active functioning of manas or citta. These different names are current only because they lay stress on the different aspects of the same active functioning. They do not mean different entities. but only different moments, stages or aspects. Thus the first moment of self-conscious activity leading in different directions is called manas. When, after such oscillating movement, there is

the position of either of the alternatives, as "the thus," it is called buddhi. When by the false notions of associations of body and soul there is the feeling of a concrete individual as "I," it is called ahamkāra. When there is reflective thought associated with the memory of the past and the anticipations of the future, it is called citta. When the activity is taken in its actual form as motion or action towards any point, it is called karma. When, leaving its self-contained state, it desires anything, we have kalpanā. When the citta turns itself to anything previously seen or unseen, as being previously experienced, we have what is called memory (smrti). When certain impressions are produced in a very subtle, subdued form, dominating all other inclinations, as if certain attractions or repulsions to certain things were really experienced, we have the root inclinations (vāsanā). In the realization that there is such a thing as self-knowledge, and that there is also such a thing as the false and illusory world-appearance, we have what is called right knowledge ($vidv\bar{a}$). When the true knowledge is forgotten and the impressions of the false world-appearance gain ground, we have what are called the impure states (mala). The functions of the five kinds of cognition please us and are called the senses (indriva). As all world-appearance has its origin and ground in the highest self, it is called the origin (prakrti). As the true state can neither be called existent nor non-existent, and as it gives rise to all kinds of appearance, it is called illusion $(m\bar{a}v\bar{a})^1$. Thus it is the same appearance which goes by the various names of jiva, manas, citta and buddhi2.

One of the peculiarities of this work is that it is not a philosophical treatise of the ordinary type, but its main purpose lies in the attempt to create a firm conviction on the part of its readers, by repeating the same idea in various ways by means of stories and elaborate descriptions often abounding in the richest poetical imagery of undeniably high aesthetic value, hardly inferior to that of the greatest Sanskrit poet, Kālidāsa.

¹ 111. 96. 17-31.

Jiva ity ucyate loke mana ity api kathyate cittam ity ucyate saiva buddhir ity ucyate tathā.

The World-Appearance.

The Yoga-vāsistha is never tired of repeating that this world is like a hare's horn, a forest in the sky, or a lotus in the sky. The state of Brahman is higher than the state of manas. It is by becoming manas that Brahman transforms itself into thought-activity and thus produces the seeming changeful appearances. But Brahman in itself cannot have anything else (brahma-tattve 'nyatā nāsti). But, though there is this change into manas, and through it the production of the world-appearance, yet such a change is not real, but illusory; for during all the time when this change makes its appearance and seems to stay, Brahman remains shut up within itself, changeless and unchangeable. All objective appearance is thus nothing but identically the same as the Brahman, and all that appears has simply no existence. The seer never transforms himself into objectivity, but remains simply identical with himself in all appearances of objectivity. But the question arises, how, if the worldappearance is nothing but the illusory creative conception of manas, can the order of the world-appearance be explained? The natural answer to such a question in this system is that the seeming correspondence and agreement depend upon the similarity of the imaginary products in certain spheres, and also upon accident. It is by accident that certain dream series correspond with certain other dream series1. But in reality they are all empty dream constructions of one manas. It is by the dream desires that physical objects gradually come to be considered as persistent objects existing outside of us. But, though during the continuance of the dreams they appear to be real, they are all the while nothing but mere dream conceptions. The self-alienation by which the pure consciousness constructs the dream conception is such that, though it always remains identical with itself, yet it seems to posit itself as its other, and as diversified by space, time, action and substance (deśa-kāla-kriyā-dravyaih).

The difference between the ordinary waking state and the dream state consists in this, that the former is considered by us as associated with permanent convictions (sthira-pratyaya), whereas the latter is generally thought to have no permanent basis. Any experience which persists, whether it be dream or not,

¹ melanam api svakiya-parakiya-svapnānām daivāt kvacit samvādavat svāntaḥ-kalpanātmakam eva. Yoga-vāsiṣṭha-tātparya-prakāša, IV. 18. 46.

comes to be regarded as permanent, whereas, if even our waking conceptions come to be regarded as changeful, they lose their validity as representing permanent objects, and our faith in them becomes shaken. If the dream experiences persisted in time and the waking experiences were momentary, then the waking state would be considered as a dream and the dream experiences would be considered as ordinary experiences in the dream state. It is only with the coming of the waking state that there is a break of the dream experiences, and it is then that the latter are contradicted and therefore regarded as false. But so long as the dream experiences lasted in the dream state, we did not consider them to be false; for during that time those dream experiences appeared somehow to be permanent and therefore real. There is thus no difference between dream states and waking states except this, that the latter are relatively persistent, continuous and permanent (sthira), while the former are changeful and impermanent $(asthira)^1$.

There is within us a principle of pure consciousness, which is also the vital principle (jīva-dhātu), vitality (vīrya), and body heat (tejas). In the active condition, when the body is associated with manas, action and speech, the vital principle moves through the body, and on account of this all sorts of knowledge arise, and the illusion of world-appearance inherent in it is manifested as coming from outside through the various sense apertures. This being of a steady and fixed character is called the waking state (jāgrat). The susupta, or deep sleep state, is that in which the body is not disturbed by the movement of the manas, action or speech. The vital principle remains still in itself, in a potential state without any external manifestation, as the oil remains in the sesamum (taila-samvid yathā tile)². When the vital principle (jīva-dhātu) is very much disturbed, we have experiences of the dream state.

Whenever the *manas* strongly identifies itself with any of its concepts, it appears to itself as that concept, just as an iron ball in fire becomes itself like fire. It is the *manas* that is both the perceiver (*puruṣa*) and the perceived universe (*viśva-rūpatā*)³.

jāgrat-svapna-daśā-bhedo na sthirāsthirate vinā samah sadaiva sarvatra samasto 'nubhavo 'nayoḥ svapno 'bi svapna-samaye sthairyājjāgrattvam rcchati asthairyāt jāgrad evāste svapnas tādrśa-bodhataḥ.

IV. 19. 11, 12.

² IV. 19. 23. ⁸ IV. 20. 4.

D II

The followers of the Sāmkhya consider manas to be pure consciousness; they have also explained their doctrines in other details, and they think that emancipation cannot be attained by any way other than that which the Samkhya suggests. The followers of the Vedanta also consider that emancipation is attained if one understands that all this world is Brahman and if there is self-control and cessation of desires together with this knowledge, and that this is the only way of salvation. The Vijnanavadins (Idealistic Buddhists) think that, provided there is complete self-control and cessation of all sense desires, one may attain emancipation, if he understands that the world-appearance is nothing but his own illusion. Thus each system of thought thinks too much of its own false methods of salvation (svair eva niyama-bhramaih), springing from the traditional wrong notions. But the truth underlying all these conceptions is that manas is the root of all creations. There is nothing intrinsically pleasurable or painful, sweet or bitter, cold or hot, and such appearances arise only through the habitual creations of the mind. When one believes and thinks with strong faith in any particular manner, he begins to perceive things in that particular manner during that particular time1.

Nature of Agency (Kartrtva) and the Illusion of World Creation.

Whenever we ascribe agency (kartṛtva) to any person in respect of deeds producing pleasure or pain, or deeds requiring strenuous exercise of will-power, as those of the Yoga discipline, we do it wrongly; for agency consists in the grasp of will and resolution, and so it is an internal determination of the mind, of the nature of dominant and instinctive desires and inclinations (vāsanābhidhānah)². The inner movement of feeling in the person towards the enjoyment of experiences takes place in accordance with these fixed desires or inclinations leading him to specific forms of enjoyment. All enjoyment is thus a natural consequence of our nature and character as active agents. Since all active agency (kartṛtva) consists in the

na jñeneha padārtheşu rūpam ekam udīryate drdha-bhāvanayā ceto yad yathā bhāvayaty alam tat tat-phalam tad-ākāram tāvat-kālam prapasyati. na tad asti na yat satyam na tad asti na yan mṛṣā.

² yohyantara-sthāyāḥ manovṛtter niśćayaḥ upādeyatā-pratyayo vāsanābhidhā-natatkartṛtva-śabdenocyate. 1V. 38. 2.

XII] Nature of Agency and Illusion of World Creation 243

inner effort of will, the enjoyment following such an inner exercise of will is nothing but the feeling modifications of the mind following the lead of the active exercise of the will. All action or active agency is thus associated with root inclinations (vusanā), and is thus possible only for those who do not know the truth and have their minds full of the root inclinations. But those who have no vāsanā cannot be said to have the nature of active agents or of enjoying anything. Their minds are no doubt always active and they are active all the time; but, as they have no vāsanā, they are not attached to fruit, and there is the movement without any attachment. Whatever is done by manas is done, and what is not done by it is not done; so it is the manas that is the active agent, and not the body; the world has appeared from the mind (citta or manas), is of the essence of manas, and is upheld in manas. Everything is but a mental creation and has no other existence.

Ultimately, everything comes from Brahman; for that is the source of all powers, and therefore all powers (saktayah) are seen in Brahman-existence, non-existence, unity, duality and multiplicity all proceed from Brahman. The citta, or mind, has evolved out of pure consciousness (cit) or Brahman, as has already been mentioned, and it is through the latter that all power of action (karma), root desires (vāsanā), and all mental modifications appear. But, if everything has proceeded from Brahman, how is it that the world-appearance happens to be so different from its source, the Brahman? When anything comes out of any other thing, it is naturally expected to be similar thereto in substance. If, therefore, the world-appearance has sprung forth from Brahman, it ought to be similar in nature thereto; but Brahman is sorrowless, while the world-appearance is full of sorrow; how is this to be explained? To such a question the answer is, that to a person who has a perfect realization of the nature of the world-appearance, as being a mere conceptual creation from the Brahman and having no existence at all, there is no sorrow in this world-appearance nor any such quality which is different from Brahman. Only in the eyes of a person who has not the complete realization does this difference between the world-appearance and Brahman seem to be so great, and the mere notion of the identity of Brahman and the universe, without its complete realization, may lead to all sorts of mischief. On this account instruction in the identity of the Brahman and the world-appearance should never be given to anyone whose mind has not been properly purified by the essential virtues of self-control and disinclination to worldly pleasures¹. As in magic (indrajāla), non-existent things are produced and existent things are destroyed, a jug becomes a cloth, and a cloth becomes a jug, and all sorts of wonderful sights are shown, though none of these appearances have the slightest essence of their own; so is the entire world-appearance produced out of the imagination of the mind. There is no active agent (kartr) and no one enjoyer (bhoktr) of the pleasures and sorrows of the world, and there is no destruction whatsoever².

Though the ultimate state is the indescribable Brahman or cit, yet it is from manas that all creation and destruction from cycle to cycle take their start. At the beginning of each so-called creation the creative movement of manas energy is roused. At the very first the outflow of this manas energy in the direction of a conceptual creation means an accumulation of energy in manas, called ghana, which is a sort of statical aspect of the dynamical energy (spanda). At the next stage there is a combination of this statical state of energy with the next outflow of energy, and the result is the stabilized accretion of energy of the second order; this is again followed by another outflow of energy, and that leads to the formation of the stabilized energy of the third order, and so on. The course of thought-creation is thus through the interaction of the actualized energy of thought with the active forms of the energy of thought, which join together, at each successive outflow from the supreme fund of potential energy. Thus it is said that the first creative movement of manas manifests itself as the ākāśa creation. and that, as a result of this creative outflow of energy, there is an accretion of energy in manas; at this moment there is another outflow (spanda) or movement on the part of manas, as modified by the accretion of energy of the previous state, and this outflow of manas thus modified is the creation of air. The outflow of this second order, again, modifies manas by its accretion, and there is a third outflow of energy of the manas as modified by the previous accretion, and so on. This process of the modification of energy by the outflow of the manas modified at each stage by the accretion of the outflow of energy at each of the preceding states is called

ādau šama dama-prāyair guņaih šiṣyaṃ višodhayet paścāt sarvam idaṃ brahma šuddhas tvam iti bodhayet.

IV. 39. 23.

nātra kašcit kartā na bhoktā na vināšam eti.

IV. 39. 41.

ghana-spanda-krama1. The creation of all the so-called tan-mātras (subtle states) of ākāśa, vāyu, tejas, ap and ksiti takes place in this order, and afterwards that of the ahan.kāra and buddhi, and thus of the subtle body (pury-astaka); thereafter the cosmic body of Brahman is formed and developed in accordance with the root desire (vāsanā) inherent in manas. Thus here we have first the ākāśa tan-mātra, then the vāyu tan-mātra from the ākāśa tan-mātra plus the outflow of energy, then, from the akasa tan-matra plus the vāvu tan-mātra plus the outflow of energy of the third order, tejas tan-mātra, and so on. Then, after the tan-mātra, the ahamkāra and the buddhi, we have the subtle body of eight constituents (five tan-mātras, ahamkāra, buddhi and the root manas), called the pury-astaka of Brahmā. From this develops the body of Brahmā. and from the creative imagination of Brahmā we have the grosser materials and all the rest of the world-appearance. But all this is pure mental creation, and hence unreal, and so also are all the scriptures, gods and goddesses and all else that passes as real.

The Stage of the Saint (Jīvan-mukta).

Emancipation (mukti) in this system can be attained in the lifetime of a person or after his death; in the former case it is called sa-deha-muktatā, or jīvan-muktatā. The jīvan-mukta state is that in which the saint has ceased to have any desires (apagataisanah), as if he were in a state of deep sleep (susuptavat). He is self-contained and thinks as if nothing existed. He has always an inward eye, even though he may be perceiving all things with his external eye and using his limbs in all directions. He does not wait for the future, nor remain in the present, nor remember the past. Though sleeping, he is awake and, though awake, he is asleep. He may be doing all kinds of actions externally, though he remains altogether unaffected by them internally. He internally renounces all actions, and does not desire anything for himself. He is full of bliss and happiness, and therefore appears to ordinary eyes to be an ordinary happy man; but in reality, though he may be doing all kinds of things, he has not the delusion of being himself an active agent (tyakta-kartrtva-vibhramah). He has no antipathy, grief, emotions, or outbursts of pleasure. He is quite neutral to all who

do him ill or well; he shows sympathetic interest in each person in his own way; he plays with a child, is serious with an old man, an enjoyable companion to a young man, sympathetic with the sorrows of a suffering man. He is wise and pleasant and loving to all with whom he comes in contact. He is not interested in his own virtuous deeds, enjoyments, sins, in bondage or emancipation. He has a true philosophic knowledge of the essence and nature of all phenomena, and, being firm in his convictions, he remains neutral to all kinds of happenings, good, bad, or indifferent. But from the descriptions it appears that this indifference on the part of a saint does not make him an exclusive and unnatural man; for, though unaffected in every way within himself, he can take part in the enjoyment of others, he can play like a child and can sympathize with the sorrows of sufferers1.

Jivan-mukti, or emancipation while living, is considered by Sankara also as a possible state, though he does not seem to have used the term in his works. Thus, on the basis of Chandogya, VI. 14. 2, he says that knowledge destroys only those actions which have not already begun to yield their fruits; those actions which have already begun to yield fruits cannot be destroyed by true knowledge, and so it is not possible for anyone to escape from their effects, good or bad; and it has to be admitted that even after the dawning of true knowledge the body remains until the effects of the actions which have already begun to yield fruits are exhausted by enjoyment or suffering. In explaining such a condition Sankara gives two analogies: (1) as a potter's wheel goes on revolving when the vessel that it was forming is completed. so the body, which was necessary till the attainment of true knowledge, may continue to exist for some time even after the rise of knowledge; (2) as, when a man through some eye-disease sees two moons instead of one, he continues to do so even when he is convinced that there are not two moons but one, so, even when the saint is firmly convinced of the unreality of the world-appearance, he may still continue to have the illusion of world-appearance, though internally he may remain unaffected by it2. Of the Upanisads only the later Muktika Upanisad, which seems to have drawn its inspiration from the Yoga-vāsistha, mentions the word jīvanmukta, meaning those saints who live till their fruit-vielding

¹ v. 77. ² Śaṅkara's Śārīraka-bhāṣya or the Brahma-sūtra, 1v. i. 15, 19.

actions (prārabdha-karma) are exhausted¹. But, though the word is not mentioned, the idea seems to be pretty old.

The conception of sthita-prajña in the Srīmad-bhagavad-gītā reminds us of the state of a jivan-mukta saint. A sthita-prajňa (man of steady wisdom) has no desires, but is contented in himself, has no attachment, fear or anger, is not perturbed by sorrow nor longs for pleasure, and is absolutely devoid of all likes and dislikes. Like a tortoise within its shell, he draws himself away from the senseobjects². This conception of the Śrimad-bhagavad-gītā is referred to in the Yoga-vāsistha, which gives a summary of it in its own way3. But it seems as if the conception of the saint in the Yoga-vāsistha has this advantage over the other, that here the saint, though absolutely unaffected by all pleasures and sufferings, by virtue and vice, is yet not absolutely cut off from us; for, though he has no interest in his own good, he can show enjoyment in the enjoyment of others and sympathy with the sufferings of others; he can be as gay as a child when with children, and as serious as any philosopher when with philosophers or old men. The Śrimad-bhagavad-gītā, though it does not deny such qualities to a saint, yet does not mention them either, and seems to lay stress on the aspect of the passivity and neutral character of the saint; whereas the Yoga-vāsistha, as we have already said, lays equal stress on both these special features of a saint. He is absolutely unattached to anything, but is not cut off from society and can seemingly take part in everything without losing his mental balance in any way. The Gītā, of course, always recommends even the unattached saint to join in all kinds of good actions; but what one misses there is the taking of a full and proper interest in life along with all others, though the saint is internally absolutely unaffected by all that he may do.

The saint in the Yoga-vāsiṣṭha not only performs his own actions in an unattached manner, but to all appearance mixes with the sorrows and joys of others.

The question whether a saint is above the tyranny of the effects of his own deeds was also raised in Buddhist quarters. Thus we find in the *Kathā-vatthu* that a discussion is raised as to whether a saint can be killed before his proper time of death, and it is said that no one can attain *nirvāṇa* without enjoying the

Muktika Upanişad, I. 42, also II. 33, 35, 76.
 Śrīmad-bhagavad-gītā, II. 55-58.
 Yoga-vāsiṣṭha, VI. 52-58.

fruits of accumulated intentional deeds¹. A story is told in the *Dhamma-pada* commentary (the date of which, according to E. W. Burlingame, is about A.D. 450), how the great saint Moggallāna was torn in pieces by thieves, and his bones were pounded until they were as small as grains of rice; such a miserable death of such a great saint naturally raised doubts among his disciples, and these were explained by Buddha, who said that this was due to the crime of parricide, which Moggallāna had committed in some previous birth; even though he had attained sainthood (*arhattva*) in that life, he could not escape suffering the effect of his misdeeds, which were on the point of bearing fruit². This would naturally imply the view that sainthood does not necessarily mean destruction of the body, but that even after the attainment of sainthood the body may continue to exist for the suffering of the effects of such actions as are on the point of bearing fruit.

The different Indian systems are, however, not all agreed regarding the possibility of the *jivan-mukta* state. Thus, according to the Nyāya, apavarga, or emancipation, occurs only when the soul is absolutely dissociated from all the nine kinds of qualities (will, antipathy, pleasure, pain, knowledge, effort, virtue, vice and rooted instincts). Unless such a dissociation actually occurs, there cannot be emancipation; and it is easy to see that this cannot happen except after death, and so emancipation during the period while the body remains is not possible³. The point is noticed by Vātsyāyana in a discussion on Nyāya-sūtra, IV. 2. 42-45, where he raises the question of the possibility of knowledge of external objects through the senses and denies it by declaring that in emancipation (apavarga) the soul is dissociated from the body and all the senses, and hence there is no possibility of knowledge; and that with the extinction of all knowledge there is also ultimate and absolute destruction of pain⁴. The Vaisesika holds the same view on the subject. Thus Śrīharsa says that, when through right knowledge (paramārtha-darśana) all merit ceases, then the

¹ Kathā-vatthu, XVII. 2.

² Buddhist Legends by E. W. Burlingame, vol. II. p. 304. The same legend is repeated in the introduction to Jātaka 522.

tad evam navānām ātma-guṇānām nirmülocchedo 'pavargaḥ tad evedam uktam bhavati tad-atyanta-viyogo 'pavargaḥ.

Nyāya-mañjarī, p. 508.

yasmāt sarva-duḥkha-bījam sarva-duḥkhāyatanam cāpavarge vichidyate tasmāt sarvena duḥkhena vimuktiḥ apavargo no nirbījam nirāyatanam ca duḥkham utpadyate. Vātsyāyana on Nyāya-sūtra, 1V, 2, 43,

soul, being devoid of the seeds of merit and demerit, which produce the body and the senses, etc., and the present body having been destroyed by the exhaustive enjoyment of the fruits of merit and demerit, and there being no further production of any new body by reason of the destruction of all the seeds of *karma*, there is absolute cessation of the production of body, like the extinction of fire by the burning up of all the fuel; and such an eternal non-production of body is called *mokṣa* (emancipation)¹.

Prabhākara seems to hold a similar view. Thus Sālikanātha, in explaining the Prabhākara view in his Prakarana-pañcikā, says that emancipation means the absolute and ultimate destruction of the body, due to the total exhaustion of merit and demerit2. The difficulty is raised that it is not possible to exhaust by enjoyment or suffering the fruits of all the karmas accumulated since beginningless time; he who, being averse to worldly sorrows and all pleasures which are mixed with traces of sorrow, works for emancipation, desists from committing the actions prohibited by Vedic injunctions, which produce sins, exhausts by enjoyment and suffering the good and bad fruits of previous actions, attains true knowledge, and is equipped with the moral qualities of passionless tranquillity, self-restraint and absolute sex-control, exhausts in the end all the potencies of his karmas (niḥśeṣa-karmāśaya) and attains emancipation3. This view, however, no doubt has reference to a very advanced state in this life, when no further karma is accumulating; but it does not call this state moksa during life; for moksa, according to this view, is absolute and ultimate non-production of body.

The Sāmkhya-kārikā, however, holds that, when true knowledge is attained (samyagjñānādhigama), and when in consequence none of the karmas of undetermined fruition (aniyata-vipāka), accumulated through beginningless time, are able to ripen for bearing fruit, the body may still continue to remain simply by the inertia, as it were, of the old avidyā; just as even after the potter has ceased to operate the potter's wheel may continue to move as a

¹ yathā dagdhendhanasyānalasyopasamaḥ punar anutpāda evam punaḥ sartrānutpādo mokṣaḥ. Nyāya-kandalī, p. 283.

Prasastapāda also writes: tadā nirodhāt nirbījasyātmanah sarīrādi-nivṛttih punah sarīrādy-anutpattau dagdhendhanānalavad upasamo mokṣa iti. Prasastapāda-bhāṣyā, p. 282.

ātyantikas tu dehocchedo niḥseşa-dharmādharma-parikṣaya-nibandhano mokṣa
 Prakaraṇa-pañcikā, p. 156.
 Ibid. p. 157.

result of the momentum which it has acquired (cakra-bhramivad dhrta-śarīrah)¹.

The word jīvan-mukta is not used either in the Kārikā or in the Tattva-kaumudī or in the Tattva-vibhākara. The Sāmkhyasūtra, however, uses the term and justifies it on the same grounds as does Vācaspati². The Sāmkhya-sūtra, more particularly the Pravacana-bhāṣya, raises the threefold conception of manda-viveka (feeble discrimination), madhya-viveka (middle discrimination), and viveka-nispatti (finished discrimination)3. The stage of mandaviveka is that in which the enquirer has not attained the desired discrimination of the difference between prakrti and puruşa, but is endeavouring to attain it; the madhya-viveka stage is the state of the jīvan-mukta. But this is an asamprajñāta state, i.e. a state in which there is still subject-object knowledge and a full conscious discrimination. The last stage, viveka-nispatti, is an asamprajñāta state in which there is no subject-object knowledge, and therefore there cannot in this stage be any reflection of pleasure or sorrow (due to the fructifying karma-prārabdha-karma) on the purusa.

The Yoga also agrees with the general conclusion of the Sāmkhya on the subject. A man who nears the state of emancipation ceases to have doubts about the nature of the self, and begins to re-live the nature of his own self and to discriminate himself as being entirely different from his psychosis (sattva); but, as a result of the persistence of some decayed roots of old impressions and instincts, there may, in the intervals of the flow of true discriminative knowledge, emerge other ordinary cognitive states, such as "I am," "mine," "I know," "I do not know"; yet, inasmuch as the roots of the old impressions have already been burnt, these occasional ordinary cognitive states cannot produce further new impressions. The general impressions of cognition (jñāna-samskāra), however, remain until the final destruction of citta. The point here is that, the roots in the world of subconscious impressions being destroyed, and the occasional appearance of ordinary cognitive states being but remnants produced by some of the old impressions, the roots of which have already

¹ Sāmkhya-kārikā, 67,68. The Tattva-kaumudt here essays to base its remarks on Chāndogya, v1. 14. 2, as Śankara did in his bhāşya on the Brahma-sūtra. The Tattva-vibhākara of Vansidhara Miśra, in commenting on Vācaspati's Tattva-kaumudī, quotes Mundaka Upanişad, 11. 2. 8, and also Śrīmad-bhagavad-gītā, 1v. 37, for its support. Compare Yoga-vāsiṣṭha: ghanā na vāsanā yasya punarjanana-varjitā.

² Sāmkhya-sūtra, 111. 77-83.

³ Ibid. 111. 77, 78.

been burnt, these occasional ordinary cognitive states are like passing shadows which have no basis anywhere; they cannot, therefore, produce any further impressions and thus cannot be a cause of bondage to the saint. With the advance of this state the sage ceases to have inclinations even towards his processes of concentration, and there is only discriminative knowledge; this state of samādhi is called dharma-megha. At this stage all the roots of ignorance and other afflictions become absolutely destroyed, and in such a state the sage, though living (jīvann eva), becomes emancipated (vimukta). The next stage is, of course, the state of absolute emancipation (kaivalya), when the citta returns back to prakṛti, never to find the puruṣa again¹.

Among later writers Vidyāranya wrote on this subject a treatise which he called Jivan-mukti-viveka2. It is divided into five chapters. In the first he deals with the authorities who support jivan-mukti; in the second, with the nature of the destruction of instinctive root inclinations (vāsanā); in the third, with the destruction of manas (mano-nāśa); in the fourth, with the final object for which jīvanmukti is sought; and in the fifth, with the nature and characteristics of those saints who have attained jivan-mukti by wisdom and right knowledge (vidvat-samnyāsa), and have virtually renounced the world, though living. The work is more a textual compilation from various sources than an acute philosophical work examining the subject on its own merits. The writer seems to have derived his main inspiration from the Yoga-vāsistha, though he refers to relevant passages in several other works, such as Brhadāranyaka Upanisad, Maitrevī-brāhmana, Kahola-brāhmana, Śārīrabrāhmaņa, Jābāla-brāhmaṇa, Katha-valli, Gitā, Bhāgavata, Brhaspati-smrti, Sūta-samhitā, Gauda-pāda-kārikā, Śankara-bhāṣya, Brahma-sūtra, Pañca-pādikā, Visnu-purāna, Taittirīva-brāhmana, Yoga-sūtra, Naiskarmya-siddhi, Kausītaki, Pañcadašī, Antaryāmibrāhmana, Vyāsa-bhāsya, Brahma-upanisad, the works of Yama, Parāśara, Bodhāyana, Medhātithi, Viśvarūpa Ācārya, etc.

Disinclination to passions and desires (virakti) is, according to him, of two kinds, intense (tivra) and very intense (tivratara).

¹ Yoga-sūtra and Vyāsa-bhāsya, IV. 29-32.

² This Vidyāranya seems to be later than the Vidyāranya who wrote the Pañcadast, as quotations from the chapter Brahmānanda of the Pañcadast are found in it (chap. II, pp. 195, 196, Chowkhamba edition). So my identification of the Vidyāranya of the Pañcadast with the writer of Jivan-mukti-viveka in the first volume (p. 419) of the present work seems to be erroneous.

Intense virakti is that in which the person does not desire anything in this life, whereas very intense virakti is that in which the person ceases to have any desires for all future lives1. Vidyāranya takes great pains to prove, by reference to various scriptural texts, that there are these two distinct classes of renunciation (sannyāsin), though one might develop into the other2. As regards the nature of jivan-mukti, Vidyāranya follows the view of the Yoga-vāsiṣṭha, though he supports it by other scriptural quotations. On the subject of bodiless emancipation (videha-mukti) also he refers to passages from the Yoga-vāsistha. Jivan-mukti is the direct result of the cessation of all instinctive root desires (vāsanā-kṣaya), the dawning of right knowledge (tattva-jñāna), and the destruction of manas (mano-nāśa). Vidyāranya, however, holds that on account of steady right knowledge even the seeming appearance of passions and attachment cannot do any harm to a jivan-mukta, just as the bite of a snake whose fangs have been drawn cannot do him any harm. Thus he gives the example of Yājñavalkya, who killed Śākalya by cursing and yet did not suffer on that account, because he was already a jivan-mukta, firm in his knowledge of the unreality of the world. So his anger was not real anger, rooted in instinctive passions, but a mere appearance (ābhāsa) of it3.

Energy of Free-will (Paurușa).

One of the special features of the Yoga-vāsiṣṭha is the special emphasis that it lays upon free-will and its immense possibilities, and its power of overruling the limitations and bondage of past karmas. Pauruṣa is defined in the Yoga-vāsiṣṭha as mental and physical exertions made in properly advised ways (sādhūpadiṣṭa-

¹ If the ascetic has ordinary desires he is called hamsa; if he desires emancipation, he is called parama-hamsa. The course of their conduct is described in the Parāsara-smrti, Jīvan-mukti-viveka, 1. 11. When a man renounces the world for the attainment of right knowledge, it is called vividiṣā-samnyāsa (renunciation for thirst of knowledge), as distinguished from vidvat-samnyāsa (renunciation of the wise) in the case of those who have already attained right knowledge. The latter kind of samnyāsa is with reference to those who are jīvan-mukta.

² It is pointed out by Vidyāranya that the Ārunikopaniṣad describes the conduct and character of vividiṣā-saṃnyāsa, in which one is asked to have a staff, one loin-cloth and to repeat the Āranyakas and the Upaniṣads only, and the Parama-haṃsopaniṣat describes the conduct and character of vidvat-saṃnyāsa, in which no such repetition of the Upaniṣads is held necessary, since such a person is fixed and steady in his Brahma knowledge. This makes the difference between the final stages of the two kinds of renunciation (Jivan-mukti-viveka, 1. 20-24).

³ Jīvan-mukti-viveka, pp. 183-186.

mārgena), since only such actions can succeed¹. If a person desires anything and works accordingly in the proper way, he is certain to attain it, if he does not turn back in midway². Pauruṣa is of two kinds, of the past life (prāktana) and of this life (ainika), and the past pauruṣa can be overcome by the present pauruṣa³. The karma of past life and the karma of this life are thus always in conflict with each other, and one or the other gains ground according to their respective strength. Not only so, but the endeavours of any individual may be in conflict with the opposing endeavours of other persons, and of these two also that which is stronger wins⁴. By strong and firm resolution and effort of will the endeavours of this life can conquer the effect of past deeds. The idea that one is being led in a particular way by the influence of past karmas has to be shaken off from the mind; for the efforts of the moment.

All efforts have indeed to be made in accordance with the direction of the scriptures (sāstra). There is, of course, always a limit beyond which human endeavours are not possible, and therefore it is necessary that proper economy of endeavours should be observed by following the directions of the scriptures, by cultivating the company of good friends, and by adhering to right conduct, since mere random endeavours or endeavours on a wrong line cannot be expected to produce good results⁵. If one exerts his will and directs his efforts in the proper way, he is bound to be successful. There is nothing like destiny (daiva), standing as a separate force: it has a continuity with the power of other actions performed in this life, so that it is possible by superior exertions to destroy the power of the actions of previous lives, which would have led to many evil results. Whenever a great effort is made or a great energy is exerted, there is victory. The whole question, whether the daiva of the past life or the paurusa of this life will win, depends upon the relative strength of the two, and any part of the daiva which becomes weaker than the efforts of the present life

```
sādhūpadiṣṭa-mārgeṇa yan mano-'nga-viceṣṭitam
tat pauruṣaṃ tat saphalam anyad unmatta-ceṣṭitam.
Yoga-vāṣṭṭha, 11. 4. 11.
yo yam arthaṃ prārthayate tad-arthaṃ cehate kramāt
avaṣṣyaṃ sa tam āpnoti na ced ardhān nīvartate.
Ibid. 11. 4. 12.
. 11. 4. 17.
```

Ibid. II. 5. 25.

Ibid. 11. 4. 17.
 Ibid. 11. 5. 5, 7.
 sa ca sac-chāstra-sat-sanga-sad-ācārair nijam phalam dadātīti svabhāvo 'yam anyathā nārtha-siddhaye.

in a contrary direction is naturally annulled. It is only he who thinks that destiny must lead him on, and consequently does not strive properly to overcome the evil destiny, that becomes like an animal at the mercy of destiny or God, which may take him to heaven or to hell. The object of all endeavours and efforts in this life is to destroy the power of the so-called destiny, or *daiva*, and to exert oneself to his utmost to attain the supreme end of life.

The Yoga-vāsistha not only holds that pauruşa can conquer and annul daiva, but it even goes to the extreme of denying daiva and calling it a mere fiction, that, properly speaking, does not exist at all. Thus it is said that endeavours and efforts manifest themselves as the movement of thought (samvit-spanda), the movement of manas (manah-spanda), and the movement of the senses (aindriva). Thought movement is followed by movement of the psychosis or cetas; the body moves accordingly, and there is also a corresponding enjoyment or suffering. If this view is true, then daiva is never seen anywhere. Properly speaking, there is no daiva, and wherever any achievement is possible, it is always by continual strenuous effort of will, standing on its own account, or exercised in accordance with the śāstra or with the directions of a teacher¹. It is for all of us to exert ourselves for good and to withdraw our minds from evil. By all the pramānas at our disposal it is found that nothing but the firm exercise of will and effort achieves its end, and that nothing is effected by pure daiva; it is only by the effort of eating that there is the satisfaction of hunger, it is only by the effort of the vocal organs that speech is effected, and it is only by the effort of the legs and corresponding muscles that one can walk. So everything is effected by personal efforts, when directed with the aid of the śāstra and proper advisers or teachers. What passes as dawa is a mere fiction; no one has ever experienced it, and it cannot be used by any of the senses; and the nature of efforts being essentially vibratory (spanda), one can never expect such movement from the formless, insensible, so-called daiva, which is only imagined and can never be proved. Visible efforts are all tangible and open to immediate perception; and, even if it is admitted that daiva exists, how can this supposed formless (amūrta) entity come in contact with it? It is only fools who conceive the

existence of daiva, and depend on it, and are ruined, whereas those who are heroes, who are learned and wise, always attain their highest by their free-will and endeavour.

Rāma points out to Vasistha in 11. 9 that dair a is fairly well accepted amongst all people, and asks how, if it did not exist, did it come to be accepted, and what does it mean after all? In answer to this Vasistha says that, when any endeavour (pourusa) comes to fruition or is baffled, and a good or a bad result is gained, people speak of it as being daiva. There is no daiva, it is mere vacuity, and it can neither help nor obstruct anyone in any way. At the time of taking any step people have a particular idea, a particular resolution; there may be success or failure as the result of operation in a particular way, and the whole thing is referred to by ordinary people as being due to daiva, which is a mere name, a mere consolatory word. The instinctive root inclinations (vāsanā) of a prior state become transformed into karma. A man works in accordance with his vāsanā and by vāsanā gets what he wants. Vāsanā and karma are, therefore, more or less like the potential and actual states of the same entity. Daiva is but another name for the karmas performed with strong desire for fruit, karma thus being the same as vāsanā, and vāsanā being the same as manas, and manas being the same as the agent or the person (purusa); so daiva does not exist as an entity separate from the puruşa, and they are all merely synonyms for the same indescribable entity (durniścaya). Whatever the manas strives to do is done by itself, which is the same as being done by daiva. There are always in manas two distinct groups of vāsanās, operating towards the good and towards the evil, and it is our clear duty to rouse the former against the latter, so that the latter may be overcome and dominated by the former. But, since man is by essence a free source of active energy, it is meaningless to say that he could be determined by anything but himself; if it is held that any other entity could determine him, the question arises, what other thing would determine that entity, and what else that entity, and there would thus be an endless vicious regression². Man is thus a free source

mūdhaiḥ prakalpitaṃ daivaṃ tat-parās te kṣayaṃ gatāḥ prājñās tu pauruṣārthena padam uttamatāṃ gatāḥ. Yoga-vāṣiṣtha, 11. 8. 16.

anyas tvām cetayati cet tam cetayati ko'paraḥ ka imam cctayet tasmād anavasthā na vāstavī.

of activity, and that which appears to be limiting his activity is but one side of him, which he can overcome by rousing up his virtuous side. This view of *puruṣa-kāra* and *karma* seems to be rather unique in Indian literature.

Prāna and its Control.

The mind (citta), which naturally transforms itself into its states (vrtti), does so for two reasons, which are said to be like its two seeds. One of these is the vibration (parispanda) of prāna, and the other, strong and deep-rooted desires and inclinations which construct (drdha-bhāvanā)1. When the prāna vibrates and is on the point of passing through the nerves (nadi-samsparsanodyata), then there appears the mind full of its thought processes (samvedanamaya). But when the prāna lies dormant in the hollow of the veins (sirā-sarani-kotare), then there is no manifestation of mind, and its processes and the cognitive functions do not operate². It is the vibration of the prana (prana-spanda) that manifests itself through the citta and causes the world-appearance out of nothing. The cessation of the vibration of prāna means cessation of all cognitive functions. As a result of the vibration of prāna, the cognitive function is set in motion like a top $(vit\bar{a})$. As a top spins round in the yard when struck, so, roused by the vibration of prāna, knowledge is manifested; and in order to stop the course of knowledge, it is necessary that the cause of knowledge should be first attacked. When the citta remains awake to the inner sense. while shut to all extraneous cognitive activities, we have the highest state. For the cessation of citta the yogins control prāna through prāṇāyāma (breath-regulation) and meditation (dhyāna), in accordance with proper instructions3.

Again, there is a very intimate relation between $v\bar{a}san\bar{a}$ and $pr\bar{a}na$ -spanda, such that $v\bar{a}san\bar{a}$ is created and stimulated into activity, $pr\bar{a}na$ -spanda, and $pr\bar{a}na$ -spanda is set in motion through $v\bar{a}san\bar{a}$. When by strong ideation and without any proper deliberation of the past and the present, things are conceived to be one's own—the body, the senses, the ego and the like—we have what is

¹ Yoga-vāsistha, v. 91. 14.

² I have translated $sir\bar{a}$ as veins, though I am not properly authorized to do it. For the difference between veins and arteries does not seem to have been known.

³ Yoga-vāsistha, v. 91. 20-27.

called $v\bar{a}san\bar{a}$. Those who have not the proper wisdom always believe in the representations of the ideations of $v\bar{a}san\bar{a}$ without any hesitation and consider them to be true; and, since both the $v\bar{a}san\bar{a}$ and the $pr\bar{a}na-spanda$ are the ground and cause of the manifestations of citta, the cessation of one promptly leads to the cessation of the other. The two are connected with each other in the relation of seed and shoot $(b\bar{i}j\bar{a}nkuravat)$; from $pr\bar{a}na-spanda$ there is $v\bar{a}san\bar{a}$, and from $v\bar{a}san\bar{a}$ there is $pr\bar{a}na-spanda$. The object of knowledge is inherent in the knowledge itself, and so with the cessation of knowledge the object of knowledge also ceases 1.

As a description of prāna we find in the Yoga-vāsistha that it is said to be vibratory activity (spanda-śakti) situated in the upper part of the body, while apāna is the vibratory activity in the lower part of the body. There is a natural prānāyāma going on in the body in waking states as well as in sleep. The mental outgoing tendency of the prānas from the cavity of the heart is called recaka, and the drawing in of the prānas (dvādašānguli) by the apāna activity is called pūraka. The interval between the cessation of one effort of apāna and the rise of the effort of prāna is the stage of kumbhaka. Bhusunda, the venerable old crow who was enjoying an exceptionally long life, is supposed to instruct Vasistha in VI. 24 on the subject of prāna. He compares the body to a house with the ego (ahamkāra) as the householder. It is supposed to be supported by pillars of three kinds², provided with nine doors (seven apertures in the head and two below), tightly fitted with the tendons (snāyu) as fastening materials and cemented with blood, flesh and fat. On the two sides of it there are the two nādīs, idā and pingalā, lying passive and unmanifested (nimīlite). There is also a machine (yantra) of bone and flesh (asthi-māmsa-maya) in the shape of three double lotuses (padma-yugma-traya) having pipes attached to them running both upwards and downwards and with their petals closing upon one another (anyonya-milat-komala-saddala). When it is slowly

> samūlam našyatah ksipram mūla-cchedād iva drumah, samvidam viddhi samvedyam bijam dhīratayā vinā na sambhavati samvedyam taila-hīnas tilo yathā na bahir nāntare kimcit samvedyam vidyate pṛthak.

Yoga-vāsiṣtha, v. 91. 66 and 67.

tri-prakāra-mahā-sthūnam, vi. 24. 14. The commentator explains the three kinds of pillars as referring to the three primal entities of Indian medicine—vāyu (air), pitta (bile) and kapha (phlegm)—vāta-pitta-kapha-lakṣaṇa-tri-prakārā mahāntah sthūnā viṣṭambha-kāṣṭhāni yasya. I am myself inclined to take the three kinds of pillars as referring to the bony structure of three parts of the body—the skull, the trunk, and the legs.

filled with air, the petals move, and by the movement of the petals the air increases. Thus increased, the air, passing upwards and downwards through different places, is differently named as prāṇa, apāna, samāna, etc. It is in the threefold machinery of the lotus of the heart (hrt-padma-yantra-tritaye) that all the prana forces operate and spread forth upwards and downwards like the rays from the moon's disc. They go out, return, repulse and draw and circulate. Located in the heart, the air is called prāna: it is through its power that there is the movement of the eyes, the operation of the tactual sense, breathing through the nose, digesting of food and the power of speech¹. The prāna current of air stands for exhalation (recaka) and the apana for inhalation (pūraka), and the moment of respite between the two operations is called kumbhaka; consequently, if the prāṇa and apāna can be made to cease there is an unbroken continuity of kumbhaka. But all the functions of the prāna, as well as the upholding of the body, are ultimately due to the movement of citta2. Though in its movement in the body the prāna is associated with air currents, still it is in reality nothing but the vibratory activity proceeding out of the thoughtactivity, and these two act and react upon each other, so that, if the vibratory activity of the body be made to cease, the thoughtactivity will automatically cease, and vice-versa. Thus through spanda-nirodha we have prāna-nirodha and through prāna-nirodha we have spanda-nirodha. In the Yoga-vāsistha, III. 13.31, vāyu is said to be nothing but a vibratory entity (spandate yat sa tad vāyuh).

In v. 78 it is said that *citta* and movement are in reality one and the same, and are therefore altogether inseparable, like the snow and its whiteness, and consequently with the destruction of one the other is also destroyed. There are two ways of destroying the *citta*, one by Yoga, consisting of the cessation of mental states, and the other by right knowledge. As water enters through the crevices of the earth, so air $(v\bar{a}ta)$ moves in the body through the $n\bar{a}d\bar{t}s$ and is called $pr\bar{a}na$. It is this $pr\bar{a}na$ air which, on account of its diverse functions and works, is differently named as $ap\bar{a}na$, etc.

¹ Yoga-vāsiṣṭha, vi. 24. It is curious to note in this connection that in the whole literature of the Āyur-veda there is probably no passage where there is such a clear description of the respiratory process. Pupphusa, or lungs, are mentioned only by name in Suśruta-saṃhitā, but none of their functions and modes of operation are at all mentioned. It is probable that the discovery of the respiratory functions of the lungs was made by a school of thought different from that of the medical school.

² Ibid. vi. 25. 61-74.

But it is identical with citta. From the movement of prāṇa there is the movement of citta, and from that there is knowledge (samvid). As regards the control of the movement of prāṇa, the Yoga-vāsiṣṭha advises several alternatives. Thus it holds that through concentrating one's mind on one subject, or through fixed habits of long inhalation associated with meditation, or through exhaustive exhalation, or the practice of not taking breath and maintaining kumbhaka, or through stopping the inner respiratory passage by attaching the tip of the tongue to the uvula¹, or, again, through concentration of the mind or thoughts on the point between the two brows, there dawns all of a sudden the right knowledge and the consequent cessation of prāṇa activities².

Professor Macdonell, writing on prāna in the Vedic Index, vol. II, says, "prāna, properly denoting 'breath,' is a term of wide and vague significance in Vedic literature." In the narrow sense prāna denotes one of the vital airs, of which five are usually enumerated, viz. prāna, apāna, vyāna, udāna and samāna. The exact sense of each of these breaths, when all are mentioned, cannot be determined. The word prāna has sometimes merely the general sense of breath, even when opposed to apāna. But its proper sense is beyond question "breathing forth," "expiration." But, though in a few cases the word may have been used for "breath" in its remote sense, the general meaning of the word in the Upaniṣads is not air current, but some sort of biomotor force, energy or vitality often causing these air currents³. It would be tedious to refer to the large number of relevant Upaniṣad texts and to try to ascertain after suitable discussion their exact significance in each

tālu-mūla-gatām yatnāj jihvayākramya ghantikām ūrdhva-randhra-gate prāņe prāņa-spando nirudhyate.

Yoga-vāsistha, v. 78. 25.

² It is important to notice in this connection that most of the forms of prāna-yāma as herein described, except the hatha-yoga process of arresting the inner air passage by the tongue, otherwise known as khecarī-mūdrā, are the same as described in the sūtras of Patanjali and the bhāṣya of Vyāsa; and this fact has also been pointed out by the commentator Ānandabodhendra Bhikṣu in his commentary on the above.

³ Difference between prāṇa and vāyu, Aitareya, II. 4; the nāsikya prāṇa, I. 4. Relation of prāṇa to other functions, KauṣItaki, II. 5; prāṇa as life, II. 8; prāṇa connected with vāyu, II. 12; prāṇa as the most important function of life, II. 14; prāṇa as consciousness, III. 2. Distinction of nāsikya and mukhya prāṇa, Chāndogya, II. 1-9; the function of the five vāyus, III. 3-5; prāṇa as the result of food, I. 8. 4; of water, VI. 5. 2, VI. 6. 5, VI. 7. 6; prāṇa connected with ātman, as everything else connected with prāṇa, like spokes of a wheel, Brhadāranyaka, II. 5. 15; prāṇa as strength, ibid. V. 14. 4; prāṇa as force running through the suṣumṇā nerve, Maitrī, VI. 21; etc.

case. The best way to proceed therefore is to refer to the earliest traditional meaning of the word, as accepted by the highest Hindu authorities. I refer to the Vedānta-sūtra of Bādarāyana, which may be supposed to be the earliest research into the doctrines discussed in the Upanisads. Thus the Vedānta-sūtra, 11. 4. 9 (na vāyu-kriye prthag upadeśāt), speaking of what may be the nature of prāṇa, says that it is neither air current (vāyu) nor action (kriyā), since prāņa has been considered as different from air and action (in the Upanisads). Sankara, commenting on this, says that from such passages as vah prānah sa eşa vāyuh pañca'vidhah prāno pāno vyāna udānah samānah (what is prāna is vāyu and it is fivefold, prāna, apāna, vyāna, udāna, samāna), it may be supposed that vāyu (air) is prāna, but it is not so, since in Chāndogya, III. 18. 4, it is stated that they are different. Again, it is not the action of the senses, as the Sāmkhva supposes; for it is regarded as different from the senses in Mundaka, II. 1. 3. The passage which identifies vāyu with prāna is intended to prove that it is the nature of vāyu that has transformed itself into the entity known as prāṇa (just as the human body itself may be regarded as a modification or transformation of ksiti, earth). It is not vāyu, but, as Vācaspati says, "vāyu-bheda," which Amalananda explains in his Vedanta-kalpataru as vāyoh parināma-rūpa-kārya-visesah, i.e. it is a particular evolutionary product of the category of vāyu. Sankara's own statement is equally explicit on the point. He says, "vāyur evāyam adhyātmam āpannah pañca-vyūho višesātmanāvatisthamānah prāno nāma bhanyate na tattvāntaram nāpi vāyu-mātram," i.e. it is vāyu which, having transformed itself into the body, differentiates itself into a group of five that is called vāyu; prāna is not altogether a different category, nor simply air. In explaining the nature of prāna in 11. 4. 10-12, Sankara says that prāna is not as independent as jīva (soul), but performs everything on its behalf, like a prime minister (rāja-mantrivaj jīvasya sarvārtha-karanatvena upakarana-bhūto na svatantrah). Prāṇa is not an instrument like the senses, which operate only in relation to particular objects; for, as is said in Chāndogya, v. 1. 6, 7, Brhad-āranyaka, iv. 3. 12 and Brhad-āranyaka, I. 3. 19, when all the senses leave the body the prāna continues to operate. It is that by the functioning of which the existence of the soul in the body, or life (iva-sthiti), and the passage of the *jīva* out of the body, or death (*jīvotkrānti*), are possible. The five vāyus are the five functionings of this vital

principle, just as the fivefold mental states of right knowledge, illusion, imagination (vikalpa), sleep and memo. y are the different states of the mind. Vācaspati, in commenting on Vedānta-sūtra, II. 4. 11, says that it is the cause which upholds the body and the senses (dehendriya-vidhārana-kāranam prānah) though it must be remembered that it has still other functions over and above the upholding of the body and the senses (na kevalam śarīrendriyadhāraņam asya kāryam, Vācaspati, ibid.). In Vedānta-sūtra, II. 4. 13, it is described as being atomic (anu), which is explained by Sankara as "subtle" (sūksma), on account of its pervading the whole body by its fivefold functionings. Vācaspati in explaining it says that it is called "atomic" only in a derivative figurative sense (upacarvate) and only on account of its inaccessible or indefinable character (duradhigamatā), though pervading the whole body. Govindananda, in commenting upon Vedanta-sūtra, II. 4. 9, says that prāna is a vibratory activity which upholds the process of life and it has no other direct operation than that (parispanda-rupaprānanānukūlatvād avāntara-vyāpārābhāvāt). This seems to be something like biomotor or life force. With reference to the relation of prāna to the motor organs or faculties of speech, etc., Sankara says that their vibratory activity is derived from prana (vāg-ādişu parispanda-lābhasya prānāyattatvam, II. 4. 19). There are some passages in the Vedānta-sūtra which may lead us to think that the five vāyus may mean air currents, but that it is not so is evident from the fact that the substance of the prana is not air (etat prānādi-pancakamākāśādi-gata-rajo-'mśebhyo militebhya utpadyate'). and the rajas element is said to be produced from the five bhūtas, and the prānas are called kriyātmaka, or consisting of activity. Rāma Tīrtha, commenting on the above passage of the Vedānta $s\bar{a}ra$, says that it is an evolutionary product of the essence of $v\bar{a}vu$ and the other bhūtas, but it is not in any sense the external air which performs certain physiological functions in the body (tathā mukhya-prāno 'pi vāyor bāhyasya sūtrātmakasya vikāro na śārīramadhye nabhovad vrtti-lābha-mātrena avasthito bāhya-vāyur eva)1. Having proved that in Vedanta prana or any of the five vayus means biomotor force and not air current, I propose now to turn to the Sāmkhya-Yoga.

The Sāmkhya-Yoga differs from the Vedānta in rejecting the view that the prāṇa is in any sense an evolutionary product of the

¹ Vidvan-mano-rañjant, p. 105, Jacob's edition, Bombay, 1916.

nature of vāyu. Thus Vijñānabhikṣu in his Vijñānāmṛta-bhāṣya on Vedānta-sūtra, II. 4. 10, says that prāṇa is called vāyu because it is self-active like the latter (svataḥ kriyāvattvena ubhayoḥ prāṇa-vāyvoḥ sājātyāt). Again, in II. 4. 9, he says that prāṇa is neither air nor the upward or downward air current (mukhya-prāṇo na vāyuḥ nāpi śārīrasya ūrdhv-ādho-vgamana-lakṣaṇā vāyu-kriyā).

What is prāna, then, according to Sāmkhya-Yoga? It is mahat-tattva, which is evolved from prakrti, which is called buddhi with reference to its intellective power and prāna with reference to its power as activity. The so-called five $v\bar{a}yus$ are the different functionings of the mahat-tattva (sāmānya-kārya-sādhāranam yat kāranam mahat-tattvam tasvaiva vrtti-bhedāh prānāpānādayah; see Vijnānāmrta-bhāsya, II. 4. 11). Again, referring to Sāmkhya-kārikā, 29, we find that the five vāyus are spoken of as the common functioning of buddhi, ahamkāra and manas, and Vācaspati says that the five vāyus are their life. This means that the three, buddhi, ahamkāra and manas, are each energizing, in their own way, and it is the joint operation of these energies that is called the fivefold prāna which upholds the body. Thus in this view also prāna is biomotor force and no air current. The special feature of this view is that this biomotor force is in essence a mental energy consisting of the specific functionings of buddhi, ahamkāra and manas1. It is due to the evolutionary activity of antahkarana. In support of this view the Sāmkhya-pravacana-bhāsya, II. 31, Vyāsa-bhāsya, III. 39, Vācaspati's Tattva-vaišāradī, Bhiksu's Yogavarttika, and Nāgeśa's Chāyā-vyākhyā thereon may be referred to. It is true, no doubt, that sometimes inspiration and expiration of external air are also called prāna; but that is because in inspiration and expiration the function of prana is active or it vibrates. It is thus the entity which moves and not mere motion that is called prāṇa². Rāmānuja agrees with Śankara in holding that prāna is not air (vāyu), but a transformation of the nature of air. But it should be noted that this modification of air is such a modification as can only be known by Yoga methods3.

The Vaisesika, however, holds that it is the external air which

¹ Gaudapāda's bhāṣya on the Śaṃkhya-kārikā, 29 compares the action of prāṇa to the movement of birds enclosed in a cage which moves the cage: compare Śaṅkara's reference to Vedānta-sūtra, 11. 4. 9.

² Rāmānuja-bhāṣya on Vedānta-sūtra, II. 4. 8.

See the Tattva-muktā-kalāpa, 53-55, and also Rāmānuja-bhāṣya and Śruta-prakāiikā, 11. 4. 1-15.

according to its place in the body performs various physiological functions1. The medical authorities also support the view that vāyu is a sort of driving and upholding power. Thus the Bhāvaprakāśa describes vāyu as follows: It takes quickly the dosas. dhātus and the malas from one place to another, is subtle, composed of rajo-guna; is dry, cold, light and moving. By its movement it produces all energy, regulates inspiration and expiration and generates all movement and action, and by upholding the keenness of the senses and the dhatus holds together the heat. senses and the mind². Vāhata in his Astānga-samgraha also regards $v\bar{a}yu$ as the one cause of all body movements, and there is nothing to suggest that he meant air currents3. The long description of Caraka (1. 12), as will be noticed in the next chapter, seems to suggest that he considered the vayu as the constructive and destructive force of the universe, and as fulfilling the same kinds of functions inside the body as well. It is not only a physical force regulating the physiological functions of the body, but is also the mover and controller of the mind in all its operations, as knowing, feeling and willing. Suśruta holds that it is in itself avyakta (unmanifested or unknowable), and that only its actions as operating in the body are manifested (avyakto vyakta-karmā ca).

In the Yoga-vāsistha, as we have already seen above, prāṇa or vāyu is defined as that entity which vibrates (spandate yat sa tad vāyuh, III. 13) and it has no other reality than vibration. Prāṇa itself is, again, nothing but the movement of the intellect as ahamkāra⁴.

 $Pr\bar{a}na$ is essentially of the nature of vibration (spanda), and mind is but a form of $pr\bar{a}na$ energy, and so by the control of the mind the five $v\bar{a}yus$ are controlled. The Saiva authorities also agree with the view that $pr\bar{a}na$ is identical with cognitive activity, which passes through the $n\bar{a}d\bar{i}s$ (nerves) and maintains all the body movement and the movement of the senses. Thus Kṣemarāja says that it is the cognitive force which passes in the form of $pr\bar{a}na$ through the $n\bar{a}d\bar{i}s$, and he refers to Bhatṭa Kallaṭa as also holding the same view, and $pr\bar{a}na$ is definitely spoken of by him as force (kuṭila-vāhinī $pr\bar{a}na$ -śaktih). Sivopādhyaya in his Vivrti on the

¹ Nyāya-kandalī of Śridhara, p. 48.

² Bhāva-prakāśa, Sen's edition, Calcutta, p. 47.

³ Vāhata's Astānga-samgraha and the commentary by Indu, Trichur, 1914, pp. 138, 212.

⁴ Yoga-vāsiṣṭha, 111. 14. ⁵ Ibid. v. 13, 78. ⁶ Śiva-sūtra-vimarśinī, 111. 43, 44.

Vijnāna-bhairava also describes prāna as force (śakti), and the Vijnāna-bhairava itself does the same¹. Bhatṭa Ānanda in his Vijnāna-kaumudī describes prāna as a functioning of the mind (citta-vrtti).

Stages of Progress.

It has been already said that the study of philosophy and association with saintly characters are the principal means with which a beginner has to set out on his toil for the attainment of salvation. In the first stage (prathamā bhūmikā) the enquirer has to increase his wisdom by study and association with saintly persons. The second stage is the stage of critical thinking (vicāraṇā); the third is that of the mental practice of dissociation from all passions, etc. (asanga-bhāvanā); the fourth stage (vilāpanī) is that in which through a right understanding of the nature of truth the world-appearance shows itself to be false; the fifth stage is that in which the saint is in a state of pure knowledge and bliss (śuddha-samvit-mayānanda-rūpa). This stage is that of the jīvan-mukta, in which the saint may be said to be half-asleep and half-awake (ardha-suptaprabuddha). The sixth stage is that in which the saint is in a state of pure bliss; it is a state which is more like that of deep dreamless sleep (susupta-sadrśa-sthiti). The seventh stage is the last transcendental state (turvātīta), which cannot be experienced by any saint while he is living. Of these the first three stages are called the waking state (jāgrat), the fourth stage is called the dream state (svapna), the fifth stage is called the dreamless (susupta) state, the sixth stage is an unconscious state called the turya, and the seventh stage is called the turvātīta3.

Desire (icchā) is at the root of all our troubles. It is like a mad elephant rushing through our system and trying to destroy it. The senses are like its young, and the instinctive root inclinations (vāsanā) are like its flow of ichor. It can only be conquered by the close application of patience (dhairya). Desire means the imaginations of the mind, such as "let this happen to me," and this is also called sankalpa. The proper way to stop this sort of imagining is to cease by sheer force of will from hoping or desiring in this manner, and for this one has to forget his memory; for

¹ Vijñāna-bhairava and Vivrti, verse 67.

² See the Nyāya-kandali of Śridhara, p. 48, and also Dinakari and Rāmarūdrī on the Siddhānta-muktāvali on Bhāṣā-parichcheda, p. 44.

³ Yoga-vāsistha, VI. 120.

so long as memory continues such hopes and desires cannot be stopped. The last stage, when all movement has ceased (aspanda) and all thoughts and imaginations have ceased, is a state of unconsciousness (avedanam)1. Yoga is also defined as the ultimate state of unconsciousness (avedana), the eternal state when everything else has ceased². In this state citta is destroyed, and one is reduced to the ultimate entity of consciousness; and thus, being free of all relations and differentiations of subject and object, one has no knowledge in this state, though it is characterized as bodhātmaka (identical with consciousness). This last state is indeed absolutely indescribable (avyapadesya), though it is variously described as the state of Brahman, Siva, or the realization of the distinction of prakrti and purusa3. The Yoga-vāsistha, however, describes this state not as being essentially one of bliss, but as a state of unconsciousness unthinkable and indescribable. It is only the fifth state that manifests itself as being of the nature of ananda; the sixth state is one of unconsciousness, which, it seems, can somehow be grasped; but the seventh is absolutely transcendental and indescribable.

The division of the progressive process into seven stages naturally reminds one of the seven stages of prajñā (wisdom) in Patañjali's Yoga-sūtra and Vyāsa-bhāsya. The seven stages of prajñā are there divided into two parts, the first containing four and the second three. Of these the four are psychological and the three are ontological, showing the stages of the disintegration of citta before its final destruction or citta-vimukti4. Here also the first four stages, ending with vilāpanī, are psychological, whereas the last three stages represent the advance of the evolution of citta towards its final disruption. But, apart from this, it does not seem that there is any one to one correspondence of the prajñā states of the Yoga-vāsistha with those of Patanjali. The Yoga-vāsistha occasionally mentions the name Yoga as denoting the highest state and defines it as the ultimate state of unconsciousness (avedanam vidur yogam) or as the cessation of the poisonous effects of desire⁵. In the first half of the sixth book, chapter 125, the ultimate state is described as the state of universal negation (sarvāpahnava). Existence of citta is pain, and its destruction bliss; the destruction

Yoga-vāsistha, vi. 126.
 Ibid. vi. 126. 99.
 Ibid. vi. 126. 71-72.
 See my A History of Indian Philosophy, vol. 1, Cambridge, 1922, p. 273.
 Icchā-viṣa-vikārasya viyogam yoga-nāmakam. Yoga-vāsistha, vi. 37. 1; also

ibid. vi. 126. 99.

of *citta* by cessation of knowledge—a state of neither pain nor pleasure nor any intermediate state—a state as feelingless as that of the stone $(p\bar{a}s\bar{a}navat-samam)$, is the ultimate state aimed at¹.

Karma, according to the Yoga-vāsiṣtha, is nothing but thought-activity manifesting itself as subject-object knowledge. Abandonment of karma therefore means nothing short of abandonment of thought-activity or the process of knowledge². Cessation of karma thus means the annihilation of knowledge. The stirring of karma or activity of thought is without any cause; but it is due to this activity that the ego and all other objects of thought come into being; the goal of all our endeavours should be the destruction of all knowledge, the unconscious, stone-like knowledgeless state³.

As there are seven progressive stages, so there are also seven kinds of beings according to the weakness or strength of their vāsanās. There are svapna-jāgara, sankalpa-jāgara, kevalajāgrat-sthita, cirāj-jāgrat-sthita, ghana-jāgrat-sthita, jāgrat-svapna and kṣina-jāgaraka. Svapna-jāgara (dream-awake) persons are those who in some past state of existence realized in dream experience all our present states of being and worked as dream persons (svapnanara). The commentator in trying to explain this says that it is not impossible; for everything is present everywhere in the spirit, so it is possible that we, as dream persons of their dream experience, should be present in their minds in their vāsanā forms (tad-antah-karane vāsanātmanā sthitāh)4. As both past and present have no existence except in thought, time is in thought reversible, so that our existence at a time future to theirs does not necessarily prevent their having an experience of us in dreams. For the limitations of time and space do not hold for thought, and as elements in thought everything exists everywhere (sarvam sarvatra vidyate)5. By dreams these persons may experience changes of life and even attain to final emancipation. The second class, the sankalpa-jāgaras, are those who without sleeping can by mere imagination continue to conceive all sorts of activities and existences, and may ultimately attain emancipation. The third class, the kevala-jāgaras, are those who are born in this life for the first time. When such beings pass

¹ This turiyātīta stage should not be confused with the sixth stage of suṣupti, which is often described as a stage of pure bliss.

sarveşām karmanām evam vedanam bijam uttamam svarūpam cetayitvāntas tatah spandah pravartate.

Yoga-vāsistha, VI. 11. 2. 26.

3 Ibid. 111. 15. 16.
4 Ibid. VI. 2. 50. 9. Tātparya-prakāśa.
5 Ibid.

through more than one life, they are called *cira-jāgaras*. Such beings, on account of their sins, may be born as trees, etc., in which case they are called *ghana-jāgaras*. Those of such beings suffering rebirth who by study and good association attain right knowledge are called *jāgrat-svapna-sthita*; and finally, those that have reached the *turya* state of deliverance are called *kṣṇa-jāgaraka*.

Bondage (bandha), according to the Yoga-väsistha, remains so long as our knowledge has an object associated with it, and deliverance (mokṣa) is realized when knowledge is absolutely and ultimately dissociated from all objects and remains in its transcendent purity, having neither an object nor a subject¹.

Methods of Right Conduct.

The Yoga-vāsistha does not enjoin severe asceticism or the ordinary kinds of religious gifts, ablutions or the like for the realization of our highest ends, which can only be achieved by the control of attachment (rāga), antipathy (dveṣa), ignorance (tamah), anger (krodha), pride (mada), and jealousy (mātsarva), followed by the right apprehension of the nature of reality². So long as the mind is not chastened by the clearing out of all evil passions, the performance of religious observances leads only to pride and vanity and does not produce any good. The essential duty of an enquirer consists in energetic exertion for the achievement of the highest end, for which he must read the right sort of scriptures (sac-chāstra) and associate with good men³. He should somehow continue his living and abandon even the slightest desire of enjoyment (bhogagandham parityajet), and should continue critical thinking (vicāra). On the question whether knowledge or work, jñāna or karma, is to be accepted for the achievement of the highest end, the Yogavāsistha does not, like Sankara, think that the two cannot jointly be taken up, but on the contrary emphatically says that, just as

> jñānasya jñeyatāpattir bandha ity abhidhīyate tasyaiva jñeyatā-śāntir mokṣa ity abhidhīyate. Yoga-vāsiṣtha, VI. II. 190. 1.

sva-pauruşa-prayatnena vivekena vikāšinā sa devo jñāyate rāma na tapah-snāna-karmabhiḥ.

Ibid. 111. 6. 9.

Good men are defined in the Yoga-vāsistha as follows:

deše yam sujana-prāyā lokāh sādhum pracaksate
sa visistah sa sādhuh syāt tam prayatnena samsrayet.

Ibid. 111. 6. 20.

a bird flies with its two wings, so an enquirer can reach his goal through the joint operation of knowledge and work¹.

The main object of the enquirer being the destruction of citta, all his endeavours should be directed towards the uprooting of instinctive root inclinations (vāsanā), which are the very substance and root of the citta. The realization of the truth (tattva-jñāna), the destruction of the vāsanās and the destruction of the citta all mean the same identical state and are interdependent on one another, so that none of them can be attained without the other. So, abandoning the desire for enjoyment, one has to try for these three together; and for this one has to control one's desires on one hand and practise breath-control (prāna-nirodhena) on the other; and these two would thus jointly co-operate steadily towards the final goal. Such an advancement is naturally slow, but this progress, provided it is steady, is to be preferred to any violent efforts to hasten (hatha) the result2. Great stress is also laid on the necessity of self-criticism as a means of loosening the bonds of desire and the false illusions of world-appearance and realizing the dissociation from attachment (asanga)3.

Yoga-vāsistha, Śankara Vedānta and Buddhist Viinānavāda.

To a superficial reader the idealism of the Yoga-vāsiṣṭha may appear to be identical with the Vedānta as interpreted by Śaṅkara; and in some of the later Vedānta works of the Śaṅkara school, such as the Jīvan-mukti-viveka, etc., so large a number of questions dealt with in the Yoga-vāsiṣṭha occur that one does not readily imagine that there may be any difference between this idealism and that of Śaṅkara. This point therefore needs some discussion.

The main features of Sankara's idealism consist in the doctrine that the self-manifested subject-objectless intelligence forms the ultimate and unchangeable substance of both the mind (antahkarana) and the external world. Whatever there is of change and mutation is outside of this Intelligence, which is also the Reality. But, nevertheless, changes are found associated with this reality or Brahman, such as the external forms of objects and the diverse mental states. These are mutable and have therefore a different kind of indescribable existence from Brahman; but still they are

¹ Yoga-vāsistha, I. 1. 7, 8.

somehow essentially of a positive nature¹. Sankara's idealism does not allow him to deny the existence of external objects as apart from perceiving minds, and he does not adhere to the doctrine of esse est percipi. Thus he severely criticizes the views of the Buddhist idealists, who refuse to believe in the existence of external objects as apart from the thoughts which seem to represent them. Some of these arguments are of great philosophical interest and remind one of similar arguments put forth by a contemporary British Neo-realist in refutation of Idealism.

The Buddhists there are made to argue as follows: When two entities are invariably perceived simultaneously they are identical; now knowledge and its objects are perceived simultaneously; therefore the objects are identical with their percepts. Our ideas have nothing in the external world to which they correspond, and their existence during dreams, when the sense-organs are universally agreed to be inoperative, shows that for the appearance of ideas the operation of the sense-organs, indispensable for establishing connection with the so-called external world, is unnecessary. If it is asked how, if there are no external objects, can the diversity of percepts be explained, the answer is that such diversity may be due to the force of vāsanās or the special capacity of the particular moment associated with the cognition². If the so-called external objects are said to possess different special capacities which would account for the diversity of percepts, the successive moments of the mental order may also be considered as possessing special distinctive capacities which would account for the diversity of percepts generated by those cognition moments. In dreams it is these diverse cognition moments which produce diversity of percepts.

Sankara, in relating the above argument of the Buddhist idealist, says that external objects are directly perceived in all our perceptions, and how then can they be denied? In answer to this, if it is held that there is no object for the percepts excepting the sensations, or that the existence of anything consists in its being perceived, that can be refuted by pointing to the fact that the independent existence of the objects of perception, as apart from their being perceived, can be known from the perception itself, since the

¹ See the account of Śańkara Vedānta in my A History of Indian Philosophy, vol. 1, Cambridge, 1922, chapter x.

² Kasyacid eva jñāna-kşaņasya sa tādṛśaḥ sāmarthyātiśayo vāsanā-parināmaḥ. Bhāmatī, 11. 11. 28.

perceiving of an object is not the object itself; it is always felt that the perception of the blue is different from the blue which is perceived; the blue stands forth as the object of perception and the two can never be identical. This is universally felt and acknowledged, and the Buddhist idealist, even while trying to refute it, admits it in a way, since he says that what is inner perception appears as if it exists outside of us, externally. If externality as such never existed, how could there be an appearance of it in consciousness? When all experiences testify to this difference between knowledge and its object, the inner mental world of thoughts and ideas and the external world of objects, how can such a difference be denied? You may see a jug or remember it: the mental operation in these two cases varies, but the object remains the same.

The above argument of Sankara against Buddhist idealism conclusively proves that he admitted the independent existence of objects, which did not owe their existence to anybody's knowing them. External objects had an existence different from and independent of the existence of the diversity of our ideas or percepts.

But the idealism of the Yoga-vāsistha is more like the doctrine of the Buddhist idealists than the idealism of Sankara. For according to the Yoga-vāsistha it is only ideas that have some sort of existence. Apart from ideas or percepts there is no physical or external world having a separate or independent existence. Esse est percipi is the doctrine of the Yoga-vāsistha, while Sankara most emphatically refutes such a doctrine. A later exposition of Vedanta by Prakaśānanda, known as Vedā. 1-siddhānta-muktāvalī, seems to derive its inspiration from the Yoga-vāsistha in its exposition of Vedānta on lines similar to the idealism of the Yoga-vāsistha, by denying the existence of objects not perceived (ajñāta-sattvānabhyupagama)2. Prakāśānanda disputes the ordinarily accepted view that cognition of objects arises out of the contact of senses with objects; for objects for him exist only so long as they are perceived, i.e. there is no independent external existence of objects apart from their perception. All objects have only perceptual existence (prātītīkasattva). Both Prakāśānanda and the Yoga-vāsistha deny the existence of objects when they are not perceived, while Sankara not only admits their existence, but also holds that they exist in the same form in which they are known; and this amounts virtually to the admission that our knowing an object does not add

¹ Sankara's bhāṣya on the Brahma-sūtra, 11. 2. 28.

² Siddhānta-muktāvalī. See The Pandit, new series, vol. xI, pp. 129-139.

anything to it or modify it to any extent, except that it becomes known to us through knowledge. Things are what they are, even though they may not be perceived. This is in a way realism. The idealism of Sańkara's Vedānta consists in this, that he held that the Brahman is the immanent self within us, which transcends all changeful experience and is also ultimate reality underlying all objects perceived outside of us in the external world. Whatever forms and characters there are in our experience, internal as well as external, have an indescribable and indefinite nature which passes by the name of $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}^1$. Sańkara Vedānta takes it for granted that that alone is real which is unchangeable; what is changeful, though it is positive, is therefore unreal. The world is only unreal in that special sense; $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ belongs to a category different from affirmation and negation, namely the category of the indefinite.

The relation of the real, the Brahman, to this māyā in Śankara Vedānta is therefore as indefinite as the māyā; the real is the unchangeable, but how the changeful forms and characters become associated with it or what is their origin or what is their essence, Sankara is not in a position to tell us. The Yoga-vāsistha however holds that formless and characterless entity is the ultimate truth; it is said to be the Brahman, cit, or void (sūnya); but, whatever it may be, it is this characterless entity which is the ultimate truth. This ultimate entity is associated with an energy of movement, by virtue of which it can reveal all the diverse forms of appearances. The relation between the appearances and the reality is not external, indefinite and indescribable, as it is to Sankara, but the appearances, which are but the unreal and illusory manifestations of the reality, are produced by the operation of this inner activity of the characterless spirit, which is in itself nothing but a subject-objectless pure consciousness. But this inner and immanent movement does not seem to have any dialectic of its own, and no definite formula of the method of its operation for its productions can be given; the imaginary shapes of ideas and objects, which have nothing but a mere perceptual existence, are due not to a definite order, but to accident or chance (kākatālīya). Such a conception is indeed very barren, and it is here that the system of the Yoga-vāsistha is particularly defective. Another important defect of the system is that it does not either criticize knowledge or admit its validity, and the characterless entity which forms its absolute is never revealed in experience.

¹ See my A History of Indian Philosophy, vol. 1, ch. x.

With Sankara the case is different; for he holds that this absolute Brahman is also the self which is present in every experience and is immediate and self-revealed. But the absolute of the Yoga-vāsistha is characterless and beyond experience. The state of final emancipation, the seventh stage, is not a stage of bliss, like the Brahmahood of the Vedanta, but a state of characterlessness and vacuity almost. In several places in the work it is said that this ultimate state is differently described by various systems as Brahman, distinction of prakrti and puruşa, pure vijñāna and void (śūnya), while in truth it is nothing but a characterless entity. Its state of mukti (emancipation) is therefore described, as we have already seen above, as pāsānavat or like a stone, which strongly reminds us of the Vaisesika view of mukti. On the practical side it lays great stress on paurusa, or exertion of free-will and energy, it emphatically denies daiva as having the power of weakening paurusa or even exerting a superior dominating force, and it gives us a new view of karma as meaning only thought-activity. As against Sankara, it holds that knowledge (jñāna) and karma may be combined together, and that they are not for two different classes of people, but are both indispensable for each and every right-minded enquirer. The principal practical means for the achievement of the highest end of the Yoga-vāsistha are the study of philosophical scripture, association with good men and self-criticism. It denounces external religious observances without the right spiritual exertions as being worse than useless. Its doctrine of esse est percipi and that no experiences have any objective validity outside of themselves, that there are no external objects to which they correspond and that all are but forms of knowledge, reminds us very strongly of what this system owes to Vijñanavada Buddhism. But, while an important Vijnanavada work like the Lankavatara-sūtra tries to explain through its various categories the origin of the various appearances in knowledge, no such attempt is made in the Yogavāsistha, where it is left to chance. It is curious that in the Sanskrit account of Vijñānavāda by Hindu writers, such as Vācaspati and others, these important contributions of the system are never referred to either for the descriptive interpretation of the system or for its refutation. While there are thus unmistakable influences of Vijnanavada and Gaudapada on the Yoga-vasistha, it seems to have developed in close association with the Saiva, as its doctrine of spanda, or immanent activity, so clearly shows. This point will, however, be more fully discussed in my treatment of Saiva philosophy.

CHAPTER XIII

SPECULATIONS IN THE MEDICAL SCHOOLS

It may be urged that the speculations of the thinkers of the medical schools do not deserve to be recorded in a History of Indian Philosophy. But the force of such an objection will lose much in strength if it is remembered that medicine was the most important of all the physical sciences which were cultivated in ancient India, was directly and intimately connected with the Sāmkhya and Vaisesika physics and was probably the origin of the logical speculations subsequently codified in the Nyāya-sūtras1. The literature contains, moreover, many other interesting ethical instructions and reveals a view of life which differs considerably from that found in works on philosophy; further, it treats of many other interesting details which throw a flood of light on the scholastic methods of Indian thinkers. Those, again, who are aware of the great importance of Hatha Yoga or Tantra physiology or anatomy in relation to some of the Yoga practices of those schools will no doubt be interested to know for purposes of comparison or contrast the speculations of the medical schools on kindred points of interest. Their speculations regarding embryology, heredity and other such points of general enquiry are likely to prove interesting even to a student of pure philosophy.

Ayur-veda and the Atharva-Veda.

Suśruta says that Äyur-veda (the science of life) is an upānga of the Atharva-Veda and originally consisted of 100,000 verses in one thousand chapters and was composed by Brahmā before he created all beings (Suśruta-saṃhitā, 1. 1. 5). What upānga exactly means in this connection cannot easily be satisfactorily explained. Dalhaṇa (A.D. 1100) in explaining the word in his Nibandha-saṃgraha, says that an upānga is a smaller anga (part)—"angam eva alpatvād upāngam." Thus, while hands and legs are regarded as angas, the toes or the palms of the hands are called upānga. The Atharva-Veda contains six thousand verses and about

¹ The system of Sāṃkhya philosophy taught in Caraka-saṃhitā, IV. I, has already been described in the first volume of the present work, pp. 213-217.

one thousand prose lines. If the Ayur-veda originally contained 100,000 verses, it cannot be called an upanga of the Atharva-Veda, if upānga is to mean a small appendage, as Dalhana explains it. For, far from being a small appendage, it was more than ten times as extensive as the Atharva-Veda. Caraka, in discussing the nature of Ayur-veda, says that there was never a time when life did not exist or when intelligent people did not exist, and so there were always plenty of people who knew about life, and there were always medicines which acted on the human body according to the principles which we find enumerated in the Ayur-veda. Avur-veda was not produced at any time out of nothing, but there was always a continuity of the science of life; when we hear of its being produced, it can only be with reference to a beginning of the comprehension of its principles by some original thinker or the initiation of a new course of instruction at the hands of a gifted teacher. The science of life has always been in existence, and there have always been people who understood it in their own way; it is only with reference to its first systematized comprehension or instruction that it may be said to have a beginning¹. Again, Caraka distinguishes Äyur-veda as a distinct Veda, which is superior to the other Vedas because it gives us life, which is the basis of all other enjoyments or benefits, whether they be of this world or of another². Vāgbhata, the elder, speaks of Ayur-veda not as an upanga, but as an upaveda of the Atharva-Veda3. The Mahā-bhārata, II. 11. 33, speaks of upaveda, and Nīlakantha, explaining this, says that there are four upavedas, Ayur-veda, Dhanurveda, Gāndharva and Artha-śāstra, Brahma-vaivarta, a later purāna. says that after creating the Rk, Yajus, Sāma and Atharva Brahmā created the Ayur-veda as the fifth Veda4. Roth has a quotation in his Wörterbuch to the effect that Brahmā taught Ayur-veda, which was a vedānga, in all its eight parts5.

¹ Caraka, I. 30. 24. This passage seems to be at variance with Caraka, I. 1. 6; for it supposes that diseases also existed always, while Caraka, I. 1. 6 supposes that diseases broke out at a certain point of time. Is it an addition by the reviser Drdhabala?

^a Caraka, 1, 1, 42 and Avur-veda-dīpikā of Cakrapāni on it.

³ Aştānga-samgraha, 1. 1. 8. Gopatha-Brāhmana, 1. 10, however, mentions five vedas, viz. Sarpa-veda, Pisāca-veda, Asura-veda, Itihāsa-veda and Purāna-veda, probably in the sense of upaveda, but Āyur-veda is not mentioned in this connection.

Brahma-vaivarta-purāņa, 1. 16. 9, 10.

⁶ Brahmā vedāngam aṣṭāngam āyur-vedam abhāṣata. This quotation, which occurs in the Wörterbuch in connection with the word āyur-veda, could not

We thus find that Ayur-veda was regarded by some as a Veda superior to the other Vedas and respected by their followers as a fifth Veda, as an upaveda of the Atharva-Veda, as an independent upaveda, as an upanga of the Atharva-Veda and lastly as a vedunga. All that can be understood from these conflicting references is that it was traditionally believed that there was a Veda known as Avur-veda which was almost co-existent with the other Vedas, was entitled to great respect and was associated with the Atharva-Veda in a special way. It seems, however, that the nature of this association consisted in the fact that both of them dealt with the curing of diseases and the attainment of long life; the one principally by incantations and charms, and the other by medicines. What Suśruta understands by calling Ayur-veda an upanga of the Atharva-Veda is probably nothing more than this. Both the Atharva-Veda and Ayur-veda dealt with the curing of diseases, and this generally linked them together in the popular mind, and, the former being the holier of the two, on account of its religious value, the latter was associated with it as its literary accessory. Dārila Bhaṭṭa, in commenting upon Kauśika-sūtra, 25. 2, gives us a hint as to what may have been the points of contact and of difference between Ayur-veda and the Atharva-Veda. Thus he says that there are two kinds of diseases; those that are produced by unwholesome diet, and those produced by sins and transgressions. The Ayur-veda was made for curing the former, and the Atharvan practices for the latter1. Caraka himself counts penance (prāyaś-citta) as a name of medicine (bhesaja) and Cakrapani, in commenting on this, says that as prāyaś-citta removes the diseases produced by sins, so medicines (bhesaja) also remove diseases, and thus prāyaś-citta is synonymous with bhesaja2.

But what is this Ayur-veda? We now possess only the treatises of Caraka and Suśruta, as modified and supplemented by later revisers. But Suśruta tells us that Brahmā had originally produced the Ayur-veda, which contained 100,000 verses spread over one thousand chapters, and then, finding the people weak in intelligence and short-lived, later on divided it into eight subjects, be verified owing to some omission in the reference. It should be noted that vedānga is generally used to mean the six angas, viz. Sikṣā, Kalpa, Vyākaraṇa, Chandas, Jyotis and Nirukta.

² Caraka, vi. 1. 3 and Ayur-veda-dipikā, ibid.

¹ dvi-prakārā vyādhayaḥ āhāra-nimittā asubhanimittās ceti; tatra āhāra-samutthānām vaisamya āyurvedam cakāra adharma-samutthānām tu sāstramidam ucyate. Dārila's comment on Kausika-sūtra, 25. 2.

viz. surgery (śalya), treatment of diseases of the head (śālākya), treatment of ordinary diseases (kāya-cikitsā), the processes of counteracting the influences of evil spirits (bhūta-vidyā), treatment of child diseases (kaumāra-bhrtya), antidotes to poisons (agadatantra), the science of rejuvenating the body (rasāyana) and the science of acquiring sex-strength (vājīkaraņa)1. The statement of Suśruta that Ayur-veda was originally a great work in which the later subdivisions of its eight different kinds of studies were not differentiated seems to be fairly trustworthy. The fact that Ayurveda is called an upānga, an upaveda, or a vedānga also points to its existence in some state during the period when the Vedic literature was being composed. We hear of compendiums of medicine as early as the Prātiśākhyas2. It is curious, however, that nowhere in the Upanisads or the Vedas does the name "Ayur-veda" occur, though different branches of study are mentioned in the former³. The Astanga Ayur-veda is, however, mentioned in the Mahā-bhārata, and the three constituents (dhātu), vāyu (wind), pitta (bile) and ślesman (mucus), are also mentioned; there is reference to a theory that by these three the body is sustained and that by their decay the body decays (etaih kṣīṇaiś ca kṣīyate), and Kṛṣṇātreya is alluded to as being the founder of medical science (cikitsitam)4. One of the earliest systematic mentions of medicines unmixed with incantations and charms is to be found in the Mahā-vagga of the Vinaya-Piṭaka, where the Buddha is prescribing medicines for his disciples⁵. These medicines are of a simple nature, but they bear undeniable marks of methodical arrangement. We are also told there of a surgeon, named Ākāśagotto, who made surgical operations (satthakamma) on fistula (bhagandara). In Rockhill's Life of the Buddha we hear of Iīvaka as having studied medicine in the Taxila Univer-

¹ Suśruta-saṃhitā, 1. 1. 5-9.

² R.V. Prātišākhya, 16. 54 (55), mentioned by Bloomfield in *The Atharva-Veda and Gopatha-Brāhmaṇa*, p. 10. The name of the medical work mentioned is Subheṣaja.

³ Rg-vedam bhagavo 'dhyemi Yajur-vedam sāma-vedam ātharvaņas caturtham itihāsa-purāṇam pañcamam vedānām vedam pitryam rāsim daivam nidhim vāko-vākyam ekāyanam deva vidyām brahma-vidyām bhūta-vidyām kṣattra-vidyām nakṣatra-vidyām sarpa-deva-jana-vidyām, Chāndogya, VII. 1. 2. Of these bhūta-vidyā is counted as one of the eight tantras of Āyur-veda, as we find it in the Suśruta-samhitā or elsewhere.

⁴ Mahā-bhārata, 11. 11. 25, XII. 342. 86, 87, XII. 210. 21. Kṛṣṇātreya is referred to in Caraka-samhitā, VI. 15. 129, and Cakrapāṇi, commenting on this, says that Kṛṣṇātreya and Ātreya are two authorities who are different from Ātreya Punarvasu, the great teacher of the Caraka-samhitā.

Vinaya-Pitaka, Mahā-vagga, VI. 1-14.

sity under Atreva¹. That even at the time of the Atharva-Veda there were hundreds of physicians and an elaborate pharmacopæia, treating diseases with drugs, is indicated by a mantra therein which extols the virtues of amulets, and speaks of their powers as being equal to thousands of medicines employed by thousands of medical practitioners2. Thus it can hardly be denied that the practice of medicine was in full swing even at the time of the Atharva-Veda; and, though we have no other proofs in support of the view that there existed a literature on the treatment of diseases, known by the name of Avur-veda, in which the different branches, which developed in later times, were all in an undifferentiated condition, yet we have no evidence which can lead us to disbelieve Suśruta, when he alludes definitely to such a literature. The Caraka-samhitā also alludes to the existence of a beginningless traditional continuity of Ayur-veda, under which term he includes life, the constancy of the qualities of medical herbs, diet, etc., and their effects on the human body and the intelligent enquirer. The early works that are now available to us, viz. the Caraka-samhitā and Suśrutasamhitā, are both known as tantras3. Even Agniveśa's work (Agniveśa-samhitā), which Caraka revised and which was available at the time of Cakrapāni, was a tantra. What then was the Avurveda, which has been variously described as a fifth Veda or an upaveda, if not a literature distinctly separate from the tantras now available to us4? It seems probable, therefore, that such a literature existed, that the systematized works of Agnivesa and others superseded it and that, as a consequence, it came ultimately to be lost. Caraka, however, uses the word "Ayur-veda" in the general sense of "science of life." Life is divided by Caraka into four kinds, viz. sukha (happy), duhkha (unhappy), hita (good) and ahita (bad). Sukham āyuh is a life which is not affected by bodily or mental diseases, is endowed with vigour, strength, energy, vitality, activity and is full of all sorts of enjoyments and successes. The opposite of this is the asukham ayuh. Hitam ayuh is the life of a person who is always willing to do good to all beings, never steals others' property, is truthful, self-controlled, self-restrained and works

¹ Rockhill's Life of the Buddha, p. 65.

² Atharva-veda, 11. 9. 3, śatam hy asya bhisajah sahasram uta vīrudhah. ³ Gurv-ājñā-lābhānantaram etat-tantra-karanam. Cakrapāṇi's Āyur-veda-dīpikā, 1. 1. 1; also Caraka-samhitā, 1. 1. 52.

⁴ Cakrapāņi quotes the Agniveša-samhitā in his Ayur-veda-dīpikā, vi. 3. 177-185.

with careful consideration, does not transgress the moral injunctions, takes to virtue and to enjoyment with equal zeal, honours revered persons, is charitable and does what is beneficial to this world and to the other. The opposite of this is called *ahita*. The object of the science of life is to teach what is conducive to all these four kinds of life and also to determine the length of such a life.

But, if Ayur-veda means "science of life." what is its connection with the Atharva-Veda? We find in the Caraka-samhitā that a physician should particularly be attached (bhaktir ādeśyā) to the Atharva-Veda. The Atharva-Veda deals with the treatment of diseases (cikitsā) by advising the propitiatory rites (svastyayana), offerings (bali), auspicious oblations (mangala-homa), penances (niyama), purificatory rites (prāyaś-citta), fasting (upavāsa) and incantations (mantra)2. Cakrapāni, in commenting on this, says that, since it is advised that physicians should be attached to the Atharva-Veda, it comes to this, that the Atharva-Veda becomes Ayur-veda (Atharva-vedasya āyurvedatvam uktam bhavati). The Atharva-Veda, no doubt, deals with different kinds of subjects, and so Ayurveda is to be considered as being only a part of the Atharva-Veda (Atharva-vedaikadeśa eva āyur-vedah). Viewed in the light of Cakrapāni's interpretation, it seems that the school of medical teaching to which Caraka belonged was most intimately connected with the Atharva-Veda. This is further corroborated by a comparison of the system of bones found in the Caraka-samhitā with that of the Atharva-Veda. Suśruta himself remarks that, while he considers the number of bones in the human body to be three hundred, the adherents of the Vedas hold them to be three hundred and sixty; and this is exactly the number counted by Caraka³. The Atharva-Veda does not count the bones; but there are with regard to the description of bones some very important points in

¹ Caraka, 1. 1. 40 and 1. 30. 20-23: hitāhitam sukham duḥkham āyus tasya hitāhitam mānam ca tac ca yatroktam āyur-vedah sa ucyate.

In I. 30. 20 the derivation of Ayur-veda is given as āyur-vedayati iti āyur-vedah, i.e. that which instructs us about life. Suśruta suggests two alternative derivations—āyur asmin vidyate anena vā āyur vindatīty āyur-vedah, i.e. that by which life is known or examined, or that by which life is attained. Suśruta-samhitā, I. 1. 14.

² Caraka, 1. 30. 20.

³ Trini saşaşihāny asthi-satāni veda-vādino bhāşante; salya-tantre tu triny eva satāni. Susruta-samhitā, 111. 5. 18. Trini şaşthāni satāny asthnām saha dantanakhena. Caraka-samhitā, 1v. 7. 6.

which the school to which Caraka belonged was in agreement with the Atharva-Veda, and not with Suśruta. Dr Hoernle, who has carefully discussed the whole question, thus remarks: "A really important circumstance is that the Atharvic system shares with the Charakiyan one of the most striking points in which the latter differs from the system of Susruta, namely, the assumption of a central facial bone in the structure of the skull. It may be added that the Atharvic term pratistha for the base of the long bones obviously agrees with the Charakiyan term adhisthana and widely differs from the Suśrutiyan kūrca¹." The Satapatha-brāhmana, which, as Dr Hoernle has pointed out, shows an acquaintance with both the schools to which Caraka and Suśruta respectively belonged, counts, however, 360 bones, as Caraka did2. The word veda-vādino in Suśruta-samhitā, III. 5. 18 does not mean the followers of Ayur-veda as distinguished from the Vedas, as Dalhana interprets it, but is literally true in the sense that it gives us the view which is shared by Caraka with the Atharva-Veda, the Śatapatha-brāhmaṇa, the legal literature and the purānas, which according to all orthodox estimates derive their validity from the Vedas. If this agreement of the Vedic ideas with those of the Atreva school of medicine, as represented by Caraka, be viewed together with the identification by the latter of Avur-Veda with Atharva-Veda, it may be not unreasonable to suppose that the Atreya school, as represented by Caraka, developed from the Atharva-Veda. This does not preclude the possibility of there being an Ayur-veda of another school, to which Susruta refers and from which, through the teachings of a series of teachers, the Suśrutasamhitā developed. This literature probably tried to win the respect of the people by associating itself with the Atharva-Veda, and by characterizing itself as an upānga of the Atharva-Veda³.

Jayanta argues that the validity of the Vedas depends on the fact that they have been composed by an absolutely trustworthy

¹ A. F. Rudolf Hoernle's Studies in the Medicine of Ancient India, p. 113. 2 Ibid. pp. 105-106. See also Satapatha-brāhmana, x. 5. 4. 12, also XII. 3. 2. 3 and 4, XII. 2. 4. 9-14, VIII. 6. 2. 7 and 10. The Yājñavalkya-Dharma-šāstra, Viṣnu-smṛti, Viṣnu-dharmottara and Agni-Purāṇa also enumerate the bones of the human body in agreement with Caraka as 360. The source of the last three was probably the first (Yājñavalkya-Dharma-šāstra), as has been suggested by Dr Hoernle in his Studies in the Medicine of Ancient India, pp. 40-46. But none of these non-medical recensions are of an early date: probably they are not earlier than the third or the fourth century A.D.

³ The word upānga may have been used, however, in the sense that it was a supplementary work having the same scope as the Atharva-Veda,

person (āpta). As an analogy he refers to Ayur-veda, the validity of which is due to the fact that it has been composed by trustworthy persons (apta). That the medical instructions of the Ayurveda are regarded as valid is due to the fact that they are the instructions of trustworthy persons (yato yatrāptavādatram tatra prāmānyam iti vyāptir grhyate). But it may be argued that the validity of Ayur-veda is not because it has for its author trustworthy persons, but because its instructions can be verified by experience (nanvāyur-vedādau prāmānyam pratyaksādi-samvādāt pratipannam nāpta-prāmānyāt). Jayanta in reply says that the validity of Ayurveda is due to the fact of its being composed by trustworthy persons; and it can be also verified by experience. He argues also that the very large number of medicines, their combinations and applications, are of such an infinite variety that it would be absolutely impossible for any one man to know them by employing the experimental methods of agreement and difference. It is only because the medical authorities are almost omniscient in their knowledge of things that they can display such superhuman knowledge regarding diseases and their cures, which can be taken only on trust on their authority. His attempts at refuting the view that medical discoveries may have been carried on by the applications of the experimental methods of agreement and difference and then accumulated through long ages are very weak and need not be considered here.

The fourth Veda, known as the Atharva-Veda or the Brahma-Veda, deals mainly with curatives and charms¹. There is no reason to suppose that the composition of this Veda was later than even the earliest Rg-Vedic hymns; for never, probably, in the history

¹ Some of the sacred texts speak of four Vedas and some of three Vedas, e.g. "asya mahato bhūtasya niḥśvasitam etad rg-vedoyajur-vedaḥ sāma-vedo 'tharvān-girasaḥ,'' Brh. 11. 4. 10 speaks of four Vedas; again "Yam rṣayas trayī-vido viduḥ rcaḥsāmāni yajūmṣi," Taittirīya-brāhmaṇa,1.11. 1.26 speaks of three Vedas. Sāyaṇa refers to the Mīmāmṣā-sūtra, 11. 1. 37 "seṣ Yajuḥ-sabdaḥ" and says that all the other Vedas which are neither Rk nor Sāma are Yajuş (Sāyaṇa's Upodghāta to the Atharva-Veda, p. 4, Bombay edition, 1895). According to this interpretation the Atharva-Veda is entitled to be included within Yajuş, and this explains the references to the three Vedas. The Atharva-Veda is referred to in the Gopatha-Brāhmaṇa, 11. 16 as Brahma-Veda, and two different reasons are adduced. Firstly, it is said that the Atharva-Veda was produced by the ascetic penances of Brahman; secondly it is suggested in the Gopatha-Brahmāna that all Atharvanic hymns are curative (bheṣaja), and whatever is curative is immortal, and whatever is immortal is Brahman—"Ye'tharvāṇas tad bheṣajaṃ, yad bheṣajaṃ tad amṛtaṃ, yad amṛtaṃ tad Brahma." Gopatha-brāhmaṇa, 111. 4. See also Nyāya-mañjarī, pp. 250-261.

of India was there any time when people did not take to charms and incantations for curing diseases or repelling calamities and injuring enemies. The Rg-Veda itself may be regarded in a large measure as a special development of such magic rites. The hold of the Atharvanic charms on the mind of the people was probably very strong, since they had occasion to use them in all their daily concerns. Even now, when the Rg-Vedic sacrifices have become extremely rare, the use of Atharvanic charms and of their descendants, the Tantric charms of comparatively later times, is very common amongst all classes of Hindus. A very large part of the income of the priestly class is derived from the performance of auspicious rites (svastvavana), purificatory penances (prāyaścitta), and oblations (homa) for curing chronic and serious illnesses, winning a law-suit, alleviating sufferings, securing a male issue to the family, cursing an enemy, and the like. Amulets are used almost as freely as they were three or four thousand years ago, and snake-charms and charms for dog-bite and others are still things which the medical people find it difficult to combat. Faith in the mysterious powers of occult rites and charms forms an essential feature of the popular Hindu mind and it oftentimes takes the place of religion in the ordinary Hindu household. It may therefore be presumed that a good number of Atharvanic hymns were current when most of the Rg-Vedic hymns were not yet composed. By the time, however, that the Atharva-Veda was compiled in its present form some new hymns were incorporated with it, the philosophic character of which does not tally with the outlook of the majority of the hymns. The Atharva-Veda, as Sayana points out in the introduction to his commentary, was indispensable to kings for warding off their enemies and securing many other advantages, and the royal priests had to be versed in the Atharvanic practices. These practices were mostly for the alleviation of the troubles of an ordinary householder, and accordingly the Grhya-sūtras draw largely from them. The oldest name of the Atharva-Veda is Atharvangirasah, and this generally suggested a twofold division of it into hymns attributed to Atharvan and others attributed to Angiras; the former dealt with the holy (śānta), promoting of welfare (paustika) and the curatives (bhesajāni), and the latter with offensive rites for molesting an enemy (ābhicārika), also called terrible (ghora). The purposes which the Atharvanic charms were supposed to fulfil were numerous. These may

be briefly summed up in accordance with the Kausika-sūtra as follows: quickening of intelligence, accomplishment of the virtues of a Brahmacarin (religious student); acquisition of villages, cities, fortresses and kingdoms, of cattle, riches, food grains, children, wives, elephants, horses, chariots, etc.; production of unanimity (aikamatya) and contentment among the people; frightening the elephants of enemies, winning a battle, warding off all kinds of weapons, stupefying, frightening and ruining the enemy army, encouraging and protecting one's own army, knowing the future result of a battle, winning the minds of generals and chief persons, throwing a charmed snare, sword, or string into the fields where the enemy army may be moving, ascending a chariot for winning a battle, charming all instruments of war music, killing enemies, winning back a lost city demolished by the enemy; performing the coronation ceremony, expiating sins, cursing, strengthening cows, procuring prosperity; amulets for promoting welfare, agriculture, the conditions of bulls, bringing about various household properties, making a new-built house auspicious, letting loose a bull (as a part of the general rites—śrāddha), performing the rites of the harvesting month of Agrahayana (the middle of November to the middle of December): securing curatives for various otherwise incurable diseases produced by the sins of past life; curing all diseases generally, Fever, Cholera, and Diabetes; stopping the flow of blood from wounds caused by injuries from weapons, preventing epileptic fits and possession by the different species of evil spirits, such as the bhūta, piśāca, Brahma-rāksasa, etc.; curing vāta, pitta and ślesman, heart diseases, Jaundice, white leprosy, different kinds of Fever, Pthisis, Dropsy; curing worms in cows and horses, providing antidotes against all kinds of poisons, supplying curatives for the diseases of the head, eyes, nose, ears, tongue, neck and inflammation of the neck; warding off the evil effects of a Brahmin's curse; arranging women's rites for securing sons, securing easy delivery and the welfare of the foetus; securing prosperity, appeasing a king's anger, knowledge of future success or failure; stopping too much rain and thunder, winning in debates and stopping brawls, making rivers flow according to one's wish, securing rain, winning in gambling, securing the welfare of cattle and horses, securing large gains in trade, stopping inauspicious marks in women, performing auspicious rites for a new house, removing the sins of prohibited

acceptance of gifts and prohibited priestly services; preventing bad dreams, removing the evil effects of unlucky stars under whose influence an infant may have been born, paying off debts, removing the evils of bad omens, molesting an enemy; counteracting the molesting influence of the charms of an enemy, performing auspicious rites, securing long life, performing the ceremonies at birth, naming, tonsure, the wearing of holy thread, marriage, etc.; performing funeral rites, warding off calamities due to the disturbance of nature, such as rain of dust, blood, etc., the appearance of yakṣas, rākṣasas, etc., earthquakes, the appearance of comets, and eclipses of the sun and moon.

The above long list of advantages which can be secured by the performance of Atharvanic rites gives us a picture of the time when these Atharvanic charms were used. Whether all these functions were discovered when first the Atharvanic verses were composed is more than can be definitely ascertained. At present the evidence we possess is limited to that supplied by the Kauśika-sūtra. According to the Indian tradition accepted by Sayana the compilation of the Atharva-Veda was current in nine different collections, the readings of which differed more or less from one another. These different recensions, or śākhās, were Paippalāda, Tānda, Manda, Saunakīya, Jājala, Jalada, Brahmavāda, Devādarśa, and Cāranavaidya. Of these only the Paippalada and Saunakīya recensions are available. The Paippalada recension exists only in a single unpublished Tübingen manuscript first discovered by Roth¹. It has been edited in facsimile and partly also in print. The Saunakīya recension is what is now available in print. The Saunakīya school has the Gopatha-brāhmana as its Brāhmana and five sūtra works, viz. Kauśika, Vaitāna, Naksatra-kalpa, Āngirasakalpa and Santi-kalpa2; these are also known as the five kalpas (pañca-kalpa). Of these the Kausika-sūtra is probably the earliest and most important, since all the other four depend upon it3. The Nakṣatra-kalpa and Śānti-kalpa are more or less of an astrological character. No manuscript of the Angirasa-kalpa seems to be available; but from the brief notice of Savana it appears to

¹ Der Atharvaveda in Kashmir by Roth.

² The Kausika-sūtra is also known as Samhitā-vidhi and Samhitā-kalpa. The

three kalpas, Nakşatra, Āngirasa and Sānti, are actually Parisistas.

3 'tatra Sākalyena samhitā-mantrānām śāntika-paustikādisu karmasu viniyogavidhānāt samhitā-vidhir nāma Kausikam sūtram; tad eva itarair upajivyatvāt. Upodhghāta of Sāyaṇa to the Atharva-Veda, p. 25.

have been a manual for molesting one's enemies (abhicāra-karma). The Vaitāna-sūtra dealt with some sacrificial and ritualistic details. The Kaušika-sūtra was commented on by Dārila, Keśava, Bhadra and Rudra. The existence of the Cāraṇa-vaidya (wandering medical practitioners) śākhā reveals to us the particular śākhā of the Atharva-Veda, which probably formed the old Āyur-veda of the Ātreya-Caraka school, who identified the Atharva-Veda with Āyur-veda. The suggestion, contained in the word Cāraṇa-vaidya, that the medical practitioners of those days went about from place to place, and that the sufferers on hearing of the arrival of such persons approached them, and sought their help, is interesting¹.

Bones in the Atharva-Veda and Ayur-veda.

The main interest of the present chapter is in that part of the Atharva-Veda which deals with curative instructions, and for this the Kausika-sūtra has to be taken as the principal guide. Let us first start with the anatomical features of the Atharva-Veda². The bones counted are as follows: 1. heels (pārṣṇī, in the dual number, in the two feet)³; 2. ankle-bones (gulphau in the dual number)⁴;

- ¹ Is it likely that the word Caraka (literally, a wanderer) had anything to do with the itinerant character of Caraka's profession as a medical practitioner?
 - ² Hymns II. 33 and X. 2 are particularly important in this connection.
- ³ Caraka also counts one pārṣṇi for each foot. Hoernle (Studies in the Medicine of Ancient India, p. 128) remarks on the fact, that Caraka means the backward and downward projections of the os calcis, that is, that portion of it which can be superficially seen and felt, and is popularly known as the heel. The same may be the case with the Atharva-Veda. Susruta probably knew the real nature of it as a cluster (kūrca); for in Šārīra-sthāna v1 he speaks of the astragalus as kūrca-šīras, or head of the cluster, but he counts the pārṣṇi separately. Hoernle suggests that by pārṣṇi Suśruta meant the os calcis, and probably did not think that it was a member of the tarsal cluster (kūrca). It is curious that Vāgbhaṭa I makes a strange confusion by attributing one pārṣṇi to each hand (Aṣṭāṇga-saṃgraha, 11. 5; also Hoernle, pp. 91-96).
- * Gulpha means the distal processes of the two bones of the leg, known as the malleoli. As counted by Caraka and also by Suśruta, there are four gulphas. See Hoernle's comment on Suśruta's division, Hoernle, pp. 81, 82, 102–104. Suśruta, III. v. 19, has "tala-kūrca-gulpha-samiritāni daśa," which [9alhaṇa explains as tala (5 śalākās and the one bone to which they are attached)—6 bones, kūrca—2 bones, gulpha—2 bones. Hoernle misinterpreted Dalhaṇa, and, supposing that he spoke of two kūrcas and two gulphas in the same leg, pointed out a number of inconsistencies and suggested a different reading of the Suśruta text. His translation of valaya as "ornament" in this connection is also hardly correct; valaya probably means "circular." Following Dalhaṇa, it is possible that the interpretation is that there are two bones in one cluster (kūrca) in each leg, and the two bones form one circular bone (valayāsthi) of one gulpha for each leg. If this is accepted, much of what Hoernle has said on the point loses its value and becomes hypercritical. There are two gulphas, or one in each leg, according as the constituent pieces, or the one whole valayāsthi, is referred to. On my interpretation Suśruta

3. digits (angulayah in the plural number)1; 4. metacarpal and metatarsal bones (ucchlankhau in the dual number, i.e. of the hands and feet)2; 5. base (pratistha)3; 6. the knee-caps (asthivantau in the dual)4; 7. the knee-joints (jānunoh sandhi)5; 8. the shanks (janghe in the dual)6; 9. the pelvic cavity (śroni in the dual)7; 10. the thigh bones (uru in the dual)8; 11. the breast bones

knew of only two bones as forming the kūrca, and there is no passage in Suśruta to show that he knew of more. The os calcis would be the pārsņi, the astragalus, the kūrca-śiras, the two malleoli bones and the two gulpha bones.

Both Caraka and Suśruta count sixty of these phalanges (pāṇi-pādānguli).

whereas their actual number is fifty-six only.

² Caraka counts these metacarpal and metatarsal bones (pāṇi-pāda-śalākā) as twenty, the actual number. Susruta collects them under tala, a special term used by him. His combined tala-kūrca-gulpha includes all the bones of the hand and foot excluding the anguli bones (phalanges).

3 Caraka uses the term pāṇi-pāda-śalākādhiṣṭhāna, Yājñavalkya, sthāna, and Susruta, kūrca. Caraka seems to count it as one bone. Kūrca means a network of (1) flesh (māmsa), (2) śirā, (3) snāyu, (4) bones (māmsa-śirā-snāyv-asthi-jālāni). All these four kinds of network exist in the two joints of the hands and feet.

4 Hoernle remarks that in the Atharva-Veda asthīvat and jānu are synonymous; but the text, x. 2. 2, seems clearly to enumerate them separately. The asthīvat is probably the patella bone. Caraka uses the terms jānu and kapālikā, probably for the knee-cap (patella) and the elbow pan (kapālikā). Kapālikā means a small shallow basin, and this analogy suits the construction of the elbow pan. Suśruta uses the term kūrpara (elbow pan), not in the ordinary list of bones in Sārīra, v. 10, but at the time of counting the marma in ibid. VI. 25.

⁵ This seems to be different from asthivat (patella).

- 6 The tibia and the fibula in the leg. Caraka, Bhela, Suśruta and Vāgbhaţa I describe this organ rightly as consisting of two bones. The Atharva-Veda justly describes the figure made by them as being a fourfold frame having its ends closely connected together (catustayam yujyate samhitāntam). The corresponding two bones of the fore-arm (aratni)—radius and ulna—are correctly counted by Caraka. Curiously enough, Susruta does not refer to them in the bone-list. The bāhu is not enumerated in this connection.
- ⁷ Caraka speaks of two bones in the pelvic cavity, viz. the os innominatum on both sides. Modern anatomists think that each os innominatum is composed of three different bones: ilium, the upper portion, ischium, the lower part, and the pubis, the portion joined to the other innominate bone. The ilium and ischium, however, though they are two bones in the body of an infant, become fused together as one bone in adult life, and from this point of view the counting of ilium and ischium as one bone is justifiable. In addition to these a separate bhagāsthi is counted by Caraka. He probably considered (as Hoernle suggests) the sacrum and coccyx to be one bone which formed a part of the vertebral column. By bhagāsthi he probably meant the pubic bone; for Cakrapāni, commenting upon bhagāsthi, describes it as "abhimukham kaṭi-sandhāna-kārakam tiryag-asthi" (the cross bone which binds together the haunch bones in front). Suśruta, however, counts five bones: four in the guda, bhaga, mitamba and one in the trika. Nitamba corresponds to the two śroni-phalaka of Caraka, bhaga to the bhagāsthi, or pubic bone, guda to the coccyx and trika to the triangular bone sacrum. Susruta's main difference from Caraka is this, that, while the latter counts the sacrum and coccyx as one bone forming part of the vertebral column, the former considers them as two bones and as separate from the vertebral column. Vāgbhaţa takes trika and guda as one bone, but separates it from the vertebral column.

8 Caraka, Suśruta and Vägbhata I count it correctly as one bone in each leg. Caraka calls it ūru-nalaka.

 $(uras)^1$; 12. the windpipe $(gr\bar{t}v\bar{a}h)$ in the plural)²; 13. the breast (stanau) in the dual)³; 14. the shoulder-blade (kaphodau) in the dual)⁴; 15. the shoulder-bones $(skandh\bar{a}n)$ in the plural)⁵; 16. the backbone $(prst\bar{t}h)$

¹ Caraka counts fourteen bones in the breast. Indian anatomists counted cartilages as new bones (taruṇa asthi). There are altogether ten costal cartilages on either side of the sternum. But the eighth, ninth and tenth cartilages are attached to the seventh. So, if the seventh, eighth, ninth and tenth cartilages are considered as a single bone, there are altogether seven bones on either side of the sternum. This gives us the total number of fourteen which Caraka counts. The sternum was not counted by Caraka separately. With him this was the result of the continuation of the costal cartilages attached to one another without a break. Suśruta and Vāgbhaṭa I curiously count eight bones in the breast, and this can hardly be accounted for. Hoernle's fancied restoration of the ten of Suśruta does not appear to be proved. Yājñavalkya, however, counts seventeen, i.e. adds the sternum and the eighth costal cartilage on either side to Caraka's fourteen bones, which included these three. Hoernle supposes that Yājñavalkya's number was the real reading in Suśruta; but his argument is hardly convincing.

² The windpipe is composed of four parts, viz. larynx, trachea, and two bronchi. It is again not a bone, but a cartilage; but it is yet counted as a bone by the Indian anatomists, e.g. Caraka calls it "jatru" and Suśruta "kanthanāḍi." Hoernle has successfully shown that the word jatru was used in medical books as synonymous with windpipe or neck generally. Hoernle says that originally the word denoted cartilaginous portions of the neck and breast (the windpipe and the costal cartilages), as we read in the Satapatha-brāhmaṇa: "tasmād imā ubhayatra parsavo baddhāh kikasāsu ca jatruṣu" (the ribs are fastened at either end, exteriorly to the thoracic vertebrae and interiorly to the costal cartilages—jatru). In medical works it means the cartilaginous portion of the neck, i.e. the windpipe (Caraka), and hence is applied either to the neck generally or to the sterno-clavicular articulation at the base of the neck (Suśruta). It is only as late as the sixth or seventh century A.D. that, owing to a misinterpretation of the anatomical terms sandhi and aṃsa, it was made to mean clavicle. See Hoernle's Studies in the Medicine of Ancient India, p. 168.

3 "Pārśvayoś catur-viṃśatiḥ pārśvayos tāvanti caiva sthālakāni tāvanti caiva sthālakārbudāni," i.e. there are twenty-four bones in the pārśva (ribs), twenty-four sthālakas (sockets), and twenty-four sthālakārbudas (tubercles). Suśruta speaks of there being thirty-six ribs on either side. A rib consists of a shaft and a head; "at the point of junction of these two parts there is a tubercle which articulates with the transverse process of corresponding vertebrae, and probably this tubercle is arbuda." There are, no doubt, twenty-four ribs. The sthālakas and arbudas cannot properly be counted as separate bones; but, even if they are counted, the total number ought to be 68 bones, as Hoernle points out, and not 72, since the two lowest have no tubercles.

* Kaphoda probably means scapula or shoulder-blade. Caraka uses the word amsa-phalaka. Caraka uses two other terms, akṣaka (collar-bone) and amsa. This word amsa seems to be a wrong reading, as Hoernle points out; for in reality there are only two bones, the scapula and the collar-bone. But could it not mean the acromion process of the scapula? Though Suśruta omits the shoulder-blade in the counting of bones in Sārīra, v. (for this term is akṣaka-samjñe), yet he distinctly names amsa-phalaka in Sārīra, vI. 27, and describes it as triangular (trika-sambaddhe); and this term has been erroneously interpreted as grīvāyā amsa-dvayasya ca yaḥ samyogas sa trikaḥ by Dalhaṇa. The junction of the collar-bone with the neck cannot be called trika.

⁵ Caraka counts fifteen bones in the neck. According to modern anatomists there are, however, only seven. He probably counted the transverse processes

in the plural)¹; 17. the collar-bones (amsau in the dual)²; 18. the brow (lalāṭa); 19. the central facial bone (kakāṭikā)³; 20. the pile of the jaw (hanu-citya)⁴; 21. the cranium with temples (kapālam)⁵.

and got the number fourteen, to which he added the vertebrae as constituting one single bone.

Sustruta counts nine bones. The seventh bone contains spinous and transverse processes and was probably therefore counted by him as three bones, which,

together with the other six, made the total number nine.

¹ Caraka counts forty-three bones in the vertebral column (prstha-gatāsthi), while the actual number is only twenty-six. Each bone consists of four parts, viz. the body, the spinous process, and the two transverse processes, and Caraka counts them all as four bones. Susruta considers the body and the spinous process as one and the two transverse processes as two; thus for the four bones of Caraka. Susruta has three. In Caraka the body and the spinous process of the twelve thoracic vertebrae make the number twenty-four; the five lumbar vertebrae (body + spine + two transverses) make twenty. He adds to this the sacrum and the coccyx as one pelvic bone, thus making the number forty-five; with Susruta we have twelve thoracic vertebrae, six lumbar vertebrae, twelve transverses, i.e. thirty bones. The word kīkasa (A.V. 11. 33. 2) means the whole of the spinal column, anūkya (A.V. 11. 33. 2) means the thoracic portion of the spine, and udara the abdominal portion.

² Both Caraka and Suśruta call this akṣaka and count it correctly as two bones. Cakrapāṇi describes it as "akṣa-vivakṣakau jatru-sandheḥ kīlakau" (they are called akṣaka because they are like two beams—the fastening-pegs of the

junction of the neck-bones).

Suśruta further speaks of amsa-pītha (the glenoid cavity into which the head of the humerus is inserted) as a samudga (casket) bone. The joint of each of the anal bones, the pubic bone and the hip bone (nitamba) is also described by him as a samudga. This is the "acetabulum, or cotyloid cavity, in which the head of the femur, is lodged" (Suśruta, Śārīra, v. 27, amsa-pītha-guda-bhaga-nitambeşu samudgāḥ).

³ Lalāṭa is probably the two superciliary ridges at the eye-brow and kakāṣikā the lower portion, comprising the body of the superior maxillary together with the molar and nasal bones. Caraka counts the two molar (ganda-kūṭa), the two nasal, and the two superciliary ridges at the eye-brows as forming one continuous

bone (ekāsthi nāsikā-ganda-kūta-lalātam).

⁴ According to Caraka, the lower jaw only is counted as a separate bone (ekam hanv-asth), and the two attachments are counted as two bones (dve hanu-mūla-bandhane). Suśruta, however, counts the upper and the lower jaws as two bones (hanvor dve). Though actually each of these bones consists of two bones, they are so fused together that they may be considered as one, as was done by Suśruta. Caraka did not count the upper jaw, so he counted the sockets of the teeth (dantolūkhala) and the hard palate (tāluṣaka). Suśruta's counting of the upper hanu did not include the palatine process; so he also counts the tālu (ekam tāluni).

⁵ Sankha is the term denoting the temples, of which both Caraka and Suśruta count two. Caraka counts four cranial bones (catvāri śirah-kapālāmi) and Suśruta six (śirasi ṣat). The brain-case consists of eight bones. Of these two are inside and hence not open to view from outside. So there are only six bones which are externally visible. Of these the temporal bones have already been counted as śankha, thus leaving a remainder of four bones. Suśruta divides the frontal, parietal and occipital bones into two halves and considers them as separate bones, and he thus gets the number six. Both the frontal and occipital are really each composed of two bones, which become fused in later life.

Though the author has often differed from Dr Hoernle, yet he is highly indebted to his scholarly explanations and criticisms in writing out this particular

section of this chapter.

Organs in the Atharva-Veda and Ayur-veda.

We have no proofs through which we could assert that the writer of the Atharva-Veda verse knew the number of the different bones to which he refers; but it does not seem possible that the references made to bones could have been possible without a careful study of the human skeleton. Whether this was done by some crude forms of dissection or by a study of the skeletons of dead bodies in a state of decay is more than can be decided. Many of the organs are also mentioned, such as the heart (hrdaya), the lungs (kloma)¹, the gall-bladder (halikṣṇa)², the kidneys (matsnābhyām)³, the liver (yakna), the spleen (plihan), the stomach and the smaller intestine (antrebhyaḥ), the rectum and the portion above it (gudābhyaḥ), the

1 Caraka counts kloma as an organ near the heart, but he does not count pupphusa. In another place (Cikitsā, XVII. 34) he speaks of kloma as one of the organs connected with hiccough (hrdayam kloma kantham ca tālukam ca samāśritā mṛdvī sā kṣudra-hikveti nṛṇām sādhyā prakīrtitā). Cakrapāņi describes it as pipāsā-sthāna (seat of thirst). But, whatever that may be, since Caraka considers its importance in connection with hiccough, and, since he does not mention pupphusa (lungs-Mahä-vyutpatti, 100), kloma must mean with him the one organ of the two lungs. Susruta speaks of pupphusa as being on the left side and kloma as being on the right. Since the two lungs vary in size, it is quite possible that Suśruta called the left lung pupphusa and the right one kloma. Vāgbhata I follows Suśruta. The Atharva-Veda, Caraka, Suśruta, Vāgbhata and other authorities use the word in the singular, but in Brhad-aranyaka, I. the word kloma is used in the plural number; and Sankara, in commenting on this, says that, though it is one organ, it is always used in the plural (nitya-bahu-vacananta). This, however, is evidently erroneous, as all the authorities use the word in the singular. His description of it as being located on the left of the heart (yakrc ca klomānas ca hrdayasyādhastād daksinottarau māmsu-khandau, Br. 1. 1, commentary of Śańkara) is against the verdict of Suśruta, who places it on the same side of the heart as the liver. The Bhava-prakasa describes it as the root of the veins, where water is borne or secreted. That kloma was an organ which formed a member of the system of respiratory organs is further proved by its being often associated with the other organs of the neighbourhood, such as the throat (kantha) and the root of the palate (tālu-mūla). Thus Caraka says, "udakavahānām srotasām tālu-mūlam kloma ca....Jihvā-tālv-ostha-kantha-kloma-sosam ...drstvā" (Vimāna, v. 10). Śārngadhara, 1. v. 45, however, describes it as a gland of watery secretions near the liver (jala-vāhi-śirā-mūlam tṛṣṇā-tchādanakam tilam).

² This word does not occur in the medical literature. Sāyaṇa describes it as "etat-saṇṇāakāt tat-saṃbandhāt māṇsa-piṇḍa-viśeṣāt." This, however, is quite useless for identification. Weber thinks that it may mean "gall" (Indische Studien, 13, 206). Macdonell considers it to be "some particular intestine" (Vedic Index, vol. 11, p. 500).

³ Sāyana paraphrases matsnābhyām as vrkyābhyām. Caraka's reading is vukka. Sāyana gives an alternative explanation: "matsnābhyām ubhaya-pāršva-sambandhābhyām vrkyābhyām tat-samīpa-stha-pittādhāra-pātrābhyām." If this explanation is accepted, then matsnā would mean the two saes of pitta (bile) near the kidneys. The two matsnās in this explanation would probably be the gall bladder and the pancreas, which latter, on account of its secretions, was probably considered as another pittādhāra.

larger intestine (vanisthu, explained by Sāyaṇa as sthavirāntra), the abdomen (udara), the colon (plāśi)¹, the umbilicus (nābhi), the marrow (majjābhyaḥ), the veins (snāvabhyaḥ) and the arteries (dhamanibhyaḥ)². Thus we see that almost all the important organs reported in the later Ātreya-Caraka school or the Suśruta school were known to the composers of the Atharvaṇic hymns³.

Bolling raises the point whether the Atharva-Veda people knew the difference between the śirā and the dhamani, and says, "The apparent distinction between veins and arteries in 1. 17. 3 is offset by the occurrence of the same words in VII. 35. 2 with the more general sense of 'internal canals' meaning entrails, vagina, etc.showing how vague were the ideas held with regard to such subjects4." But this is not correct; for there is nothing in 1. 17. 3 which suggests a knowledge of the distinction between veins and arteries in the modern sense of the terms, such as is not found in VII. 35. 2. The sūkta I. 17 is a charm for stopping the flow of blood from an injury or too much hemorrhage of women. A handful of street-dust was to be thrown on the injured part and the hymn was to be uttered. In 1.17.1 it is said, "Those hirās (veins?) wearing red garment (or the receptacles of blood) of woman which are constantly flowing should remain dispirited, like daughters without a brother⁵." Sāyana, in explaining the next verse, I. 17. 2, says that it is a prayer to dhamanis. This verse runs as follows: "Thou (Sāyaṇa says 'thou śirā') of the lower part, remain (i.e. 'cease from letting out blood,' as Sayana says), so thou of the upper part remain, so thou of the middle part, so thou

² Sāyaṇa says that snāva means here the smaller śirās and dhamanī the thicker ones (the arteries)—sūksmāḥ śirāḥ snāva-śabdena ucyante dhamani-śabdena sthūlāḥ (A.V. 11. 33).

¹ Plāśi is paraphrased by Sāyaṇa as "bahu-cchidrān mala-pātrāt" (the vessel of the excreta with many holes). These holes are probably the orifices of the glands inside the colon (mala-pātra). The Śatapatha-brāhmaṇa, XII., 9, 1, 3 enumerates all these organs as being sacred to certain gods and sacrificial instruments—hrdayam evāsyaindraḥ puroḍāśaḥ, yakrt sāvitraḥ, klomā vāruṇaḥ, matsne evāsyāśvattham ca pātram audumbaram ca pittam naiyagrodham antrāṇi sthālyaḥ gudā upāśayāni śyena-pātre plīhāsandī nābhiḥ kumbho vaniṣṭhuḥ plāśih sātātrṇṇā tad yat sā bahudhā vitrṇṇā bhavati tasmāt plāśir bahudhā vikṛttaḥ. Vasti, or bladder, is regarded as the place where the urine collects (A.V. 1, 3, 6).

³ A.V. x. 9 shows that probably dissection of animals was also practised. Most of the organs of a cow are mentioned. Along with the organs of human beings mentioned above two other organs are mentioned, viz. the pericardium (puritat) and the bronchial tubes (saha-kanthikā). A.V. x. 9. 15.

Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics, "Diseases and medicine: Vedic Sayana paraphrases hirā as śirā and describes it as a canal (nādī) for carrying blood (rajo-vahana-nādyaḥ), and the epithet "lohita-vāsasah" as either "wearing red garment" or "red," or "the receptacle of blood" (rudhirasya nivāsa-bhūtāḥ).

small, so thou the big dhamani¹." In the third verse both the hiras and dhamanis are mentioned. "These in the middle were formerly (letting out blood) among a hundred dhamanis and thousands of hirās (and after that) all the other (nādīs) were playing with (others which have ceased from letting out blood)²." Hymn VII. 35 is for stopping the issue of a woman who is an enemy. The third verse says, "I close with a stone the apertures of a hundred hirās and a thousand dhamanis." Sāyana, in explaining this verse, says that the hiras are fine nadis inside the ovary (garbhadhāraṇārtham antar-avasthitāh sūkṣmā yā nādyah) and the dhamanis the thicker nādīs round the ovary for keeping it steady (garbhāśavasya avastambhikā bāhyā sthūlā yā nādyah). The only point of difference between this verse and those of 1. 17 is that here śirās are said to be a hundred and dhamanis a thousand, whereas in the latter, the dhamanis were said to be a hundred and the sirās a thousand. But, if Sāyana's interpretation is accepted, the dhamanis still appear as the bigger channels and the sirās as the finer ones. Nādī seems to have been the general name of channels. But nowhere in the Atharva-Veda is there any passage which suggests that the distinction between veins and arteries in the modern sense of the terms was known at the time. In A.V. 1. 3. 6 we hear of two nādis called gavīnyau for carrying the urine from the kidneys to the bladder3. The gods of the eight quarters and other gods are said to have produced the foetus and, together with the god of delivery (Sūsā), facilitated birth by loosening the bonds of the womb4.

¹ The previous verse referred to sirās as letting out blood, whereas this verse refers to dhamanis as performing the same function. Sāyaṇa also freely paraphrases dhamani as sirā (mahī mahatī sthūlatarā dhamaniḥ sirā tiṣṭhād it tiṣṭhaty eva, anena prayogena nivṛtta-rudhira-srāvā avatiṣṭhatām).

² Here both the dhamani and the hirā are enumerated. Sāyaṇa here says that dhamanis are the important nādīs in the heart (hṛdaya-gatānām pradhāna-nādīnām), and hirās or śirās are branch nādīs (śirāṇām śākhā-nādīnām). The number of dhamanis, as here given, is a hundred and thus almost agrees with the number of nādīs in the heart given in the Kaṭha Upaniṣad, VI. 16 (śatam caikā ca hṛdayaṣya nādyaḥ).

The Praina Upanisad, 111. 6 also speaks of a hundred nādīs, of which there are thousands of branches.

³ antrebhyo vinirgatasya mūtrasya mūtrāśaya-prāpti-sādhane pārśva-dvayasthe nādyau gavīnyau ity ucyete. Sāyana's Bhāṣya. In 1. 11. 5 two nādts called gavīnikā are referred to and are described by Sāyana as being the two nādts on the two sides of the vagina controlling delivery (gavīnike yoneh pārśva-vartinyau nirgamana-pratibandhike nādyau—Sāyana). In one passage (A.V. 11. 12. 7) eight dhamanis called manya are mentioned, and Sāyana says that they are near the neck. A nādt called sikatāvatī, on which strangury depends, is mentioned in A.V. 1. 17. 4.
⁴ Another goddess of delivery, Sūsāni, is also invoked.

The term jarāyu is used in the sense of placenta, which is said to have no intimate connection with the flesh and marrow, so that when it falls down it is eaten by the dogs and the body is in no way hurt. A reference is found to a first aid to delivery in expanding the sides of the vagina and pressing the two gavinikā nādīs1. The snāvas (tendons) are also mentioned along with dhamanis, and Sayana explains them as finer sirās (śuksmāh śirāh snāva-śabdena ucyante). The division of dhamanis, śirās and snāvas thus seems to have been based on their relative fineness: the thicker channels (nādīs) were called dhamanis, the finer ones were called sirās and the still finer ones snāvas. Their general functions were considered more or less the same, though these probably differed according to the place in the body where they were situated and the organs with which they were associated. It seems to have been recognized that there was a general flow of the liquid elements of the body. This probably corresponds to the notion of srotas, as we get it in the Caraka-samhitā, and which will be dealt with later on. Thus A.V. x. 2. 11 says, "who stored in him floods turned in all directions moving diverse and formed to flow in rivers, quick (tīvrā), rosy (arunā), red (lohinī), and copper dark (tāmra-dhūmrā), running all ways in a man upward and downward?" This clearly refers to the diverse currents of various liquid elements in the body. The semen, again, is conceived as the thread of life which is being spun out². The intimate relation between the heart and the brain seems to have been dimly apprehended. Thus it is said, "together with his needle hath Atharvan sewn his head and heart3." The theory of the vāyus, which we find in all later literature, is alluded to, and the prana, apana, vyana and samana are mentioned⁴. It is however difficult to guess what these prāna. apāna, etc. exactly meant. In another passage of the Atharva-Veda we hear of nine prānas (nava prānān navabhih sammimīte). and in another seven prānas are mentioned⁵. In another passage

s Mūrdhānam asya saṃstvyātharvā hṛdayam ca yat (A.V. x. 2. 26). See also Griffith's translations.

⁵ Sapta prāṇān aṣṭau manyas (or majjñas) tāṃs te vṛścāmi brahmanā (A.V. II. 12. 7). The Taittiriya-brāhmaņa, 1. 2. 3. 3 refers to seven prāņas, sapta vai

¹ vi te bhinadmi vi yonim vi gavīnike, A.V. 1. 11. 5.

² Ko asmin reto nyadadhāt tantur ātayatām iti (Who put the semen in him, saying, Let the thread of life be spun out? A.V. x. 2. 17).

Ko asmin prāṇam avayat ko apānam vyānam u samānam asmin ko deve 'dhi śiśrāya pūrușe (Who has woven prāṇa, apāna, vyāna and samāna into him and which deity is controlling him? A.V. x. 2. 13).

we hear of a lotus with nine gates (nava-dvāram) and covered with the three gunas1. This is a very familiar word in later Sanskrit literature, as referring to the nine doors of the senses, and the comparison of the heart with a lotus is also very common. But one of the most interesting points about the passage is that it seems to be a direct reference to the guna theory, which received its elaborate exposition at the hands of the later Sāmkhya writers: it is probably the earliest reference to that theory. As we have stated above, the real functions of the prāṇa, etc. were not properly understood; prāna was considered as vital power or life and it was believed to be beyond injury and fear. It was as immortal as the earth and the sky, the day and the night, the sun and the moon, the Brahmanas and the Ksattriyas, truth and falsehood, the past and the future². A prayer is made to prana and apāna for protection from death (prāṇāpānau mṛtyor mā pātam svāhā)3. In A.V. 111. 6. 8 manas and citta are separately mentioned and Sayana explains manas as meaning antahkarana, or inner organ, and citta as a particular state of the manas (mano-vrttivisesena), as thought4. Here also the heart is the seat of consciousness. Thus in a prayer in III. 26. 6 it is said, "O Mitra and Varuna, take away the thinking power (citta) from the heart (hrt) of this woman and, making her incapable of judgment, bring her under my control⁵." The ojas with which we are familiar in later medical works of Caraka and others is mentioned in A.V. II. 18, where

strśanyāh prāṇāh. Again a reference to the seven senses is found in A.V. x. 2. 6: kah sapta khāni vitatarda sirṣaṇi. In A.V. xv. 15. 16. 17 seven kinds of prāṇa, apūna and vyāṇa are described. These seem to serve cosmic functions. The seven prāṇas are agni, āditya, candramāh, pavamāṇa, āpaḥ, pasavaḥ and prajāḥ. The seven apāṇas are paurṇamāsī, aṣṭakā, amāvāṣyā, śraddhā, dīkṣā, yajṇa and dakṣṇā. The seven kinds of vyāṇa are bhūmi, antarikṣaṃ, dyauḥ, nakṣatrāṇi, ṛtavaḥ, ārtavāḥ and saṃvatṣarāḥ.

pundarikam nava-dvāram tribhir gunebhir āvṛtam tasmin yad yaksam ātmanvat tad vai Brahma-vido viduh.

(Those who know Brahman know that being to be the self which resides in the lotus flower of nine gates covered by the three gunas. A.V. x. 8. 43.) The nāḍts rdā, piṅgalā and suṣumṇā, which figure so much in the later Tantric works, do not appear in the Atharva-Veda. No reference to prāṇāyāma appears in the Atharva-Veda.

² A.V. II. 15.

³ Ibid. II. 16. I. Prāṇa and apāṇa are asked in another passage to enter a man as bulls enter a cow-shed. Sāyaṇa calls prāṇa, apāṇa "sarīras-dhāraka" (A.V. III. II. 5). They are also asked not to leave the body, but to bear the limbs till old age (III. II. 6).

¹ Manas and citta are also separately counted in A.V. III. 6, 8.

⁵ The word cittinale is sometimes used to mean men of the same ways of thinking (cittinale samāna-citta-yuktāle—Sāyaṇa. A.V. III. 13. 5).

Agni is described as being ojas and is asked to give ojas to the worshipper¹.

Practice of Medicine in the Atharva-Veda.

As we have said above, there is evidence to show that even at the time of the Atharva-Veda the practice of pure medicine by professional medical men had already been going on. Thus the verse 11. 9. 3, as explained by Sāyana, says that there were hundreds of medical practitioners (satam hy asya bhisajah) and thousands of herbs (sahasram uta virudhah), but what can be done by these can be effected by binding an amulet with the particular charm of this verse². Again (II. 9. 5), the Atharvan who binds the amulet is described as the best of all good doctors (subhisaktama). In vi. 68. 2 Prajapati, who appears in the Atreva-Caraka school as the original teacher of Ayur-veda and who learnt the science from Brahmā, is asked to treat (with medicine) a boy for the attainment of long life3. In the Kausika-sūtra a disease is called lingī, i.e. that which has the symptoms (linga), and medicine (bhaisajya) as that which destroys it (upatāpa). Dārila remarks that this upatāpa-karma refers not only to the disease, but also to the symptoms, i.e. a bhaisajya is that which destroys the disease and its symptoms4. In the Atharva-Veda itself only a few medicines are mentioned, such as jangida (XIX. 34 and 35), gulgulu (XIX. 38), kustha (XIX. 39) and sata-vāra (xix. 36), and these are all to be used as amulets for protection not only from certain diseases, but also from the witchcraft $(krty\bar{a})$ of enemies. The effect of these herbs was of the same miraculous nature as that of mere charms or incantations. They did not operate in the manner in which the medicines prescribed

Šatam yā bheşajāni te sahasram samgatāni ca śreṣṭham āsrāva-bheṣajam vasiṣṭham roga-nāśanam.

(Oh sick person! you may have applied hundreds or thousands of medicinal herbs; but this charm is the best specific for stopping hemorrhage. A.V. vi. 45. 2.) Here also, as in II. 9. 3, the utterance of the charm is considered to be more efficacious than the application of other herbs and medicines. Water was often applied for washing the sores (vi. 57. 2).

¹ Ojo' sy ojo me dāḥ svāhā (A.V. 11. xv111. 1). Sāyaṇa, in explaining ojaḥ, says, "ojaḥ śarīra-sthiti-kāraṇam aṣṭamo dhātuḥ." He quotes a passage as being spoken by the teachers (ācāryaiḥ): "ksetrajñasya tad ojas tu kevalāśraya iṣyate yathā snehaḥ pradīpasya yathābhram aśani-tviṣaḥ" (Just as the lamp depends on the oil and the lightning on the clouds so the ojaḥ depends on the kṣhetra-jña (self) alone).

Cikitsatu Prajāpatir dīrghāyutvāya cakşase (vi. 68. 2).
Dārila's comment on the Kausika-sūtra, 25. 2.

in the ordinary medical literature acted, but in a supernatural way. In most of the hymns which appear as pure charms the Kausikasūtra directs the application of various medicines either internally or as amulets. The praise of Atharvan as physician par excellence and of the charms as being superior to all other medicines prescribed by other physicians seems to indicate a period when most of these Atharvanic charms were used as a system of treatment which was competing with the practice of ordinary physicians with the medicinal herbs. The period of the Kausika-sūtra was probably one when the value of the medicinal herbs was being more and more realized and they were being administered along with the usual Atharvanic charms. This was probably a stage of reconciliation between the drug system and the charm system. The special hymns dedicated to the praise of certain herbs, such as jangida, kustha, etc., show that the ordinary medical virtues of herbs were being interpreted on the miraculous lines in which the charms operated. On the other hand, the drug school also came under the influence of the Atharva-Veda and came to regard it as the source of their earliest authority. Even the later medical literature could not altogether free itself from a faith in the efficacy of charms and in the miraculous powers of medicine operating in a supernatural and non-medical manner. Thus Caraka, VI. 1. 30 directs that the herbs should be plucked according to the proper rites (yathā-vidhi), and Cakrapāni explains this by saving that the worship of gods and other auspicious rites have to be performed (mangala-devatārcanādi-pūrvakam); in vi. 1.77 a compound of herbs is advised, which, along with many other virtues, had the power of making a person invisible to all beings (adrśyo bhūtānām bhavati); miraculous powers are ascribed to the fruit āmalaka (Emblic Myrobalan), such as that, if a man lives among cows for a year, drinking nothing but milk, in perfect sensecontrol and continence and meditating the holy gayatri verse. and if at the end of the year on a proper lunar day in the month of Pausa (January), Māgha (February), or Phālguna (March), after fasting for three days, he should enter an amalaka garden and, climbing upon a tree full of big fruits, should hold them and repeat (japan) the name of Brahman till the amalaka attains immortalizing virtues, then, for that moment, immortality resides in the āmalaka; and, if he should eat those āmalakas, then the goddess Śrī, the incarnation of the Vedas, appears in person to him (svayam

cāsyopatisthantī śrīr vedavākya-rūpinī, vi. 3. 6). In vi. 1. 80 it is said that the rasāyana medicines not only procure long life, but, if they are taken in accordance with proper rites (yathā-vidhi), a man attains the immertal Brahman. Again in vi. 1.3 the word prāyaścitta (purificatory penance) is considered to have the same meaning as ausadha or bhesaja. The word bhesaja in the Atharva-Veda meant a charm or an amulet which could remove diseases and their symptoms, and though in later medical literature the word is more commonly used to denote herbs and minerals, either simple or compounded, the older meaning was not abandoned1. The system of simple herbs or minerals, which existed independently of the Atharva-Veda, became thus intimately connected with the system of charm specifics of the Atharva-Veda; whatever antagonism may have before existed between the two systems vanished, and Avur-veda came to be treated as a part of the Atharva-Veda². Prajāpati and Indra, the mythical physicians of the Atharva-Veda, came to be regarded in the Atreya-Caraka school as the earliest teachers of Ayur-veda3.

Bloomfield arranges the contents of the Atharva-Veda in fourteen classes: 1. Charms to cure diseases and possession by demons (bhaiṣajyāni); 2. Prayers for long life and health (āyuṣyāṇi); 3. Imprecations against demons, sorcerers and enemies (ābhicāri-

¹ The A.V. terms are bheşajam (remedy), bheşajī (the herbs), and bheşajīh (waters). The term bhaiṣajya appears only in the Kausika and other sūtras and Brāhmaṇas. Bloomfield says that the existence of such charms and practices is guaranteed moreover at least as early as the Indo-Iranian (Aryan) period by the stems baeṣaza and baeṣazaya (maāithra baeṣaza and baeṣazya; haoma baeṣazya), and by the pre-eminent position of water and plants in all prayers for health and long life. Adalbert Kuhn has pointed out some interesting and striking resemblances between Teutonic and Vedic medical charms, especially in connection with cures for worms and fractures. These may perhaps be mere anthropological coincidences, due to the similar mental endowment of the two peoples. But it is no less likely that some of these folk-notions had crystallized in prehistoric times, and that these parallels reflect the continuation of a crude Indo-European folk-lore that had survived among the Teutons and Hindus. See Bloomfield's The Atharva-Veda and Gopatha-Brāhmaṇa, p. 58, and Kuhn's Zeitschrift für vergleichende Sprachforschung, XIII. pp. 49-74 and 113-157.

² The Atharva-Veda itself speaks (xix. 34.7) of herbs which were current in ancient times and medicines which were new, and praises the herb jangida as being better than them all—na tvā pūrva oṣadhayo na tvā taranti yā navāh.

³ A.V. vi. 68. 2—Cikitsatu prajāpatir dīrghāyutvāya cakṣase; ibid. xix. 35. 1—Indrasya nāma grhṇanto ṛṣayah jaṅgidam dadan (The ṛṣis gave jaṅgida, uttering the name of Indra). This line probably suggested the story in the Caraka-samhitā, that Indra first instructed the ṛṣis in Āyur-veda. See ibid. xi. viii. 23—yan mātalī rathakrītam amṛtam veda bheṣajam tad indro apsu prāvešayat tad āpo datta bheṣajam. The immortalizing medicine which Mātali (the charioteer of Indra) bought by selling the chariot was thrown into the waters by Indra, the master of the chariot. Rivers, give us back that medicine!

kāni and krtyā-pratiharanāni); 4. Charms pertaining to women (strī-karmāni); 5. Charms to secure harmony, influence in the assembly, and the like (saumanasvāni); 6. Charms pertaining to royalty (rāja-karmāni); 7. Prayers and imprecations in the interest of Brahmins; 8. Charms to secure property and freedom from danger (paustikāni); q. Charms in expiation of sin and defilement (prāyaścittāni); 10. Cosmogonic and theosophic hymns; 11. Ritualistic and general hymns; 12. The books dealing with individual themes (books 13-18); 13. The twentieth book; 14. The kuntāpa hymns¹; of these we have here to deal briefly with 1, 2, 3, 4 and 9, more or less in the order in which they appear in the Atharva-Veda. A.V. 1. 2 is a charm against fever (jvara), diarrhoea (atīsāra), diabetes (atimūtra), glandular sores (nādī-vrana); a string made of muñja grass is to be tied, the mud from a field or ant-hill is to be drunk, clarified butter is to be applied and the holes of the anus and penis and the mouth of the sore are to be aerated with a leather bladder and the charm is to be chanted. The disease asrava. mentioned in this hymn, is explained by Sayana as meaning diabetes (mūtrātisāra)². 1. 3 is a charm against stoppage of urine and stool (mūtra-purīsa-nirodha). Along with a chanting of the hymn the patient is to be made to drink either earth from a rat's hole (mūsika-mrttikā), a pūtikā plant, curd, or saw-dust from old wood, or he is to ride an elephant or a horse, or to throw an arrow; a fine iron needle was to be passed through the urinal canal. This is probably the earliest stage of what developed in later times as the vasti-kriyā3. 1. 7 and 1. 8 are charms for driving away evil spirits, vātudhānas and kimīdins, when a man is possessed by them. 1. 10 is a charm for dropsy (jalodara): a jugful of water containing grass, etc. is to be sprinkled over the body of the patient. 1. 11 is a charm for securing easy delivery. 1. 12 is a charm for all diseases arising from disturbance of vata, pitta and slesmanfat, honey and clarified butter or oil have to be drunk. Headdisease (śirṣakti) and cough (kāsa) are specially mentioned. 1. 17

¹ Mr Bloomfield's The Atharva-Veda and Gopatha-Brāhmana, p. 57.

² Bloomfield says that āṣrāva means atṭṣāra or diarrhoea (ibid. p. 59). The same physical applications for the same diseases are directed in A.V. II. 3. Āṣrāva denotes any disease which is associated with any kind of diseased ejection. Thus in II. 3. 2 Sāyaṇa says that āṣrāva means atṭṣārātimūtra-nāḍt-vraṇādayaḥ.

¹ Pra te bhinadmi mehanam vartram vesantyā iva evā te mūtram mucyatām bahir bāl iti sarvakam (I open your urinal path like a canal through which the waters rush. So may the urine come out with a whizzing sound—A.V. 1. 3. 7). All the verses of the hymn ask the urine to come out with a whizzing sound.

is a charm for stopping blood from an injury of the veins or arteries or for stopping too much hemorrhage of women. In the case of injuries a handful of street-dust is to be thrown on the place of injury or a bandage is to be tied with sticky mud1. 1. 22 is a charm against heart-disease and jaundice—hairs of a red cow are to be drunk with water and a piece of a red cow's skin is to be tied as an amulet. It is prayed that the red colour of the sun and the red cow may come to the patient's body and the yellow colour due to jaundice may go to birds of yellow colour. I. 23, which mentions kilāsa or kustha (white leprosy) of the bone, flesh and skin and the disease by which hairs are turned grey (palita), is a charm against these². The white parts are to be rubbed with an ointment made of cow-dung, bhrnga-rāja, haridrā indravarunī and nīlikā until they appear red. The black medicines applied are asked to turn the white parts black. 1. 25 is a charm against takman, or fever—the patient has to be sprinkled with the water in which a red-hot iron axe has been immersed. The description shows that it was of the malarial type; it came with cold (sta) and a burning sensation (soci). Three types of this fever are described: that which came the next day (anyedyuh), the second day (ubhayedyuh), or the third day (trtīyaka)3. It was also associated with yellow, probably because it produced jaundice. II. 9 and 10 are charms against hereditary (kṣetrīya) diseases, leprosy, dyspepsia, etc. Amulets of arjuna wood, barley, sesamum and its flower had also to be tied when the charm was uttered⁵. II. 31 is a charm against various diseases due to worms. The priest, when uttering this charm, should hold street-dust in his left hand and press it with his right hand and throw it on the patient. There are visible and invisible worms; some of them are called algandu and others saluna; they are generated in the intestines, head and

1 IV. 12 is also a charm for the same purpose.

Namah straya takmane namo rūrāya socise krnomi

yo anyedyur ubhayedyur abhyeti trtīyakāya namo astu takmane.

See also A.V. vii. 123. 10, where the third-day fever, fourth-day fever and

irregular fevers are referred to.

² VI. 135-137 is also a charm for strengthening the roots of the hair. Kāka-māci with bhrnga-rāja has to be drunk.

The word ksetriya has been irregularly derived in Pāṇini's rule, v. 2. 92 (kṣetriyac parakṣetre cikitsyaḥ). Commentaries like the Kāśika and the Padamañjarī suggest one of its meanings to be "curable in the body of another birth" (janmāntara-śarīre cikitsyaḥ), that is, incurable. I, however, prefer the meaning "hereditary," as given by Sāyaṇa in his commentary on A.V. II. 10. 1, as being more fitting and reasonable.

5 Yakṣman is also counted as a kṣetrīya disease (II. 10. 6).

heels; they go about through the body by diverse ways and cannot be killed even with various kinds of herbs. They sometimes reside in the hills and forests and in herbs and animals, and they enter into our system through sores in the body and through various kinds of food and drink¹. II. 33 is a charm for removing yakşman from all parts of the body. III. 7. 1 is a charm for removing all hereditary (ksetrīya) diseases; the horn of a deer is to be used as an amulet. III. II is a charm against phthisis (rāja-yaksman) particularly when it is generated by too much sex-indulgence; the patient is to eat rotten fish2. IV. 4 is a charm for attaining virility the roots of the kapittha tree boiled in milk are to be drunk when the charm is uttered. IV. 6 and 7 are charms against vegetable poisoning—the essence of the krmuka tree is to be drunk. v. 4 is a charm against fever (takman) and phthisis; the patient is to take the herb kustha with butter when the charm is uttered3. V. 11 is a charm against fever4. v. 23 is a charm against worms—the patient is given the juice of the twenty kinds of roots⁵. VI. 15 is a charm for eye-diseases; the patient has to take various kinds of vegetable leaves fried in oil, particularly the mustard plant⁶. vi. 20 is a charm against bilious fever (susmino jvarasya); it is said to produce a great burning sensation, delirium and jaundice. VI. 21 is a charm for increasing the hair—the hair is to be sprinkled with a decoction of various herbs. VI. 23 is a charm against heart-disease, dropsy and jaundice. VI. 25 is a charm for inflammation of the glands of the neck (ganda-mālā)?. vi. 85 is a charm against consumption (rājay-aksman); VI. 90 for colic pain (sūla)8; VI. 105 for cough and

1 II. 31. 5. I have adopted Sāyaņa's interpretation.

³ Kustha was believed to be good for the head and the eyes (v. 4. 10).

⁵ This is one of the few cases where a large number of roots were compounded together and used as medicine along with the charms.

Some of the other plants are alasālā, silāñjālā, nīlāgalasālā.

² VII. 78 is also a charm for inflammation of the neck (ganda-mālā) and phthisis (yakṣma).

⁴ Gāndhāra Mahāvṛṣa, Munjavān, and particularly Bālhīka (Balkh), were regarded as the home of fever; so also the country of Anga and Magadha. It was accompanied by cold (sta) and shivering (rūrah). It was often attended with cough (kāsa) and consumption (valāsa). It attacked sometimes on the third or fourth day, in summer or in autumn (sārada), or continued all through the year.

⁷ Also vII. 78, where apacit appears as a name for the inflammation of the neck (gala-ganda). Three different types of the disease are described. Apacit is at first harmless, but when it grows, it continues more to secrete its discharges, like boils on the joints. These boils grow on the neck, the back, the thigh-joint and the anus. See further vI. 83, where conch-shell is to be rubbed and applied. vIII. 83 is also a charm for it. Blood had to be sucked off the inflamed parts by a leech or an iguana (grha-godhikā).

⁸ A piece of iron is to be tied as an amulet.

other such diseases due to phlegm (ślesmā); vi. 109 for diseases of the rheumatic type (vāta-vyādhi1). VI. 127 is a charm for abscess (vidradha), phlegmatic diseases (valāsa) and erysipelatous inflammation (visarpa). Various kinds of visarpa in different parts of the body are referred to. Heart-disease and phthisis are also mentioned2. There are said to be a hundred kinds of death (mrtyu) (A.V. VIII. 5. 7), which are explained by Sayana as meaning diseases such as fever, head-disease, etc. Several diseases are mentioned in IX. 18—first the diseases of the head, śirsakti, śīrsāmaya, karna-sūla and visalpaka, by which secretions of bad smell come out from the ear and the mouth, then fever proceeding from head troubles with shivering and cracking sensations in the limbs. Takman, the dreaded autumnal fever, is so described. Then comes consumption: then come valāsa, kāhābāha of the abdomen, diseases of kloma, the abdomen, navel and heart, diseases of the spine, the ribs, the eyes, the intestines, the visalpa, vidradha, wind-diseases (vātīkāra), alaji and diseases of the leg, knee, pelvis, veins and head.

Bolling, in his article on diseases and medicine (Vedic) in the Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics, makes the following remark concerning the theory of the origin of diseases. "To be noted however is the fact that the Hindu theory of the constitution of the body of three elements, bile, phlegm and wind, does not appear in early Atharvan texts. Vātī-krta-nāśanī of VI. 44. 3 cannot be urged as proof to the contrary, as it means, not destructive of (diseases) produced by the wind in the body (vātī-krta-nāśanī), but destructive of that which has been made into wind. Evidently, from its association with diarrhoea, it refers to wind in the intestines." This does not seem to me to be correct. The phrase which Bolling quotes is indeed of doubtful meaning; Sayana takes it as being composed of two words, vātī (healer by aeration) and krta-nāśanī (destroyer of evil deeds which brought about the disease). But, however that may be, there are other passages on the subject, which Bolling seems to have missed. Thus in 1. 12. 3 diseases are divided into three classes, viz. those produced by water, by wind, and those which are dry-yo abhrajā vātajā yas ca susmah3. The phlegm of the later medical writers was also considered watery, and the word

¹ Pippalt is also to be taken along with the utterance of the charm. It is regarded as the medicine for all attacked by the diseases of the wind (vātt-kṛtasya bheṣajīm). It is also said to cure madness (kṣipṭasya bheṣajīm).

 ² Cipudru is a medicine for valāsa. Cipudrur abhicakṣaṇam (VI. 127. 2).
 ³ Compare also vātīkārasya (IX. 13. 20).

abhraja probably suggests the origin of the theory of phlegm, as being one of the upholders and destroyers of the body. The word vātaja means, very plainly, diseases produced by wind, and the pitta, or bile, which in later medical literature is regarded as a form of fire, is very well described here as śuṣma, or dry. Again in vi. 100 we have pippali as vātī-krtasya bhesajīm. The context shows that the diseases which are referred to as being curable by pippali are those which are considered as being produced by wind in later literature; for "madness" (ksipta) is mentioned as a vātī-kṛta disease. The word śuṣma comes from the root "śuṣ," to dry up, and in slightly modified forms is used to mean a "drying up," "burning," "strength," and "fiery." In one place at least it is used to describe the extremely burning sensation of delirious bilious fever, which is said to be burning like fire1. My own conclusion therefore is that at least some Atharvanic people had thought of a threefold classification of all diseases, viz. those produced by wind, those by water, and those by fire, or those which are dry and burning. This corresponds to the later classification of all diseases as being due to the three dosas, wind $(v\bar{a}vu)$, phlegm (kapha or ślesma) and bile (pitta). Apart from the ordinary diseases, many were the cases of possession by demons and evil spirits, of which we have quite a large number. Some of the prominent ones are Yātudhāna, Kimīdin, Piśāca, Piśācī, Amīvā, Dvayāvin, Rakṣah, Magundī, Alimśa, Vatsapa, Palāla, Anupalāla, Sarku, Koka, Malimluca, Palijaka, Vavrivāsas, Āśreşa, Rkṣagrīva, Pramīlin, Durnāmā, Sunāmā, Kuksila, Kusūla, Kakubha, Śrima, Arāya, Karuma, Khalaja, Śakadhūmaja, Urunda, Matmata, Kumbhamuska, Sāyaka, Nagnaka, Tangalva, Pavinasa, Gandharva, Brahmagraha, Some of the diseases with their troublous symptoms were (poetically) personified, and diseases which often went together were described as being related as brothers and sisters. Diseases due to worms were well known, in the case of both men

¹ VI. 20. 4. For other references where the word susma occurs in more or less modified forms see I. 12. 3, III. 9. 3, IV. 4. 3, IV. 4. 4, V. 2. 4, V. 20. 2, VI. 65. I, VI. 73. 2, IX. I. 10, 20, IX. 4. 22, etc.

² See I. 28. 35, II. 9, II. 14, VIII. 6. The last passage contains a good description of some of these beings. There were some good spirits which fought with evil ones and favoured men, such as Pinga, who preserved the babe at birth and chased the amorous Gandharvas as wind chases cloud. VIII. 6. 19, 25 says that sometimes the higher gods are also found to bring diseases. Thus Takman was the son of Varuna (VI. 96. 2) and he produced dropsy (I. 10. 1-4, II. 10. I, IV. 16. 7, etc.). Parjanya (rain-god) produced diarrhoea, and Agni produced fever, headache and cough.

and of cattle. There were also the diseases due to sorcery, which played a very important part as an offensive measure in Vedic India. Many of the diseases were also known to be hereditary (kṣetrīya). From the names of the diseases mentioned above it will be found that most of the diseases noted by Caraka existed in the Vedic age.

The view-point from which the Vedic people looked at diseases seems to have always distinguished the different diseases from their symptoms. Thus the fever was that which produced shivering, cold, burning sensation, and the like, i.e. the diagnosis was mainly symptomatic. In addition to the charms and amulets, and the herbs which were to be internally taken, water was considered to possess great medical and life-giving properties. There are many hymns which praise these qualities of water1. The medicinal properties of herbs were often regarded as being due to water, which formed their essence. Charms for snake poisons and herbs which were considered to be their antidotes were in use. references to diseases and their cures are found sparsely scattered in other Rg-Vedic texts and Brāhmanas. But nothing in these appears to indicate any advance on the Atharva-Veda2 in medical knowledge. Apart from these curatives there were also the already mentioned charms, amulets and medicines for securing long life and increasing virility, corresponding to the Rasāyana and the Vāji-karana chapters of Caraka and other medical works. We cannot leave this section without pointing to the fact that, though most diseases and many remedies were known, nothing in the way of nidana, or causes of diseases, is specified. The fact that there existed a threefold classification of diseases, viz. abhraja, vātaja and susma, should not be interpreted to mean that the Vedic people had any knowledge of the disturbance of these elements operating as nidānas as they were understood in later medical literature. The three important causes of diseases were evil deeds, the sorcery of enemies, and possession by evil spirits or the anger of certain gods.

¹ apsu antar amrtam apsu bhesajam (There is immortality and medicine in water—1. 4. 4). See also 1. 5. 6, 33, 11. 3, 111. 7. 5, 1V. 33, VI. 24. 92, VI. 24. 2, etc.

² For a brief survey of these Rg-Vedic and other texts see Bolling's article "Disease and Medicine (Vedic)" in Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics.

The Foetus and the Subtle Body.

A human body is regarded by Caraka as a modification of the five elements, ether, air, fire, water and earth, and it is also the seat of consciousness (cetanā)1. The semen itself is made of the four elements, air, fire, water and earth; ether is not a constituent of it, but becomes connected with it as soon as it issues forth, since ākāśa or antariksa (ether) is all-pervading. The semen that is ejected and passes into the ovary is constituted of equal parts of air, fire, water and earth; the ether becomes mixed with it in the ovary; for ākāśa itself is omnipresent and has no movement of its own2; the semen is the product of six kinds of fluids (rasa). But the foetus cannot be produced simply by the union of the semen of the father and the blood (sonita) of the mother. Such a union can produce the foetus only when the atman with its subtle body, constituted of air, fire, water and earth, and manas (mind—the organ involved in all perception and thought), becomes connected with it by means of its karma. The four elements constituting the subtle body of the atman, being the general causes of all productions, do not contribute to the essential bodily features of the child3. The elements that contribute to the general features are, (1) the mother's part—the blood, (2) the father's part—the semen, (3) the karma of each individual; the part played by the assimilated food-juice of the mother need not be counted separately, as it is determined by the karma of the individual. The mental traits are determined by the state of mind of the individual in its previous birth. Thus, if the previous state of life was that of a god, the mind of the child

¹ garbhas tu khalu antarikşa väyv-agni-toya-bhūmi-vikāraś cetanādhişthānabhūtah. Caraka, 1v. 4. 6.

² vāyv-agni-bhūmy-ab-guna-pādavat tat ṣadbhyo rasebhyah prabhāvaś ca tasya. Caraka, IV. 2. 4. ākāšam tu yady-api śukre pāñca-bhautike 'sti tathāpi na puruṣa-śarIrān nirgatya garbhāśayam gacchati, kintu bhūta-catuṣṭayam eva kriyāvad yāti ākāšam tu vyāpakam eva tatrāgatena śukrena sambaddham bhavati. Cakrapāni's Ayur-veda-dīpikā, IV. 2. 4. Suśruta however considers śukra (semen) as possessing the qualities of soma, and ārtava (blood) as possessing the qualities of fire. He says, however, that particles of the other bhūtas (earth, air and ether, as Dalhana enumerates them) are separately associated with them (saumyam śukram ārtavam āgneyam itareṣām apy atra bhūtānām sānnidhyam asty anunā viśeṣeṇa parasparopakārāt parānugrahāt parasparānupraveśāc ca—Suśruta, III. 3. I), and they mutually co-operate together for the production of the foetus.

³ yāni tv ātmani sūkṣmāni bhūtāni ātivāhika-rūpāņi tāni sarva-sādhāranatvena avišeṣa-sādrṣya-kāranānīti neha boddhavyāni. Cakrapāni's Āyur-veda-dīpikā, IV. 2. 23-27.

will be pure and vigorous, whereas, if it was that of an animal, it will be impure and dull1. When a man dies, his soul, together with his subtle body, composed of the four elements, air, fire, water and earth, in a subtle state and manas, passes invisibly into a particular womb on account of its karma, and then, when it comes into connection with the combined semen and blood of the father and mother, the foetus begins to develop2. The semen and blood can, however, operate as causes of the production of the body only when they come into connection with the subtle body transferred from the previous body of a dying being3. Suśruta (III. 1. 16) says that the very subtle eternal conscious principles are manifested (abhivyajyate) when the blood and semen are in union (parama-sūksmāś cetanāvantah śāśvatā lohita-retasah sannipātesv abhivvajyante). But later on (III. 3.4) this statement is modified in such a way as to agree with Caraka's account; for there it is said that the soul comes into contact with the combined semen and blood along with its subtle elemental body (bhūtātmanā). In another passage a somewhat different statement is found (Suśruta, III. 4. 3). Here it is said that the materials of the developing foetus are agni, soma, sattva, rajas, tamas, the five senses, and the bhūtātmā—all these contribute to the life of the foetus and are also called the pranas (life)4. Dalhana, in explaining this, says that the agni (fire) spoken of here is the heat-power which manifests itself in the fivefold functionings of digestion (pācaka), viz. brightening of the skin (bhrājaka), the faculty of vision

> Tesām vīšesād balavanti vāni bhavanti mātā-pitṛ-karma-jāni tāni vyavasyet sadršatva-lingam satvam yathānūkam api vyavasyet.

Caraka, IV. 2. 27.

Anūkam prāktanāvyavahitā deha-jātis tena yathānūkam iti yo deva-sarirad avyavadhanenagatya bhavati sa deva-satvo bhāvati, etc. Cakrapāni, IV. 2. 23-27.

bhūtais caturbhih sahitah su-sūksmair mano-javo deham upaiti dehāt karmāt-makatvān na tu tasya drśyām divyam vinā daršanam asti rūpam.

Caraka, IV. 2. 3. 3 yady api śukra-rajast kārane, tathāpi yadaivātivāhikam sūksma-bhūta-rūpaśartram prapnutah, tadawa te śartram janayatah, nanyada. Cakrapani, IV.

^{2. 36.}This bhūtātmā, i.e. the subtle body together with the soul presiding over it, is called by Suśruta karma-puruşa. Medical treatment is of this karma-puruşa and his body (sa eşa karma-puruşah cikitsādhikrtah-Suśruta, III. 1. 16). Suśruta (1.1.21) again says, "pañca-mahābhūta-śarīri-samavāyah puruşa ity ucyate; tasmin kriyā so 'dhiṣṭhānam." (In this science, the term puruṣa is applied to the unity of five elements and the self (sarter), and this is the object of medical treatment.)

(alocaka), coloration of the blood, the intellectual operations and the heat operations involved in the formation and work of the different constituent elements (dhātu), such as chyle, blood, etc.; the soma is the root-power of all watery elements, such as mucus, chyle, semen, etc., and of the sense of taste; vāyu represents that which operates as the fivefold life-functionings of prāna, apāna, samāna, udāna, and vyāna. Dalhana says further that sattva, rajas and tamas refer to manas, the mind-organ, which is a product of their combined evolution. The five senses contribute to life by their cognitive functionings. The first passage seemed to indicate that life was manifested as a result of the union of semen and blood; the second passage considered the connection of the soul with its subtle body (bhūtātmā) necessary for evolving the semenblood into life. The third passage introduces, in addition to these, the five senses, sattva, rajas, and tamas, and the place of semenblood is taken up by the three root-powers of agni, and vāyu. These three powers are more or less of a hypothetical nature, absorbing within them a number of functionings and body-constituents. The reason for these three views in the three successive chapters cannot be satisfactorily explained, except on the supposition that Suśruta's work underwent three different revisions at three different times. Vāgbhaṭa the elder says that the moment the semen and the blood are united, the life principle (jiva), being moved by manas (mano-javena), tainted, as the latter is, with the afflictions (kleśa) of attachment, etc., comes in touch with it1.

The doctrine of a subtle body, as referred to in the medical works, may suitably be compared with the Sāṃkhya view. Cakrapāṇi himself, in explaining Caraka-saṃhitā, IV. 2. 36, says that this doctrine of a subtle body (ātivāhika śarīra) is described in the āgama, and by āgama the Sāṃkhya āgama is to be understood (tena āgamād eva sāṃkhya-darśana-rūpād ātivāhika-śarīrāt). The Sāṃkhya-kārikā 39 speaks of a subtle body (sūkṣma deha) and the body inherited from

¹ gate purāņe rajasi nave 'vasthite suddhe garbhasyāsaye mārge ca bijātmanā suklam avikṛtam avikṛtena vāyunā preritam anyais ca mahā-bhūtair anugatam ārtavena abhimūrchitam anvakṣam eva rāgādi-kleśa-vasānuvartinā sva-karma-coditena mano-javenajīvenābhisamṣṣṣṭaṃgarbhāsayam upayāti. Aṣtāṅga-saṃgraha, Il. 2. Indu, in explaining this, says, "bijātmanā garbha-kāraṇa-mahā-bhūtaisvabhāvena...sūkṣma-svarūpaiḥ manas-sahacāribhis tanmātrākhyair mahā-bhūtair anugataṃ strī-kṣetra-prāptyā karma-vaṣād ārtavena miṣrī bhūtam anvakṣaṃ miṣrī-bhāva-hīna-kālam eva...mano-javena jīvenābhisaṃṣṛṣṭam prāpta-saṃyogaṃ garbhāsayaṃ suklam upayāti." His further explanations of the nature of applications of the jīva show that he looked up Patañjali's Yoʒa-sūtras for the details of avidyā, etc., and the other kleśas.

the parents. The sūksma continues to exist till salvation is attained, and at each birth it receives a new body and at each death it leaves it. It is constituted of mahat, ahamkara, the eleven senses and the five tan-matras. On account of its association with the buddhi, which bears the impress of virtue, vice, and other intellectual defects and accomplishments, it becomes itself associated with these, just as a cloth obtains fragrance through its connection with campak flowers of sweet odour; and hence it suffers successive rebirths, till the buddhi becomes dissociated from it by the attainment of true discriminative knowledge. The necessity of admitting a subtle body is said to lie in the fact that the buddhi, with the ahamkāra and the senses, cannot exist without a supporting body; so in the interval between one death and another birth the buddhi, etc. require a supporting body, and the subtle body is this support1. In the Sāmkhya-pravacana-bhāsya, v. 103, it is said that this subtle body is like a little tapering thing no bigger than a thumb. and that yet it pervades the whole body, just as a little flame pervades a whole room by its rays2. The Vyāsa-bhāsva, in refuting the Sāmkhya view, says that according to it the citta (mind), like the rays of a lamp in a jug or in a palace, contracts and dilates according as the body that it occupies is bigger or smaller3. Vācaspati, in explaining the Yoga view as expounded by Vyāsa, says that in the Sāmkhya view the citta is such that it cannot, simply by contraction and expansion, leave any body at death and occupy another body without intermediate relationship with a subtle body (ātivāhika-śarīra). But, if the citta cannot itself leave a body and occupy another, how can it connect itself with a subtle body at the time of death? If this is to be done through another body, and that through another, then we are led to a vicious infinite. If it is argued that the citta is connected with such a subtle body from beginningless time, then the reply is that such a subtle body has never been perceived by anyone (na khalu etad adhyaksa-gocaram); nor can it be regarded as indispensably necessary through inference, since the Yoga view can explain the situation without the hypothesis of any such body. The citta is all-pervading,

¹ Sāṃkhya-tattva-kaumudī, 39, 40, 41.

² yathā dīpasya sarva-grha-vyāpitve 'pi kalikā-kāratvam...tathaiva lingadehasya deha-vyāpitve 'py angustha-parimānatvam. Sāmkhya-pravacana-bhāsya, V. 103.

⁸ ghaţa-prāsāda-pradīpa-kalpam sankoca-vikāsi cittam sarīra-parimānākāra-mātram ity apare pratipannāh. Vyāsa-bhāṣya on Patañjali's Yoga-sūtras, IV. 10.

and each soul is associated with a separate citta. Each citta connects itself with a particular body by virtue of the fact that its manifestations (vṛtti) are seen in that body. Thus the manifestations of the all-pervading citta of a soul cease to appear in its dying body and become operative in a new body that is born. Thus there is no necessity of admitting a subtle body (ātivāhikatvaṃ tasya na mrsyāmahe).

The Vaisesika also declines to believe in the existence of a subtle body, and assigns to it no place in the development of the foetus. The development of the foetus is thus described by Śrīdhara in his Nyāya-kandalī2: "After the union of the father's semen and the mother's blood there is set up in the atoms constituting them a change through the heat of the womb, such that their old colour, form, etc. become destroyed and new similar qualities are produced; and in this way, through the successive formation of dyads and triads, the body of the foetus develops; and, when such a body is formed, there enters into it the mind (antahkarana), which could not have entered in the semen-blood stage, since the mind requires a body to support it (na tu śukra-śonitāvasthāyām śarīrāśrayatvān manasah). Small quantities of food-juice of the mother go to nourish it. Then, through the unseen power (adrsta), the foctus is disintegrated by the heat in the womb into the state of atoms, and atoms of new qualities, together with those of the food-juice, conglomerate together to form a new body." According to this view the subtle body and the mind have nothing to do with the formation and development of the foetus. Heat is the main agent responsible for all disintegration and re-combination involved in the process of the formation of the foetus.

The Nyāya does not seem to have considered this as an important question, and it also denies the existence of a subtle body. The soul, according to the Nyāya, is all-pervading, and the *Mahā-bhārata* passage quoted above, in which Yama draws out the *puruṣa*

¹ Vācaspati's Tattva-vaišāradī, IV. 10. Reference is made to Mahā-bhārata, III. 296. 17, anguṣṭha-mātram puruṣam niścakarṣa yamo balāt. Vācaspati says that puruṣa is not a physical thing and hence it cannot be drawn out of the body. It must therefore be interpreted in a remote sense as referring to the cessation of manifestation of citta in the dying body (na cāsya niṣkarṣaḥ sambhavati, ity aupacāriko vyākhyeyas tathā ca citeś cittasya ca tatra tatra vṛtty-abhāva eva niṣkarṣāṛthah).

The Sāmkhya-pravacana-bhāṣya, v. 103, says that the thumb-like puruṣa referred to in Mahā-bhārata, 111. 296. 17, which Yama drew from the body of Satyavān, has the size of the subtle body (linga-deha).

² Nyāya-kandalī, Vizianagram Sanskrit series, 1895, p. 33.

of the size of a thumb, has, according to Nyāya, to be explained away¹. In rebirth it is only the all-pervading soul which becomes connected with a particular body (ya eva dehāntara-saṃgamo 'sya, tam eva taj-jñāḥ-para-lokam āhuḥ)².

Candrakīrti gives us an account of the Buddhist view from the Sāli-stamba-sūtra3. The foetus is produced by the combination of the six constituents (sannām dhātūnām samavāyāt). That which consolidates (samślesa) the body is called earth (prthivi-dhātu); that which digests the food and drink of the body is called fire (tejo-dhātu); that which produces inhalation and exhalation is called air (vāyu-dhātu); that which produces the pores of the body (antah-sauşiryam) is called ether (ākāśa-dhātu); that by which knowledge is produced is called the vijñāna-dhātu. It is by the combination of them all that a body is produced (sarveṣām samavāvāt kāvasvotpattir bhavati). The seed of vijnāna produces the germ of name and form (nāma-rūpānkura) by combination with many other diverse causes. The foetus is thus produced of itself, not by another, nor by both itself and another, nor by god, nor by time, nor by nature, nor by one cause, nor by no cause, but by the combination of the mother's and the father's parts at the proper season⁴. The combination of father's and mother's parts gives us the five dhātus, which operate together when they are in combination with the sixth dhātu, the vijnāna.

The view that the foetus is the result of the joint effect of the six dhātus reminds us of a similar expression in Caraka, IV. 3. Caraka gives there a summary of the discussions amongst various sages on the subject of the causes of the formation and development of the foetus: where there is a union between a man with effective semen and a woman with no defect of organ, ovary and blood, if at the time of the union of the semen and blood the soul comes in touch with it through the mind, then the foetus begins to develop⁵. When it is taken care of by proper nourishment, etc., then at the right time

¹ tasmān na hṛt-puṇḍarīke yāvad-avasthānam ātmanah ata eva aṅguṣṭhamātram puruṣam niscakarṣa balād yama iti Vyāsa-vacanam evam-param avagantavyam (Jayanta's Nyāya-mañjarī, p. 469).

² Ibid. p. 473.

³ Mādhyamika-vrtti (Bibliotheca Buddhica), pp. 560-61.

⁴ Ibid. p. 567.

⁵ In the Vaiseşika also the all-pervading ātman comes into touch with the foetus through the manas; but the difference is this, that here the manas is an operative factor causing the development of the foetus, whereas there the manas goes to the foetus when through the influence of body-heat it has already developed into a body.

the child is born, and the whole development is due to the combined effect of all the elements mentioned above (samudayād eṣām bhāvānām). The foetus is born of elements from the mother and the father, the self, the proper hygienic care of the parents' bodies (sātmya) and the food-juice; and there is also operant with these the sattva or manas, which is an intermediate vehicle serving to connect the soul with a former body when it leaves one (aupapāduka)1. Bharadvāja said that none of these causes can be considered as valid; for, in spite of the union of the parents, it often happens that they remain childless; the self cannot produce the self; for, if it did, did it produce itself after being born or without being born? In both cases it is impossible for it to produce itself. Moreover, if the self had the power of producing itself, it would not have cared to take birth in undesirable places and with defective powers, as sometimes happens. Again, proper hygienic habits cannot be regarded as the cause; for there are many who have these, but have no children, and there are many who have not these, but have children. If it was due to food-juice, then all people would have got children. Again, it is not true that the sattva issuing forth from one body connects itself with another; for, if it were so, we should all have remembered the events of our past life. So none of the above causes can be regarded as valid. To this Atreva replied that it is by the combined effect of all the above elements that a child is produced, and not by any one of them separately2. This idea is again repeated in IV. 3. 20, where it is said that just as a medical room (kūtāgāram vartulākāram grham jaintāka-sveda-pratipāditam -Cakrapāṇi) is made up of various kinds of things, or just as a chariot is made up of a collection of its various parts, so is the foetus made up of the combination of various entities which contribute to the formation of the embryo and its development (nānāvidhānām garbha-kārānām bhāvānām samudavād abhinirvartate)3. The idea of such a combined effect of causes as leading to the production of a perfect whole seems to have a peculiar Buddhistic ring about it.

Bharadvāja, in opposing the above statement of Ātreya, asks what, if the foetus is the product of a number of combined causes,

¹ Caraka-samhitā, IV. 3. 3.

² neti bhagavān Ātreyaḥ sarvebhya ebhyo bhāvebhyaḥ samuditebhyo garbho 'bhinirvartate. Ibid. IV. 3. 11.

³ Ibid. IV. 3. 20.

is the definite order in which they co-operate together to produce the various parts (katham ayam sandhiyate)? Again, how is it that a child born of a woman is a human child and not that of any other animai? If, again, man is born out of man, why is not the son of a stupid person stupid, of a blind men blind, and of a madman mad? Moreover, if it is argued that the self perceives by the eye colours, by the ear sounds, by the smell odours, by the organ of taste the different tastes, and feels by the skin the different sensations of touch, and for that reason the child does not inherit the qualities of the father, then it has to be admitted that the soul can have knowledge only when there are senses and is devoid of it when there are no senses; in that case the soul is not unchangeable, but is liable to change (yatra caitad ubhayam sambhavati jñatvam ajñatvam ca sa-vikāras cātmā)1. If the soul perceives the objects of sense through the activity of the senses, such as perceiving and the like, then it cannot know anything when it has no senses, and, when it is unconscious, it cannot be the cause of the body-movements or of any of its other activities and consequently cannot be called the soul, ātman. It is therefore simple nonsense to say that the soul perceives colours, etc. by its senses.

To this Atreva replies that there are four kinds of beings, viz. those born from ovaries, eggs, sweat and vegetables. Beings in each class exist in an innumerable diversity of forms2. The forms that the foctus-producing elements (garbha-karā bhāvāh) assume depend upon the form of the body where they assemble. Just as gold, silver, copper, lead, etc. assume the form of any mould in which they are poured, so, when the foetus-producing elements assemble in a particular body, the foetus takes that particular form. But a man is not infected with the defect or disease of his father, unless it be so bad or chronic as to have affected his semen. Each of our limbs and organs had their germs in the semen of the father, and, when the disease or defect of the father is so deep-rooted as to have affected (upatāpa) the germ part of any particular organ in the seed, then the child produced out of the semen is born defective in that limb; but, if the defect or disease of the father is so superficial that his semen remains unaffected, then the disease or defect is not inherited by the son. The child does not owe sense-organs to his parents; he alone is responsible for the goodness or badness of his sense-organs; for

¹ Caraka-samhitā, IV. 3. 21.

these are born from his own self (ātma-jānīndriyāņi). The presence or absence of the sense-organs is due to his own destiny or the fruits of karma (daiva). So there is no definite law that the sons of idiots or men with defective senses should necessarily be born idiots or be otherwise defective1. The self (ātman) is conscious only when the sense-organs exist. The self is never without the sattva or the mind-organ, and through it there is always some kind of consciousness in the self². The self, as the agent, cannot without the sense-organs have any knowledge of the external world leading to practical work; no practical action for which several accessories are required can be performed unless these are present; a potter who knows how to make a jug cannot succeed in making it unless he has the organs with which to make it3. The fact that the self has consciousness even when the senses do not operate is well illustrated by our dream-knowledge when the senses lie inoperative4. Atreya further says that, when the senses are completely restrained and the manas, or mind-organ, is also restrained and concentrated in the self, one can have knowledge of all things even without the activity of the senses⁵. The self is thus of itself the knower and the agent.

This view of Caraka, as interpreted by Cakrapāṇi, seems to be somewhat new. For the self is neither pure intelligence, like the puruṣa of the Sāṃkhya-yoga, nor the unity of being, intelligence and bliss, like that of the Vedānta. Here the soul is the knower by virtue of its constant association with manas. In this, however, we are nearer to the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika view. But in the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika view the soul is not always in contact with manas and is not always conscious. The manas in that view is atomic. The view that the

¹ Caraka-samhitā, 1v. 3. 25.

² Ibid. iv. 3. 26, na hy-asattvah kadācid ātmā sattva-višesāc copalabhyate jiāna-vičesah. Cakrapāni, in commenting on this, says that our knowledge of the external world is due to the operation of the sense-organs in association with the mind-organ. If these sense-organs do not exist, we cannot have any knowledge of the external world, but the internal organ of mind is always associated with the self: so the knowledge which is due to this mind-organ is ever present in the self (yat tu kevala-mano-janyam ātma-jīānam, tad bhavaty eva sarvadā). It seems that both sattva and manas are used to denote the mind-organ.

³ The word kārya-jñānam in Caraka-saṃhitā, 1v. 3. 27, has been explained by Cakrapāṇi as kārya-pravṛtti-janaka-bāhya-viṣaya-jñānam. The knowledge that the self has when it has no sense-organs operating in association with the mind has no object (nirviṣaya); in other words, this knowledge which the self always has is formless.

⁴ Ibid. IV. 3. 31.

⁶ vināpindriyaih samādhi-balād eva yasmāt sarvajāo bhavati; tasmāj jāa-sva-bhāva eva nirindriyo 'py ātmā (Cakrapāni's Caraka-tātparya-tikā, IV. 3. 28-29).

soul has always a formless consciousness has undoubtedly a Vedāntic or Sāṃkhyaic tinge; but the other details evidently separate this view from the accepted interpretations of these schools. The theory of the soul, however, as here indicated comes as a digression and will have to be discussed more adequately later on.

On the subject of the existence of subtle bodies we have already quoted the views of different Indian schools of philosophy for the purpose of suggesting comparisons or contrasts with the views of Caraka. Before concluding this section reference must be made to the Vedānta views with regard to the nature of subtle bodies.

According to the Vedanta, as interpreted by Sankara, the subtle body is constituted of five particles of the elements of matter (bhūta-sūkṣmaih), with which are also associated the five vāyus, prāna, apāna, etc.1 Those who perform good deeds go to the region of the moon, and those who commit sins suffer in the kingdom of Yama and then are again born in this world². Those who, as a reward of their good deeds, go to the kingdom of the moon and afterwards practically exhaust the whole of their fund of virtue and consequently cannot stay there any longer, begin their downward journey to this earth. They pass through akaša, air, smoke and cloud and then are showered on the ground with the rains and absorbed by the plants and again taken into the systems of persons who eat them, and again discharged as semen into the wombs of their wives and are reborn again. In the kingdom of the moon they had watery bodies (candra-mandale vad am-mayam sarīram upabhogārtham ārabdham) for the enjoyment available in that kingdom; and, when they exhaust their good deeds through enjoyment and can no longer hold that body, they get a body which is like $\bar{a}k\bar{a}sa$ and are thus driven by the air and come into association with smoke and cloud. At this stage, and even when they are absorbed into the body of plants, they neither enjoy pleasure nor suffer pain. A difference must be made between the condition of those who are endowed with plant-bodies as a punishment for their misdeeds and those who pass through the plantbodies merely as stations on their way to rebirth. In the case of the former the plant life is a life of enjoyment and sorrow, whereas in the case of the latter there is neither enjoyment nor sorrow.

¹ The Bhāṣya of Śaṅkara on the Brahma-sūtra, 111. i. 1-7. ² Ibid. 111. i. 13.

Even when the plant-bodies are chewed and powdered the souls residing in them as stations of passage do not suffer pain; for they are only in contact with these plant-bodies (candra-mandala-skhalitānām vrīhy ādi-samśleṣa-mātram tad-bhāvah)¹.

We thus see that it is only the Sāmkhya and the Vedānta that agree to the existence of a subtle body and are thus in accord with the view of Caraka. But Caraka is more in agreement with the Vedānta in the sense that, while according to the Sāmkhya it is the tan-mātras which constitute the subtle body, it is the fine particles of the gross elements of matter that constitute the subtle bodies in the case both of the Vedānta and of Caraka. The soul in one atomic moment becomes associated successively with ākāśa, air, light, heat, water, and earth (and not in any other order) at the time of its entrance into the womb².

Foetal Development3.

When the different elements of matter in conjunction with the subtle body are associated with the self, they have the appearance of a little lump of mucus $(kheta-bh\bar{u}ta)$ with all its limbs undifferentiated and undeveloped to such an extent that they may as well be said

¹ Bhāṣya of Śaṅkara, 111. i. 25, also 111. i. 22-27.

² Caraka-samhitā, IV. 4. 8. Cakrapāni, commenting on this, says that there is no special reason why the order of acceptance of gross elements should be from subtler to grosser; it has to be admitted only on the evidence of the scriptures—ayam ca bhūta-grahana-krama āgama-siddha eva nātra yuktis tathā-vidhā hṛdayangamāsti.

⁸ In the Garbha Upanisad, the date of which is unknown, there is a description of foetal development. Its main points of interest may thus be summarized: the hard parts of the body are earth, the liquid parts are water, that which is hot (uṣṇa) is heat-light (tejah), that which moves about is vāyu, that which is vacuous is ākāśa. The body is further said to depend on six tastes (sad-āśraya), sweet (madhura), acid (amla), salt (lavana), bitter (tikta), hot (katu) and pungent (kaṣāya), and it is made up of seven dhātus of chyle (rasa), blood (śonita) and flesh (māmsa). From the six kinds of rasa comes the sonita, from sonita comes māmsa, from māmsa comes fat (medas), from it the tendons (snāyu), from the snāyu bones (asthi), from the bones the marrow (majjā), from the marrow the semen (sukra). By the second night after the union of semen and blood the foetus is of the form of a round lump called kalala, at the eighth night it is of the form of a vesicle called budbuda, after a fortnight it assumes the form of a spheroid, pinda; in two months the head appears, in three months the feet. in four months the abdomen, heels and the pelvic portions appear, in the fifth month the spine appears, in the sixth month the mouth, nose, eyes and ears develop; in the seventh month the foetus becomes endowed with life (itvena samyukto bhavati), in the eighth month it becomes fully developed. By an excess of semen over blood a male child is produced, by the excess of blood a female child is produced, when the two are equal a hermaphrodite is produced. When air somehow enters and divides the semen into two, twins are produced. If the minds of the parents are disturbed (vyākulita-mānasah), the issue becomes either blind or lame or dwarf. In the ninth month, when the foetus is well developed

not to exist as to exist. Suśruta remarks that the two main constituents of the body, semen and blood, are respectively made up of the watery element of the moon (saumya) and the fiery element (āgneva): the other elements in atomic particles are also associated with them, and all these mutually help one another and co-operate together for the formation of the body1. Susruta further goes on to say that at the union of female and male the heat (tejah) generated rouses the vavu, and through the coming together of heat and air the semen is discharged². Caraka, however, thinks that the cause of discharge of semen is joy (harsa)3. The semen is not produced from the body, but remains in all parts of the body, and it is the joy which causes the discharge and the entrance of the semen into the uterus4. Thus he says that, being ejected by the self as joy (harsa-bhūtenātmanodīritas cādhisthitas ca), the semen constituent or the seed, having come out of the man's body, becomes combined with the menstrual product (artava) in the uterus (garbhāśaya) after it has entrance thereinto through the proper channel (ucitena pathā). According to Suśruta the ejected semen enters into the female organ (yonim abhiprapadyate) and comes into association there with the menstrual product⁵. At that very moment, the soul with its subtle body comes into association with it and thus becomes associated with the material characteristics of sattva,

with all its organs, it remembers its previous birth and knows its good and bad deeds and repents that, on account of its previous karma, it is suffering the pains of the life of a foetus, and resolves that, if it can once come out, it will follow the Samkhya-yoga discipline. But as soon as the child is born it comes into connection with Vaisnava vāyu and forgets all its previous births and resolutions. A body is called sarīra, because three fires reside in it (śrayante), viz. the koṣṭhāgni, darśanāgni and jñānāgni. The koṣṭhāgni digests all kinds of food and drink, by the darsanagm forms and colours are perceived, by the jñānāgm one performs good and bad deeds. This Upanisad counts the cranial bones as being four, the vital spots (marman) as being 107, the joints as 180, the tissues (snāyu) as 109, the śirās, or veins, as 700, the marrow places as 500, and the bones as 300.

¹ Suśruta-samhitā, III. 3. 3.

² Ibid. III. 3. 4, Nirṇaya-Sāgara edition, 1915. Palhaṇa, commenting on this, says, "sukha-lakşana-vyāyāmajosma-vilīnam vidrutam anilāc cyutam."

3 Caraka-samhitā, 1v. 4. 7.

⁴ Cakrapāṇi, commenting on Caraka-samhitā, Iv. 4. 7, says that "nāngebhyah sukram utpadyate kintu sukra-rūpatayaiva vyajyate," i.e. the semen is not produced from the different parts of the body, but it exists as it is and is only manifested in a visible form after a particular operation (Susruta, III. 3. 4).

As Dalhana interprets this, the female organ here means the uterus; thus Dalhana says, "yones trittyāvartāvasthita-garbhasayyām pratipadyate," i.e. the semen enters into the third chamber of the female organ, the place of the foetus. The uterus is probably considered here as the third chamber, the preceding two being probably the vulva and the vagina.

rajas and tamas, and godly (deva), demonic (asura), and other characteristics. Caraka, referring to the question of the association of the soul with the material elements, says that this is due to the operation of the soul acting through the mind-organ (sattva-karana)¹. Cakrapāṇi, in commenting on the above passage, says that the self (ātman) is inactive; activity is however attributed to the soul on account of the operative mind-organ which is associated with it. This, however, seems to be a compromise on the part of Cakrapāṇi with the views of the traditional Sāṃkhya philosophy, which holds the soul to be absolutely inactive; but the text of the Caraka-saṃhitā does not here say anything on the inactivity of the soul; for Caraka describes the soul as active (pravartate) as agent (kartr) and as universal performer (viśva-karman), and the sattva is described here only as an organ of the soul (sattva-karana).

In the first month, the foetus has a jelly-like form (kalala)2; in the second month, the material constituents of the body having undergone a chemical change (abhiprapacyamāna) due to the action of cold, heat and air (sītosmānilaih), the foetus becomes hard (ghana). If it is the foetus of a male child, it is spherical (pinda); if it is of a female child, it is elliptical (pest); if it is of a hermaphrodite, it is like the half of a solid sphere (arbuda)3. In the third month five special eminences are seen, as also the slight differentiation of limbs. In the fourth month the differentiation of the limbs is much more definite and well manifested; and owing to the manifestation of the heart of the foetus the entity of consciousness becomes also manifested, since the heart is the special seat of consciousness; so from the fourth month the foetus manifests a desire for the objects of the senses. In the fifth month the consciousness becomes more awakened; in the sixth intelligence begins to develop; in the seventh the division and differentiation of

¹ Sattva-karaņo guna-grahaņāya pravartate—Caraka-samhitā, 1v. 4. 8. Cakrapāṇi rightly points out that guṇa here means material elements which possess qualities—guṇavanti bhūtāni. The word guṇa is used in all these passages in the sense of material entity or bhūtā. Though guṇa means a quality and guṇin a substance, yet the view adopted here ignores the difference between qualities and substances, and guṇa, the ordinary word for quality, stands here for substance (guṇa-guṇinor abhedopacārāt—Cakrapāṇi, ibid.).

² Dalhana explains kalala as singhāna-prakhyam.

³ On the meanings of the words pest and arbuda there is a difference of opinion between Dalhana and Gayi. Thus Gayi says that pest means quadrangular (catur-asra) and arbuda means the form of the bud of a silk cotton tree (śālmali-mukulākāram).

limbs become complete; in the eighth, the vital element (ojas) still remains unsettled, and so, if a child is born at this time, it becomes short-lived.

Caraka, in 'describing the part played by different material elements in the formation of the body, says that from the element ākāśa are formed sound, the organ of hearing, lightness (lāghava), subtleness of structure (sauksmya) and porosity (vireka); from vāyu (air) are formed the sensation of touch, the organ of touch, roughness, power of movement, the disposition of the constituent elements (dhātu-vyūhana), and bodily efforts; from fire, vision, the organ of vision, digestion, heat, etc.; from water, the sensation of taste and the taste-organ, cold, softness, smoothness and watery characteristics; from earth, smell, organ of smell, heaviness, steadiness and hardness. The parts of the body which are thus formed from different material elements grow and develop with the accession of those elements from which they have grown². As the whole world is made up of five elements (bhūta), so the human body is also made up of five elements3. Caraka maintains that the senses and all other limbs of the body which grow before birth make their appearance simultaneously in the third month⁴. When, in the third month, the sense-organs grow, there grow in the heart feelings and desires. In the fourth month the foetus becomes hard, in the fifth it gets more flesh and blood, in the sixth there is greater development of strength and colour, in the seventh it becomes complete with all its limbs, and in the eighth month there is a constant exchange of vital power (ojas) between the mother and the foetus. The foetus being not yet perfectly developed, the vital fluid passes from the mother to the foetus; but, since the latter cannot retain it, it returns to the mother⁵. Cakrapāṇi, commenting on this, says that such an exchange is only possible because the foetus

¹ Suśruta-samhitā, 111. 3. 30.

² Caraka-samhitā, IV. 4. 12.

³ evam ayam loka-sammitah purusah—yāvanto hi loke bhāva-visesās tāvantah puruse, yāvantah puruse tāvanto loke (Caraka-samhitā, 1v. 4. 13). In ibid. 1v. 3, it is said that the foetus gets its skin, blood, flesh, fat, navel, heart, kloma, spleen, liver, kidneys, bladder, colon, stomach, the larger intestines, and the upper and the lower rectum from the mother, and its hair, beard, nails, teeth, bones, veins and semen from the father; but, however this may be, it is certain that the development of all these organs is really due to the assimilation of the five elements of matter. So the development of the human foetus is, like the development of all other things in the world, due to the accretion of material elements.

⁴ Ibid. IV. 4. 14.

^b mātur ojo garbham gacchatīti yad ucyate, tad-garbhauja eva mātr-sambacdham san mātroja iti vyapadisyate. Cakrapāni, 1v. 4. 24.

is still undeveloped, and the foetus, being associated with the mother, serves also as the mother's vital power (ojas); for otherwise, if the ojas went out altogether from the mother, she could not live.

There is a good deal of divergence of opinion as regards the order of the appearance of the different limbs of the foetus. Two different schools of quarrelling authorities are referred to by Caraka and Suśruta. Thus, according to Kumāraśiras and Śaunaka the head appears first, because it is the seat of the senses; according to Kānkāyana, the physician of Bālhīka, and Krtavīrya the heart appears first, because according to Krtavīrya (as reported in Suśruta) this is the seat of consciousness (cetanā) and of buddhi and manas; according to Bhadrakāpya (as reported by Caraka) the navel comes first, since this is the place where food is stored, and according to Pārāśara (as reported in Suśruta), because the whole body grows from there. According to Bhadra Saunaka (as reported by Caraka) the smaller intestine and the larger intestine (pakvāśaya) appear first, since this is the seat of air (mārutādhisthānatvāt); according to Badiśa (as reported by Caraka) the hands and feet come out first, because these are the principal organs, and according to Mārkandeya (as reported by Suśruta), because they are the main roots of all efforts (tan-mūlatvāc cestāyāh); according to Vaideha Janaka (as reported by Caraka) the senses appear first, for they are the seats of understanding (buddhy-adhisthāna); according to Mārīci (as reported by Caraka) it is not possible to say which part of the body develops first, because it cannot be seen by anyone (paroksatvād acintyam); according to Subhūti Gautama (as reported by Suśruta) the middle part of the body (madhya-śarīra) appears first, since the development of other parts of the body is dependent on it (tan-nibaddhatvāt sarva-gātrasambhavasya); according to Dhanvantari (as reported by both Caraka and Suśruta) all the parts of the body begin to develop together (yugapat sarvāngābhinirvrtti), though on account of their fineness and more or less undifferentiated character such development may not be properly noticed, as with the parts of a growing bamboo-shoot or a mango fruit (garbhasya sūksmatvān nopalabhyante vamsānkuravat cūta-phalavac ca)1. Just as the juicy parts and the stone, which are undifferentiated in a green mango at its early stages, are all found clearly developed and differentiated when it

¹ Suśruta-samhitā, III. 3. 32 and Caraka-samhitā, IV. 6. 21.

is ripe, so, when the human foetus is even in the early stages of development, all its undifferentiated parts are already developing there *pari passu*, though on account of their fineness of structure and growth they cannot then be distinguished.

Referring to the early process of the growth of the foetus, Suśruta says that, as the semen and blood undergo chemical changes through heat, seven different layers of skin (kalā) are successively produced, like the creamy layers (santānikā) formed in milk. The first layer, one-eighteenth of a paddy seed (dhanya) in thickness, is called avabhāsinī; the second, one-sixteenth of a paddy seed, lohitā; the third, one-twelfth of a paddy seed, śvetā; the fourth, one-eighth, is called tamra; the fifth, one-fifth, vedini; the sixth, of the size of a paddy seed, rohini; the seventh, of the size of two paddy seeds, māmsa-dharā. All these seven layers of skin come to about six paddy seeds, or roughly one inch. This is said to hold good only in those places of the body which are fleshy. Apart from these seven kalās of skin there are also seven kalās between the different dhātus. A dhātu (from the root dhā, to hold) is that which supports or sustains the body, such as chyle (rasa), blood (rakta), flesh (māmsa), fat (medas), bone (asthi), marrow (majjā), semen (śukra) and the last vital fluid (ojas). Lymph (kapha), bile (pitta) and excreta (purișa) have also to be counted as dhātus. These kalās, however, are not visible; their existence is inferred from the fact that the different dhatus must have separate places allotted to them, and the kalās are supposed to divide the layer of one dhātu from another and are covered with lymph and tissues $(sn\bar{a}yu)^1$. In the first kalā, known as the māmsa-dharā, the veins, tissues, etc. of the flesh are found; in the second, the rakta-dharā, is found the blood inside the flesh; in the third, called the medo-dharā, there is the fat which is found in the abdomen and also between the smaller bones². The fourth kalā is the ślesma-dharā, which exists in the joints; the fifth is the purisa-dharā, which exists in the intestine (pakvāśaya) and separates the excreta; the sixth and the seventh are the pitta-dharā and the śukra-dharā.

Susruta thinks that the liver and spleen are produced from

¹ The kalā is defined by Vṛddha-Vāgbhaṭa as yas tu dhātv āśayāntareşu kledo 'vatiṣṭhate yathāsvam uṣmabhir vipakvah snāyu-śleşma-jarāyu-cchannah kāṣṭha iva sāro dhātu-sāra-śeṣol 'patvāt kalā-samjñah (Aṣṭānga-samgraha, Śārɨra, v).

² The fat inside the smaller bones is called *medas*, whereas that inside the larger ones is called *majjā*, or marrow, and the fat of pure flesh only is called *vapā*, or fat.

blood, pupphusa (lungs) from the froth of blood, and unduka (a gland in the colon?) from the dirt of blood (sonita-kitta-prabhava). The best parts (prasāda) of blood and lymph are acted upon by bile, and vāyu works in association therewith; by this process the entrails, rectum and bladder are produced; and, when the heating process goes on in the abdomen, the tongue is produced, as the essence of lymph, blood and flesh. The air, being associated with heat, enters the flesh and changes the currents, the muscles (pesi) are differentiated, and by the oily part of fat the vayu produces the veins (sirā) and tissues (snāyu). From the essential part of blood and fat the kidneys (vrkka) are produced, from the essential part of flesh, blood, lymph and fat the testicles, and from the essence of blood and lymph the heart, which is the centre of the dhamanis through which flows the current of life (prāna-vahā). Underneath the heart on the left side there are the spleen and the pupphusa, and on the right side the liver and the kloma (right lung?), and this is particularly the place of consciousness. At the time of sleep, when it is covered with slesman having a superabundance of tamas, the heart remains contracted.

The foetus grows through the chyle of the mother and also through the inflation of the body of the foetus by air¹. The navel of the body is the heating centre (*jyotiḥ-sthāna*), and the air, starting from here, continues to inflate the body.

It must be borne in mind that a foetus is the product of several causes operating jointly. A defect of any particular limb at birth is due to some defect in that part of one or more of the operating causes through the influence of which that particular limb was produced. The cause of foetal development is not a question of organs or limbs which were absolutely non-existent: they already existed, in the potential form, in the causes operating jointly. The joint causes did not produce something absolutely new, but their joint operation helped to actualize all that was already inherent in them. Of all the joint causes the self remains unchanged in all changes of the body. The changes of pleasure and pain or such other characteristics as are considered to be due to the soul are really due either to sattva or manas, or to the body². Cakrapāṇi, commenting on this, says that the fact that a soul may

¹ Suśruta-samhitā, III. 4. 57.

² nir-vikārah paras tv ālmā sarva-bhūtānām nirvišeşa-sattva-šarīrayos tu višeşād višeşopalabdhih. Caraka-samhitā, 1v. 4. 34.

take its birth as this or that animal does not imply that the soul is liable to change (paramātma-vikārā na bhavanti); for such a change is due to the excessive preponderance of sattva, rajas or tamas, which are in reality due to virtue and vice, which in themselves are but the characteristics of mind (sattva-rajas-tamaḥ-prabalatā-rūpa-vikāraja-manojanya-dharmādharma-janyāny eva)¹.

There are three kinds of morbid elements (dosa) of the body, viz. vāta, pitta and slesman, and two morbid elements which affect the mind (sattva), viz. rajas and tamas. By the disorder of the first three the body becomes diseased, and by that of the second two the mind becomes affected. These, however, will be dealt with more fully later on.

Growth and Disease.

The three elements, vāyu, pitta and kapha, are counted both as constituents (dhātus) and as dosas, or morbid elements. Dhātus are those elements which uphold the body. The body is the conglomeration (samudāya) of the modification of five bhūtas. or elements, and it works properly so long as these elements are in proper proportions (sama-voga-vāhin) in the body². The modifications of the five elements which co-operate together to uphold the body are called dhātus. When one or more of the dhātus fall off or exceed the proper quantity (dhātu-vaiṣamya), one or more dhātus may be in excess or deficient either in partial tendencies or in entirety (akārtsnyena prakrtyā ca). It has to be noted that, as Cakrapāni explains, not every kind of excess or deficiency of dhātus produces dhātu-vaiṣamya, or disturbance of the equilibrium of the dhātus: it is only when such deficiency or excess produces affections of the body that it is called dhātu-vaisamya. That amount of excess or deficiency which does not produce trouble or affection of the body is called the normal measure of the dhātus (prākrta-māna)3. It is indeed obvious that such a definition of prākṛta-māna and dhātu-vaiṣamya involves a vicious circle, since the normal measure or prākrta-māna of dhātus is said to be that which exists when there is no trouble or affection, and dhātu-vaisamya is that which exists when there is trouble

¹ Cakrapāņi's commentary, Caraka, IV. 4.

² Caraka-samhitā, IV.6.4. Cakrapāņi, in commenting on the word sama-yoga-vāhin, explains sama as meaning ucita-pramāna (proper quantity).

³ etad eva dhātūnām prākṛta-mānam yad avikāra-kāri, Cakrapāṇi's comment on Caraka-samhitā, IV. 6. 4.

in the body; the trouble or affection of the body has thus to be defined in terms of dhātu-vaisamya. The only escape from this charge is that dhātu-vaişamya and disease are synonymous, and the prākrta-māna of dhātus is the same as health. When the dhātus are in their normal measure, there cannot be any vaisamya, except of a local nature, as when, for example, the pitta existing in its own proper measure is somehow carried by vayu to a part of the body and there is consequently a local excess. Whatever leads to the increase of any particular dhātu automatically leads also to the decrease of other dhātus which are opposed to it. Things having the same sort of composition as a particular bodily dhātu increase it, and things having a different composition decrease it (sāmānyam ekatva-karam višesas tu prthaktva-krt)1. The normal health of a man is but another name for his dhātu-sāmya; a man is said to be unhealthy, or to be in a state of dhātu-vaişamya, when symptoms of disease (vikāra) are seen. Slight variations of the due proportion of dhātu do not entitle us to call them instances of dhātu-vaisamya unless there is vikāra or symptoms of it externally expressed. The daily course of a healthy man ought to be such that the equilibrium of dhatus may be properly maintained. The sole aim of Ayur-veda is to advise diet, medicines, and a course of behaviour, such that, if they are properly followed, a normally healthy person may maintain the balance of his dhātus and a man who has lost the equilibrium of his dhātus may regain it. The aim of Avur-veda is thus to advise men how to secure dhātu-sāmva (dhātu-sāmya-kriyā coktā tantrasyāsya prayojanam)2.

If a normally healthy man wishes to keep his health at its normal level, he has to take things of different tastes, so that there may not be an excess of any particular kind of substance in the body. Diseases are caused through the excessive, deficient, and wrongful administration of sense-objects, the climatic characteristics of heat and cold, and the misuse of intelligence³. Thus the sight of objects with powerful light, the hearing of loud sounds like the roaring of thunder, the smelling of very strong odours, too much eating, the touching of too much cold or heat or too much bathing or massage are examples of *atiyoga*, or excessive association with sense-objects. Not to see, hear, smell, taste or

Caraka-samhitā, I. I. 44.
 kāla-buddhīndriyārthānām yogo mithyā na cāti ca dvayāśrayānām vyādhīnām tri-vidho hetu-samgrahah.

touch at all would be ayoga, or deficient association with senseobjects. To see objects very near the eye, at a very great distance, or to see frightful, hideous, unpleasant and disturbing sights, would be examples of the improper use (mithyā-voga) of the visual sense. To hear grating and unpleasant sounds would be examples of the improper use of the ear; to smell bad and nauseating odours would be examples of mithya-yoga of the nose; to eat together different kinds of things, which in their combination are so opposed as to be unhealthy, is an example of the improper use of the tongue; to be exposed to sudden heat and cold are examples of the improper use of touch1. Similarly, all activities of speech, mind and body, when they are performed to an excessive degree, or not performed at all, or performed in an undesirable or unhealthy manner, are to be considered respectively as examples of atiyoga, ayoga and mithyā-yoga of the effort of speech, mind and body $(v\bar{a}\dot{n}$ -manah-sarīra-pravṛtti)². But these are all due to the misuse of intelligence (prajñāparādha). When a particular season manifests its special characteristics of heat, cold or rains to an excessive degree or to a very deficient degree or in a very irregular or unnatural manner, we have what are called atiyoga, ayoga and mithyā-yoga of time $(k\bar{a}la)^3$. But the misuse of intelligence, or prajñāparādha, is at the root of all excessive, deficient or wrongful association with sense-objects4; for, when proper things are not taken at the proper time or proper things are not done at the proper time, it is all misuse of intelligence and is therefore included under prajñāparādha. When certain sinful deeds are performed by prajñāparādha, and, by the sins (adharma) associated with those deeds, which become efficient only after a certain lapse of time, illness is produced, the real cause of the illness is primarily adharma or its root cause, prajñāparādha; kāla, or time, however, may still be regarded in some sense as the cause through which the adharma is matured and becomes productive.

The principle of growth and decay is involved in the maxim

¹ Caraka-samhitā, 1. 11. 37.

² Ibid. 1. 11. 39, 40. Cakrapāņi says that this includes sinful deeds which produce illness and unhappiness, śārīra-mānasika-vācanika-karma-mithyā-yo-genaivā-dharmotpādāvāntara-vyāpāreņaivādharma-janyānām vikārāṇām kriya-mānatvāt.

³ Three seasons only are mentioned, Sttosma-varşa-lakşanāh punar hemanta-grīşma-varşāh. Ibid. 1, 11, 42.

⁴ Thus Cakrapāṇi, commenting on this, says, "buddhy-aparādhasyaiva indri-yārthātiyogādi-hetutvāt." Ibid. 1. 1. 53.

that the different constituents of the body grow when articles of food having similar constituents are taken, and that they decay when articles of food having opposite qualities are taken (evam eva sarva-dhātu-gunānām sāmānya-yogād vṛddhir viparyayādd hrāsah)1. Thus, flesh increases by the intake of flesh, so does blood by taking blood, fat by fat, bones by cartilages, marrow by marrow, semen by semen and a foetus by eggs². But the principle applies not only to the same kind of substances as taken in the above example, but also to substances having largely similar qualities, just as the seminal fluid may be increased by taking milk and butter (samāna-guna-bhūyisthānām anyaprakrtīnām apy-āhāravikārānām upayogah)3. The ordinary conditions of growth always hold good, namely, proper age of growth, nature, proper diet and absence of those circumstances that retard growth. The assimilation of food is effected by heat which digests, air which collects together all things for the action of heat, water which softens, fat which makes the food smooth, and time which helps the process of digestion4. As any particular food is digested and changed, it becomes assimilated into the body. The hard parts of the food form the hard parts of the body and the liquid parts form the liquid parts such as blood and the like; and unhealthy food, i.e. food which has qualities opposed to the natural qualities of the body, has a disintegrating influence on the body.

As regards the growth of the body through the essence of the food-juice, there are two different views summed up by Cakrapani (1. 28. 3). Some say that the chyle is transformed into blood, and the blood into flesh, and so forth. As regards the method of this transformation, some say that, just as the whole milk is changed into curd, so the whole chyle is transformed into blood, while others say that this transformation is somewhat like the circulation in irrigation (kedarī-kulyā-nyāya). The rasa (chyle) produced as a result of the digestive process, coming into association with rasa as the body-constituent (dhātu-rūpa-rasa), increases it to a certain extent; another part of the rasa, having the same colour and smell as blood, goes to blood and increases it, and another part similarly goes to flesh and increases it; and the same process takes place with reference to its increasing fat, etc. Here the whole circula-

¹ Caraka-samhitā, 1. 1. 43 and 44, also IV 6. 9 and particularly IV. 6. 10. ² Ibid. IV. 6. 10. Cakrapāṇi explains āma-garbha as anḍa.

³ Ibid. 1v. 6. 11. 4 Ibid. IV. 6. 14 and 15.

tion begins by the entrance of the entire chyle into the constituent rasa (rasa-dhātu); in passing through some part remains in the rasa and increases it, the unabsorbed part passes into blood, and what is unabsorbed there passes into flesh and so on to the other higher constituents of bones, marrow and semen1. But others think that, just as in a farm-house pigeons of different descriptions sit together (khale kapota-nyāya), so not all the digested food-juice passes through the channel of the rasa-dhātu, but different parts of it pass through different channels from the very first stage. That part of it which nourishes rasa enters into the channel of its circulation, that part of it which nourishes the blood goes directly into that, and so on. But there is generally this time limitation, that the part which nourishes the blood enters into it only when the part which nourishes rasa-dhātu has been absorbed in it; so again the part which enters into flesh can only do so when the part which nourishes blood has been absorbed in it. Thus the circulatory system is different from the very beginning; and yet the nourishment of blood takes place later than that of rasa, the nourishment of flesh later than that of blood, and so on (rasād raktam tato māmsam ityāder ayam arthah yad rasa-puşţi-kālād uttara-kālam raktam jāyate, etc.). The upholders of the last view maintain that the other theory cannot properly explain how a nourishing diet (vrsya), such as milk, can immediately increase the seminal fluid, and that, if it had to follow the lengthy process of passing through all the circulatory systems, it could not do its part so quickly; but on the second theory, milk through its special quality (prabhāva) can be immediately associated with the seminal fluid and thereby increase it². But Cakrapāni remarks that the earlier theory (kedārī-kulyā) is as good as the later one. For on that view also it might be held that by milk its special quality (prabhāva)

¹ There are two kinds of rasa, called dhātu-rasa and poşaka-rasa. See Cakrapāṇi's comment on Caraka-saṃhitā, vi. 15. 14 and 15.

² parināma-pakṣe, vṛṣya-prayogasya raktādi-rūpāpatti-kramenāticirena sukram bhavattti; kṣṭrādayas ca sadya eva vṛṣyā dṛṣyante, khale-kapota-pakṣe tu vṛṣyotpanno rasah prabhāvāc chīghram eva sukrena sambaddhah san tat-puṭṭim karotiti yuktam (Cakrapāṇi on Garaka-samhitā, 1. 28. 3). Elsewhere (ibid. vī. 15. 32) it is said that those articles of food which stimulate semen (vṛṣya) are, according to some authorities, changed into semen in six days and nights, whereas in the ordinary course, as is said in Suśruta, it takes a month for the transformation of ordinary articles of food into semen. But Caraka does not favour any time limitation and urges that, just as the movement of a wheel depends upon the energy spent on it, so the time that a particular food takes for getting itself transformed into semen or into any other dhātu depends upon the nature of the food and the powers of digestion.

passed quickly through the various stages and became associated with the seminal fluid. Nor can it be said that according to the first theory every case of impurity of rasa (rasa-duṣṭi) is also a case of impurity of blood (rakta-duṣṭi), as is argued; for not the whole of rasa is transformed into blood, but only a part of it. So the rasa part may be impure, but still the part that goes to form blood may be pure; thus both theories are equally strong, and nothing can be said in favour of either. In Caraka-saṃhitā, VI. 15. 14 and 15, it is said that from rasa there is rakta (blood), from rakta flesh, from flesh fat, from fat bones, from bones marrow, from marrow semen. The two theories above referred to deal with the supposed ways in which such transformations occur.

In addition to the seven dhātus, or body-constituents, spoken of above there are ten upa-dhātus, which are counted by Bhoja as śirā, snāyu, ovarial blood and the seven layers of skin1. Caraka says in VI. 15. 15 that from rasa is also produced milk, and from milk ovarial blood; again, the thick tissues or ligaments (kandarā) and sirās are produced from blood, and from flesh are produced fat $(vas\bar{a})$ and the six layers of skin, and from fat (medas) are produced the five tissues. The chyle, or rasa, becomes tinged with red by the heat of bile. The blood, again, being worked upon by $v\bar{a}yu$ and heat, becomes steady and white, and is called fat (medas). The bones are a conglomeration of earth, heat and air and therefore, though produced from flesh and fat, are hard. They are made porous by vāyu running through them, and the pores are filled in by fat, which is called marrow. From the oily parts of marrow, again, semen is produced. Just as water percolates through the pores of a new earthen jug, the semen percolates through the pores of the bones, and there is also a flow of this seminal fluid through the body by way of its own ducts. By the rousing of desires and sex joy and by the heat of the sex act the semen oozes out and collects in the testes, from which it is ultimately liberated through its proper channel².

¹ Cakrapāṇi on Caraka-samhitā, v1. 15. 14 and 15, a quotation from Bhoja. Ojas is counted as an upa-dhātu.

² Caraka-samhitā, VI. 15. 22-29.

Vāyu, Pitta and Kapha.

The qualities of the body are briefly of two kinds, those which make the system foul, the *mala*, and those which sustain and purify the body, the *prasāda*. Thus in the pores of the body are formed many undesirable bodily growths which seek egress; some constituents of the body, such as blood, are often turned into pus; the $v\bar{a}yu$ (air), *pitta* (bile) and *kapha* (phlegm or lymph) may become less or more than their normal measure (*prakupita*), and there are other entities which, existing in the body, tend to weaken or destroy it; these are all called *malas*. Others which go towards the sustenance and the growth of the body are called *prasāda*¹.

But vāyu, pitta and kapha are primarily responsible for all kinds of morbidities of the body, and they are therefore called dosa. It must, however, be noted that the vāyu, pitta and kapha and all other malas, so long as they remain in their proper measure (svamāna), do not pollute or weaken the body or produce diseases. So even malas like vāyu, pitta and kapha, or sweat, urine, etc., are called dhātus, or body-constituents, so long as they do not exceed their proper measure, and thus instead of weakening the body they serve to sustain it. Both the mala-dhātus and the prasādadhātus in their proper measure co-operate together in sustaining the body2. When various kinds of healthy food and drink are exposed in the stomach to the internal fire of the digestive organs, they become digested by heat. The essential part of the digested food is the chyle (rasa), and the impurities which are left out and cannot be assimilated into the body as its constituents are called kitta or mala. From this kitta are produced sweat, urine, excreta, vāyu, pitta, ślesman and the dirt of ear, eye, nose, mouth and of the holes of the hairs of the body, the hair, beard, hair of the body, nails, etc.3 The impurity of food is excreta and urine, that of rasa is phlegm (kapha), that of flesh bile (pitta) and that of fat (medas) sweat4. This view of vayu, pitta and kapha seems to indicate that these are secretions, waste-products (kitta), like the other waste-products of the body. But the theory of wasteproducts is that, when they are in their proper measure, they serve to sustain the body and perform important functions, but, when

¹ Caraka-saṃhitā, IV. 6. 17.

² evam rasa-malau sva-pramānāvasthitav āśrayasya sama-dhātor dhātu-sām-yam anuvartayataḥ (ibid. 1. 28. 3).

³ Ibid. 1. 28. 3.

⁴ Ibid. VI. 15. 30.

they exceed the proper limit or become less than their proper measure, they pollute the body and may ultimately break it. But of all waste-products $v\bar{a}yu$, pitta and kapha are regarded as being fundamentally the most important entities, and they sustain the work of the body by their mutual co-operation in proper measure, and destroy it by the disturbance of balance due to the rise or fall of one, two or all three of them.

As has already been said, the body is composed of certain constituents, such as rasa and rakta. The food and drink which we take go to nourish the different dhātus. Not all the food and drink that we take, however, can be absorbed into the system, and consequently certain waste-products are left¹. The question arises, what is it that sustains the system or breaks it? It has already been noticed that the due proportion of the dhātus is what constitutes the health of the body. This due proportion, however, must, as is easy to see, depend on the proper absorption of food and drink in such a way that each of the dhatus may have its due share and that only, neither less nor more. It is also necessary that there should be a due functioning of the causes of waste or accretion, working in a manner conducive to the preservation of the proper proportion of the constituents with reference to themselves and the entire system. Deficiency or excess of waste-products is therefore an invariable concomitant of all disturbances of the balance of dhātus, and hence the deficiency or excess of waste-products is regarded as the cause of all dhātu-vaisamya. So long as the waste-products are not in deficiency or excess, they are the agents which constitute the main working of the system and may themselves be therefore regarded as dhātus. It is when there is excess or deficiency of one or more of them that they oppose in various ways the general process of that working of the system and are to be regarded as dosas or polluting agents. There are various waste-products of the body; but of all these vayu, pitta and kapha are regarded as the three most important, being at the root of all growth and decay of the body, its health and disease. Thus

¹ Sārngadhara (Iv. 5) counts seven visible waste-products which are different from the three malas referred to here as νάρι, pitta and kapha. These are (1) the watery secretions from tongue, eyes and cheeks, (2) the colouring pitta, (3) the dirt of ears, tongue, teeth, armpits and penis, (4) the nails, (5) the dirt of the eyes, (6) the glossy appearance of the face, (7) the eruptions which come out in youth, and beards. Rāḍhamalla, in commenting on this, refers to Caraka-samhitā, v1. 15. 20–30, in support of the above passage of Sārngadhara. Most of the malas are chidra-malas, or impurities of the openings.

Ātreva says in answer to Kāpyavaca's remarks in the learned discussions of the assembly of the sages, "In one sense you have all spoken correctly; but none of your judgments are absolutely true. Just as it is necessary that religious duties (dharma), wealth (artha) and desires (kāma) should all be equally attended to, or just as the three seasons of winter, summer and rains all go in a definite order, so all the three, vāta, pitta and ślesman or kapha, when they are in their natural state of equilibrium, contribute to the efficiency of all the sense-organs, the strength, colour and health of the body, and endow a man with long life. But, when they are disturbed, they produce opposite results and ultimately break the whole balance of the system and destroy it1." There is one important point to which the notice of the reader should particularly be drawn. I have sometimes translated mala as "polluting agents or impurities" and sometimes as "waste-products," and naturally this may cause confusion. The term mala has reference to the production of diseases2. Kitta means waste-products or secretions, and these may be called mala when they are in such proportions as to cause diseases. When, however, a mala is in such proportions that it does not produce any disease, it is not a mala proper but a mala-dhātu (nirbādha-karān malādīn prasāmde samcaksmahe)3. In another passage of Caraka (1. 28. 3), which has been referred to above, it is said that out of the digested food and drink there are produced rasa and kitta (secretion) called mala (tatrāhāraprasādākhya-rasah kittam ca malākhyam abhinirvartate), and out of this kitta is produced sweat, urine, excreta, väyu, pitta and ślesman. These malas are also dhātus, inasmuch as they sustain the body as much as the other dhātus, rasa or rakta, etc. do, so long as they are in their proper proportions and balance (te sarva eva dhātavo malākhyāh prasādākhyāś ca)4. Vāgbhata, however, takes a different view of this subject. He separates the dosa, dhātu and mala and speaks of them as being the roots of the body. Thus he says that vāyu sustains the body, contributing energy (utsāha), exhalation (ucchvāsa), inspiration (nihśvāsa), mental and bodily movement (cestā), ejective forces (vega-pravartana); pitta helps the body by

¹ Caraka-saṃhitā, 1. 12. 13.

² tatra mala-bhūtās te ye śarirasya bādhakarāh syuh. Caraka-samhitā, Iv. 6. 17.
³ Cakrapāṇi on Caraka-samhitā. Compare Śārngadhara, Iv. 8: vāyuh pittam kapho doṣā dhātavaś ca malā matāh, i.e. vāyu, pitta and kapha are known as doṣa.

dhātu and mala.

Also evam rasa-malau sva-pramānāvasthitav āśrayasya sama-dhātor chātu-sāmyam anuvartayatah (Caraka-samhitā, 1. 28. 3).

digestive function, heat, the function of sight, imagination (medhā), power of understanding (dhī), courage (śaurya), softness of the body; and slesman, by steadiness, smoothness, by serving to unite the joints, etc. The functions of the seven dhātus, beginning with rasa, are said to be the giving of satisfaction through the proper functioning of the senses (prinana or rasa), the contribution of vitality (jīvana), the production of oiliness (sneha), the supporting of the burden (dhārana) of the bones (asthi), the filling up of bone cavities (pūrana or majjā) and productivity (garbhotpāda of śukra); of males it is said that the excreta has the power of holding the body, while urine ejects the surplus water and sweat holds it back1. The elder Vägbhata distinguishes the dhātus from vāyu, pitta and kapha by calling the latter dosa (polluting agents) and the former dūsya (the constituents which are polluted). He further definitely denies that the malas of dhātus could be the cause of disease. He thus tries to explain away this view (that of Caraka as referred to above) as being aupacārika, i.e. a metaphorical statement². The body, according to him, is a joint product of dosa, dhātu and mala³. Indu, the commentator on the Astānga-samgraha, however, emphasizes one important characteristic of the dosas when he says that the dynamic which sets the dhatus in motion (dosebhya eva dhātūnām pravṛttiḥ) is derived from the doṣas, and the circulation chemical activities, oiliness, hardness, etc. of the chyle (rasa) are derived from them4. Owing to the predominance of one or other of the dosas from the earliest period, when the foetus begins to develop, the child is said to possess the special features of one or other of the dosas and is accordingly called vāta-prakrti, pittaprakṛti or śleṣma-prakṛti. Vāgbhata further says that disease is not dhātu-vaisamya, but dosa-vaisamya, and the equilibrium of dosas or dosa-sāmya is health. A disease, on this view, is the disturbance of dosas, and, as dosas are entities independent of the dhatus, the disturbance of dosas may not necessarily mean the disturbance of dhātus5. In another passage the elder Vāgbhata says

¹ Astānga-hṛdaya, 1. 11. 1-5.

tajjān ity-upacāreņa tān āhur ghṛta-dāhavat rasādistheṣu doṣeṣu vyādhayas sambhavanti ye.

Aṣṭāṅga-saṃgraha, 1. 1.

3 Indu, the commentator on the Aṣṭāṅga-saṃgraha, puts it as śarīraṃ ca doṣa-dhātu-mala-samudāyaḥ (1. 1).

¹ tathā ca dhātu-poṣāya rasasya vahana-pāka-sneha-kāthinyādi doṣaprasāda-labhyam eva (ibid.).

⁸ Ayur-veda is closely associated with the Samkhya and Nyaya-Vaisesika, which alone deal with some sort of physics in Indian philosophy. It is pointed

that, as the manifold universe is nothing but a modification of the gunas, so all diseases are but modifications of the three dosas, or, as in the ocean waves, billows and foam are seen which are in reality the same as the ocean, so all the different diseases are nothing but the three dosas1. The elder Vagbhata uses also in another place the simile of the three gunas with reference to the three dosas. Thus he says, "As the three gunas co-operate together for the production of the world in all its diversity, in spite of the mutual opposition that exists among themselves, so the three dosas also co-operate together, in spite of natural opposition, for the production of the diverse diseases2." In the treatment of the bone system the present writer agrees with Dr Hoernle that Vagbhaţa always attempted to bring about a reconciliation between Caraka and Suśruta by explaining away the unadjustable views of one or the other. Here also the same tendency is seen. Thus, on the one hand, he explained away as being metaphorical (aupacārikī) the expressed views of Caraka that the dhātu-malas are the dosas. On the other hand, he followed the statements of the Uttara-tantra that the three dosas, the dhātus, excreta and urine sustain a man's body. He further follows the *Uttara-tantra* in holding that the three dosas are the three gunas (bhinna dosas trayo gunah). Dalhana identifies vāyu with rajas, pitta with sattva and kapha with tamas3.

In the Sūtra-sthāna Suśruta mentions blood (śonita) as having the same status as vāyu, pitta and kapha and holds that the body out by Narasimha Kavirāja (a writer from the south) in his Vivarana-siddhānta-cintāmani (the only manuscript of which is in possession of the present writer) that according to Sāmkhya it is the doṣa transforming itself from a state of equilibrium to a state of unbalanced preponderance of any of them that is to be called a disease (vaiṣamya-sāmyāvasthā-bhinnāvasthā-višeṣavad doṣatvam rogatvam). The Naiyāyikas, however, hold that disease is a separate entity or substance, which is produced by doṣa, but which is not itself a doṣa (dravyatve sati doṣa-bhinna-doṣa-janyatvam rogatvam). So a disease is different from its symptoms or effects. Narasimha further holds that, since Caraka speaks of diseases as being fiery (āgneya) and aerial (vāyavya), he tacitly accepts the diseases as separate substances. That Caraka sometimes describes a disease as being dhātu-vaiṣamya is to be explained as due to the fact that, since dhātu-vaiṣamyas produce diseases, they are themselves also called diseases in a remote sense (yat tu Carakena dhātu-vaiṣamyasya rogatvam uktam tat teṣām tathā-vidha-duḥkha-karttvād aupacārikam. Vivaraṇa-siddhānta-cintāmaṇi, MS.p. 3).

¹ Astānga-samgraha, 1. 22.

ārambhakam virodhe 'pi mitho yad yad guna-trayam visvasya dṛṣṭam yugapad vyādher doṣa-trayam tathā (ibid. 1. 21).

³ rajo-bhuyiştho mārutah, rajo hi pravartakam sarva-bhāvānām pittam sattvot-kaţam laghu-prakāśakatvāt, rajo-yuktam vā ity eke kaphas tamo-bahulah, guru-prāvaranātmakatvād ity āhur bhiṣajah. Yady evam tat katham kapha-prakṛtike pumsi sattva-gunopapannatā paṭhitā, ucyate, guna-dvitayam api kaphe jñātavyam sattva-tamo-bahulā āpa (Dalhana on Suśruta, Uttara-tantra, 66.9).

depends on food and drink as well as on the various combinations of vāyu, pitta, kapha and sonita in health and disease. Dalhana, in commenting on this, says that, Suśruta's work being principally a treatise on surgery, its author holds that blood with all its impurities plays an important part in producing disturbances in all wounds¹. Susruta further speaks of vāta, pitta and ślesman as the causes of the formation of the body (deha-sambhava-hetavah). The vāta, pitta and kapha, situated in the lower, middle and upper parts of the body, are like three pillars which support the body, and blood also co-operates with them in the same work. Dalhana remarks that vata, pitta and kapha are concomitant causes, working in cooperation with semen and blood². Suśruta further derives vāta from the root $v\bar{a}$, to move, pitta from tap, to heat, and slesman from ślis, to connect together. The Sūtra-sthāna of Suśruta compares kapha, pitta and vāvu with the moon (soma), the sun (sūrya) and air (anila) but not with the three gunas, as is found in the supplementary book, called the *Uttara-tantra*. In discussing the nature of pitta, he says that pitta is the fire in the body and there is no other fire but pitta in the body. Pitta has all the qualities of fire, and so, when it diminishes, articles of food with fiery qualities serve to increase it, and, when it increases, articles of food with cooling properties serve to diminish it. Pitta, according to Suśruta, is situated between the stomach (āmāśaya) and the smaller intestines (pakvāśaya), and it cooks all food and drink and separates the chyle on the one hand, and the excreta, urine, etc. on the other. Being situated in the above place, between the stomach and the smaller intestines (tatra-stham eva), by its own power (ātma-śaktyā) it works in other pitta centres of the body and by its heating work (agni-karma) sets up the proper activities at those places. In its function of cooking it is called pācaka, in its function in the liver and spleen, as supplying the colouring matter of blood, it is called "colouring" (ranjaka), in its function in the heart it serves intellectual purposes (sādhaka), in its function in the eyes it is called "perceiving," or locaka, in its function of giving a glossy appearance to the skin it is called bhrājaka. It is hot, liquid and blue or yellow, possesses bad smell, and after

¹ etad dhi śalya-tantram, śalya-tantre ca vranch pradhāna-bhūtah vrane ca dūsyeşu madhye raktasya prādhānyam iti śoṇitopādānam (ibid.). Suśruta also uses the word doṣa to mean pus (pūya) (1. 5. 12).

² Suśruta, I. 21. 3 and 4. Dalhana, commenting on this, writes: "śukrārtavādi sahakāritayā deha-janakā abhipretāh."

passing through unhealthy digestive actions tastes sour. Coming to slesman, Susruta says that the stomach is its natural place; being watery, it flows downwards and neutralizes the bile-heat, which otherwise would have destroyed the whole body by its excessive heat. Being in amasaya, it works in the other centres of slesman, such as the heart, the tongue, the throat, the head and in all the joints of the body. The place of vavu is the pelvic regions and the rectum (śroni-guda-samśraya); the main place of the blood, which is counted as dosa by Susruta, is regarded as being the liver and the spleen1. I have noticed above, that in the Atharva-Veda mention is found of three kinds of diseases, the airy (vātaja), the dry (śuṣma) and the wet (abhraja)2. In the Caraka-samhitā vāta, pitta and kapha are regarded as being produced from kitta, or secretions. They are thus regarded here as being of the nature of internal waste-products of unassimilated food-juice at the different stages of its assimilation, as chyle, flesh, etc., which have important physiological functions to perform for the preservation of the process of the growth of the body, when they are in due proportions, and they break up the body when they are in undue proportions. What exactly kitta means is difficult to determine. It may mean merely the part of the food-juice unassimilated as chyle, or the part of it unassimilated as blood, and so forth; or it may mean such unassimilated products, together with the secretions from the respective dhātus, which absorb the substantial part of the food-juice and throw off some of its impurities into the unabsorbed material; this at least is what kitta ought to mean, if it is interpreted as dhātu-mala, or impurities of dhātus. These secretions and waste-products form the source of most of the constructive and destructive forces of the body. The watery character of kapha and the fiery character of pitta are not ignored; but their essence or substance is considered to be secretive, or of the nature of waste-product. Suśruta, however, does not seem to refer to this secretive aspect, but he seems to have grasped the essential physiological activity of the body as being of the nature of digestive operation and the distribution of the heat and the products of digestion; and the analogy of cooking, as requiring fire, water and air, seems to have been well before his mind. Susruta also seems to

¹ Suśruta-samhitā, 1. 11. 8-16.

² Ye abhrajā vātajā yaś ca śusmo (Atharva-Veda, 1. 12. 3); again, agner ivāsya dahata eti śusminah (ibid. V1. 20. 4).

have leant more towards the view of the physiological operations of the body as being due to elemental activities, the food-juice taking the place of earth and the other three principles being fire (pitta), water (slesman) and air (vāta). The reason why the principles of the body are here regarded as being transformations of fire, water and air is not explained by Suśruta. The supplementary Uttara-tantra, however, thinks that they are the three gunas. Vāgbhata, always fond of taking a middle course in his endeavour to reconcile the different attempts to grasp the principles under discussion, holds that they are comparable to the three gunas, because, though opposed to one another, they also co-operate together; and, because diseases are but modifications of the dosas, he further thinks that dosas, dhātus and dhātu-malas are quite different entities; but he is unable to give any definite idea as to what these dosas are. The person who seems to have had the most definite conception of the dosas was Caraka. In the Uttara-tantra and by Vāgbhata the Sāmkhya analogy of the gunas seems to have had a very distracting influence, and, instead of trying to find out the true physiological position of the dosas, these writers explain away the difficulty by a vague reference to the Sāmkhya gunas.

Let us now return to Caraka. By him $v\bar{a}yu$ is described as being dry $(ruk \bar{s}a)$, cold $(\bar{s}ita)$, light (laghu), subtle $(s\bar{u}k \bar{s}ma)$, moving (cala), scattering everything else in different directions $(vi \bar{s}ada)$ and rough $(khara)^1$. It is neutralized in the body by those things which have opposite qualities. In the healthy constructive process the $v\bar{a}yu$ is said to perform physiological functions as follows: it sustains the machinery of the body (tantra-yantra-dharah), it manifests itself as $pr\bar{a}na$, $ud\bar{a}na$, $sam\bar{a}na$ and $ap\bar{a}na$ and is the generator of diverse kinds of efforts; it is the force which controls $(niyant\bar{a})$ the mind from all undesirables and directs $(pranet\bar{a})$ it to all that is desirable, is the cause of the employment of the sense-organs, is the carrier of the stimulation of sense-objects, collects together

¹ Caraka-samhitā, 1. 1. 58. Cakrapāṇi, in commenting on this, says that, though vāyu is described as neither hot nor cold according to the Vaiseṣika philosophy, yet, since it is found to increase by cold and decrease by heat, it is regarded as cold. Of course, when connected with pita it is found to be hot, but that is on account of its association with the heat of pita (yoga-vāhitvāt). In the Vāta-kalā-kaltya chapter (1. 12. 4), six qualities of vāta are mentioned; sūkṣma is not mentioned, however, and, in place of cala, dāruṇa is mentioned. Cakrapāṇi says that dāruṇa means the same as cala. In the same chapter (1. 12. 7) vāyu is qualified as śuṣira-kara, i.e. that which makes holes.

the dhātus of the body, harmonizes the functions of the body as one whole, is the mover of speech, is the cause of touch and sounds, as also of the corresponding sense-organs, the root of joy and mental energy, the air for the digestive fire, the healer of morbidities, the ejecter of extraneous dirts, the operating agent for all kinds of circulation, the framer of the shape of the foetus, and is, in short, identical with the continuity of life (āyuṣo 'nuvṛtti-pratyaya-bhūta). When it is in undue proportions, it brings about all sorts of troubles, weakens the strength, colour, happiness and life, makes the mind sad, weakens the functions of the sense-organs, causes malformations of the foetus, produces diseases and all emotions of fear, grief, delirium, etc., and arrests the functions of the prānas.

It is interesting to note how Vāyorvida describes the cosmic functions of air as the upholding of the earth, causing the burning of fire, the uniform motion of the planets and stars, the production of clouds, the showering of rains, the flow of rivers, the shaping of flowers and fruits, the shooting out of plants, the formation of the seasons, the formation of the strata of minerals, the production of the power of seeds to produce shoots, the growing up of crops, etc. In the same discussion Mārīci considers fire to be contained in the pitta and productive of all good and bad qualities, digestion and indigestion, vision and blindness, courage and fear, anger, joy, ignorance, etc., according as it is in equilibrium or is disturbed. Kāpya maintains that soma, contained in śleşman, produces all good and bad qualities, such as firmness and looseness of the body, fatness, leanness, energy and idleness, virility and impotence, knowledge and ignorance, etc.²

These discussions seem to indicate that before Atreya's treatise was written attempts were made to explain the physiological functions of the body in health and disease by referring them to the operation of one operative principle. The Chāndogya Upaniṣad speaks of earth, water and fire as being world-principles of construction: the different vāyus were known as early as the Atharva-Veda, and vāyu is regarded in many of the Upaniṣads as the principle of life. It seems fairly certain that the theory of vāta, pitta and kapha is a later development of the view which regarded air (pavana), fire (dahana) and water (toya) as the fundamental constitutive principles of the body. Thus Suśruta refers to this view

¹ Caraka-samhitā, 1. 12. 8.

² Ibid. 1. 12. 11 and 12.

in III. 4. 80: "Some say that the constitution (prakrti) of the human body is elemental (bhautikī), the three constitutive elements being air, fire and water1." The advance of the medical schools of thought over these speculations and over others which consider the body to be a product of one bhūta or of many bhūtas is to be sought in this, that, besides allowing the material causes (upādāna) of the body to be the dhātus, they emphasized the necessity of admitting one or more inherent dynamic principles for the development and decay of the body. This explains how vāta, pitta and kapha are regarded both as dhātu and as dosa, as prakrti and as vikrti. Thus Caraka says, as has already been mentioned, that from the time of the formation of the foetus the vāta, pitta and kapha are working, but in more or less diverse ways and in diverse systems, with equal vāyu, pitta, mala and kapha (sama-pittānilakapha) or different degrees of predominance of them as vātala, pittala and ślesmala². Men of the ślesmala type are generally healthy, whereas $v\bar{a}tala$ and pittala persons are always of indifferent health. Later on, when there is a disease with the predominance of that dosa which is predominant in man's constitution from his birth, the newly collected dosa produces morbidity on the lines on which the predominating dosa of his constitution is working; but this newly collected dosa does not augment the corresponding original dosa. The original dosa is never increased, and, whatever may be the predominance of a dosa due to any disease, the constitutional condition of the dosas remains the same. Thus a vata-prakrti person does not become ślesma-prakrti or pitta-prakrti, and viceversa. The dosas which are constitutional always remain as the

> prakrtim iha narāṇām bhautikīm kecid āhuḥ pavana-dahana-toyaiḥ kīrtitās tās tu tisraḥ.

Suśruta, III. 4. 80. ² Caraka refers to a view that there are none who may be regarded as sama-vāta-pitta-śleşman (or having equal vāta, pitta and ślesman). Since all men take various kinds of diet (viṣamāhāropayogitvāt), they must be either vātaprakrti, pitta-prakrti, or ślesma-prakrti. Against this Caraka says that sama-vātapitta-slesman is the same thing as health or freedom from disease (aroga). All medicines are applied for attaining this end, and there cannot be any doubt that such a state exists. Again, the terms vata-praketi, pitta-praketi and slesmaprakrti are incorrect; for prakrti means health. What they mean by vāta-prakrti is that vāta is quantitatively predominant (ādhikya-bhāvāt sā dosa-prakrtir ucvate), and quantitative predominance is the same as vikāra; so the proper terms are vātala, pittala, etc. When a vātala person takes things which increase vāta, his vata increases at once; but when he takes things which increase pitta or slesman, these do not increase in him as rapidly as vata does. So in the case of a pittala person pitta increases rapidly when articles which increase pitta are taken, and so with regard to slesman (Caraka-samhitā, III. 6, 14-18).

constant part engaged in their physiological operations. The later accretion of the dosas or their deficiency has a separate course of action in producing diseases, and there is no interchange between these later collections of dosas or their deficiency and the constitutional constant parts of the dosas known as prakrti¹. The only sense (as Cakrapāni says) in which a dosa is related to a constitutional (prakrti) dosa is that a dosa grows strong in a system in which a corresponding dosa is constitutionally predominant, and it grows weaker when the opposite is the case². It is not out of place in this connection to say that, though the dosas are mutually opposed to one another, they do not always neutralize one another, and it is possible for them to grow simultaneously violent in a system. In the six seasons of rains (varsā), autumn (śarat), late autumn (hemanta), winter (sīta), spring (vasanta) and summer (grīsma) there is an alternate collection (cava), disturbance (prakopa) and lowering down (prasama) of the three dosas, pitta, ślesman and $v\bar{a}yu$ respectively. Thus, for example, in the rains (varsā) there is collection of pitta, in the autumn (sarat) there is disturbance of pitta, in the harvesting season (hemanta) there is lowering of pitta and collection of slesman, in the summer there is collection of vāta, and so forth³. Contrasting the functions of the dosas in the normal (prakrti) and abnormal (vikrti) states, Caraka says that in the normal state the heat of

¹ Ibid. 1. 7. 38-41. The passage prakrti-stham yadā pittam mārutah śleṣmaṇaḥ kṣaye (1. 17. 45) is often referred to in support of the view that the new accretions of doṣas affect the prakrti-doṣas. But Cakrapāṇi explains it differently. He says that a disease may be caused by a doṣa which is not in excess of the constant constitutional quantity (prakrti-māna) by virtue of the fact that it may be carried from one part of the body to another and thereby may produce a local accretion or excess, though the total quantity of doṣa may not be in excess.

² samānām hi prakṛtim prāpya doṣah pravṛddha-balo bhavati, asamānām tu prāpya tathā balavān na syāt (Cakrapāni on Caraka-samhitā, 1. 17. 62).

³ Ibid. 1. 17. 112. See also Cakrapāṇi's comments on these. Dalhaṇa, in commenting on Suśruta-saṃhitā, 1. 21. 18, says that saṅcaya of doṣas means aggregation or accumulation in general (dehe 'tirupāvrddhiś cayah); prakopa of doṣas means that the accumulated doṣas are spread through the system (vilayana-rūpā vrddhiḥ prakopaḥ). The external signs of the caya of vāta are fullness of the stomach and want of motions; of pitta yellowish appearance and reduction of heat (mandoṣnatā); of kapha heaviness of the limbs and feeling of laziness. In all cases of caya there is a feeling of aversion to causes which increase the particular doṣa of which there has been caya (caya-kāraṇa-vidveṣaś ca). The stage of caya is the first stage of operation in the growth and prevention of diseases. If the doṣas can be removed or neutralized at this stage, there is no further disease. The usual indication of the disturbance (prakopa) of vāyu is disorders of the stomach; of pitta, acidity, thirst and burning; of kapha, aversion to food, palpitation (hrdayotkleda), etc. The prakopa of blood (śonita) is always due to the prakopa of vāta, pitta or kapha. This is the second stage of the progress of diseases. The

pitta occasions digestion; ślesman is strength and vitality, and vāyu is the source of all activities and the life of all living beings; but in the abnormal state pitta produces many diseases; slesman is the dirt of the system and the cause of many troubles, and vāta also produces many diseases and ultimately death. The places (sthānāni) at which the affections of vāta, pitta and kapha are mostly found are thus described by Caraka: of vāta the bladder, rectum, waist and the bones of the leg, but the smaller intestine (pakvāśaya) is its particular place of affection; of pitta sweat, blood and the stomach, of which the last is the most important; of ślesman the chest, head, neck, the joints, stomach and fat, of which the chest is the most important. There are eighty affections of vāta, forty of pitta and twenty of ślesman1. But in each of these various affections of vāta, pitta and ślesman the special features and characteristics of the corresponding dosas are found. Thus Caraka in 1. 20. 12-23 describes certain symptoms as leading to a diagnosis of the disease as being due to the disturbance of $v\bar{a}ta$, pitta or kapha. But a question may arise as to what may consistently with this view be considered to be the nature of vāyu, pitta and kapha. Are they only hypothetical entities, standing as symbols of a number of symptoms without any real existence? In such an interpretation reality would belong to the symptoms, and the agents of morbidity, or the dosas, would only be convenient symbols for collecting certain groups of these symptoms under one name. Wherever there is one particular set of symptoms, it is to be considered that there is disturbance of vāyu; wherever there is another set of symptoms, there is disturbance of pitta, and so

third stage is called prasara. At this stage there is something like a fermentation of the dosas (paryusita-kinvodaka-pista-samavāya iva). This is moved about by vāyu, which though inanimate, is the cause of all motor activities. When a large quantity of water accumulates at any place, it breaks the embankment and flows down and joins on its way with other streams and flows on all sides; so the dosas also flow, sometimes alone, sometimes two conjointly, and sometimes all together. In the whole body, in the half of it, or in whatever part the fermented dosas spread, there the symptoms of diseases are showered down, as it were, like water from the clouds (doso vikāram nabhasi meghavat tatra varsati). When one doşa, e.g. vāyu, spreads itself in the natural place of another doşa, e.g. pitta, the remedy of the latter will remove the former (vāyoh pitta-sthānagalasya pittavat pratīkāraḥ). The difference between prakopa and prasāra is thus described by Dalhana: just as when butter is first stirred up, it moves a little; this slight movement is like prakopa; but, when it is continuously and violently stirred to flow out, in froths and foams, it may then be called prasara (Susruta-samhitā, 1. 21. 18-32). The fourth stage is when the pūrva-rūpa is seen, and the fifth stage is the stage of rupa or vyadhi (disease) (ibid. 38, 30). 1 Caraka-samhitā, 1. 20. 11.

forth. But there are serious objections against such an interpretation. For, as we have shown above, there are many passages where these *dosas* are described as secretions and waste-products, which in their normal proportions sustain and build the body and in undue proportions produce diseases and may ultimately break up the system. These passages could not be satisfactorily explained upon the above interpretation. Moreover, there are many passages which describe *pitta* and *kapha* as entities having a particular colour and material consistency, and it is also said that there are particular places in the body where they collect, and this would be impossible upon the interpretation that they are not real entities, but hypothetical, having only a methodological value as being no more than convenient symbols for a collective grasp of different symptoms¹.

The attribution of a certain number of specific qualities to the dosas is due to a belief that the qualities of effects are due to the qualities of causes. So, from the diverse qualities of our bodies considered as effects, the causes were also considered as having those qualities from which those of the effects were derived. Thus, in connection with the description of the qualities of vāta, Caraka says that on account of the qualities of raukṣya the bodies of those having congenital vāta tendency are rough, lean and small, and

¹ The secretory character of these doṣas is amply indicated by such passages as those which regard vāta, pitta and śleṣman as requiring some space in the stomach for digesting the food materials, e.g. ekam punar vāta-pitta-śleṣmanām (ibid. III. 2. 3); śleṣma hi snigdha-ślakṣṇa-mṛdu-madhura-sāra-sāra-sāndra-manda-stimita-guru-sīta-vijjalācchaḥ (śleṣman is smooth, pleasing, soft, sweet, substantial, compact, inert, benumbed, heavy, cold, moist and transparent—ibid. III. 8. 14. 7. 5); pittam uṣṇam tlkṣṇam dravam visram amlam kaṭukam ca (pitta is hot, sharp and liquid, and possesses bad odour, and is acid and pungent and bitter—ibid. III. 8. 14. 7. 6); vātas tu rūkṣa-laghu-cala-bahu-sīghra-sīta-paruṣa-viśadah (vāta is rough, light, moving, manifold, quick, cold, coarse and scattering—ibid. III. 8. 14. 7. 7).

It must, however, be noted that the translation I have given of some of these words cannot be regarded as satisfactory; for in the translation I could only give one sense of a word, which in the original Sanskrit has been used in a variety of senses which the word has. Thus, for example, I have translated $r\bar{u}ksa$ as "rough." But it also means "slim," "lean," "having insomnia," or (of a voice) "broken," and so forth. There is no English synonym which would have so many senses. Mahāmahopādhyāya Kaviraj Gaṇanātha Sen, of Calcutta, tries to divide the doṣas into two classes, invisible (sūkṣma) and visible (sthūla)—Siddhānta-nidāna, pp. 9-11. But though such a distinction can doubtless be made, it has not been so distinguished in the medical literature, as it is of little value from the medical point of view; it also does not help us to understand the real nature of the doṣas. The nature and the functions of the doṣas do not depend in the least on their visibility or invisibility, nor can the visible doṣa be regarded as always the product of the invisible one.

the voices of such people are rough, weak, grating, slow and broken, and they cannot sleep well $(j\bar{a}gar\bar{u}ka)$; again, on account of the quality of lightness of $v\bar{a}yu$, the movements of a man with congenital $v\bar{a}ta$ tendency would be light and quick, and so would be all his efforts, eating, speech, and so forth. It is easy to see that the resemblance of the qualities of $v\bar{a}yu$ to the qualities of the body is remote; yet, since the special features and characteristics of one's body were considered as being due to one or the other of the body-building agents, these characteristics of the body were through remote similarity referred to them.

There is another point to be noted in connection with the enumeration of the qualities of the dosas. The disturbance of a dosa does not necessarily mean that all its qualities have been exhibited in full strength; it is possible that one or more of the qualities of a dosa may run to excess, leaving others intact. Thus vāyu is said to possess the qualities of rūkṣa, laghu, cala, bahu, śighra, śita, etc., and it is possible that in any particular case the sita quality may run to excess, leaving others undisturbed, or so may sita and rūksa, or sita, rūksa and laghu, and so forth. Hence it is the business of the physician not only to discover which dosa has run to excess, but also to examine which qualities of which dosa have run to excess. The qualities of dosas are variable, i.e. it is possible that a dosa in its state of disturbance will remain a dosa, and yet have some of its qualities increased and others decreased. The nature of the disturbance of a dosa is determined by the nature of the disturbance of the qualities involved (amśāmśa-vikalpa)1. The natural inference from such a theory is that, since the entities having this or that quality are but component parts of a dosa, a dosa cannot be regarded as a whole homogeneous in all its parts. On this view a dosa appears to be a particular kind of secretion which is a mixture of a number of different secretions having different qualities, but which operate together on the same lines. When a particular dosa is in a healthy order, its component entities are in certain definite proportions both with regard to themselves and to

¹ Caraka-saṃhitā, II. 1. 10. 4. Cakrapāṇi, in commenting on this, says: "tatra doṣāṇām aṃṣāmṣā-vikalpo yathā—vāte prakūpite 'pi kadācid vātasya stāṃṣō balavān bhavati, kadācid laghu-aṃṣāmṣāḥ." The doṣa or doṣas which become prominently disturbed in a system are called anubandhya, and the doṣa or doṣas which at the time of diseases are not primarily disturbed are called anubandha. When three of the doṣas are jointly disturbed, it is called saṃṇāta, and when two are so disturbed it is called saṃṣarga (ibid. 111. 6. 11).

the total dosa. But, when it is disturbed, some of the component secretions may increase in undue proportions, while others may remain in the normal state; of course, the quantity of the whole dosa may also increase or decrease. A dosa such as kapha or pitta should therefore be regarded as a name for a collection of secretions rather than one secretion of a homogeneous character. It will be easily seen that, on taking into consideration the comparative strengths of the different components of a dosa and the relative strengths of the other components of other dosas and the relative strengths and proportions of each of the dosas amongst themselves, the number of combinations is innumerable, and the diseases proceeding from such combinations are also innumerable. The whole system of Caraka's treatment depends upon the ascertainment of the nature of these affections; the names of diseases are intended to be mere collective appellations of a number of affections of a particular type1.

One further point which ought to be noted with regard to the constructive and destructive operations of vāyu, pitta and kapha is that they are independent agents which work in unison with a man's karma and also in unison with a man's mind. The operations of the mind and the operations of the body, as performed by vāyu, pitta and kapha on the materials of the dhātus, rasa, rakta, etc., run parallel to each other; for both follow the order of human karma, but neither of them is determined by the other, though they correspond to each other closely. This psycho-physical parallelism is suggested throughout Caraka's system. Caraka, in trying to formulate it, says: "sarīram api satvam anuvidhīyate satvam ca śārīram" (the mind corresponds to the body and the body to the mind). It may be remembered in this connection that the ultimate cause of all dhātu-vaisamya or abhighāta (bodily injuries through accidents, a fall and the like) is foolish action (prajñāparādha). Again vāta, pitta and kapha are found to perform not only physical operations, but also intellectual operations of various kinds. But all intellectual operations belong properly to mind. What is meant by attributing intellectual functions to $v\bar{a}vu$. pitta and kapha seems to be a sort of psycho-physical parallelism, mind corresponding to body, body corresponding to mind, and both corresponding to karma.

¹ yad vātārabdhatvādi-jñānam eva kāraņam rogāņām cikitsāyām upakāri; nāma-jñānam tu vyavahāra-mātra-prayojanārtham (Cakrapāņi on Caraka-samhitā, 1. 18. 53).

Head and Heart1.

The most vital centres of the body are the head, the heart and the pelvis (vasti). The prānas, i.e. the vital currents, and all the senses are said to depend (śritāh) on the head2. The difference between head (sirsa) and brain (mastiska) was known as early as the Atharva-Veda. Thus in A.V. x. 2. 6 the word sirsa is used in the sense of "head," and in verses 8 and 26 of the same hymn the word mastiska is used in the sense of "brain3." Head-disease is also mentioned in the Atharva-Veda, 1. 12. 3, as śīrṣakti. The brainmatter is called mastulunga in Caraka-samhitā, VIII. 9. 101; the word mastiska is used in the same chapter in the sense of brainmatter (VIII. 9. 80), as has also been explained by Cakrapāņi⁴. The passage from Caraka, vIII. 9.4, quoted above shows that at least Drdhabala considered the head to be the centre of the senses and all sense currents and life currents. Cakrapāṇi, in commenting upon this passage, says that, though the currents of sensation and life pass through other parts of the body as well, yet they are particularly connected with the head (sirasi visesena prabaddhāni), because, when there is an injury to the head, they are also injured. According to Caraka and Drdhabala all the senses are particularly connected with the head, as well as the prānas, but the heart is regarded as the vital centre of the prānas, as well as of the manas, as I shall point out later on. Bhela, who is as old as Caraka, considers the brain to be the centre of the manas, a view which is, so far as I know, almost unique in the field of Sanskrit

¹ The different names of the heart in Garaka-saṃhitā are mahat, artha, hṛdaya (1. 30. 3).

² Cakrapāṇi, however, explains it as śritā iva śritāh, i.e. "as if they depended on" (1. 17. 12), because, when the head is hurt, all the senses are hurt. It is said in ibid. vi. 26. 1 that there are one hundred and seven vital centres (marma), and of these the three most important are the head, the heart and the pelvis. Also in viii. 9. 16, hṛdi mūrdhni ca vastau ca nṛṇāṃ prāṇāḥ pratiṣṭhitāḥ. In viii. 9. 4 it is distinctly said that all the senses and the currents of senses and prāṇa are dependent on the head as the rays of the sun are dependent on the sun—śirasi indriyāṇi indriya-prāṇa-vahāni ca srotāṇsi sūryam iva gabhastayaḥ saṃṣṣritāni.

[&]quot;Which was that god who (produced) his brain, his forehead, his hindhead (kakāṭika), who first his skull, who, having gathered a gathering in man's jaw, ascended to heaven" (A.V. x. 2.8). "Atharvan, having sewed together his head (mūrdhānam) and also his heart, aloft from the brain the purifying one sent (them) forth, out of the head" (ibid. 26). (Whitney's translation, Harvard oriental series.)

⁴ Mastişkam siro-majjā. Cakrapāṇi, VIII. 9. 80 of Caraka-samhitā. The word mastişka is sometimes, though rarely, used in the sense of head, as in the passage quoted by Cakrapāṇi in VIII. 9. 80—mastişke 'ṣṭāngulam paṭṭam.

literature. He says that manas, which is the highest of all senses (sarvendriva-param), has its seat between the head and the palate (śiras-tālv-antara-gatam). Being situated there, it knows all the sense-objects (visayān indriyānām) and the tastes which come near it (rasādikān samīpa-sthān). The original cause of manas and the energy of all the senses and the cause of all feelings and judgments (buddhi), the citta, is situated in the heart. The citta is also the cause of all motor functions and activities, such that those who are possessed of good cittas follow a good course and those who are possessed of bad cittas follow a bad course. The manas knows the citta, and thence proceeds the choice of action; then comes the understanding, deciding what is worth doing and what is not. Buddhi, or understanding, is the understanding of certain actions as good (śubha) and certain others as bad (aśubha)¹. It seems plain that Bhela distinguishes between manas, citta and buddhi. Of these manas is entirely different from citta and, so far as can be made out from Bhela's meagre statements, it is regarded as the cause of all cognitions and as having its seat in the brain. The citta was regarded as the cause of all activities, feelings and judgments, and the heart was regarded as its seat. Buddhi was probably the determinate understanding and judgment which was but a function of the citta. Bhela says that the dosas in the brain affect the manas, and, as a result of this, the heart is affected, and from the affections of the heart the understanding (buddhi) is affected, and this leads to madness². In another passage, while describing the different functions of pitta, Bhela says that there is a special kind of alocaka pitta called the caksur-vaisesika, which, by bringing about the contact of manas with the soul, causes cognition and, transmitting it to the citta, produces the discriminative visual knowledge by which different objects are comprehended by the eye. The

ūrdhvam prakupitā doṣāḥ śiras-tālv-antare sthitāḥ, mānasam dūṣayanty āśu tataś cittam vipadyate citte vyāpadam āpanne buddhir nāśam niyacchati tatas tu buddhi-vyāpattau kāryākāryam na budhyate evam pravartate vyādhir unmādo nāma dārunah.

¹ śiras-tālv-antara-gatam sarvendriya-param manah tatra-stham tad dhi visayān indriyānām rasādikān...kāranam sarva-buddhīnām cittam hrdayasamšritam kriyānām cetarāsām ca cittam sarvasya kāranam. Bhela's chapter on "Unmāda-cikitistam." Calcutta University edition, p. 149.

judgmental state, however, is different, and it is produced by a special kind of ālocaka pitta called the buddhi-vaišeṣika, which is situated at the point between the eyebrows, and, being there, holds together the subtle forms emanating from the self (susūkṣmān arthān ātma-kṛtān), associates the data (dhārayati), integrates them with other similar known facts (pratyudāharati), remembers the past, and, after producing our knowledge in conceptual and judgmental forms, wills for future realization, generates instructive actions, and is the force which operates in meditation (dhyāna) and restraint of thoughts (dhāraṇā).

Suśruta does not state anything of importance concerning the brain; but there seems to be little doubt that he knew that particular nerves in the head were connected with particular sense functions. Thus he says in 111. 6. 28 that there are two nerves (sirā) lower down the ears on their back, called vidhurā, which, if cut, would produce deafness; on both sides of the nasal aperture inside the nasal organ there are two nerves called phana, which, if cut, would destroy the sensation of smell; at the back of the eyebrows, below the eyes, there are the nerves called the apānga, which, if cut, would produce blindness. All these cognitive nerves meet in passing at the centre of the eyebrow (śrngātaka)². He further says that the nerves are attached to the brain inside the skull on the upper part of it (mastakābhyantaroparisthāt śirā-sandhi-sannipāta) and this place, called the romāvarta, is the supreme superintendent (adhipati). Caraka says that the head is the place for the senses. It cannot be decided whether he took this in any deeper sense or whether he means simply that the sense-organs of ear, eyes, nose and taste are situated in the head.

Caraka considers the heart (*lnrdaya*) to be the only seat of consciousness³. The seats of *prāṇa* are said to be the head, throat, heart, navel, rectum, bladder, the vital fluid *ojas*, semen, blood and flesh⁴. In 1. 19. 3 Caraka, however, excludes navel and flesh and includes the temples (*śaṅkha*) in their place. It is difficult to determine what is exactly meant by *prāṇa* here. But in all probability the word is used here in a general way to denote the vital parts. In 1. 30. 4 and 5 Caraka says that the whole body with

¹ Bhela's chapter on "Purusa-niścaya," p. 81.

² ghrāṇa-śrotrākṣi-jihvā-santarpaṇīnām śirāṇām madhye śirā-sannipātaḥ śrngā-takām. Suśruta-samhitā, 111. 6. 28.

³ Caraka-samhitā, W. 7. 8, hrdayam cetanādhisthānam ekam,

¹ lbid. 9.

the four extremities, the trunk, and the head, collectively called sad-anga, knowledge (vijñāna), the senses, the sense-objects, the self, manas and the objects of thought (cintya), are all supported (samśrita) by the heart, just as a house is supported by pillars and rafters1. It is plain, as Cakrapāņi explains, that the body cannot subsist in the heart. What is meant is that, when all is well with the heart, it is well with all the rest. Caraka holds that the manas and the soul reside in the heart and so also do cognition, pleasure and pain, not, however, in the sense that the heart is the place where these reside, but in the sense that they depend on the heart for their proper functioning; if the heart is wrong, they also go wrong, if the heart is well, they also work well. Just as rafters are supported by pillars, so are they all supported by the heart. But Cakrapāni does not seem to agree with this view of Caraka, and he holds that, since the heart is affected by strong thoughts, pleasure and pain, the mind and the soul actually reside in the heart and so do pleasure and pain. The self, which is the cause of all knowledge of sense-objects and the upholder (dhārin) of the system, resides in the heart. It is for this reason that, if a man is struck in the heart, he swoons away, and, if the heart bursts, he dies. It is also the place of the supreme vitality (param ojas)². The heart is also regarded as the place where all consciousness is concentrated (tatra caitanya-samgrahah). Caraka says that the heart is the centre of the prāna currents (prāna-vahānām srotasām hṛdayam mūlam, III. 5. 9) and also of the currents of mental activity (II. 7. 3). In the Apasmāra-nidāna (II. 8. 4) Caraka speaks of the heart as being the supreme place of the inner self (antar-ātmanah śrestham āvatanam).

It may not be out of place here to point out that the *Taittirīya* Upaniṣad (1. 6. 1) also speaks of the heart as being the space where

¹ Caraka-samhitā, 1. 30. 5.

² Cakrapāni says that the mention of param ojas here proves that Caraka believed in another, aparam ojas. The total quantity of aparam ojas in the body is half a handful (ardhānjali-parimāna), while that of param ojas is only eight drops of a white-red and slightly yellowish liquid in the heart. The dhamants of the heart contain half a handful of aparam ojas, and in the disease known as prameha (urinary disease) it is this ojas that is wasted; but even with waste of this ojas a man may live, whereas with the slightest waste of the param ojas a man cannot live. Ojas ought not to be regarded as the eighth dhātu; for it only supports (dhārayati) the body, but does not nourish it. Ojas, however, is sometimes used also in the sense of rasa (Caraka-saṃhitā I. 30. 6, Cakrapāṇi's commentary). See also ibid. I. 17. 74 and 75 and Cakrapāṇi's comment on the same. Ojas is, however, regarded in the Atharva-Veda, II. 17, as the eighth dhātu.

manomaya puruṣa, i.e. the mind-person, resides. In many other Upaniṣads the heart is the centre of many nādīs, or channels¹. Saṅkara, in explaining Bṛh. II. 1. 19, says that the nādīs or śirās, called hitā, which are developed out of the food-juice and are 272,000 in number, emanate from the heart and spread over the whole body (purītat)². The buddhi resides in the heart and from there controls the external senses. Thus, for example, at the time of hearing in the awakened state the buddhi passes through these nādīs to the ear and from there expands the auditory organ and superintends it. When the buddhi thus expands, we have the state of awakening, when it contracts, the state of deep sleep (suṣupti).

The Circulatory and the Nervous System.

The names śirā (also hirā) and dhamani, of two different kinds of channels in the body, seem to have been distinguished at a period as early as the Atharva-Veda³. The Bṛhad-āraṇyaka Upaniṣad describes the hitā nāḍis of the heart as being as fine as a thousandth part of a hair, and they are said to carry white, blue, yellow and green liquids; Śaṅkara, commenting on this, says that these various colours are due to the various combinations of vāta, pitta and śleṣman which the nāḍis carry⁴. He states that the seventeen elements (five bhūtas, ten senses, prāṇa and antaḥkaraṇa) of the subtle body, which is the support of all instinctive desires, abide

² The word *puritat* means principally the covering of the heart. But Sankara takes it here to mean the whole body.

¹ See Bṛh. II. 1. 19, IV. 2. 2 and 3, IV. 3. 20, IV. 4. 8 and 9; Chānd. VIII. 6. 6; Kaṭha, VI. 16; Kaus. IV. 19; Muṇḍ. II. 2. 6; Maitrī, Bibliotheca Indica, 1870, VI. 21, VII. 11; Praśna, III. 6 and 7.

³ śatam hirāh sahasram dhamanīr uta. Atharva-Veda, vii. 36. 2. Sāyaṇa irā as garbha-dhāranārtham antar-avasthitāh sūkṣmā nādyaḥ and dhamanī as garbhāsayaṣya avaṣṭambhikā sthulā nādyaḥ. Atharva-Veda, 1. 17. 1, 2, also cems to distinguish hirā from dhamanī. In 1. 17. 1the hirās are described is being of red garments (lohita-vāsasaḥ), which Sāyaṇa explains as lohitaṣya rudhiraṣya nivāṣa-bhūtā hi (the abode of blood) and paraphrases as rajo-vaham-nādyaḥ. It seems, therefore, that the larger ducts were called dhamanīs. In 1. 17. 3 the Atharva-Veda speaks of hundreds of dhamanīs and thousands of hirās.

⁴ Brh. IV. 3. 20, with Sankara's commentary. Anandagiri, in commenting on the same, quotes a passage from Susruta which is substantially the same as Susruta-samhitā, III. 7. 18, to show that those sirās which carry vāta are rosy (aruṇa), those which carry pitta are blue, those which carry blood are red, and those which carry slesman are white:

in these nādīs. In Brhad-āranyaka, IV. 2. 3 it is said that there is the finest essence of food-juice inside the cavity of the heart; it is this essence which, by penetrating into the finest nādīs, serves to support the body. It is surrounded by a network of nādīs. From the heart it rushes upwards through the extremely fine hitā nādis, which are rooted in the heart. Chāndogya, VIII. 6. 6 speaks of 101 nādis proceeding from the heart, of which one goes towards the head¹. In Mund. II. 2. 6 it is said that, like spokes in a wheel, the nādīs are connected with the heart. Praśna, III. 6 and 7, however, says that in the heart there are one hundred nādīs and in each of these are twenty-two hundred branches and the vyāna vāyu moves through these. The Maitrī Upanişad mentions the susumnā nādī proceeding upwards to the head, through which there is a flow of prāna². None of these passages tell us anything definite about the $n\bar{a}dis$. All that can be understood from these passages is that they are some kind of ducts, through which blood and other secretions flow, and many of these are extremely fine, being about the thousandth part of a hair in breadth. The nada, or hollow reed, is described in the Rg-Veda (VIII. 1. 33) as growing in ponds and in the Atharva-Veda (IV. 19. 1) as being vārsika, or "produced in the rains." This word may have some etymological relation with $n\bar{a}di^3$. In another place it is said that women break nada with stones and make mats out of them⁴. The word $n\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ is also used in the Atharva-Veda in the sense of "ducts". In Atharva-Veda, v. 18. 8 the word nādikā is used

madhya-sthāyāḥ susumnāyāḥ parva-pancaka-saṃbhavāḥ śākhopaśākhatām prāptāḥ śirā lakṣa-trayāt paraṃ ardha-lakṣam iti prāhuh sarīrārtha-vicārakāh.

¹ This passage is sometimes referred to in later literature to show that the suṣumṇā nāḍi, which goes towards the head, was known as early as the Chāndogya Upaniṣad. See also Kaṭha, vi. 16.

² Ūrdhva-gā nāḍī suṣumṇākhyā prāṇa-saṃcāriṇī. Maitrī, v1. 21. Sāyaṇa, in his commentary on A.V. 1. 17. 3, quotes the following verse:

^a Macdonell makes the following remarks in his Vedic Index, vol. 1, p. 433: "Nada is found in several passages of the Rg-Veda (1. 32, 8; 179, 4; II. 34, 3; VIII. 69, 2; X. II, 2; 105, 4) but its sense is still obscure. It is identified by Pischel (Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft, 35, 717 et seq.; Vedische Studien, 1. 183 et seq.) with Nada, being explained by him in one passage (1. 32. 8). Here Caland and Henry, L'Agnistoma, p. 313 would read natam. See also Wackernagel, Altindische Grammatik, 1. 173, as a reed boat, which is split, and over which the waters go, etc."

⁴ yathā nadam kasipune striyo bhindanty asmanā (Atharva-Veda, VI. 138.

<sup>5).

5</sup> In the Atharva-Veda, vi. 138. 4, the nādīs are described as ducts over the testes, through which the seminal fluid flows: ye te nādyau deva-kṛte yayos tiṣṭhati vṛṣṇyaṃ te te bhinadmi (I break with a stone upon a stone those two ducts of yours

to denote the speech organ $(v\bar{a}k)$. The word dhamanī is used in Rg-Veda, II. II. 8 and is paraphrased by Sāyaṇa as sound $(\dot{s}abda)$ and by Macdonell as "reed" or "pipe\frac{1}." If Sāyaṇa's explanations are to be accepted, then in A.V. II. 33. 6 the word $sn\bar{a}va$ means fine $\dot{s}ir\bar{a}s$ $(s\bar{u}ksm\bar{a}h\text{-}sir\bar{a}h)$ and dhamanī the larger ducts $(dhamani\cdot\dot{s}abdena\ sth\bar{u}l\bar{a}h)$. In vi. 90. 5 one hundred dhamanīs are said to surround the body of a person suffering from colic or gout $(\dot{s}\bar{u}la)$, and Sāyaṇa paraphrases dhamani here as $n\bar{a}d\bar{u}$. In Chāndogya, III. 19. 2, the rivers are said to be dhamanīs $(y\bar{u}dhamanayas\ t\bar{u}n\bar{u}dyah)$, and Sānkara paraphrases dhamanī as $\dot{s}ir\bar{a}$. I have already referred to the use of the word $\dot{h}ir\bar{a}$ in the Atharva- $\dot{v}eda$; the word is also used in the Ry-veda2.

The above references show that nādis, sirās (or hirās) and dhamanis were all ducts in the body, but sometimes the nādis or sirās had also the special sense of finer channels, whereas the dhamanis were the larger ducts. I shall now come to Caraka: it will be found that there was not much advance towards a proper understanding of the significance of their distinction and functions.

Caraka plainly regards *dhamanīs*, *śirās* and *srotas* (secretory currents) as ducts and thinks that different names are applied to them on account of their different functions. He says that the roots of the ten *dhamanīs* are in the heart. These carry throughout the body the *ojas*, by which all people live and without which they all die. It is the essence by which the foetus is formed, and which goes to the heart at a later stage, when the heart is formed; when it is lost, life also ceases to exist; it is the essence of the body and the seat of the *prāṇas*. These ducts are called *dhamanīs*, because they are filled with chyle from outside; they are called *srotas*, because the chyle, etc. which nourish the body are secreted (*sravanāt*) out of these; and they are called *śirā*,

made by God over your two testes, through which your semen flows). In x. 7. 15 and 16, the hollows of the seas are described as nāḍis (samudro yasya nāḍyah), and so also the interspace of the quarters of the sky (yasya catasrah pradiso nādyah).

^{1 &}quot;Dhamanī, 'reed,' appears to denote 'pipe' in a passage of the Rg-Veda (II. 11. 8) and in a citation appearing in the Nirukta (VI. 24)." Vedic Index, vol. 1, p. 390. The word śirā is spelt with a palatal "ś" in Caraka and with a dental in the Vedas, and it has therefore been differently spelt in this chapter in different contexts.

² tvam vṛtram āšayānam sirāsu maho vajrena sisvapaḥ. R.V. 1. 121. 11. The word dhamanī is spelt with a long "1" in Caraka and with a short "i" in the Atharva-Veda.

because they go (saranāt śirāh) to the different parts of the body1. The ten dhamanis spread out in manifold branches throughout the body. In the Caraka-samhitā srotus means properly the path through which the successive evolutionary products of the bodyconstituents (dhātus) or other kinds of secretion run and accumulate together with elements of their own types². Cakrapāni explains it thus: The transformation into blood takes place in connection with chyle (rasa). The coming together of rasa with blood at a different part of the body cannot take place without a path of transmission, called srotas. So the transformation of dhātus takes place through the function of this path of transmission. So for each kind of product there is a separate srotas. Vāyu, pitta and kapha may be said to go about through all the srotas, though there are, no doubt, special channels for each of the three3. Gangadhara, however, takes the srotas as being the apertures through which the dhātus and other waste-products flow4. In whatever way it may be looked at, the srotas is, according to Caraka, nothing but the duct of the dhamanis. Caraka opposes the view of those who think that the body is nothing but a collection of srotas, for the simple reason that the substances which pass through these srotas and the parts of the body where they are attached are certainly different from the srotas themselves. There are separate srotas for the flow of prāna, water, food-juice, blood, flesh, fat, bony materials, marrow, semen, urine, excreta and sweat; vāta, pitta and slesman, however, flow through the body and all the channels (sarva-srotāmsi ayana-bhūtāni). For the supply of materials for the suprasensual elements of the body, such as manas, etc., the whole of the living body serves as a channel⁵. The heart is the root of all

dhmānād dhamanyaḥ sravaṇāt srotāṃsi saraṇāt śirāḥ. Caraka-saṃhitā, 1.
 lbid. 111. 5. 3.

³ Doṣāṇām tu sarva-śarīra-caratvena yathā-sthūla-sroto 'bhidhāne 'pi sarva-srotāṃsy eva gamanārthaṃ vakṣyante...vātādīnām api pradhāna bhūtādhamanyaḥ santy eva. Cakrapāṇi's comment on ibid.

⁴ āhāra-parināma-raso hi srotasām chidra-rūpam panthānam vinā gantum na saknoti, na ca srotas chidra-pathena gamanam vinā tad-uttarottara-dhātutvena parinamati, etc. Gangādhara's Jalpa-kalpa-taru on ibid.

⁵ Gangādhara, in commenting on this passage (Caraka-saṃhitā, III. 5. 7), "tadvad atīndriyāṇām punah sattvādītām kevalam cetanāvac charīram ayana-bhūtam adhiṣthāna-bhūtam ca," says, "mana ātmā śrotra-sparśana-nayana-rasana-ghrāṇa-huddhy-ahankārādīnām kevalam cetanāvat sajīvam śarīra-sroto 'yana-bhūtam adhiṣthāna-bhūtam ca." There are several passages in Caraka where we hear of mano-vaha currents (currents carrying manas); if manas, buddhi, ahankāra, etc. can all be carried in currents, they must be considered as having some material spatial existence. These manas, buddhi and ahankāra may be attndriya, but they are not on that account non-physical.

prāna channels, i.e. the channels of the prāna vāyu; for vāyu in general moves through all parts of the body. When these are affected, there is either too much or too little respiration; the respiration may be very slow or very quick, and it is attended with sound and pain. From these signs therefore one can infer that the prāna channels have been affected. The source of water channels is the palate, and the seat of thirst is in the heart (kloma)1. When these are affected, the tongue, palate, lips, throat and kloma become dried up, and there is great thirst. The stomach is the source of all currents carrying food, and, when these are affected, there is no desire for food, but indigestion, vomiting and the like. 'The heart is the source, and the ten dhamanis are the paths, of the chyle (rasa) currents. The liver and spleen are the source of blood currents. The tendons and skin are the sources of flesh currents. The kidneys are the sources of fat channels; fat and pelvis, of bone channels; the bones and joints, of marrow channels; the testes and penis, of semen channels; the bladder, the pubic and the iliac regions, of urine channels; the intestines and the rectum, of the excreta channels, and the fat and pores of hairs, of perspiration channels². It is curious, however, to note that, in spite of the fact that here the sirās and dhamanīs are regarded as synonymous, their number is differently counted in IV. 7. 13, where it is said that there are two hundred dhamanis and seven hundred sirās, and the finer endings of these are counted as 29,956. It is reasonable to suppose, in accordance with the suggestions found in the Atharva-Veda, that, though the dhamanis and sirās were regarded by Caraka as having the same functions, the former were larger than the latter3. Gangadhara, in commenting on this passage, says that sirās, dhamanīs and srotas are different on account of their being different in number and of their having different functions and different appearances. It is well known that a distinction between śirās and dhamanīs is drawn by Suśruta, to which I shall presently refer, but Caraka positively denies any such distinction; and this

¹ Caraka-samhitā, III. 5. 10. Cakrapāņi explains it (kloma) as hrdaya-stham pipāsā-sthānam, and Gangādhara as the point of conjunction between the throat and the heart (kanthorasoḥ sandhiḥ).

² The synonyms for srotas given by Caraka are śirā, dhamanī, rasa-vāhinī, nādī, panthā, mārga, śarīra-chidra, samrṛtāsamvṛtāni (open at the root, but closed at the end), sthāna, āśaya and niketa.

³ There is one passage of Drdhabala (Caraka-samhitā, v1. 29. 23) which seems to draw a distinction between sirās and dhamanīs; for there, as a symptom of a disease, it is said that the sirās have expanded (āyāma) and the dhamanīs have become contracted (sankoca).

is accepted by his commentator Cakrapāṇi also¹. Gaṅgādhara is unable to point out any passage in *Caraka* to prove his opinion or to state more explicitly what is the difference of functions and appearances between the *dhamanīs* and *śirās*. In fact Gaṅgādhara's remarks are directly borrowed from *Suśruta*, 111. 9. 3, without acknowledgment, and it is very surprising that he snould not know the difference of views on this point between Caraka and Suśruta and should try to support Caraka by a quotation from Suśruta on the very point on which they materially differ.

Suśruta refers to Caraka's view that śirās, srotas and dharmanīs are the same and opposes it, saying that they are different in appearance, number and functions. Dalhana, in explaining this, says that the śirās carry vāta, pitta, ślesman, blood, etc., and are rosy, blue, white and red, whereas the dhamanis that carry sense-impressions of sound, etc. have no distinctive colour, and the srotas have the same colour as the dhātus which flow through them. Again, the principal śwās are forty in number, the principal dhamanis twenty-four and the principal srotas twenty-two in number. The śirās permit us to contract or expand our limbs or perform other motor functions, and they allow the mind and senses to operate in their own ways and serve also to fulfil other functions of moving rapidly (prasyandana), etc., when vāyu works in them. When pitta flows through the śirās, they appear shining, create desire for food, increase digestive fire and health. When slesman passes through them, they give an oily appearance to the body, firmness of joints and strength. When blood passes through them, they become coloured and filled also with the different dhātus and produce the sense-cognition of touch. Vāyu, pitta, ślesman and blood—any one of these may flow through any and every sirā2. The dhamanis are more like sensory nerves, since they carry sensations of sound, colour, taste and smell (sabda-rūpa-rasagandha-vahatvādikam dhamanīnām). The srotas carry prāna, food, water, chyle, blood, flesh and fat3. It is on account of their close proximity, similar functions, fineness (sauksmyāt), and also because of the fact that they have been referred to in similar terms by older authorities, that they have sometimes been regarded as performing the same work, though their functions are really different4.

¹ na ca Carake Suśruta iva dhamanī-śirā-srotasām bhedo vivakṣitaḥ. Cakra-pāṇi's commentary on Caraka, 111. 5. 3.
² Suśruta-saṃhitā, 111. 7. 8-17.
³ Dalhaṇa on ibid. 111. 9. 3.
⁴ Ibid.

Dalhaṇa, in explaining this, says that, as, when a bundle of grass is burning, the burning of each separate blade of grass cannot be perceived on account of their contiguity, so the śirās, dhamanīs and srotas are situated so close to one another that it is very difficult to observe their separate functions and work. Śirā, srotas, mārga, kha and dhamanī are the general names used to denote the canals or ducts of the body¹. It is on account of the similarity of action of all these ducts that their functions are sometimes confused.

The dhamanīs start from the navel; ten proceed to the upper part of the body, ten to the lower part and four crosswise (tir-yag-gāḥ). Those ten which go to the upper part of the body, branch out, are divided into three classes, and are thirty in number. Of these there are altogether ten for carrying vāta, pitta, kapha, śonita and rasa, two for each; there are eight for carrying śabda, rūpa, rasa and gandha, two for each; there are two for the organ of speech, two for making noise (ghoṣa), as distinguished from speech; two for going to sleep, two for being awake; two for bearing tears, two for carrying milk in women, and it is the same two dhamanīs that carry the semen in men. It is by these dhamanīs that the body on the upper side of the navel (e.g. sides, back, chest, shoulders, hands, etc.) is held fast to the lower part. The carrying of vāta, etc. is the common quality of all these dhamanīs.

Those dhamanīs which branch out downwards are thirty in number. They eject vāta, urine, excreta, semen, menstrual blood, etc. downwards. They are connected with the place of pitta (pittāśaya), draw downwards the materials not fit for being absorbed, and nourish the body with the assimilable products of digestion. The dhamanīs connected with the pittāśaya carry the food-juice throughout the body, as soon as it is digested by the action of heat, by supplying it to the upper circulatory dhamanīs and through them to the heart, which is designated as the seat of rasa (rasa-sthāna)². Ten dhamanīs carry vāta, pitta, śoṇita,

ākāsīyāvakāsānām dehe nāmāni dehinām sirāh srotāmsi mārgāh kham dhamanyah.

¹ Thus Dalhana remarks:

² Suśruta, Sārıra, 1x. 7 and 8; see also Dalhana's commentary on it. The apertures of some dhamants by which the food-juice is circulated through the body are as fine as lotus fibres, and some grosser than them, as the apertures of lotus stalks. Thus some dhamants have very fine apertures, and others grosser apertures.

kapha and rasa; two, connected with the intestines, carry the food-juice; two carry water; two are connected with the bladder for ejecting urine; two are for the production of semen (śukra-prādur-bhāva), two for its ejection, and it is these which regulate the menstrual flow in the case of women; two, connected with the larger intestines, eject the excreta; there are eight others which carry perspiration. It is by these dhamanīs that the intestines, waist, urine, excreta, rectum, bladder and penis are held together.

Each of the other four dhamanis, which go crosswise (tiryag-gāh), has hundreds and thousands of branches, which, innumerable as they are, are spread all over the body, like so many windows; their mouths are at the holes of the hairs, through which perspiration goes out and which nourish the body with rasa, and through these the effective principles (virya) of oil, watery sprinklings, ointments, etc. enter the body after being acted on by bhrājaka (heat of the skin)1. It is again these which carry the pleasurable and painful sense-impressions of touch2. The dhamanis direct the five senses to the five sense-objects for their cognition. There is the cognizer (mantr) and the manas organ; the dhamani which is connected with manas on one side and the dhamanis which carry the different sense-impressions on the other make the sense-data cognized by the self3. The various sensory and motor dhamanis are further named in Suśruta, III. vi. 28. Down below the back of the ear there are two dhamanis, called vidhura, which, when injured, produce deafness; inside the two nostrils there are the two dhamanis called phana which, when hurt, arrest the sensation of smell. Below the eyebrows on the two sides of the eye there are the two dhamanis, called apānga, which, when hurt, produce blindness: there are also two other dhamanis, above the evebrows and below them, called avarta, which, when hurt, also produce blindness. Suśruta also speaks in this connection of a place inside

¹ Suśruta, Śārīra, IX. 7 and 8; see also Dalhana's commentary on it.

² Dalhana, in commenting on this passage of Susruta, III. ix. 9, says: "tair eva mano-'nugataih sukhāsukha-rūpam sparsam karmātmā grhnīte." (It is through these dhamanīs, as connected by manas, that the self, as associated with the subtle body, receives the pleasurable and painful impressions of touch.)

pañcābhibhūtās tv atha pañca-kṛtvaḥ pañcendriyam pañcasu bhāvayanti pañcendriyam pañcasu bhāvayitvā pañcatvam āyānti vināša-kāle.

pañcatvam āyānti vināśa-kāle. Suśruta, 111. ix. 11. Dalhaṇa, in commenting on the above, says: "mantā hi śarīre eka eva, mano 'py ekam eva, tena manasā yaiva dhamanī sabdādi-vahāsu dhamanīşv abhiprapannā saiva dhamanī sva-dharmaṃ grāhayati mantāraṃ nānyeti."

the skull on the upper part of the brain, where all the śirās have met together, as the adhipati superintendent.

In describing the śirās (700 in number) Suśruta says that these are like so many canals by which the body is watered and by the contraction and expansion of which the movements of the body are rendered possible. They start from the navel and branch out like so many fibres of leaves. The principal śirās are forty in number; of these ten are for the circulation of vāta, ten for pitta, ten for kapha and ten for rakta (blood). The śirās of vāta circulation again branch out into 175 śirās, and the same is the case with those which circulate pitta, kapha and rakta. We have thus altogether 700 śirās. When vāta is properly circulated through the śirās, it becomes possible for us to move our limbs without obstruction and to exercise our intellectual functions. But it should be noted that, though some śirās are regarded as mainly circulating vāyu or pitta or kapha, yet they all, at least to some extent, circulate all three!

There are 900 snāyus, and these have also holes within them (suṣirāḥ), and these, as well as the kaṇḍarās, which are also but special kinds of snāyus, serve to bind the joints of the body, just as the several pieces of planks are held together in a boat. Suśruta also mentions five hundred muscles. The marmas are vital spots in flesh, śirā, snāyu and bones which are particularly the seats of prāṇa: when persons are hurt in these places, they may either lose their lives or suffer various kinds of deformity. The srotas are again described by Suśruta as being ducts, other than śirā and dhamanī, which start from the cavity of the heart and spread out through the body². These srotas carry the currents of prāṇa, foodjuice, water, blood, flesh, fat, urine, excreta, semen and menstrual blood.

The Nervous System of the Tantras.

The nerve system of the Tantras, however, is entirely different from that of the medical systems of Caraka and Suśruta. It starts with the conception of the spinal column (meru-daṇḍa), which is regarded as one bone from the bottom of the back to the root of

na hi vātaṃ śirāḥ kāscin na pittaṃ kevalaṃ tathā śleṣmānam vā vahanty etā ataḥ sarvavahāḥ smṛtāḥ. Suśruta, 111. vii. 16.

mülät khād antaram dehe prasṛtam tv abhivāhi yat srotas tad iti vijñeyam śirā-dhamanī-varjitam.

² Suśruta, Śārīra, IX. 13:

the neck. In the passage inside this spinal column there is a nerve $(n\bar{a}d\bar{i})$ called susumnā, which is again in reality made up of three nādīs, susumnā, vairā and citrinī1. All nādīs start from the root at the end of the vertebral column, called kānda, and they proceed upwards to the highest cerebral nerve-plexus, called sahasrāra, and are seventy-two thousand in number. The place of the root of these nādīs (kānda) is an inch above the anus and an inch below the root of the penis. If susumnā is the central nerve of the spinal cord, then on its extreme right side is the $id\bar{a}$, and then parallel to it towards the susumnā are the gāndhārī, stretching from the corner of the left eye to the left leg, hasti-jihvā, stretching from the left eye to the left foot, sankhini, branching on the left, kuhū (the pubic nerve on the left) and also the viśvodarā, the lumbar nerves. On the extreme left of it is the pingala, and between it and the susumna are the $b\bar{u}s\bar{a}$, stretching from below the corner of the right eye to the abdomen, pasyanti, the auricular branch or the cervical plexus, sarasvatī and vāraņā (the sacral nerve). The sankhinī (the auricular branch or the cervical plexus on the left) goes parallel to the susumnā, but takes a turn in the region of the neck and passes on to the root of the left ear-holes; in another branch it passes through the inner side of the region of the forehead, where it gets joined with the citrini nadi and enters into the cerebral region. The susumna nādī is a sort of duct inside the spine, which encases within it the vajrā nādī, and that again encases within it the citrinī nādī, which has within it a fine aperture running all through it, which is the fine aperture running through the spinal cord2. This inner passage

² Nādī is derived by Pūrnānanda Yati, in his commentary on the Sat-cakra-nirū-pana, from the root nad, to go, as a passage or duct (nada gatau iti dhātor nady ate gamyate 'nayā padavyā iti nādī). Mahāmahopādhyāya Gananātha Sen makes a

¹ But according to the Tantra-cūdāmani, suṣumnā is not inside the spinal column but outside it. Thus it says, "tad-bāhye tu tayor madhye suṣumnā vahnisamyuta." This, however, is against the view of the Saj-cakra-nirāpana, which takes suṣumnā to be inside the passage of the spine. According to the Nigama-tattva-sāra-tantra, idā and pingalā are both inside the spine, but this isentirely against the accepted view. Dr Sir B. N. Seal thinks that suṣumnā is the central passage or channel of the spinal cord and not a separate nādī (The Positive Sciences of the Ancient Hindus, pp. 219, 226, 227). Mr Rele in his The Mysterious Kundalini (pp. 35, 36) thinks that it is a nādī which is situated centrally and passes through the spinal column (meru-danda); but, judging from the fact that it is said to originate in the sacrum, from which it goes upwards to the base of the skull, where it joins with the plexus of a thousand nerves called brahma-cakra (cerebrum in the vault of the skull) and is divided at the level of the larynx (kantha) into anterior and posterior parts between the two eyebrows (ājñā-cakra) and the cavity in the brain (braima-randhra) respectively, Rele thinks that this suṣumnā nādī is nothing but the spinal cord.

within the citrini nadi is also called brahma-nadi; for there is no further duct or nādī within the citrinī1. The susumņā thus in all probability stands for our spinal cord. The susumnā, however, is said to take a turn and get connected with the sankhini in the inside region of the forchead, whence it becomes connected with the aperture of the śańkhini (śańkhini-nālam ālambya) and passes to the cerebral region. All the nādīs are connected with the susumnā. Kundalini is a name for supreme bodily energy, and, because the channel of the susumnā, the brahma-nādī, is the passage through which this energy flows from the lower part of the trunk to the regions of the nerve-plexus of the brain, susumnā is sometimes called kundalini; but kundalini itself cannot be called a nerve, and it is distinctly wrong to call it the vagus nerve, as Mr Rele does2. The ida nadi on the left side of the susumna outside the spine goes upwards to the nasal region, and pingalā follows a corresponding course on the right side. Other accounts of these nādīs hold that the idā proceeds from the right testicle and the pingala from the left testicle and passes on to the left and the right of the susumnā in a bent form (dhanur-ākāre). The three, however, meet at the root of the penis, which is thus regarded as the junction of the three rivers, as it were (triveni), viz. of susumnā (compared to the river Gangā), idā (compared to Yāmuna) and pingalā (compared to Sarasvatī). The two nādīs, idā and pingalā, are also described as being like the moon and the sun respectively, and susumnā as fire3. In addition to these nādis the Yogi-yā;ñavalkya mentions the name of another $n\bar{a}d\bar{i}$, called alambus \bar{a} , making the number of the important nādīs fourteen, including susumnā and counting susumnā as one $n\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ (i.e. including vajrā and citrini), though the total number of nādīs is regarded as being seventy-two thousand. Śrīkanāda in his Nādī-vijnāna counts the number of nādīs as thirty-five millions. But, while the Tantra school, as represented in the works Sat-cakra-nirūpaņa, Jnāna-samkalinī, Yogi-vājnavalkya, etc., regards the nādīs as originating from the nerve-plexus very serious mistake in his Pratyakşa-śārīraka when he thinks that the nādīs are to be regarded as being without apertures (nīrandhra). They are certainly not so regarded in the Ayur-veda or in the Sat-cakra-nirupana and its commentaries. In Yoga and Tantra literature the term $n\bar{a}d\bar{t}$ generally supersedes the term $\sin\bar{a}$ of

the medical literature.

¹ Šabda-brahma-rūpāyāḥ kuṇḍalinyāḥ parama-śiva-sannidhi-gamana-patha rupa-citrini-nādy-antargata-śūnya-bhāga iti. Pūrnānanda's commentary on Ṣaţcakra-nirūpana, St. 2.

² Susumnāyai kundalinyai. Hatha-yoga-pradīpikā, 1v. 64.

³ Sat-cakra-nirūpaņa, St. 1 and Yogi-yājñavalkya-samhitā, p. 18.

lying between the root of the penis and the anus, and while Caraka regards them as originating from the heart, Śrīkaṇāda regards them as originating from the region of the navel (nābhi-kanda) and going upwards, downwards and sideways from there. Śrīkaṇāda, however, compromises with the Tantra school by holding that of these thirty-five millions there are seventy-two thousand nādis which may be regarded as gross and are also called dhamanīs, and which carry the sense-qualities of colour, taste, odour, touch and sound (pañcendriya-gunāvahā). There are again seven hundred nādīs with fine apertures, which carry food-juice by which the body is nourished. Of these again there are twenty-four which are more prominent.

The most important feature of the Tantra school of anatomy is its theory of nerve-plexuses (cakra). Of these the first is the ādhāra-cakra, generally translated as sacro-coccygeal plexus. This plexus is situated between the penis and the anus, and there are eight elevations on it. It is in touch with the mouth of the susumnā. In the centre of the plexus there is an elevation called svayambhūlinga, like a fine bud with an aperture at its mouth. There is a fine thread-like fibre, spiral in its form, attached to the aperture of the svavambhū-linga on one side and the mouth of the susumnā on the other. This spiral and coiled fibre is called kula-kundalini; for it is by the potential mother-energy, as manifested in its movement of a downward pressure of the apana vayu and an upward pressure of the prāna vāyu, that exhalation and inhalation are made possible and life functions operate. Next comes the svādhisthānacakra, the sacral plexus, near the root of the penis. Next comes the lumbar plexus (mani-pura-cakra), in the region of the navel. Next is the cardiac plexus (anāhata-cakra or viśuddhacakra), in the heart, of twelve branches. Next is the larvngeal and pharyngeal plexus, at the junction of the spinal cord and the medulla oblongata, called the bhāratī-sthāna. Next comes the lalanā-cakra, opposite the uvula. Next to this is the ājñā-cakra between the eyebrows, within which is the manas-cakra, the centre of all sense-knowledge and dream-knowledge, and the seat of manas, the mind-organ. Vijnanabhiksu says in his Yoga-varttika that one branch of the susumnā goes upwards from here, which is the nadi for carrying the functions of manas and is called mano-vaha nādī; the Jnāna-samkalinī tantra calls it jnāna-nādī. It seems, therefore, that it is through this $n\bar{a}d\bar{i}$ that connection is established

between the soul, residing in the brain, and the manas, residing in the manaś-cakra. Śankara Miśra argues in his commentary on the Vaisesika-sūtras, v. 2. 14 and 15, that the nādis are themselves capable of producing tactile impressions; for, had it not been so, then eating and drinking, as associated with their corresponding feelings, would not have been possible, as these are effected by the automatic functions of prāna¹. Above the ājñā-cakra comes the soma-cakra, in the middle of the cerebrum, and finally, in the upper cerebrum, there is the sahasrāra-cakra, the seat of the soul. The process of Yoga consists in rousing the potential energy located in the ādhāra-cakra, carrying it upwards through the aperture of the citrini or the brahma-nadi, and bringing it to the brahma-randhra or the sahasrāra. This kundalinī is described as a fine fibre like a lightning flash (tadid iva vilasat tantu-rūpa-svarūpa), which raises the question whether this is actually a physical nerve or merely a potential energy that is to be carried upwards to the upper cerebrum in the sahasrāra-cakra; and it cannot. I think, be vet satisfactorily explained. But, judging from a wide comparison of the texts, it seems pretty certain that it is the kundali śakti or the kundali energy which is carried upwards. If the kundali energy is inexhaustible in its nature, the whole discussion as to whether the ādhāra-cakra is depleted or not or whether the kundalinī herself rises or her eject, as raised in Sir John's Serpent Power, pp. 301-320. loses its point. How far the cakras can themselves be called nerveplexuses is very doubtful, since the nerve-plexuses are all outside the spinal aperture; but, if the kundalini is to pass through the aperture of the citrini nādi and at the same time pass through the cakras, the cakras or the lotuses (padma) must be inside the spinal cord. But, supposing that these nerve-plexuses represent the corresponding places of the cakras inside the spinal cord, and also because it has become customary to refer to the cakras as plexuses. I have ventured to refer to the cakras as such. But it must be borne in mind that, as the kundalini is a mysterious power, so also are the cakras the mysterious centres in the path of the ascent of the kundalini. A nerve-physical interpretation of them as nerveplexuses would be very unfaithful to the texts. A more detailed discussion on these subjects will be found in the treatment of Tantra philosophy in a later volume of this work. The chief interest of the present section is only to show that the Tantra

¹ See Dr Sir B. N. Seal's Positive Sciences of the Ancient Hindus, pp. 222-225.

anatomy is entirely different in its conception from the Ayur-veda anatomy, which has been the subject of our present enquiry. Another fact of importance also emerges from these considerations, namely, that, though in Dṛḍhabala's supplementary part of the Siddhi-sthāna the head is associated with sensory consciousness, Caraka's own part refers to the heart as the central seat of the soul. But the Tantra school points to the upper cerebrum as the seat of the soul and regards the spinal cord and its lower end as being of supreme importance for the vital functions of the body.

The Theory of Rasas and their Chemistry.

The theory of Rasas or tastes plays an important part in Ayur-veda in the selection of medicines and diet and in diagnosing diseases and arranging their cures. In 1. 26 of Caraka we hear of a great meeting of sages in the Caitraratha Forest, attended by Atreya, Bhadrakāpya, Šākunteya, Pūrņākṣa Maudgalya, Hiraṇyākṣa Kauśika, Kumāraśiras Bharadvāja, Vāryovida, the Vaideha king Nimi, Baḍiśa and Kāṅkāyana, the physician of Balkh, for the purpose of discussing questions of food and tastes.

Bhadrakāpva held that taste, or rasa, was that which could be perceived by the organ of the tongue and it was one, viz. that of water. Sākunteya held that there were two rasas, nutritive (upaśamanīya) and denutritive (chedanīya). Pūrnāksa held that there were three rasas, upasamaniya, chedaniya and neutral (sādhārana). Hiranyaksa held that there were four rasas, sweet and good, sweet and harmful, distasteful and good, distasteful and harmful. Kumārasiras held that there were five rasas, earthy, watery, fiery, airy and ethereal (antariksa). Varyovida held that there were six rasas, heavy (guru), light (laghu), cold (sīta), hot (uṣṇa), smooth (snigdha) and dry (rūksa). Nimi held that there were seven rasas. sweet (madhura), sour (amla), salt (lavana), hot (katu), bitter (tikta). pungent (kaṣāya) and alkaline (kṣāra). Badiśa added one more to these, viz. unmanifested (avyakta), and held that there were eight rasas. Kānkāyana held that the rasas were of infinite variety and could not be counted, on account of the diversity of substances in which they are located (asraya), their specific properties as light or heavy (guna), their action in developing or reducing the constituents of the body (karma) and their diversity as apparent to the organ of taste. Atreya Punarvasu held that there are six rasas only, sweet (madhura), acid (amla), saline (lavana), hot and pungent (katu), bitter (tikta) and astringent (kasāya). The source (yoni) of all these rasas is water. Its actions are sedative (upasamana) and denutritive (chedana), and a basis of equilibrium (sādhāraṇatva) of the rasas is reached when those having the above opposite actions are mixed together. Pleasantness (svādu) or unpleasantness (asvādu) of taste depends on liking or disliking. The seats of rasas are the essences of the five elements (pañca-mahā-bhūta-vikārāḥ) modified in accordance with five conditions, viz. (1) specific nature of the substance (prakrti); (2) as acted upon by heat or other agents (vikrti); (3) association with other things (vicāra); (4) the place in which the substance is grown (deśa); (5) the time at which it is produced $(k\bar{a}la)^1$. The gunas of heaviness, lightness, cold, warm, moisture and dryness belong to the things to which the rasas belong. The alkaline (ksāra) should not be counted as a separate rasa, as it is made up of more than one rasa and affects more than one sense-organ; for it has at least two important rasas (of "hot and pungent" and "saline") and it affects not only the organ of taste, but also that of touch, and does not naturally belong to any substance, but has to be created by artificial processes. There is no such separate rasa which can be called unmanifested (avyakta). Water is the origin of all rasas; so all rasas may be considered as existing in an unmanifested state in water, but that is no reason why we should say that water has a separate taste called "unmanifested"; moreover, when a substance has two rasas, one dominant and the other extremely feeble, the feeble rasa may be regarded as unmanifested; or, when in a compound of different rasas, say, of a syrup, a slight hot taste is added, this may be considered as unmanifested; but certainly there is no rasa to which the name "unmanifested" (avyakta) could be given. The view that there is an infinite number of rasas is untenable; for, though it may be urged that the same rasa may occur differently in different objects, that would only go to show that there are various grades of forms of each particular rasa and not prove that with each variety of a particular rasa the rasa itself is wholly different. Again,

¹ Thus mudga (a sort of kidney-bean), which is a bhūta-vikāra, has the rasas of astringent and sweet and is yet light by nature, though one would expect it to be heavy on account of its rasas of astringent and sweet. Vikṛti is best exemplified in the case of fried paddy, which is lighter than rice. It is well known that by composition wholly new properties may be generated in the product. Medicinal herbs vary in their properties in accordance with the time of plucking.

if different rasas are mixed together, the mixed rasa itself is not entitled to be counted as a separate rasa; for its qualities are just as the sum total of the qualities of the different rasas which are its constituents, and no independent work can be attributed to this mixed rasa (na saṃsṛṣṭānāṃ rasānāṃ karmopadisanti buddhimantaḥ), as in the case of a compound of two or more substances, as mentioned above (vicāra).

Though on account of the predominance of one or the other of them they are called earthy (pārthiva), watery (āpya), fiery (āgneya), airy (vāyavya) or ethereal (ākāśātmaka), yet all substances are compounded of the five elements. All substances, whether animate or inanimate, are to be considered as medicines (auṣadha), provided they are applied in the proper way (yukti) and for specific purposes (artha). A substance can be a medicine only when it is applied in the proper way and for specific purposes; nothing can unconditionally be considered a medicine. The medicative influence is exerted both by virtue of the specific agency of a substance (dravya-prabhāva) and by the specific agency of its qualities, as also by their joint influence¹. The action of medicines is called karman, its potency vīrya, the place where they operate adhikaraṇa, the time of operation kāla, the mode of operation upāya, and the result achieved phala.

As regards the origin of rasas, it is suggested that water gets mixed with the five elements in the air and also after its fall on the ground. These rasas nourish the bodies of all plants and animals. All the five elements are present in all rasas; but in some rasas some of the elements predominate, and in accordance with this there are differences among the various rasas. Thus, with the predominance of soma there is a sweet taste, with the predominance of earth and fire an acid taste, with water and fire a saline taste, with air and fire, hot and pungent, with air and $\bar{a}k\bar{a}sa$, bitter, with air and earth, astringent. The different elements

¹ The medicinal effect of substances may be distinguished from the medicinal effect of qualities, as when by certain stones (mani) poison may be removed or by the use of certain amulets certain diseases may be cured. Again, there may be cases where simply by the application of heat a certain disease may be cured, irrespective of the substance which possesses heat as its property. It seems that only the sense-properties and mechanical properties are here counted as gunas; other kinds of properties were considered as being due to the thing (dravya) itself. For, in addition to the sense-properties, the twenty qualities, guru, laghu, stta, uṣṇa, snigdha, rūkṣa, manda, tlkṣṇa, sthira, sāra, mṛdu, kaṭhina, visada, picchila, ślakṣṇa, khara, sūkṣma, sthūla, sāndra and drava, are counted as gunas (Caraka-saṃhitā, 1. i. 48; 1. 25. 35; 1. 26. 11).

which take part in the formation of rasas are said to be instrumental causes (nimitta-kāraṇa) of the rasas; this explains how, though fire has no rasa, yet it may help the generation of a particular rasa¹. Destiny or unknown cause (adṛṣṭa) is, however, the general cause of such combinations of elements with water.

In the very first chapter of the Caraka-samhitā, substances (dravya) are counted as being the five elements, viz. ākāśa, air, light, heat, water and earth, together with soul, manas, time and space. Of these those substances which possess sense-organs are called animate and those which do not are called inanimate2. The gunas are the sense-properties of hearing, touch, colour, taste and smell, the mechanical and other properties which all elements have in common, such as heaviness, lightness, cold, heat, and moisture, dryness, dullness, sharpness, steadiness, mobility, softness, hardness, motion, slipperiness, smoothness, roughness, grossness, fineness, thickness, liquidity, etc., and desire, hatred, pleasure, pain and effort, intelligence (including memory), consciousness, patience, egoism, etc., distance (para), nearness (apara), combination (yukti), number, contact, disjunction (vibhāga), separateness, measure, inertia (samskāra) and repetition (abhyāsa). The definition of substance (dravya) is, that which possesses quality (guna) and action (karma) in the relation of inherence and is also the inseparable material cause (samavāyi-kāraņa) of all effects. Gunas are things which are themselves inactive and exist in dravyas in an inseparable relation of inherence. The gunas themselves cannot contain any further gunas3.

The above being the theory of dravya and guna, the question arises as to the way in which medicines operate in human bodies. The most general and obvious way in which the different medicines were classified was by their different tastes, which were considered primarily to be six in number, as has already been pointed out. Each of the tastes was considered as being capable of producing certain good or bad physiological effects. Thus the sweet taste is

¹ Iha ca kāraņatvam bhūtānām rasasya madhuratvādi-viseşa eva nimitta-kāraņatvam ucyate. Cakrapāni on Caraka, 1. 26. 38.

⁸ Caraka-samhitā, I. I. 47. Even trees were regarded as being possessed of senses and therefore animated or cetana. Cakrapāni says that, since the sunflower continues to turn its face towards the sun, it may be regarded as being possessed of the sense of sight; again, since the lavalī (Averrhoa acida) plant fructifies through hearing the sound of thunder, the plants have auditory organs, etc.

^{*} Ibid. 1. 1. 47, 48 and 50, with Cakrapāņi's commentary.

said to increase blood, flesh, fat, marrow, semen, life, to do good to the six senses, and to produce strength and colour of the body; to do good to the skin and throat, to destroy pitta, poison and māruta (morbidity of air), and to produce moistening, cold and heaviness, etc. The acid (amla) is said to rouse digestion, develop the body, and to remove vāta; it is light, warm, moist, etc. The saline taste is digestive; it removes vāta, secretes kapha; and it is moist, warm, etc. And so on with the other tastes. But, of course, all these qualities cannot belong to the tastes; as has already been pointed out, the gunas cannot possess further gunas, and the tastes (rasa) are themselves gunas; so, when certain functions or properties are attributed to the rasas, they must be considered as belonging to the substances which possess those specific rasas (rasā iti rasa-yuktāni dravyāni)1.

From Suśruta's statements it appears that there was a great difference of opinion regarding the relative prominence of dravva and its properties2. There were some who held that dravya was the most important, since dravya remained permanent, whereas rasa, etc. are always changed; so dravya is relatively permanent. Again, dravya is grasped by the five senses, and not its gunas. The dravya is also the support of the rasas, etc. All operations have to be done with the dravya, and the authoritative texts also speak of operations with the dravyas, and not with the rasas; the rasas depend largely on the nature of the dravyas. Others hold that rasas are the most important, since it is of them that we become directly aware when we take our food, and it is said that they remove the various morbidities of vāta, etc. Others hold that the potency (vīrya) of things is the most important, since it is by their potency that medicines act3. This potency is of two kinds, hot (usna) and cold (sīta); some think that it is of eight kinds, hot (uṣna), cold (sīta), moist (snigdha), dry (rūksa), moving (visada), slippery (picchila), soft (mrdu) and sharp (tiksna). Sometimes potency or virya overcomes rasa by its power and makes its own tendencies felt; thus, though sugar-cane ought to remove vāta on account of its sweetness, it really increases it on account of its being sita-virya (of cold

Caraka-samhitā, 1. 26. 39, Cakrapāņi's commentary.
 Suśruta, Sūtra-sthāna, 40. 3. Dravya is defined by Suśruta as kriyā-guņavat samavāyi-kāraņam,

³ ihausadha-karmāṇi ūrdhvādho-bhāgobhayabhāga-saṃśodhana-saṃśamanasamgrāhakāgni-dīpaina-prapīdana-lekhana-vṛṃhaṇa-rasāyana-vājīkarana-śvayathūkara-vilayana-dahana-dārana-mādana-prānaghna-visa-prasamanāni vīrvaprādhanyād bhavanti. Susruta, 1. 40. 5.

potency)¹. Others say that the rasa, as digested by the stomach $(p\bar{a}ka)$, is most important, since things can produce good or bad effects only when they are digested. Some hold that each rasa remains unchanged by digestion, though according to others there are only three kinds of rasa resulting from digestion or $p\bar{a}ka$, viz. sweet, acid and hot (katu); whereas Suśruta held that there were only two kinds of rasa resulting from digestion, viz. sweet and hot; for, in his view, acid was not the result of digestion $(amlo\ vip\bar{a}ko\ n\bar{a}sti)$. According to Suśruta it is the pitta which is turned into acid. Those objects which have more of earth and water in them are turned into sweet taste, whereas those which have tejas, air and $\bar{a}k\bar{a}sa$ as their ingredients are turned into hot taste (katu).

Speaking of the differences of view regarding the relative importance of dravya, rasa, vīrya and vipāka, Suśruta says that they are all important, since a medicine produces effects in all those four ways according to its own nature². The view of Suśruta, as explained by Cakrapāni in the Bhānumatī, seems to be that food, drink and medicine are all products of the five mahābhūtas, and rasa, vīrya and vipāka are dependent on the dravya and are like its potency (śakti), through which it works3. Cakrapāni, commenting on this in the Bhānumatī, says that even in those cases where certain rasas are said to remove or increase certain morbidities (dosa) it is only because of their importance that they are so described; the real agent in all such cases is the dravya, since the rasa, etc. are always dependent on the dravya. Apart from the sakti as manifested in rasa, etc., the dravya also operates by itself in an unthinkable way (acintya), which is also called prabhāva and which is comparable with the attractive force exerted by magnets on iron. The dravya by itself is thus differentiated from its śakti, and it is said to have a peculiar operative mode of its own, as distinguished from that of its śakti or potency, as manifested in rasa, vīrya or vipāka, and this mode of operation is considered to

¹ etāni khalu vīryāṇi sva-bala-guṇotkarṣāt rasam abhibhuyātma-karma kurvanti. Suśruta, ibid. The vīrya is said to remain both in the dravya and in the rasa. Thus in Suśruta, I. 40. 5-8, it is said that, if in those rasas which remove vāta there is dryness (raukṣya), lightness (lāghava) and cold (śaitya), then they will not remove vāyu; so, if in those which remove pitta there is sharpness (tanṣnya), heat (auṣṇya) and lightness (laghutā), then they will not remove pitta, and so on.

2 caturṇām api sāmagryam icchanty atra vipaścitaḥ. Suśruta, I. 40. 13.

³ dravya-šakti-rūpakā rasa-virya-vipākā yathā-yogam nimitta-kāraņatām samavāyi-kāraņatām vā bhajanto na kartṛtayā vyapadiśyante dravya-parā-dhīnatvāt. Bhānumatī, 1. 40. 13.

be quite unthinkable (acintya) as to the way in which it operates. Thus some medicines operate by rasa, some by vipāka, or the rasa resulting from the digestive operation (e.g. šunthī, which, though hot in taste and hot in vīrya, is sweet after digestive operation), some by vīrya (e.g. kulattha, though pungent, yet removes vāyu on account of its hot vīrya), some by both rasa and vipāka, some by dravya-prabhāva, vīrya and rasa, some by dravya-prabhāva, vīrya, rasa and vipāka.

Caraka, however, differs from Susruta in this view of drayva and rasa, vīrya and vipāka; for, according to him, rasa, vīrya and vipāka, themselves being gunas, cannot possess further gunas. He does not admit a śakti as different from the dravya. Thus in the case of prabhāva, while Suśruta holds that it is a specific śakti, or the thing operating in unaccountable ways, Caraka thinks that this śakti is identical with the thing itself. Thus Cakrapāni in explaining Caraka-samhitā, 1. 26. 72, says, "saktir hi svarūpam eva bhāvānām, nātiriktam kincid dharmāntaram bhāvānām" (potency is the nature of things and is no separate property distinct from them). Virya in its general sense means "the potency or power of medicines to produce effects," and as such includes within it both rasa and vipāka; but, since these have special names, the term virya is not applied to them². Apart from this there is special vīrva in a technical sense (pāribhāṣika). In the view which considers this vīrva to be of two kinds, snigdha and rūkṣa, these are to be taken as specific characteristics; but in the view which considers the virya to be of eight kinds, these are to be taken as a different set of characteristics of dravya or substance3. This virya is believed to be more powerful than rasa, so that, when the vīrya and rasa of a thing come into conflict, it is the vīrya which predominates and not the rasa.

Vāgbhaṭa junior makes some remarks in support of the name vīrya, as given to the characteristics which go by that name. He says that, since the vīrya characteristics of things remain unchanged even after digestion, and since the things are primarily

šāstre... Carake tu sāmānya-vīrya-šabdena te 'pi grhītāḥ. Ibid. 1. 40. 5.

* yadā dvividham vīryam tadā snigdha-rūkṣādīnām...rasādi-dharmata-yaiva kārya-graḥanam vakṣyati hi madhuro rasaḥ snigdha ity ādi aṣṭavidha-vīrya-pakṣe tu...balavat-kārya-kartṛtva-vivakṣayā vīryatvam iti sthitiḥ. Ibid. 1. 40.

in use for medical purposes and each of them would include many substances and rasas, this character justly deserves to be called virya, or the potency-in-chief for producing medical effects¹. He further says that rasa is baffled by vipāka, that rasa and vipāka can baffle virya, if they work in the same direction, and that they may all be baffled by prabhāva. These remarks, however, are true only in those cases where rasa, virya and vipāka exist in the same proportion, and it must be borne in mind that some objects may have rasa of such a predominant type that it may overcome the vipāka or the virya². As regards the relative priority of virya and vipāka, Sivadāsa in commenting on Cakrapāṇi's Dravya-guṇa-saṃgraha says that vīrya is prior to vipāka; and this would imply that, as vīrya can supersede rasa, so vipāka may supersede vīrya.

If we look back to the earliest history of the development of Indian medical ideas in the Atharva-Veda, we see that there were two important classes of medicines, viz. the amulets, manis and water. Atharva-Veda, I. 4. 4, I. 5, I. 6, I. 33, VI. 24, VI. 92, etc. are all in praise of water as medicine, and water is regarded there as the source of all rasa or taste. Thus from the earliest times two different kinds of medicines were used. Of these the amulets were more or less of a miraculous effect. It was not possible to judge which kind of amulet or mani would behave in which way; their mode of operation was unthinkable (acintya). It is easy to see that this mode of operation of medicines was what was considered a prabhāva by Caraka and Suśruta. With them prabhāva means the mysterious operation of a medicine acting in an unaccountable way, so that, though two medicines might be exactly similar in rasa, vīrya and vipāka, they might behave differently with regard to their medicinal effects3. Such an effect was thus naturally considered as unthinkable. But the analogy of the old manis was fresh in the minds of these medical thinkers when conceiving this prabhāva, and it was in reality an extension of that idea to other unaccountable effects of medicines4. As none of the chemical effects

Aşţānga-hṛdaya, 1. 9. 15.
 Ibid. 1. 28.
 rasa-virya-vipākānam sāmānyam yatra lakṣyate viieṣah karmanām caiva

tayācintya ity arthah."

^{*} maninām dhāranīyānām karma yad vividhātmakam, tat-prabhāva-krtam tesām prabhavo 'cintya ucyate. (The various actions of amulets are to be considered as being due to a prabhāva which is unthinkable—ibid. 1. 26. 72.)

(in the modern sense) of medicines on human organs were known, the most obvious way in which the medical effects of herbs, roots, etc. could be classified was on the basis of taste, and by Caraka and Susruta we are told the effects of the different rasas on the different morbidities of the body, vāyu, pitta and kapha. As the main source of all diseases was unequal increase or decrease of vayu, pitta and kapha, a classification which described the rasas in such a way that one could know which rasa increased or decreased which of the morbidities was particularly useful. But it is obvious that such a classification, though simple, could not be universally true; for, though the taste is some indication of the medicinal property of any substance, it is not an infallible one. But no other mode of classification was known; it was supposed that the taste (rasa) of some substances changed altogether after digestion and that in such cases the taste which changed after digestion (pāka) would be operative. Cakrapāni says that in those cases where the taste on the tongue (rasa) agrees with the taste as produced after the digestive process, the effect in that direction becomes very strong, but in the case where the latter differs from the former the operation of rasa becomes naturally weak, because the force of the taste produced by the final operation of the digestive process is naturally strong1. Caraka thought that there were only three rasas as the result of digestion, viz. katu, madhura and amla; Suśruta rejected the last, as has already been described. But even this was not sufficient; for there were many other effects of medicine which could not be explained on the above suppositions. In explaining this, the theory of virya was introduced. In addition to taste substances were considered to possess other properties of heat and cold, as judged by inference. tactual properties of slipperiness, movement, moisture and dryness, etc., sharpness, etc. as manifested by odour, and these were supposed to produce effects in supersession of rasa and vipāka. It was only in the cases where no sensible data of any kind could be found to indicate the medical properties of the thing that the idea of prabhāva was introduced. The chapters in Ayur-veda on dravya

¹ Cakrapāṇi on Caraka, 1. 26. 65. Cakrapāṇi points out that the hot (katu) taste is at first useful in cleaning the phlegm of the throat, but, since it becomes sweet after digestion, it acts as a nutrient (vṛṣya). But, except in the case of such local actions, it is difficult to understand why the rasa which was altered by digestion should have any such effect as Cakrapāṇi suggests (viparyaye tu durbalam iti jñeyam).

and guna deal with the enumeration of prabhāva and also of rasa, vipāka and vīrya wherever there is a divergence among them, as determined by empirical observation. This is very necessary not only for the selection of medicines and diet in the cure of diseases, but also for prevention of diseases. It is well to remember that many diseases were supposed to arise through eating together things which are opposed to each other in rasa, vipāka or vīrya.

The Psychological Views and other Ontological Categories.

Caraka in the eighth chapter of the Sūtra-sthāna counts the senses as being five in number. Though both the Sāmkhya and the Vaisesika systems, to which Ayur-veda is largely indebted for its philosophical ideas, admit manas, or mind-organ, as a separate sense (indriya), Ayur-veda here differs from them and, as Cakrapāni says, separates manas from the ordinary senses by reason of the fact that it has many functions which are not possessed by any of the other senses (cakşur-ādibhyo 'dhika-dharma-yogitayā)1. Caraka himself, however, in another place speaks incidentally of a sixth sense (sad-indriva) in connection with the description of sweet taste². Manas is, however, here described as transcending the senses (atīndriya). Cakrapāṇi, in explaining the atīndriya character of manas, says that it is called atindriva because it is not a cause of the knowledge of external objects like the other senses. Manas is, indeed, the direct cause of pleasure and pain, but it is the superintendent of all the senses (adhisthāyaka). Manas is also called sattva and cetas. The self is, however, the permanent subject of all acts of consciousness (cetanā-pratisandhātā). When the manas comes into contact with its objects, viz. pleasure or pain or the objects of thought, and the self makes an effort at grasping these objects, then there is a movement on the part of manas, by which it feels pleasure or pain, or thinks the objects of thought, or moves the sense-organs. Thus, when the self makes an effort and the objects of pleasure or pain or thought are present, then the manas turns to these as its objects and moves the senses, and the senses. guided by it, grasp their respective objects and produce their knowledge.

Cakrapāṇi's commentary on Caraka-saṃhitā, 1. 8. 3.
 Caraka-saṃhitā, 1. 26. 41, tatra madhuro rasah...saḍ indriya-prasādanah.

The one manas appears as diverse on account of the diversity of its objects of thought (e.g. the mind may sometimes take religious thoughts and appear religious and at other times take lustful thoughts and appear lustful), diversity of sense-objects with which it is associated (e.g. the mind may grasp colour, smell or sound, etc.), and diversity of ways of imagination (e.g. "This will do good to me" or "This will do me harm," etc.). In the same man the mind may sometimes appear as angry, ignorant or virtuous. But in reality the manas is one and the same for each person; all these differences do not appear at the same time with the same person, as might have been the case if there were many minds for one and the same person. Moreover, the manas is atomic; for otherwise many different objects or functions could be performed by one and the same manas at the same time.

It may be asked, if one and the same manas can show different kinds of moral propensities, sattva, rajas or tamas, how can any person be characterized as sāttvika, rājasika or tāmasika? The answer is that a man is called sāttvika, rājasika or tāmasika according as predominance of one or other of these gunas is observed in that man.

Manas is supposed to move the senses, which are constituted of ākāśa, air, light, heat, water and earth; and the seats of the senses are the physical sockets of the eye, the ear, the nostrils, the tongue and the skin. The five sense-cognitions are produced through the contiguity of the senses, the sense-objects, manas and soul. They are short-lived (kṣanika), but not exactly momentary, as the Buddhists would like to have them¹. They also are of determinate nature (niścayātmikāh). As Cakrapāṇi says, it is quite possible for transitory sense-cognitions to give a determinate report of their objects. Though all the senses are made up of the five elements, yet those senses which contain any element in a preponderating degree were conceived as made up of that element. The sense that has a particular element in a preponderating degree is regarded as having by virtue of that a special capacity for grasping that particular element².

The connection of the body, one senses, the manas and the self

¹ Cakrapāṇi's commentary on Caraka-samhitā, 1.8.11. Kşanikā ity āśutara-vināśinyah na tu bauddha-siddhāntavad eka-kṣaṇāvasthāyinyah.

² tatra yad-yad-ātmakam indriyam visesāt tat-tad-ātmakam evārtham anu-grhnāti tat-svabhāvād vibhutvāc ca. (Caraka, 1. 8. 14.)

is called life (jivita)¹. The self is everywhere regarded as the agent which unites the acts of consciousness (jñāna-pratisandhātā). Cakrapāṇi says that, since the body is momentary (śarīrasya kṣanikatvena), it may be argued that the union of the self with the body is also momentary. The answer that Cakrapāṇi gives to such an objection is that, though the body is momentary, yet, since the momentary bodies are repeated in a series, the series as a whole may be looked upon as one; and, though the union of the self with each term of the series is momentary, yet, since the series may be looked upon as one, its union with the self may also be regarded as one (santāna-vyavasthito 'yam ekatayā ucyate)². In another place Caraka says that the manas, the self and the body are connected together like a tripod, on which life rests; if any one of the components is missing, the unity is broken³.

It has already been pointed out that, according to Caraka, the self is active and that by its activity the mind moves; and it is by the operation of mind that the senses move. The self is also regarded as being cetana (conscious). But this consciousness does not belong to the self in itself, it is attained only by its connection with the senses through manas4. It is, however, necessary to note that apart from this self there is, according to Caraka, another transcendent self (parah ātmā), different from the self which participates in the union of the body and the senses (which is also technically called the samyogi-purusa)5. The subtler, or transcendent, self is unchangeable (nir-vikāra). Knowledge implies a process and a change, and this self manifests consciousness only in those parts where it becomes associated with manas and the senses. Thus, though the self is eternal, yet the rise of consciousness in it is occasional. The unchangeableness of the self consists in its being able to unite with itself its past and future states6. If the self were not permanent, it could not unite with itself all its past experiences. The sufferings and enjoyment

¹ Caraka, I. 1. 41. The other synonyms of life are dhāri, nityaga and anubandha.

² Ibid. 1. 1. 41.

sattvam ātmā sarīram ca trayam etat tri-daņdavat lokas tişthati samyogāt tatra sarvam pratisthitam. Ibid. 1. 1. 45.

idam eva cātmanas cetanatvam, yad indriya-samyoge sati jñāna-sālitvam, na nikrstasyātmanas cetanatvam. Cakrapāņi on Caraka, 1. 1. 47.

nirvikārah paras tv ātmā satva-bhūta-gunendriyaih. Caraka, 1. 1. 55. tena sattva-sarīrātma-melaka-rūpo ya ātma-sabdena ucyate tam vyāvartayati. Cakrapāņi on the above.

nityatvam cātmanah pūrvāparāvasthānubhūtārtha-pratisandhānāt. Cakra-pāṇi on Caraka, 1. 1. 55.

that affect us should not be attributed to the self, but to manas (drsyamāna-rāgādi-vikāras tu manasi).

The special feature of this view of self is that it is permanent and unchangeable; this self seems to hold within it all the individual egos which operate in association with their respective senses, manas and body. It becomes endowed with consciousness only when it is in association with the senses. Pleasure, pain and the movements involved in thought-processes are attributed to manas, though the manas is also considered to derive its activity from the self. The states of consciousness that are produced are all united in the self. The self, thus diverted in its subtler aspect from the senses and manas, is eternal and unchangeable, whereas in its aspect as associated with manas and the senses it is in the sphere of change and consciousness. This view is therefore different from those of the orthodox schools of Indian philosophy.

It is well to note in this connection that the Caraka-samhitā begins with an enumeration of the Vaisesika categories, and, though it often differs from the Vaisesika view, it seems to take its start from the Vaisesika. It enumerates the five elements, manas, time. space and self as substances (dravva); it enumerates the gunas. such as the sensible qualities, the mechanical or physical qualities given in the list beginning with heaviness (gurv ādayah), intelligence (buddhi), and those beginning with remoteness (para) and ending with effort (prayatna). But what is this gurv ādi list? There is no such list in the Vaisesika-sūtras. Cakrapāni, however, refers to an enumeration given in a later chapter (1.25.35) by Caraka, where however these gunas are not enumerated as belonging to all substances, but only to the food and drink that we take1. But the list referred to as parādi (beginning with parādi) prayatnānta (ending in prayatna) is not to be found anywhere in the Caraka-samhitā. This may be a reference to the Vaisesika-sūtra, 1. 1. 62. But, if this is so, it leaves out a number of other gunas enumerated in the Vaisesikasūtra which were counted there in the parādi list3. Caraka himself gives a list of gunas beginning with para which includes some of those gunas included in the Vaisesika-sūtra already

¹ āhāratvam āhārasyaikavidham arthābhedāt sa punah...vimšati-guno gurulaghu-sitosna-snigdha-rūkṣa-manda-tīkṣṇa-sthira-sara-mṛdu-kathina-visada-picchila-slakṣṇa-khara-sūkṣma-sthūla-sāndra-dravānugamāt. Caraka-samhitā, 1. 5.35.

² paratvāparatve buddhayah sukha-duhkhe icchā-dveşau prayatnas ca gunāh. Vaiseşika-sūtra, 1. 1. 6.

³ rūpa-rasa-gandha-śparśāh samkhyā-parimānāni prthaktvam samyoga-vibhāgau paratvāparatve. Ibid.

referred to and some more. The gunas enumerated are para, apara, yukti, samkhyā, samyoga, vibhāga, prthaktva, parimāna, samskāra, and abhyāsa1. Para means "superiority" or "importance" (pradhāna), apara means "inferiority" or "unimportance" (apradhāna). This importance or unimportance is with reference to country, time, age, measure, the rasa resulting from digestion (pāka), potency (vīrya) and taste (rasa). Thus, a dry country is called para and a marshy one apara; the rains (visarga) of early and late autumn (sarat and hemanta) are called para, whereas the season of drought (winter, spring and summer) is called apara; with reference to paka, virya and rasa, para and apara mean "suitability" and "unsuitability"—that which is suitable to one is para and that which is unsuitable to him is apara. Yukti means proper selection of medicines with reference to certain diseases (dosādy-apeksayā bhesajasya samīcīna-kalpanā); samkhyā means "number"; samyoga, the mixing up or compounding of two or more substances; vibhāga, separation; prthaktva, difference. The mountains Himālaya and Meru are prthak, because they are situated in different places and cannot unite; again, even though a pig and a buffalo may meet together, they always remain different from each other; and again, in the same class, say in a collection of peas, each pea is different in identity from the other; in the last case difference in number constitutes a difference in identity; thus, wherever there is a numerical difference (anekatā), there is difference in identity. Prthaktva thus stands for three kinds of difference, spatial difference, difference of characters and difference of identity due to numerical distinction. Parimāna means measurement by weight, samskāra means the production of new qualities and abhyāsa means habit due to constant practice (satata-kriyā). It is evident from the above that, though the terms used are the same as those used by Kanada in the Vaisesika-sūtra, yet they are mostly used in different senses in accordance, probably, with medical tradition. But this list does not end with prayatna; it seems therefore that parādi and prayatnānta stand for two different lists and should not be combined together. We have above the parādi list. The prayatnānta is a different list of gunas. It includes, as Cakrapāni says, icchā (desire), dvesa (hatred), sukha

¹ Parāparatve yuktiś ca samkhyā samyoga eva ca, vibhāgaś ca prthaktvam ca parimanam athāpi ca, samskārābhyāsa ity ete gunāh jñeyāh parādayah. Carakasamhitā, 1. 26. 27-29.

(pleasure), duḥkha (pain) and prayatna (effort). Prayatna means that particular quality by the rise of which in the soul the manas is moved to activity.

Karma (movement) is described as prayatnādi-ceṣṭitam, i.e. a movement of the nature of conscious effort; the word ādi in prayatnādi is explained by Cakrapāni as meaning "of the nature of!"

Samavāya means the relation of inseparable inherence, as in the case of qualities and substances. Cakrapani, in explaining the nature of samavāya, says that it is eternal, so that, even when in a particular case it may disappear, it continues to exist in other cases. It is never destroyed or created anew, but only its appearance is or is not manifested in particular cases2. In the case of sāmānya and višesa, again, Caraka seems to add a new sense to the words. In the Vaisesika systems the word sāmānya means a class concept; but here it means the concrete things which have similar constituents or characteristics; and visesa, which means in Vaiseşika ultimate specific properties differentiating one atom from another, means in Caraka concrete things which have dissimilar and opposite constituents or characteristics. Sāmānya and višesa thus have a significance quite different from what they have in the Vaiseșika-sūtras. The principle of sāmānya and viseşa is the main support of Ayur-veda; for it is the principle which underlies the application of medicines and the course of diets. Substances having similar constituents or characteristics will increase each other, and those having dissimilar constituents or characteristics will decrease each other. Thus a substance having the characteristics of vāta will increase vāta and decrease śleşman, which is dissimilar to it, and so on. Sāmānya is thus defined as tulyārthatā, i.e. performing similar purposes. Instead of having only a conceptual value, sāmānya and visesa are here seen to discharge a pragmatic work of supreme value for Ayur-veda. As regards the theory of substances (dravya) also, though Caraka borrowed the enumeration of categories, Cakrapāni says that the simpler bhūtas formed parts of the complex ones (bhūtāntarānupraveša), and in support of this idea he quotes a sūtra from the Nyāyasūtra, which, however, there occurs as an opponent's view, since the theory of bhūtānupraveša was not believed in by the Nyāya-

ādi-iabdaḥ prakāravācī. Cakrapāṇi's commentary on Caraka-saṃhitā, 1.
 1.48.

2 Ibid. 1. 1. 49.

Vaiseṣika school; with that school none of the elements entered into any other, and their qualities were fixed in themselves. However, in spite of these modifications, the relation of Nyāya-Vaiseṣika with Caraka seems to be close. But the detailed description of the school of Sāmkhya, in IV. I, as has already been mentioned and explained in the first volume of the present work, in the chapter on Sāmkhya, does not seem to have much bearing on the needs of Ayur-veda; and so the whole chapter does not appear to fit in with the rest of the work, and it is not referred to in other parts of the book. It is not improbable that this chapter was somehow added to the book from some other treatise.

Suśruta does not, like Caraka, enumerate the categories of the Vaiśesika, and his account of Sāmkhya is very faithful to the traditional account given in Iśvarakrsna's Kārikā and in the Sāmkhya-sūtra. Having described the Samkhya theory, Suśruta says that according to medical science the causes of things are sixfold, viz. (1) nature of things (svabhāva), (2) God (Iśvara), (3) time (kāla), (4) accidental happenings (yadrcchā), (5) destiny (niyati) and (6) evolution (parināma)1. As Dalhana points out, Suśruta has in several places referred to the operation of all these causes. Thus the formation of the limbs of the body in the foetusstate is said to be due to nature (svabhāva); God as fire is said to operate as the digestive fire in the stomach and to help digestion; time as seasons is said to be the cause of the increase and decrease of dosas; destiny means virtue and vice, and diseases and recovery from them are sometimes attributed to these. Jejjata, in commenting on Suśruta (as reported by Dalhana), says that all the above six causes, with the exception of God, are but different names of prakrti. Gayī, however, thinks that the above six causes represent the instrumental cause, though prakrti may still be considered as being the material cause (upādāna-kārana).

As Dalhana and Gayī think, there is no reason to suppose that Suśruta described the Sāṃkhya doctrine; for, immediately after describing the sixfold causes, he speaks of the elements as being constituted of the three guṇas, sattva, rajas and tamas. Even the senses are regarded as being material. Souls are according to Ayurveda eternal, though they are limited to their bodies and are not all-pervasive. They are manifested when the semen and the blood combine, and it is this bodily self, suffering transmigration owing

¹ Suśruta-samhitā, 111. 1. 11.

to virtue and vice (called karma-purusa), with which medical science is concerned. When the self is in association with manas, it has the following qualities: pleasure, pain, desire, hatred, effort, prāna and apāna (the upward current of breath and the downward force acting in the direction of the rectum), the opening and closing of the eyelids, the action of the intellect as decision or buddhi (niścaya), imagination (samkalpa), thought (vicāranā), memory (smrti), scientific knowledge (vijñāna), energy (adhyavasāva) and sense-cognitions (visayopalabdhi). The qualities of manas are divided into three classes, viz. sāttvika, rājasa and tāmasa; of these the sāttvika ones are kind actions, the desire of enjoying gradually, mercy, truthfulness, virtue, faith, self-knowledge, retentive power (medhā), intelligence (buddhi), self-control (dhrti), and sense of duty for the sake of duty (anabhisanga); the rājasa qualities are suffering, impatience, pride, untruthfulness, cruelty, boastfulness, conceit (mana), joy, passion and anger; the tāmasa qualities are dullness, viciousness, want of retentive power. idleness and sleepiness.

Logical Speculations and Terms relating to Academic Dispute.

Things are either existent (sat) or non-existent (asat), and they can be investigated by the four pramāṇas, viz. the testimony of trusty persons (āptopadeśa), perception (pratyakṣa), inference (anumāna) and the coming to a conclusion by a series of syllogisms of probability (yukti)¹.

Those whose minds are free from the impurities of rajas and tamas through the force of their ascetic endeavours, who possess unlimited knowledge extending through the past, present and future, are to be considered as trustworthy ($\bar{a}pta$). Such persons neither have any deficiency of knowledge nor would they willingly say anything untrue. They must be considered as absolutely trusty ($\bar{a}pta$), and their testimony may be regarded as true².

The valid and certain knowledge that arises as the result of the relation of self, senses, manas and sense-objects is called "perception." This contact of the sense with the object is regarded by Cakrapāṇi as being of five kinds, viz. (1) contact with the dravya (substance), called saṃyoga; (2) contact with the gunas

¹ Caraka-samhitā, 1, 11, 17,

² Ibid. 1. 11. 18, 19.

(qualities) through the thing (samyukta-samavāya) in which they inhere by samavāya (inseparable) relation; (3) contact with the gunas (such as colour, etc.) in the generic character as universals of those qualities, e.g. colouredness (rūpatva), which exist in the guņas in the samavāya relation; this is called samyukta-samavetasamavāya since the eye is in contact with the thing and the colour is in the thing by samavāya relation, and in the specific colour there is the universal colour or the generic character of colour by samavāva relation: (4) the contact called samavāva by which sounds are said to be perceived by the ear: the auditory sense is akasa, and the sound exists in ākāśa by the samavāya relation, and thus the auditory sense can perceive sound by a peculiar kind of contact called samaveta-samavāya; (5) the generic character of sound as the sound universal (sabdatva) is perceived by the kind of contact known as samaveta-samavāya. It is only immediately resulting (tadātve) cognition of such a contact that is called perception (pratyaksa); for inference, memory, etc. also may come in as a result of such a cognition at later stages through other successive processes (pāramparya). Cakrapāni further notes that the four kinds of contact spoken of here are the real causes of the phenomenon of perception; in reality, however, "knowledge that results as the effect of sense-contact" would be a sufficient definition of pratyaksa; so in the perception of pleasure, though none of these contacts are necessary, it is regarded as a valid case of direct perception. Contact with the self is, of course, necessary for all kinds of cognition¹. It is easy to see that the above theory of perception is of the same type as that found in the Nyāya system. The nir-vikalpa perception is not taken into consideration; for there is nothing corresponding to the term avyapadeśya in the Nyāya-sūtra². Inference must be based on perception, by which the concomitance of the hetu can first be observed. Inference is of three kinds, viz. from kārva (effect) to kārana (cause), as the inference of cohabitation from pregnancy; from cause to effect, as the inference of the future production of

The definition of pratyakşa in the Nyāya-sūtra is as follows: indriyārtha-sannikarşotpannam jñānam avyapadesyam avyabhicāri vyavasāyātmakam pratyakşam.

For a discussion thereon see vol. 1, pp. 333-343.

¹ Cakrapāņi on Caraka-samhitā, I. 11. 20.

The definition of pratyakşa given in Caraka-samhitā, 1. 11. 20, is: ātmendriya-mano-'rthānām sannikariāt pravartate vyaktā tadātve yā buddhih pratyakşam sā nirucyate.

fruit from a seed with the other attendant causes, sprinkling with water and the like; and inference by associations other than that of cause and effect, as the inference of fire from smoke1.

Yukti is not counted as a separate pramāna by any other system of Indian thought. When our intelligence judges a fact by a complex weighing in mind of a number of reasons, causes or considerations, through which one practically attains all that is desirable in life, as virtue, wealth or fruition of desires, we have what may be called yukti². As Cakrapāni points out, this is not in reality of the nature of a separate pramāna; but, since it helps pramānas, it is counted as a pramāna. As an example of yukti, Caraka mentions the forecasting of a good or bad harvest from the condition of the ground, the estimated amount of rains, climatic conditions and the like. Cakrapāni rightly says that a case like this, where a conclusion is reached as the combined application of a number of reasonings, is properly called $\bar{u}ha$ and is current among the people by this name. It is here counted as a separate pramana. It is in reality an inference of an effect from causes and, as such, cannot be used at the present time, and hence it cannot be called tri-kāla, valid in all the three times, past, present and future, as Caraka says.

The Buddhist, writes Santaraksita in discussing Caraka's doctrine of yukti as a separate pramāna, holds that yukti consists in the observation that, since, when this happens, that happens, and, since, when this does not happen, that does not happen, this is the cause of that. It may be argued that this is not a case of inference, since there is no proposition equivalent to the proposition with a drstanta, or example, in Nyāya inference (e.g. whatever is smoky is fiery, as the kitchen). It is held, as Kamalaśīla interprets, that the causeeffect idea is derived from the idea of "this happening, that happens," and there is no other idea in the notion of causality; if in any case any particular example is given, then another example might be asked for, and after that another, and we should have regressus

> pratyaksa-pūrvam tri-vidham tri-kālam cānumīyate vahnir nigūdho dhūmena maithunam garbha-darsanāt. Evam vyavasyanty atitam bijāt phalam anāgatam dṛstvā bījāt phalam jātam ihaiva sadršam budhāh.

Caraka-samhitā, 1. 11. 21, 22. Ibid. 1. 11. 25.

buddhih pasyati yā bhāvān bahu-kāraņa-yogajān yuktis tri-kāla sā jñeyā tri-vargah sādhyate yayā. ad infinitum¹. These arguments in support of yukti as the concluding of the cause-effect relation from "this happening, that happens" relation are refuted by Sāntarakṣita and Kamalaśīla, who point out that there are no separate cognitive processes which link up the relation of "this happening, that happens" with the cause-effect relation, because both these convey the same concept. The cause-effect relation is the same as "this happening, that happens." It may be argued that, whenever anything invariably and unconditionally happens on the happening of any other thing, then the two are considered to be related as cause and effect, just as a jug, etc. are invariably seen to appear after the proper operations of the potter and his wheels. If this is yukti, then it is not a different source of knowledge.

Cakrapāṇi, however, points out that these criticisms are all beside the point, since yukti, according to Caraka, is not kārya-kāraṇatā from tad-bhāva-bhāvitā; it is the arriving at a conclusion as a result of a series of reasonings. But it is important to note that in III. 4. 6 and 7 Caraka speaks of three kinds of pramāṇas, viz. pratyakṣa, anumāna and śabda, and describes anumāna as being tarka depending on yukti. Tarka is explained by Cakrapāṇi as being the knowledge of things which cannot be perceived (tarko 'pratyakṣa-jñānam), and yukti is here paraphrased by Cakrapāṇi as the relation of a-vinā-bhāva. It is said in this connection that a disease is to be determined by pratyakṣa, the medical texts (āpto-padeśa) and inference. But in III. 8. 6. 33 and 34 Caraka counts aitihya as āptopadeśa, though ordinarily aitihya is considered in

¹ dṛṣṭānte 'py ata eva tad-bhāva-bhāvitvāt kāryatā-pratipattiḥ, tatrāpi dṛṣṭānto 'nyo 'nveṣaṇīyaḥ, tatrāpy apara ity anavasthā. Kamalaśīla as quoted by Cakṛapāṇi on Caraka-saṃhitā, 1. 11. 25.

Săntaraksita misrepresents Caraka's view of yukti in a very strange manner. He says that, when from the fact that in all cases when A is present B is present and in all cases when A is absent B is also absent one thinks A to be the cause of B, this is regarded by Caraka as the new pramāna of yukti. Săntaraksita's exact words are:

asmin sati bhavaty eva na bhavaty asatiti ca tasmād ato bhavaty eva yuktir eža 'bhidhīyate pramāṇāntaram eveyam ity āha carako muniḥ nānumānam iyaṃ yasmād dṛṣṭānto 'tra na labhyate.

Tattva-samgraha, p. 482. This, however, is entirely different from what Caraka says, as is pointed out by Cakrapāni in his commentary on Caraka-samhitā. Caraka's idea of yukti is the logic of probability, i.e. when from a number of events, circumstances, or observations one comes to regard a particular judgment as probable, it is called yukti, and, as it is different from inference or any of the other accepted pramānas, it is to be counted as a separate pramāna. So far as I know, this is the only example of the introduction of the logic of probability in Indian thought.

Indian philosophy as being "tradition" or long-standing popular belief, different from āptopadeśa; upamāna, under the name of aupamya, is also referred to.

It may not be out of place here to note that the obstacles to perception referred to in the $S\bar{a}mkhya-k\bar{a}rik\bar{a}$ are all mentioned here. Thus it is said that even those things which have colour $(r\bar{u}pa)$ cannot be perceived if they are covered by a veil, or if the senses are weak, or if the mind is unsettled, or if they are mixed up in any homogeneous medium indistinguishable from them, or when in the case of smaller lights they are overcome by stronger luminaries, or when they are too fine or too subtle¹.

Logic was of use with Indian medical men not only in diagnosing a disease, but also in the debates which they had with one another. The rival practitioners often had to show their skill and learning in debates on occasions of the treatment of illness of rich patients. The art of carrying on a dispute successfully was considered an important acquisition among medical practitioners. Thus we have a whole set of technical terms relating to disputes, such as are never found in any other literature, excepting the Nyāya-sūtra. In the Caraka-samhitā almost the whole of the chapter called the "Roga-bhiṣag-jitīya-vimāna" (III. 8) is devoted to this purpose. It is well to remember that different kinds of disputes and fallacies are mentioned in the Nyāya-sūtra, and it will be useful to refer to these when dealing with similar topics from either the Caraka-samhitā or the Suśruta-samhitā.

The four terms referred to in connection with disputes in the $Ny\bar{a}ya-s\bar{u}tra$ are tarka, $v\bar{a}da$, jalpa and $vitand\bar{a}$. Tarka is said to be the same as $\bar{u}ha$, and this is explained as a process of reasoning carried on in one's mind before one can come to any right conclusion. It is a name for the subjective weighing of different alternatives on the occasion of a doubt before a conclusive affirmation or denial (nirnaya) is made. Disputes are said to be of three kinds, $v\bar{u}da$, jalpa and $vitand\bar{u}a$. $V\bar{u}da$ means a discussion for the ascertainment of truth, jalpa a dispute in which the main object is the overthrow of the opponent rightly or wrongly, and $vitand\bar{u}a$ a dispute in which attempts are made to discover the faults of the opponent's thesis without any attempt to offer any alternative thesis. $V\bar{u}da$ is thus essentially different in its purpose from jalpa and $vitand\bar{u}a$; for $v\bar{u}ada$ is an academical discussion with pupils,

¹ Caraka-samhitā, 1. 11. 8.

teachers, fellow-students and persons seeking truth solely for the purpose of arriving at right conclusions, and not for fame or gain¹. Jalpa, on the other hand, is that dispute which a man carries on while knowing himself to be in the wrong or unable to defend himself properly from his opponents except by trickery and other unfair methods of argument.

Caraka, in III. 8, says that a medical man should hold discussions (sambhāsā) with other medical men. Discussion increases zeal for knowledge (samharsa), clarifies knowledge, increases the power of speech and of achieving fame, removes doubts in the learning acquired before and strengthens convictions. In the course of these discussions many new things may be learnt, and often out of zeal an opponent will disclose the most cherished secret teachings of his teachers. These discussions are of two classes, friendly (sandhāya sambhāsā) and hostile (vierhva sambhāsā). A friendly discussion is held among wise and learned persons who frankly and sincerely discuss questions and give their views without any fear of being defeated or of the fallacies of their arguments being exposed. For in such discussions, even though there may be the fallacies described, no one would try to take advantage of the other, no one is jubilant over the other's defeat and no attempt is made to misinterpret or misstate the other's views.

Caraka then proceeds to give instructions as to how one should behave in an assembly where one has to meet with hostile disputes. Before engaging oneself in a hostile discussion with an opponent a man ought carefully to consider whether his opponent is inferior (para) to him and also the nature of the assembly (parisat) in which the discussion is undertaken. A parisat may be learned (jñānavatī) or ignorant (mūdhā), and these again may be friendly (suhrt), neutral (udāsīnā), or hostile (pratiniviṣtā). When an opponent is to be judged, he is to be judged from two points of view, intellectual and moral. Thus, on the one hand, it has to be considered whether he is learned and wise, whether he remembers the texts and can reproduce them quickly and has powers of speech, and on the other hand, whether he is of an irritable temperament, or of a fearful nature, etc. A man must carefully consider whether his opponent is superior to him in these qualifications or not.

¹ vādam ca nirnaya-phalārthibhir eva sişya-sabrahmacāri-gurubhih saha vītarāgaih, na khyāti-lābha-rabhasa-prativardhamāna-spardhānubandha-vidhurātmabhir ārabheta. Nyāya-mañjarī, p. 594.

No disputes should be undertaken in a hostile assembly; for even the best arguments might be misinterpreted. In an ignorant, friendly or neutral assembly it is possible to win a debate by proceeding tactfully against an opponent who is looked down upon by famous or otherwise great persons. In beginning conversations with such persons attempts may be made to puzzle them by reciting long sūtras and to demoralize or stun them, as it were, by jokes, banter and gestures and by using saturical language.

When a man has to enter into a dispute with his equal, he should find out the special point in which his opponent is weak and attack him there and should try to corner him in such positions as are generally unacceptable to people in general. Caraka then proceeds to explain a number of technical terms in connection with such disputes. Like the Nyāya, Caraka divides such hostile disputes (vāda) into two classes, jalpa and vitandā. Pratijñā is the enunciation of a thesis which is sought to be proved, e.g. "The puruşa is eternal." Sthāpanā is the establishing of a thesis by syllogistic reasonings involving propositions with hetu, drstanta, upanaya and nigamana. Thus the above thesis (pratijna), "The purusa is eternal," is to be supported by a reason (hetu), "because it is uncreated"; by an example (drstanta), "The sky is uncreated and it is eternal"; by a proposition showing the similarity between the subject of the example and the subject of the thesis (upanaya), viz. "Just as the ākāśa is uncreated, so the purusa is also uncreated"; and finally by establishing the thesis (nigamana), "Therefore the purusa is eternal 1."

Pratisṭhāpanā is the attempt to establish a proposition contrary to the proposition or the thesis put forth by the opponent. Thus, when the thesis of the sthāpanā is "Puruṣa is eternal," the pratisthāpanā proposition would be "Puruṣa is non-eternal," because "it is perceivable by the senses," and "The jug which is perceptible to the senses is non-eternal," and "Puruṣa is like the jug," so "Puruṣa is non-eternal."

Caraka defines hetu as "the cause of knowledge" (hetur nāma upalabdhi-kāraṇam), and the cause of knowledge is the pramāṇas of pratyakṣa, anumāna, aitihya and aupamya. The definition of hetu in the Nyāya-sūtra refers only to the perceived hetu in the case of inference, through a similarity or dissimilarity to which a

¹ It is easy to see that Caraka admitted in a syllogism all the five propositions that are admitted in the Nyāya-sūtra.

relation is established by inference¹. Here Caraka points out that a hetu may be either perceived, inferred or found by analogy or from the scriptures, but, in whichever way it may be found, when it leads to knowledge, it is called a hetu. Thus, when I say, "The hill is fiery, because it smokes" (parvato vahnimān dhūmavattvāt), the smoke is the hetu, and it is directly perceived by the eye. But when I say, "He is ill, because he is of low digestion," the hetu is not directly perceived, but is only inferred; for the fact of one's being in low digestion cannot be directly perceived. Again, when it is said, "Purusa is eternal, because it is uncreated" (nityah purusah a-krtakatvāt), the uncreatedness (a-krtakatva) is the hetu, but it is neither perceived, nor inferred, but accepted from the testimony of the scriptures. Again, in the proposition, "His face is most beautiful, because it has been compared with the moon" (asya mukham kāntatamam candropamatvāt), the fact of being compared with the moon is the hetu and it is known by $upam\bar{a}^2$. Thus Caraka's definition of hetu does not really come into conflict with that of Gautama: he only says that a hetu may be discovered by any of the pramānas, and, by whichever pramāna it may be discovered, it may be called a hetu, if it is invariably and unconditionally $(a-vin\bar{a}-bh\bar{a}va)$ associated with the major term $(s\bar{a}dhya)^3$.

Caraka then proceeds to describe *uttara*, which is in purport the same as the *jāti* of the *Nyāya-sūtras*. When an opponent wants to prove a thesis on the basis of a similarity of the subject of the thesis with the *hetu*, attempts have to be made to upset the thesis by showing its dissimilarity to the *hetu*. Thus one may say that the feeling of cold in a man must be due to his being affected by snow, dews, or chilly air, because effects arise from causes similar to them; in reply it may be said that effects are dissimilar from their causes, since a burning fever may often be an effect of cold⁴.

udāharaṇa-sādharmyāt sādhya-sādhanaṇ hetuḥ tathā vaidharmyāt. Nyāya-sūtra, 1. 1. 34, 35.

² See Gangādhara's Jalpa-kalpa-taru, 111. 8. 122.

³ hetus cāvinābhāva-linga-vacanam yady api, tathāpīha linga-pragrāhakāni pratyakṣādi-pramānāny eva yathokta-hetu-mūlatvena hetu-sabdenāha.

Cakrapāni on Caraka, 111. 8. 6. 25.

4 sādharmya-vaidharmyābhyām pratyavsthānam jātih. Nyāya-sūtra, 1. 2. 18.
There are twenty-four kinds of this jāti, e.g. (1-2) sādharmya-vaidharmya-sama, (3-8) utkarṣāpakarṣa-varnyāvarnya-vikalpa-sādhya-sama, (9-10) prāpty-aprāpti-sama, (11-12) prasanga-pratidṛṣṭānta-sama, (13) anutpatti-sama, (14) samṣaya-sama, (15) prakarana-sama, (16) ahetu-sama, (17) arthāpatti-sama, (18) aviṣṣa-sama, (19) upapatti-sama, (20) upalabdhi-sama, (21) anutpalabdhi-sama, (22) nitya-sama.
Sādharmya-vaidharmya-sama is that in which, when an argument is given on

The long list of jātis given in the Nyāya-sūtra and explained in the commentaries and in the Nyāya-mañjarī is not referred to

the basis of the similarity or dissimilarity to a certain hetu. it is pointed out that quite the opposite conclusions may be drawn from other points of similarity or dissimilarity with other hetus. Thus, when it is said, "Sabda is non-eternal, because it is produced by an effort, and whatever is produced by an effort is non-eternal, as a jug," it may be answered, "Sabda is eternal, because it is partless: a partless entity like the ākāśa is found to be eternal; there is no special reason why on account of its similarity to a jug sound should be non-eternal, and not eternal owing to its similarity to ākāśa." An escape from the dilemma is possible by enquiring as to what may constitute an unconditional and invariable (avyabhicāri) similarity.

Utkarşāpakarşa-varnyāvarnya-vikalpa-sādhya-sama is that in which similarity is pressed too far. Thus it is urged that, because sound is non-eternal like a jug, it must also be visible like a jug, and, if it is not so, it cannot be non-eternal like a jug. Moreover, it may be said that the reason why sound is expected to be non-eternal like a jug is that the former is produced by an effort (prayatnāntarīyaka). But things which are produced by efforts differ in many of their qualities; thus a cloth is soft, and a jug is hard, though both of them are produced by effort; so it may be argued that, though sabda is as much a product of effort as a jug, it may not agree with the jug in being non-eternal. Moreover, instead of arguing that sound is like a jug, it may as well be argued that a jug is like sound; so that the status of the jug is as uncertain as sound itself (yadi yathā ghatas tathā sabdah prāptam tarhi yathā sabdah tathā ghaṭa iti śabdaś cānityatayā sādhya iti ghato 'pi sādhya eva syād anyathā hi na tena tulyo bhavet-Nyāya-mañjarī, p. 624). In answer to these kinds of fault-finding the proper argument is that no similarity should be extended beyond its limits, and an example (drstanta) should not be considered to have the same status as a probandum (sādhya); for an example is that which is already agreed upon among the disputants and the common people (laukika-pariksakāṇāṃ yasminn arthe buddhi sāmyam sa dṛṣtantaḥ).

Prāpty-aprāpti-sama is that in which it is urged that, if the hetu and the probandum are together, they cannot be distinguished from each other; if they are separate, hetu cannot lead us to the sādhya. The answer to this is that a hetu can produce an effect either by direct contact (e.g. the rope and the stick in contact with clay produce a jug) or from a distance (e.g. the syena sacrifice

can destroy an enemy from a distance).

Prasanga sama is that in which a reason for the hetu is asked. Thus, if the character of immediately following an effort (prayatnāntarīyakatva) is the cause of non-eternality, what can establish the prayatnāntarīyakatva of a jug, etc.? The answer to this is that a reason is necessary only for that which is not directly experienced as being evident in itself. That a jug immediately follows the efforts that produce it is directly experienced and does not require any argument or reason to establish it, as no light is required to see a burning lamp.

Drstānta-sama is that in which from the same hetu two different conclusions are seen to result. Thus it may be said that both the jug and ākāša have the character of immediately following an effort (e.g. as by digging new space is produced in underground wells which before the effort of digging were solid earth without space—kūpa-khanana-prayatnānantaram tad-upalambhāt—and this character is therefore to be regarded as prayatnāntariyaka); yet, as a jug is non-eternal and ākāša eternal, so šabda, though it immediately follows an effort, is eternal. The answer is that, if such an opposite conclusion is drawn, a separate hetu has to be given, which is not done in the present case.

If sound is non-eternal, it must possess the character of coming into existence immediately after an effort that produces it; but how can it possess that character before being produced or coming into existence? If it cannot at that stage

by Caraka; nor does the technical name of $j\bar{a}ti$ find any place in Caraka's description of it. If these elaborate descriptions of $j\bar{a}ti$

possess that character, it must be eternal, since the cause of its non-eternality is absent. This objection is called *anutpatti-sama*. The reply is that, unless the sound is in existence, its eternality or non-eternality cannot be discussed. If it is non-existent, of what is the eternality to be affirmed by the opponent?

Again, it may be argued that sabda has prayatnāntarīyakatva, and therefore it may be expected to be non-eternal; it is perceived by the senses, and therefore it may be expected to be eternal, like so many other sensible objects. This doubt is called samsaya-sama. A doubt remains a doubt only so long as the special features which remove a doubt are not discovered. Though a man may have many qualities in common with a post, the doubt cannot remain when the special features of a man (e.g. his having a head and hands and feet) are known.

Prakarana-sama is that in which an entity is equally related to hetus, so that no one conclusion can properly be drawn. Thus, sound has both prayatnanta-riyahatva and niravayavatva (partlessness). Though, according to the first, it may be said to be non-eternal, according to the second it may be said to be eternal; so it is eternal. The answer is that the second hetu cannot be pressed

as leading to a conclusion, because the first also is admitted to exist.

Ahetu-sama is the objection that there can be no argument from a hetu; for, if there is no sādhya (probandum), what is it that the hetu produces? and again, if there is no hetu before the sādhya, how can the sādhya be produced? So, as hetu is only a concomitant of sādhya, no inference is possible from it. The answer is that it is quite possible that from the previously existing hetu the non-existing sādhya should be produced. Arthāpatti-sama is where, for example, owing to the fact that sound is partless, it appears to be similar to ākāša and hence by implication to be eternal. This is against the previous thesis that it is non-eternal owing to its being prayatnāntartyaka. Avišeṣa-sama is the objection, that if on account of having the same characteristic of prayatnāntartyakatva, šabda and ghaṭa are said to be equally non-eternal, then, owing to all things having the same quality of existence (sattā), they are all the same. The answer to this is that equality in one respect does not mean equality in all respects.

Upapatti-sama is where a jug may be expected to be non-eternal owing to its prayatnantariyakatva and eternal owing to its being partless like akasa. Upalabdhi-sama is where it is urged that, when by a terrible storm a tree is broken, there is sound which is not the result of any human effort (prayatnantarlyakatva), and yet it is non-eternal; again, lightning is not the result of human effort, still it is non-eternal. The answer is that the concomitance is between prayatnāntarīyakatva and non-eternality and not between non-eternality and prayatnāntarīyakatva; so that all that is produced by human effort is noneternal, but not vice-versa. It should also be noted that by prayatnantariyakatva emphasis is laid on the fact that all things that possess this character are produced. Anitya-sama is an objection where it is urged, for example, that, if on account of the similarity of sound to a jug, the former is non-eternal. then, since in some way or other all things in the world must have some similarity to a jug, all things must be non-eternal. The nitya-sama objection runs as follows: Is non-eternality in sound non-eternal or eternal? If the latter, then in order that an eternal quality may abide in it, sound itself must be eternal. If the former, then on some occasions at least sound must be eternal.

The kārya-sama objection suggests that prayatnāntarīyakatva leads to production in two ways, either by bringing into existence that which was non-existent, or by removing the veil from something which was in a veiled condition; and it remains undecided what sort of prayatnāntarīyakatva applies to śabda.

The above interpretations are all based on Jayanta's Nyāya-mañiarī.

were known to Caraka, it is unlikely that he should have passed them over without referring to them.

An example (dṛṣṭānta) is that on which the common folk and the learned are of the same opinion, since examples involve facts which are perceived by all and known to all, e.g. the fire is hot. water is liquid, the earth is firm. A siddhanta, or conclusion, is that to which one could arrive after a searching enquiry and demonstration by proper reasons. This siddhanta is of four kinds, viz. (1) sarva-tantra-siddhanta, or conclusions accepted by all, e.g. "There are causes of diseases; there are diseases; curable ones can be cured"; (2) prati-tantra-siddhanta, or conclusions which are not accepted by all, but are limited to particular books or persons: e.g. some say that there are eight rasas, others say that there are six; some say that there are five senses, others, that there are six; (3) adhikarana-siddhānta, or conclusions which being accepted or proved, other conclusions also become proved or accepted: e.g. if it is proved that emancipated souls do not reap the fruits of karma, as they are without any desire, then the doctrine of the suffering of the fruits of karma, emancipation, the existence of soul and existence after death will have to be considered as refuted; (4) abhyupagama-siddhānta, or conclusions which are accepted only for the sake of an argument, and which are neither examined critically nor considered as proved1.

Śabda is a collection of letters which may be of four kinds, viz. (1) drstārtha-of experienced purport (e.g. "The doşas lose their equilibrium through three causes"); (2) adrstārtha—of unperceivable purport (e.g. "There is after-life; there is emancipation"); (3) satya, or truth, that which tallies with facts (e.g. "There is Ayur-veda; there are means for curing curable diseases"); (4) anrta, the opposite of truth, untruth², Samsava, or doubt, occurs with reference to things about which no certainty is attained. Thus those who are unhealthy and inactive die soon, whereas those who are healthy and active live a long life. So there is a doubt whether in this world death happens timely or untimely. Prayojana, or the object of action, is that for which anything is begun. Thus one may think that, if there is untimely death, I shall form healthy habits and leave off unhealthy habits, so that untimely death may

¹ All these siddhāntas occur under the same names in the Nyāya-sūtra,

I. 1. 28, 29, 30, 31.

The first two divisions, dṛṣṭārtha and adṛṣṭārtha, occur in the Nyāya-sūtra, I. I. 8, sa dvividho drstādrstārthatvāt.

not touch me¹. Sa-vyabhicāra means variability, e.g. "This may or may not be a medicine for this disease²." Jijnāsā means experimenting; a medicine is to be advised after proper experiments (jijnāsā). Vyavasāya means decision (niścaya), e.g. "This is a disease due to predominance of vāyu; this is the medicine for this disease." Artha-prāpti is the same as the well-known arthāpatti, or implication, when on making a statement, some other thing which was not said becomes also stated; it is a case of implication, e.g. the statement, "This disease cannot be cured by allowing the patient to take his normal food and drink," implies that it can be cured by fasting, or, if it is said, "He should not eat during the day," this means that "He should eat during the night³." Saṃbhava is the source from which anything springs, e.g. the six dhātus may be considered as the saṃbhava of the foetus; wrong diet, of disease; and right course of treatment, of health.

Anuyojya means a faulty answer which omits such details as should have been given in the answer, e.g. "This disease can be cured by purificatory action"; such an answer is faulty, as it does not state whether the purification should be made by vomiting or purging. Ananuyojya is what is different from anuyojya. Anuyoga is a question put by a learned man in a discussion as an enquiry about the reason for a thesis put forward by a learned colleague: e.g. a learned man says, "Purusa is eternal," and another learned man asks, "What is the reason?" Such a question is called anuyoga. A counter-question, such as "What is the reason for your asking such a question?" is called praty-anuyoga.

Vākya-doṣa, or faulty statement, is of five kinds, viz. nyūna, adhika, anarthaka, apārthaka and viruddha. Nyūna, or the fault of omission, is that in which any of the five propositions necessary for a syllogism is omitted. It may also be applied to those cases in which, when a statement has to be supported by a number of

¹ Prayojana, which means pleasure and pain, is referred to in the Nyāya-sātra, 1. 1. 1, though it is nowhere critically examined. It is explained by Vātsyāyana as that which goads men to action (yena prayuktah pravartate). Uddyotakara explains it as the realization of pleasure and the fear of pain (sukha-prāpti-duhkha-hāni).

² anaikāntikah sa-vyabhicāraḥ. Nyāya-sūtra, I. 2. 5. E.g. "sound is eternal" because it is untouchable; but untouchability does not lead to eternality, since the touchable atoms are eternal, whereas untouchable thoughts are shortlived.

⁸ Cakrapāṇi says that Caraka does not think that artha-prāpti is a separate pramāṇa; according to him it is a case of inference, and hence is not included in the list of pramāṇas.

reasons, only one is offered and others are omitted, materially affecting the strength of the support of the original statement. Thus several reasons are given in support of the eternality of purusa, viz. beginninglessness, not being the product of any effort unchangeableness, etc. Proposing to give all these reasons, and giving only one, is an instance of nyūna. Adhika is where, when Ayurveda is being discussed, the opponent makes irrelevant references to learned works on positics or the art of government. It may also mean cases where words or statements are needlessly repeated. Such a repetition is of two kinds, verbal repetition and sense repetition. Verbal repetition is the repetition of the same word, while the other is the repetition of the sense only, though different words may be used. Anarthaka and apārthaka mean the use of meaningless and unconnected words or expressions. Viruddha, or contrary statement, means the making of a statement contrary to the example (drstanta-viruddha) or the accepted conclusion (siddhānta), eg cold water is hot, for so is fever; or when a medical man (vaidya) says that medicine does not cure diseases.

Samaya-viruddha is the making of any statement against the accepted conclusions of any particular śāstra. Thus, for example, if a Mīmāmsaka says that animals should not be sacrificed, it will be against his accepted doctrine that animals should be sacrificed. Or, if in any system of philosophy treating of emancipation (mokṣa-śāstra) it be said that injury to living beings is good, then this is against the accepted tenet of that śāstra. Vākya-praśaṃsā is that kind of statement in which the faults mentioned above in vākya-dosa do not occur.

Chala means a rejoinder in which the statement of the opponent is wilfully misinterpreted. It is of two kinds, $v\bar{a}k$ -chala and $s\bar{a}m\bar{a}nya$ -chala. The word nava means "nine" as well as "new," and if, when one says about one's opponent, "This physician is nava-tantra" (has newly learnt his texts), and the opponent replies, "I have not nine text-books, I have one text," the other person objects, "I do not say you have nine texts, I say that you are navābhyasta-tantra" (have newly learnt the texts), navābhyasta-tantra might also mean "read nine times"; and then the opponent might well say, "I have several times read the texts, and not nine times, as you say." This is an example of $v\bar{a}k$ -chala.

Again, when a physician says "Medicine cures diseases," the opponent may take the most general characteristics of the terms

and say that the above statement comes to this, that an existent entity cures another existent entity; and, if this is so, then, since bronchitis exists (san kāsaḥ) and consumption exists (san kṣayaḥ), bronchitis, being an existent entity, must cure another existent entity, consumption. This is called sāmānya-chala¹.

Fallacies (a-hetu) are of three kinds, prakaraṇa-sama, samśaya-sama and varnya-sama². Prakaraṇa-sama is where that which

¹ Chala is treated in the Nyāya-sūtra exactly on the same lines as here. Thus the definition of chala there (Nyāya-sūtra, 1. 2. 10) is vacana-vighāto 'rthavikalpopapattyā chalam (to attack one's speech by a wilful misinterpretation of it is chala). This is divided into three classes, vāk-chala, sāmānya-chala and upacāra-chala; of these vāk-chala is exactly the same as in Caraka-samhitā, and so also the sāmānya-chala (because a Brahman is well-read in scriptures, a vrātya (outcast Brahman) is also well-read, because he also is a Brahman in some sense). Upacāra-chala, which, however, resembles vāk-chala, is not mentioned in the Caraka-samhitā. Its definition in the Nyāya-sūtra, 1.2.14, is dharmavikalpa-nirdeśe 'rtha-sad-bhāva-pratisedha upacāra-chalam (to make one's statement impossible by taking it in one sense, say the primary, when the secondary one was intended). Thus, if it is said, "This porter is an ass," it may be objected that the porter, being a man, cannot at the same time be an ass. Gautama, however, tentatively raises the objection that chalas should be regarded as three in number and not two, taking upacāra-chala within sāmānya-chala. This means a criticism in view of Caraka's division of chala into two classes. For Gautama argues that, if on account of some similarity upacāra-chala should be included within sāmānya-chala, and chalas should be counted as being of two kinds instead of three, then for the very same reason of similarity chalas may as well be regarded as being of one kind instead of two. So, in view of the specific differences that exist between the chalas, they should be regarded as being of three kinds.

² Nyāya-sūtra, 1. 2. 4, describes the fallacies (hetv-ābhāsa) as of five kinds, sa-vyabhicāra, viruddha, prakaraṇa-sama, sādhya-sama and kālātīta.

Sa-vyabhicāra hetu is that which has no invariable concomitance with the probandum, e.g. sound is eternal because it is untouchable, and that which is touchable is non-eternal, like a jug. But untouchability has no invariable concomitance with eternality; for an atom is touchable and at the same time eternal, and thoughts (buddhi) are untouchable and at the same time eternal.

Viruddha hetu is where the reason (hetu) demolishes the very theory on which its security depends, e.g. this changeable world (vikāro) disappears (vyakter apaiti), because it is non-eternal (nityatva-pratisedhāt); but, though it disappears (apeto 'pi), yet it exists (asti), because it is not destructible (vināsa-pratisedhāt). Now a thing which is non-eternal cannot but be destructible. Destructibility and eternality cannot abide together.

Prakarana-sama is where two opposite hetus exist in a thing, so that nothing can be affirmed by either of them. Thus it may be argued with as much force that "sound is eternal, because it has in it the qualities of eternal things," as that "sound is non-eternal, because it has in it the qualities of non-eternal things"; so no conclusion can be drawn from either of these hetus.

Sādhya-sama is where the hetu itself remains to be proved. Thus in the argument, "shadow is a substance because it moves," the movability of shadows is a doubtful point and is itself in need of proof. Does a shadow move like a man, or is it that because the covering entity moves that at different places the light is veiled and this gives rise to the formation of shadows at different places?

Kālātīta is where the hetus in the case of the accepted example and the case to be proved vary, because in the latter case the hetu is not properly a

is given as the hetu remains to be proved. Thus, when it is said that, since the self is different from the body, it is eternal, and because the body is unconscious it is non-eternal, it may be urged (as by the Carvaka school of philosophers) that both the points, viz. that the self is different from the body and that the body is not endowed with consciousness, which are offered as the hetu, are themselves to be proved; for according to the Carvakas the body is endowed with consciousness and in non-eternal. A reference to the footnote below shows that this prakarana-sama is different from the prakarana-sama of the Nyāya-sūtra. Samsayasama is that in which that which is the cause of doubt is offered as the hetu for a particular conclusion, e.g. This person quotes a passage from Ayur-veda—is he or is he not a physician? Even a man who is not a physician might have heard a passage somewhere and quoted it. Now, therefore, quoting a passage from Ayur-veda leaves us in doubt as to the man's being a physician or not. If this itself is offered as the hetu for a particular conclusion and if it is said, "He is a physician because he has quoted a passage from Ayur-veda," it becomes a case of samsaya-sama. Gautama speaks of samsaya-sama as an instance of iāti; but the former is a case where a doubt is not removed because of the fact that the thing about which anything is affirmed possesses two opposite qualities, so that no affirmation can be made on the strength of any of these characteristics. Here, however, samsaya-sama is used in the sense that what is itself doubtful is adduced as the reason for a particular conclusion.

Varnya-sama is where an affirmation is made about a thing on the strength of another affirmation which itself remains to be proved and is hence in the same condition as the previous affirmation, e.g. "Buddhi is non-eternal, like sound, as it is untouchable, like the latter." But the non-eternality of sound stands as much in need of proof as that of buddhi, and the former affirmation cannot be made on the basis of the latter. This fallacy is

hetu; for the hetu and sādhya exist in two successive moments and are therefore not concomitant; but in the former case they are concomitant and simultaneous, e.g. sound is eternal, because it is manifested, like colour, owing to a particular contact, like light, being manifested by the contact of a stick and a drum, just as colour is manifested by the contact of light with a thing. But the similarity fails; for, while colour is manifested simultaneously with the contact of light and the things, sound is heard at a moment different from that at which actual contact of the stick and the drum takes place.

similar to the jāti called sādhya-sama and the fallacy sādhya-sama of Gautama already described in the footnotes to page 386.

Atita- $k\bar{a}la$ is that in which that which should be said first is said later, e.g. the thesis, or $pratijn\bar{a}$, should be stated first and the conclusion, or nigamana, last; if instead the nigamana is stated first and the $pratijn\bar{a}$ after, then we have the fault of $k\bar{a}l\bar{a}tita$.

Upālambha (criticism) is the finding fault with the hetus, also called a-hetu, as described above, or hetv-ābhāsas. Parihāra (reply) means the reply given to the objections pointed out by an opponent; e.g. the self is eternal, since so long as it remains in the body it shows signs of life, and, when it is away, though the body still remains the same, yet there is no sign of life; therefore the self is different from the body and is eternal. Pratijnā-hāni (to give up one's thesis) is where, being cornered by the opponent, one is forced to give up one's original thesis. Thus one may start with the thesis that purusa is eternal, but, being cornered, one may give it up and say that purusa is not eternal. Abhyanujñā (to bring a countercharge) is that in which a disputant, instead of refuting the charge brought against him by his opponent, charges his opponent with the same defects1. Hetv-antara (dodging with a wrong reason) is where, when the cause of some root fact (prakrti) is asked, the reply refers to the cause of the modifications or manifestations (vikrti) of that root fact². Arthantara (wrong answer) is where, when the definition of one thing (e.g. fever) is asked, a definition of another thing (e.g. diabetes) is given³. Nigraha-sthāna is where. in a learned assembly, a statement, though thrice repeated, is not understood by the opponent. Caraka counts among the nigrahasthānas many of the cases which have already been enumerated and described. Thus he counts pratijnā-hāni, abhyanujnā, kālātīta, a-hetu, nyūna, atirikta, vyartha, apārthaka, punar-ukta, viruddha. hetv-antara, arthantara4.

¹ This corresponds to matanujñā of the Nyāya-sūtra, v. 1. 42.

3 This is also mentioned in the Nyāya-sūtra, v. 2. 7.

² In Nyāya-sūtra, v. 2. 6, we hear of a hetv-antara, but that seems to be different from this. The significance of hetv-antara, as it stands there, may be illustrated as follows. An adherent of Sāmkhya says that all this world of things is derived from one root cause, because all these are limited and whatever is limited is derived from one root cause. This may be refuted by pointing out that there are many limited things which are derived from more than one root cause. To this the Sāmkhya adherent replies that only those which are associated with pleasure and pain and ignorance are to be regarded as proceeding from one root cause; but this is an addition which was not contained in the original thesis.

⁴ The nigraha-sthānos mentioned in the Ny vya-sūtra, v. 2. 1, are the following: pratijnā-hāni, pratijnāntara, pratijnā-virodha, pratijnā-sannyāsa, hetv-antara,

After this Caraka further describes the ten categories, a knowledge of which he thinks is very necessary for a mastery of the subject-matter of Avur-veda. These are kārana (the agent or the mover), karana (the instrument necessary for an agent to bring about an effort), kārya-yoni (the material cause by the modification of which effects are produced), kārya (that for the production of which the mover makes his effort), kārva-phala (that for which a particular effect is intended by the agent), anubandha (the good or bad result which attaches itself to the doer after the production of the effect), desa (place), kāla (the seasons, days, etc.), pravrtti (the effort and the action needed for the production of the effect) and upāya (the passivity and special aptitude of the agent, the instrument and the material cause which can make the effect possible). The physician is the cause (kārana), the medicines the instruments (karana); the want of equilibrium of the dhātus the kārya-yoni; the restoration of the equilibrium of the dhātus the kārya; the happy state of body and mind the kārya-phala; length of life, anubandha; the place and the diseased person, desa; the year and the condition of the diseased person, kāla; the efforts of the physician, pravrtti; the qualifications of the physician, the qualities of the medicine, etc., ubāva.

It may be pointed out in this connection that the *Uttara-tantra* of Suśruta also mentions thirty-two technical terms helpful to physicians in refuting the statements of hostile critics and in establishing their own points, which are called tantra-yukti¹. These are said to be adhikaraṇa, yoga, padārtha, hetv-artha, uddeśa, nirdeśa, upadeśa, apadeśa, pradeśa, atideśa, apavarja, vākya-śeṣa, arthāpatti, viparyaya, prasanga, ekānta, anekānta, pūrva-pakṣa, nirṇaya, anumata, vidhāna, anāgatāvekṣaṇa, atikrāntāvekṣaṇa, saṃśaya, vyā-khyāna,sva-saṃjñā,nirvacana,nidarśana, niyoga,samuccaya, vikalpa and ūhya. But these technical terms are maxims for the interpretation of textual topics, like the maxims of Mīmāṃsā, and are not points of dispute or logical categories. It is said that these maxims are like the sun to a group of lotuses, or like a lamp to a house,

arthāntara, nirarthaka, avijñātārtha, apārthaka, aprāpta-kāla, nyūna, adhika, punar-ukta, ananubhāṣana, ajñāna, apratibhā, vikṣepa, matānujñā, paryanuyojyo-pekṣeṇa, niranuyojyānuyoga, apa-siddhānta, hetv-ābhāsa. Many of these, however, are not mentioned by Caraka.

¹ asad-vādi-prayuktānām vākyānām pratisedhānam sva-vākya-siddhir afi ca kriyate tantra-yuktitah. Suśruta-samhitā, Uttara-tantra, 65. 5.

for the illumination or the expression of the subject of discourse¹. This remark very much resembles the remark of Vatsyayana that ānviksiki (logic) is like a light to all sciences (pradipah sarva-vidvānām). But the difference between tantra-vukti and ānvīkṣikī is this, that, while the former refers to the laws of thought, the latter refers to technical modes of expression in medical science in general and in the Suśruta-samhitā in particular. They therefore refer to the ways of deducing the inner meaning or intention of the medical texts from their abbreviated forms of expression. Thus, when one reads in the text, "about rasa or dosa," and nothing else is said, one understands that this style of expression signifies that it is an adhikarana (topic of discourse) and that something is going to be related about rasa or dosa, though it is not explicitly so stated. Now the maxim (tantra-yukti) of yoga means that the verb at a distant part of the sentence may be joined with its relevant case in another part of the sentence². The maxim of padartha means that, when a word having two or more senses is used, then that meaning alone has to be accepted which suits the previous and the later contexts. Thus, when it is said in a medical text that we shall now describe the origin of the Veda, then only Avur-veda is to be meant and not Rg, Yajus or Atharva. The maxim of hetv-artha illustrates the condition of invisible things by visible and known examples. Thus it is said that, just as a muddy ball becomes dissolved and sticky through water, so do milk and other drugs dissolve a boil by their application. The maxim of uddesa is the method of briefly touching a subject without going into details. Thus, when one says "disease" (śalya), it means both internal and external diseases without any kind of specification. The maxim of nirdesa is the method of describing a thing in detail. The maxim of upadeśa is the method of giving a general instruction. Thus it is said that one should not sit up at night nor sleep during the day. This is, however, only a general instruction which has its exceptions. The

yathāmbwa-vanasyārkah pradīpo vesmano yathā prabodhyasya prakāšārthas tathā tantrasya yuktayah.

Susruta-saṃhitā, Uttara-tantra, 65. 7. tailam pivec cāmṛta-vallī-nimba-hiṃsrābhayā-vṛkṣaka-pippalībhih siddham balābhyāṃ ca sa-devadāru hitāya nityaṃ gala-gaṇḍa-roge.

Ibid. 9, 10. In the above verse it is enjoined that a particular medical decoction is to be made with a number of drugs which are to be boiled (siddham), and this boiled decoction has to be drunk (pivet). But the word pivet is in the first line and the word siddham is in the third line, and it is allowed that these two distant words may be combined (yoga).

maxim of apadesa is the method of showing the reasons of things. Thus it is said that phlegm (slesman) increases through the taking of sweet things (madhurena ślesmā 'bhivardhate). The maxim of pradesa is the analogy by which a present difficulty is solved in the way in which a past difficulty was solved (prakrtasya atikrāntena sādhanam pradešah). Thus it may be said that, since this has cured Devadatta in this way in the past, it would also cure Yajñadatta in a similar way now. The maxim of atidesa is that of anticipating a future event from a present indication or prognostication. Thus from the fact of the increase of uprising wind in a man's system it may be predicted that he will have a specific bowel-disease (udāvarta). The maxim of apavarja consists in allowing exceptions to general directions (e.g. cases of poisoning should not be fomented, except in the case of poisoning through the bites of insects). The maxim of vākya-śesa consists in supplying an idea suggested by the context, but not expressly mentioned. Thus when it is said "of the head, hands, feet, sides, back, belly, heart," it is the whole man that is to be understood though it is not expressly stated in the context. That which is understood, by implication, though not directly mentioned, is called the maxim of arthapatti. Thus, when a man says "I shall eat rice," it is understood that he is not thirsty, but hungry. The maxim of viparyaya is that by virtue of which from a positive or a negative assertion its contrary is asserted also, e.g. when it is said that those who are lean, weak and of fearful temperament are difficult to be cured. The maxim of prasanga is that by virtue of which allusion is made to things repeatedly described in another chapter. The maxim of ekānta allows of affirming a specific action of things unexceptionably (e.g. madana fruit induces vomiting, i.e. under all circumstances). The maxim of anekanta is that by virtue of which one understands that different opinions prevail on a particular subject. Thus some teachers think that substances are the most important. while others think that rasa is so; others, again, think that the inner essence (vīrya) is the most important, while still others think that chemical action through digestion (vipāka) is so. The maxims of pūrva-pakṣa and uttara-pakṣa allow of discussing a matter in the form of question and answer. The maxim of anumata is that by virtue of which it is to be understood that, when the opinion of other authorities is referred to and not contradicted, it is signified that it is approved. The maxim of vidhana is that by virtue of

which one understands that, when certain descriptions follow certain enumerations, the former are to be taken in the order in which the latter are related. The maxim of anagataveksana allows of leaving certain things for future description and elaboration, and atikrāntāveksana permits alluding to things described before (e.g. it is said in the Sloka-sthana that this matter will be described in the Cikitsā chapter, and about another matter it may be said in the Cikitsā chapter that it has been described in the Śloka-sthāna). The maxim of samśaya allows a way of statement which may create doubt and confusion in the mind of the reader. The method of elaborate description is called vyākhyāna. The method of using words in a sense different from what they have in other literatures is called sva-samjñā, i.e. technical use (e.g. mithuna in Ayur-veda means honey and clarified butter). A definition is called nirvacana. The maxim of nidarśana allows of describing anything after the analogy of other things. Thus it may be said that, just as fire in a room grows bigger and bigger with wind, so does a boil grow with vāta, pitta and kapha. Niyoga means a direction (e.g. "only what is good to the system is to be taken"). Samuccaya means the taking of two or more things together as having equal value. Vikalpa is the method of giving alternative or optional directions. Uhya is the maxim by which things which are apparent from the context can be understood.

It is easy to see that of these thirty-two maxims some are ways of interpreting ideas, others are ways of interpreting the arrangement and manner of textual words and their connections, while there are others which are but descriptions of specific peculiarities of style. The redactor (Nāgārjuna) says that he has collected all these maxims as general principles of textual understanding, and he calls them sabda-nyāyārtha, i.e. the meaning of the maxims of verbal interpretation.

Did Logic Originate in the Discussions of Ayur-veda Physicians?

Dr Mahāmahopādhyāya Satish Chandra Vidyabhusan in his History of Indian Logic supposes without adducing any reason that the Caraka-samhitā gives a summary of the principal doctrines of Ānvīkṣikī, possibly as propounded by Medhātithi Gautama. He further says that the doctrines of Ānvīkṣikī evidently did not con-

stitute a part of the original Ayur-veda of Punarvasu Atreya, and that these doctrines seem to have been incorporated into the Caraka-saṃhitā by the redactor Caraka, in whose time they were widely known and studied. Dr Vidyabhusan's theory is that both Caraka and Akṣapāda borrowed the Nyāya doctrines from Medhātithi Gautama, but, while Caraka accepted them in their crude forms, Akṣapāda pruned them thoroughly before they were assimilated in the Nyāya-sūtra¹.

But Dr Vidyabhusan's Medhātithi Gautama is more or less a mythical person, and there is no proof that he ever wrote anything, or that Caraka borrowed anything from a Medhātithi Gautama, or that the Nyaya doctrines found in the Caraka-samhita were not contained in the original treatise of Agnivesa, now lost. Dr Vidyabhusan refers to the evidence of a number of works, such as the Kusumānjali, Naisadha-carita and Nyāya-sūtra-vṛtti, which refer to Gautama as being the founder of Anviksiki. But none of these authorities are earlier than the tenth century. He refers also to the authority of the Padma-purāna, Skanda-purāna and Gandharvatantra, none of which can be regarded as a work of any considerable antiquity. Vātsyāyana himself refers to Aksapāda as the person to whom Nyāya (the science of Logic) revealed itself². Uddyotakara also refers to Aksapāda as the utterer of the Nyāya-sāstra, and so also does Vācaspati3. There is therefore absolutely no reason why the original authorship of Nyāya should be attributed to a Gautama, as against Aksapāda, on evidence which cannot be traced to any period earlier than the tenth century and which is collected from Purāņa sources directly contradicted by the earliest Nyāya authorities. The Nyāya-śāstra, therefore, cannot be traced on the evidence of the earliest Nyāya authorities to any earlier Gautama; for, had this been so, it would certainly have been mentioned

¹ History of Indian Logic, pp. 25 and 26, by Mahāmahopādhyāya Satish Chandra Vidyabhusan. Calcutta University, 1921.

Yo 'kşapādam rṣim nyāyah pratyabhād vadatām varam tasya Vātsyāyana idam bhāṣya-jātam avartayat.

Vātsyāyana-bhāşya, 2. 24, A.D. 400. Dr Vidyabhusan's translation of it as "The Nyāya philosophy manifested itself (in a regular form) before Akṣapāda" is inexact.

yad Akşapādah pravaro munīnām samāya sāstram jagato jagāda.

Nyāya-vārttika of Uddyotakara (A.D. 600). Opening lines. atha bhagavatā Akṣapādena niḥireyasa-hetau śāstre praṇite. Nyāya-vārttika-tāt-parya-ṭākā of Vācaspati. Dr Vidyabhusan's translation of the Nyāya-vārttika word śāstra as "Nyāyaśāstra in a systematic way" is again inexact.

by either Vātsyāyana, Uddyotakara or Vācaspati. Jayanta also attributes the elaborate Nyāya work to Aksapāda and does not seem to know that this elaborate treatise, the Nyāya-sūtra, was based on the teachings of an earlier authority1. If any such authorities were known, they would certainly have been mentioned for the dignity and the prestige of the Sāstra. Gautama is an old name, and we find it attached to one of the Rsis of the Rg-veda (1. 62. 78. 85; IV. 4); he is mentioned in the Satapathabrāhmana (1.4.1.10; 111.3.4.19, etc.); in the Taittirīya-prātiśākhya (1.5), in the Aśvalāyana-śrauta-sūtra (1.3; 11.6, etc.) and in other similar older works; but nowhere is he spoken of as being the author of the Nyāya-śāstra. Gautama is also mentioned in the Mahā-bhārata several times, but nowhere is he referred to as the author of the Nyāya-śāstra. The passage of the Mahā-bhārata on which Dr Vidyabhusan bases his theory of a Medhātithi Gautama does not say that Medhätithi was the author of Anvīkṣikī or Nyāya, nor does it say that Medhātithi and Gautama were identical persons². The name Gautama is a patronymic, and the passage of the Mahā-bhārata referred to by Dr Vidyabhusan clearly means that the highly wise Medhātithi of the Gautama race was engaged in asceticism. This is corroborated by the fact that the passage of Bhāsa referred to by Dr Vidyabhusan mentions Medhātithi as a teacher of Nyāya-śāstra and does not call him Gautama, nor does it say that Medhātithi was the originator of Nyāya3. Dr Vidyabhusan's theory, therefore, of Medhatithi Gautama being the originator of the Nyāya-śāstra falls down like a house of cards. His identification of Medhātithi Gautama's birthplace as Mithilā, his ascertainment of his date, his identification of Persian references to Medhātithi Gautama and his so-styled references to Medhātithi Gautama in the Anguttara-nikāya and the Brahma-jāla-sutta are no less fictitious4. The Gautama tradition of Nyāva need not be followed; but it may incidentally be mentioned that an Atreva Gautama, who is described as being Sāmkhya (probably in the sense of wise, philosopher, or learned), is counted in the list of the

Akşapada-pranito hi vitato Nyaya-padapah.

Opening lines of the Nyāya-mañjarī of Jayantabhatta (A.D. 880). Medhātithir mahā-prājño Gautamas tapasi sthitah

vimrsya tena kālena patnyāh samsthyā-vyatikramam.

Mahā-bhārata, Śānti-parva, 265.45, Vangavasi edition.

³ Medhātither Nyāya-śāstram (having learnt Nyāya-śāstra from Medhātithi).
Bhāsa's Pratimā-nāṭaka, Act v, p. 79. M. M. Ganapati Sastri's edition.

⁴ History of Indian Logic, by Dr Satish Chandra Vidyabhusan, pp. 17-21.

sages who assembled together to discover the causes and remedies of diseases; side by side with this Atreya, another Atreva is also mentioned as bhiksu Atreva1. A number of sages are mentioned in the Caraka-samhitā as persons who discussed the problem of the rise of diseases and how they could be removed. Among these Bharadvāja volunteered to proceed to Indra to learn from him the science of healing. Indra instructed him in the subject, being learned in the three subjects of the (hetu) causes (of diseases), knowledge of the (linga) signs (of diseases) and the knowledge of medicines. Bharadvāja, having learnt this elaborate science in three divisions, repeated it to the sages in exactly the same manner in which he learnt it. After this it is said that Punarvasu taught Avur-veda to his six disciples, Agnivesa, Bhela and others. Cakrapāṇi, the commentator, says that Punarvasu was the disciple of Bharadvāja, and quotes as his authority a statement of Hārīta. But on this point Caraka himself is silent.

But one thing emerges from this half-mythical account of the origin of Avur-veda, viz. that the Ayur-veda was occupied from the beginning with the investigation of the nature of causes (hetu) and reasons (linga) for legitimate inferences in connection with the enquiry into the causes of diseases and the apprehension of signs or indications of the same. In the Nidāna-sthāna of Caraka eight synonyms for reason (hetu) are given, viz. hetu, nimitta, āyatana, kartr, kārana, pratyaya, samutthāna and nidāna. It is curious enough that the words pratyaya and ayatana are used, which are presumably Buddhistic. The word pratyaya, in the sense of cause, is hardly found in Indian philosophy, except in Buddhism. The use of so many terms to denote cause evidently suggests that before Caraka's redaction there must have been an extensive literature which had used these words to denote cause. As a matter of fact, the word pratyaya is hardly ever used in the Caraka-samhitā to signify cause, though it is counted here as one of the synonyms of hetu, or cause. The natural implication of this is that the word pratyaya was used for hetu in some earlier literature, from which Caraka collected it; so with other words, such as samutthana, avatana, which are counted in the list as synonyms for hetu, but are not actually used in the body of the text. This may lead us to think that the discussion of hetu under

¹ Ātreyo Gautamah sāmkhyah. In this passage Ātreya may, however, be taken as a man separate from the wise Gautama.

various names is an old subject in Ayur-veda literature existing before Caraka, from which Caraka collected them.

We know that Ayur-veda was primarily concerned with three questions, viz. how diseases originated, how they were known, and what were their cures. It was in this connection that the principle of causality was first from a practical necessity applied in Ayur-veda. Thus, if it is known that a person has been exposed to sudden cold or has enjoyed a heavy feast, then, since it is known that cold leads to fever and over-feeding to indigestion, with the very first symptoms of uneasiness one may at once infer that the patient is likely to get fever or to have diarrhoa or acute indigestion. Or, if it is known that the patient has a strong diarrhoa, then it can similarly be inferred that he has eaten indigestible articles. Thus the two principal kinds of inference which were of practical use to the Ayur-veda physicians were inference of the occurrence of a disease from a knowledge of the presence of the causes of that disease, i.e. from cause to effect, and inference of the specific kinds of unhygienic irregularity from the specific kind of disease of the patient, i.e. from the effect to the cause. The other and third kind of inference is that of inference of disease from its early prognostications (pūrva-rūpa). Cakrapāņi, in commenting on the possibility of inference of specific diseases from their early specific prognostications, compares it with inference of rain from an assemblage of dark clouds or of the future rise of the Krttika constellation from the rise of the constellation Rohini, which immediately precedes it. Both these are cases of inference of future occurrences of causation or coexistence. The prognostication may, however, be of the nature of an immediately and invariably associated antecedent which may drop altogether when the disease shows itself. Thus before a high fever the hair of the patient may stand erect; this standing erect of the hair in a specific manner is neither the cause nor is it coexistent with fever, since it may vanish when the fever has actually come. It is, however, so invariably associated with a specific kind of fever that the fever can be inferred from it1. Again, when there is any doubt among a number of causes as to which may be the real cause of the disease, the physician has to employ the method of difference or

the method of concomitant variation for its proper ascertainment. That similar things produce the same kind of effects and opposite things produce opposite results are two of the accepted postulates of the law of sāmānya and visesa in the Caraka-samhitā1. Now, applying these two principles, it is held that in a case of doubt as to any kind of irregularity being the cause of any particular disease it has to be found out by experiment whether the application of the suspected cause (e.g. cold) increases the disease (e.g. fever): if it does, and if the application of its opposite (e.g. heat) decreases the disease, then cold is to be regarded as the cause of the disease. If the application of any particular kind of element increases an effect (a particular kind of disease) and the application of its opposite decreases it, then that particular element may be regarded as the cause of that effect. Caraka holds that the three methods, viz. the cause and effect relation (nidāna), the method of invariable prognostication (pūrva-rūpa) and the method of concomitant variation (upaśaya, which includes anupaśaya also) are to be employed either jointly or separately for the ascertainment of the nature of diseases which have already occurred or which are going to happen in the near future². Caraka thus urges that the physician should examine carefully the causes of diseases by the application of all these methods, so that they may be ascertained from their visible effects. Caraka then goes on to give examples of a number of diseases and the causes or prognostications by which their nature can be ascertained. He then says that a disease which is at first only an effect of some other causes may act as a cause of other diseases and may thus be regarded both as an effect and as a cause. There is therefore no absolute difference between a cause and an effect, and that which is a cause may be an effect and that which is an effect may also in its turn be a cause. Sometimes a disease may behave as cause of another disease and then cease to exist itself, whereas again, one disease may exist side by side with another disease which it has produced and aggravate its effects. Then, again, a disease (cause) may produce a disease (effect), and that effect another effect. Thus one cause may produce one effect as well as many effects, and one effect may be due to one or to many causes, and

¹ Caraka-samhitā, 1. 1. 44.

² The other two methods of samprāpti and rūpa need not be discussed in this connection.

again many causes may jointly produce many effects. Thus, though fever, delirium, etc. may all be produced by dryness (rūkṣa), yet under certain circumstances fever alone may be produced by it. Again, fever may also be produced by the combination of a number of causes which under other circumstances may produce jointly a number of diseases. So one entity may be an invariable concomitant (linga) of one event or of many events, and there may also be a number of invariable concomitants of one event. Thus fever is the invariable concomitant of hygienic irregularities in general, and all fevers have heat as their invariable concomitant. From certain kinds of hygienic irregularities fever can be inferred; but these can also be associated with a number of other diseases1.

Hence it is evident that the determination of the nature of causes and effects and the inference of facts or events of invariable concomitance were an indispensable necessity for the Ayur-veda physicians in connection with the diagnosis of diseases and the ascertainment of their causes and cures. It was for this reason that Caraka divided inference into three classes, from causes to effects, from effects to causes and from the association of other kinds of invariable concomitants. The Nyāya-sūtra of Akṣapāda contains expressions which seem to have been borrowed from Nāgārjuna's Mādhyamika-kārikā and from the Lankāvatāra-sūtra and the regulations of Buddhistic idealism, and hence it is generally believed to have been composed in the second or the third century A.D.² In this fundamental and earliest work of Nyāya philosophy inference (anumāna) is described as being of three kinds, viz. from cause to effect (pūrvavat), from effect to cause (sesavat), and inference from similarities (sāmānyato-drsta) not comprehended under the cause-effect relation. Now it is exactly these three forms of inference that are described in the Caraka-samhita, and, so far as is known to the present writer, this is the earliest work which describes inference in such a systematic manner, and so it

See Caraka-samhitā, II. 8. 22-27.

² H. Ui's The Vaiśeșika Philosophy, p. 16. L. Suali's Filosofia Indiana,

p. 14. Jacobi, article in J.A.O. Society, vol. XXXI, p. 29, 1911.

A commentary on Năgărjuna's Pramāņa-vidhvaṃsana called Pramāṇavidhvamsana-sambhāṣita-vṛtti reproduces Nāgārjuna's definition of the categories, which are the same as the categories enumerated in the first sūtra of Akṣapāda's Nyāya-sūtra. But, as Walleser points out in his Life of Nāgārjuna from Tibetan and Chinese Sources, it is impossible to fix Nāgārjuna's date exactly. He may have lived at any time between the second and the fourth centuries A.D. So no fruitful result can be attained by considerations of this kind.

may naturally be regarded as the source from which Aksapāda drew his ideas. Now Caraka's work may be regarded as a revision of Agnivesa's work, based on Atri's teachings, based on Bharadvāja's instructions. Agniveśa's work is now lost, and it is not known what exactly were the contributions of Caraka in his revision of Agnivesa's work; but, since we find no work of an earlier date, Hindu, Buddhist or Jaina, which treats of the logical subjects found in the Caraka-samhitā, and since these logical discussions seem to be inextricably connected with medical discussions of diagnosis of diseases and the ascertainment of their causes, it seems very natural to suppose that Caraka got his materials from Agnivesa, who probably got them from still earlier sources. Incidentally it may be mentioned that Jayanta, in his Nyāyamañjarī, discussing the question of the probable sources from which Aksapāda drew his materials, suggests that he probably elaborated his work from what he may have gathered from some other science (śāstrāntarābhyāsāt); but it is difficult to say whether by śāstrāntara Jayanta meant Ayur-veda. The Nyāya-sūtra, however, expressly justifies the validity of the Vedas on the analogy of the validity of Ayur-veda, which is a part of the Vedas1.

The similarity of the Nyāya-sūtra definition of inference to Caraka's definition is also very evident; for while the former begins tat-pūrvakam tri-vidham (where tat-pūrvakam means pratyakṣa-pūrvakam), the latter begins pratyakṣa-pūrvakam tri-vidham tri-kālam. But, while Caraka knows only the three forms of inference, he has no names for these three types such as are supplied by Akṣapāda, viz. pūrvavat (related to pūrva, the prior, or the cause), śeṣavat (related to śeṣa, the later, or the effect) and sāmānyato-dṛṣṭa (from observed similarity in the past, present and future, which is also emphasized by Caraka in the same manner)². From the con-

1 Mantrāyurveda-prāmāņyavac ca tat-prāmāņyam āpta-prāmāņyāt.

Nyāya-sūtra, 11. 1. 68.

Jayanta enters into a long discussion in his Nyāya-mañjarī, trying to prove that it was through his omniscience that Caraka could write his work and that he neither discovered the science by inductive methods nor derived it from previous traditional sources.

Evam vyavasyanty atītam bījāt phalam anāgatam drstvā bījāt phalam jātam ihaiva sadršam budhāh.

Caraka-samhitā, 1. 11. 22.

Vātsyāyana, in his commentary on the Nyāya-sūtra, illustrates pūrvavat (from cause to effect) as the inference of rain from the rise of clouds, sesavat (from effect to cause) as the inference of rain in the uplands from the flooding of the river in the lower regions and sāmānyato-drṣta(from similar behaviour) as the inference of the motion of heavenly bodies from their changes of position in the sky at

siderations detailed in the preceding footnote it may well be assumed that Akṣapāda's contribution to the definition of inference consists in his giving names to the types of floating inference described in Caraka-saṃhitā. It is not improbable that the Nyāya-sūtra derived its theory of five propositions, and in fact most of the other logical doctrines, from Caraka, as there are no earlier works to which these can be traced¹. Caraka's definition of perception as the knowledge

different times. But he also gives another meaning of these three terms pūrvavat, śeṣarut and śamānyato-dṛṣṭa. He interprets pūrvavat here as the inference of fire from smoke "on the analogy of past behaviour of co-presence," śeṣarut as the inference of the fact that sound is quality because it is neither substance nor action, by the method of residues (śeṣa), and sāmānyato-dṛṣṭa as the inference of the existence of soul from the existence of desire, which is a quality and as such requires a substance in which it would inhere. This is not an inference from similarity of behaviour, but from the similarity of one thing to another (e.g. that of desire to other qualities), to extend the associations of the latter (inherence in a substance) to the former (desire), i.e. the inference that desire must also inhere in a substance.

In the case of the terms pūrvavat and śesavat, as these two terms could be grammatically interpreted in two different ways (with matup suffix in the sense of possession and vati suffix in the sense of similarity of behaviour), and as the words pūrva and sesa may also be used in two different ways, Vātsyāyana interprets them in two different ways and tries to show that in both these senses they can be justified as modes of inference. It seems obvious that the names purvavat, sesavat and sāmānyato-drsta were given for the first time to the threefold inference described by Caraka, as this explains the difficulty felt by Vatsyayana in giving a definite meaning to these terms, as they had no currency either in traditional or in the contemporaneous literature of Vatsyayana. Uddyotakara, in his commentary on Vātsyāyana, contributes entirely original views on the subject. He takes Akşapāda's sūtra, atha tat-pūrvakam trī-vidham anumānam pūrvavac cheşavat sāmānyato-drstam ca, and splits it up into atha tat-pūrvakam tri-vidham anumānam and pūrvavac cheşavat sāmānyato-drstam ca; by the first tri-vidha he means inference from positive instances (anvayi), from negative instances (vyatireki) and from both together (anvaya-vyatireki). He gives two possible interpretations of the terms purvavat, sesavat and samanyato-drsta, one of which is that pūrvavat means argument from cause to effect, sesavat that from effect to cause and samanyato-drsta is the inference on the basis of relations other than causal. The Sāmkhya-kārikā also mentions these kinds of inference. The Māthara-vrtti again interprets the threefold character of inferences (tri-vidha anumāna) in two ways; it says, firstly, that tri-vidha means that an inference has three propositions, and, secondly, that it is of three kinds, viz. pūrvavat (from the effect, e.g. flooding of the river, to the inference of the cause, e.g. showers in the upper region), sesavat (from part to whole, e.g. tasting a drop of sea-water to be saline, one infers that the whole sea is saline), and sāmānyato-drsta (inference from general association, e.g. by seeing flowering mangoes in one place one infers that mangoes may have flourished in other places as well). Curiously enough, the Mathara-vitti gives another example of samanyato-dista which is very different from the examples of sāmānyato-drsta hitherto considered. Thus it says that, when one says, "It is illuminated outside," another replies, "The moon must have risen.'

¹ For more or less fanciful reasons Mr Dhruva suggests that the terms pūrvavat and śeṣavat were borrowed in the Nyāya-sūtra from the Mimāṇsā-sūtra and that this sūtra must therefore be very old (Proceedings and Transactions of the First Oriental Conference, Poona, 1922). This argument is invalid for more

that arises through the contact of the self, the senses, the mind and the objects seems very much like an earlier model for Akṣa-pāda's definition of perception, which adds three more qualifications to make the meaning more complex and precise¹. The idea that in the first instance perception is indeterminate (nir-vikalpa or a-vyapadeśya) is a later development and can hardly be traced in Hindu philosophy earlier than the Nyāya-sūtra². The similarity of the various categories of vāda, jalpa, vitanḍā, chala, jāti, nigraha-sthāna, etc., as enumerated in Caraka, to those of the Nyāya-sūtra has been duly pointed out in a preceding section. The only difference between the two sets of enumeration and their elaboration is that Caraka's treatment, being the earlier one, is less full and less complex than that of Akṣapāda.

The fact that physicians in counsel earnestly discussed together, in order to arrive at right conclusions regarding both the theoretical causes of diseases and their cures and their actual practical discernment in individual cases, is abundantly clear from even a very superficial study of the Caraka-samhitā. The entire work seems to be a collection of discussions of learned physicians with Atri as their chairman. Where differences of opinion are great, they are all noted, and Atri's own opinion on them is given, and, where there was more or less unanimity, or where Atri himself lectured on specific problems, his own opinion alone is given. It is also related how a good and clever physician is to defeat his opponents in dispute, not only in a legitimate and scientific way, but also by sophistic wrangling and unfair logical tricks. It was a practical necessity for these physicians to earn their bread in the face of strong competition, and it is easy to see how the logical tricks of chala, jāti and nigraha-sthāna developed into a regular art of debate, not always for the discovery of truth, but also for gaining the victory over opponents. We hear of debates, discussions or logical disputes in literature much earlier than the

than one reason. Firstly, granting that the Mīmāṃsā-sūtra is very old (which is doubtful), the fact that these two logical terms were borrowed from it does not show that it must be a very old work; for even a modern work may borrow its terminology from an older treatise. Secondly, the fact that these three terms were borrowed from early sources does not show that the theory of tri-vidha anumāna in the Nyāya-sūtra is either its own contribution or very old. Mr Dhruva's arguments as to the Māṭhara-vṛtti being subsequent to Vātsyāyana's commentary are also very weak and do not stand criticism.

¹ indriyārtha-sannikarşotparmam jūānam avyapadešyam avyabhicāri vyavasiiyātmakām pratyakşam. Nyāya-sūtra, 1. 1. 4.

² Caraka uses the word vikalpa in 11. 1. 10. 4 in the sense of distinction (bheda) of superiority and inferiority (utkarşa-prakarşa-rūpa).

Caraka-samhitā; but nowhere was the acquirement of this art deemed so much a practical necessity for earning a living as among the medical men. And, since there is no mention of the development of this in any other earlier literature, it is reasonable to suppose that the art of debate and its other accessories developed from early times in the traditional medical schools, whence they are found collected in Caraka's work. The origin of the logical art of debate in the schools of Ayur-veda is so natural, and the illustrations of the modes of dispute and the categories of the art of debate are so often taken from the medical field, that one has little reason to suspect that the logical portions of the Caraka-samhitā were collected by Caraka from non-medical literature and grafted into his work.

Ayur-veda Ethics.

The length of the period of a man's lifetime in this iron age (kaliyuga) of ours is normally fixed at one hundred years. But sinful actions of great enormity may definitely reduce the normal length to any extent. Ordinary vicious actions, however, can reduce the length of life only if the proper physical causes of death, such as poisoning, diseases and the like, are present. If these physical causes can be warded off, then a man may continue to live until the normal length of his life, one hundred years, is reached, when the body-machine, being worn out by long work, gradually breaks down. Medicines may, however, in the case of those who are not cursed by the commission of sins of great enormity, prolong the normal length of life. It is here that Caraka and his followers differ from all other theories of karma that flourished on the soil of India. The theory is not accepted in any Indian system of thought except that of Caraka. In spite of the many differences that prevail amongst these theories, they may still be roughly divided into four classes. Thus there are, first, the paurusa-vādins, such as those who follow the Yoga-vāsiṣṭha school of thought and are idealists of the extreme type, thinking that all our experiences can be controlled by a determined effort of the will and that there is no bond of previous karma, destiny, or fatality which cannot be controlled or overcome by it. Human will is all-powerful, and by it we can produce any change of any kind in the development of our future well-being. There is, again, the view that God alone is responsible for all our actions, and that He makes those whom He wants to

raise perform good actions and those whom He wants to take the downward path commit sinful deeds. There is also the view that God rewards or praises us in accordance with our good or bad deeds, and that we alone are responsible for our actions and free to act as we choose. There is a further view, elaborately dealt with in Patañjali's Yoga-sūtra, that our deeds determine the particular nature of our birth, the period of our lifetime and the nature of our enjoyments or sufferings. Ordinarily the fruits of the actions of a previous birth are reaped in the present birth, and the ripened fruits of the actions of the present birth determine the nature of the future birth, period of life and pleasurable or painful experiences, while the fruits of extremely good or bad actions are reaped in this life. In none of these theories do we find the sort of common-sense eclecticism that we find in Caraka. For here it is only the fruits of extremely bad actions that cannot be arrested by the normal efforts of good conduct. The fruits of all ordinary actions can be arrested by normal physical ways of well-balanced conduct, the administration of proper medicines and the like. This implies that our ordinary non-moral actions in the proper care of health, taking proper tonics, medicines and the like, can modify or arrest the ordinary course of the fruition of our karma. Thus, according to the effects of my ordinary karma I may have fallen ill; but, if I take due care, I may avoid such effects and may still be in good health. According to other theories the laws of karma are immutable. Only the fruits of unripe karma can be destroyed by true knowledge. The fruits of ripe karma have to be experienced in any case, even if true knowledge is attained. The peculiar features of Caraka's theory consist in this, that he does not introduce this immutability of ripe karmas. The effects of all karmas, excepting those which are extremely strong, can be modified by an apparently non-moral course of conduct, involving the observance of the ordinary daily duties of life. Ordinarily the law of karma implies the theory of a moral government of the universe in accordance with the good or bad fruits of one's own karma. We may be free to act as we choose; but our actions in this life, excepting those of great enormity, determine the experiences of our future lives, and so an action in this life cannot ordinarily be expected to ward off any of the evils of this life which one is predestined to undergo in accordance with the karma of a previous birth. Moreover, it is the moral or immoral aspects of an action that

determine the actual nature of their good or bad effects, success or failure. This implies a disbelief in our power of directly controlling our fortunes by our efforts. The theory of karma thus involves a belief in the mysterious existence and ripening of the sinful and virtuous elements of our actions, which alone in their course of maturity produce effects. If the theory that sins bring their punishment, and virtues produce their beneficial effects, of themselves, is accepted, its logical consequences would lead us to deny the possibility of mere physical actions modifying the fruition of these karmas. So the acceptance of the moral properties of actions leads to the denial of their direct physical consequences. If through my honest efforts I succeed in attaining a happy state, it is contended that my success is not due to my present efforts, but it was predestined, as a consequence of the good deeds of my previous birth, that I should be happy. For, if the fruition was due to my ordinary efforts, then the theory that all happy or unhappy experiences are due to the ripening of the karmas of the previous births falls to the ground. If, on the other hand, all success or failure is due to our proper or improper efforts, then the capacity of sins or virtues to produce misery or happiness may naturally be doubted, and the cases where even our best efforts are attended with failure are not explained. But, if our ordinary efforts cannot effect anything, and if the modes of our experiences, pleasures and sufferings, and the term of our life are already predestined, then none of our efforts are of any use in warding off the calamities of this life, and the purpose of the science of medicine is baffled. In common-sense ways of belief one refers to "fate" or "destiny" only when the best efforts fail, and one thinks that, unless there is an absolute fatality, properly directed efforts are bound to succeed. Caraka's theory seems to embody such a common-sense view. But the question arises how, if this is so, can the immutability of the law of karma be preserved? Caraka thinks that it is only the extremely good or bad deeds that have this immutable character. All other effects of ordinary actions can be modified or combated by our efforts. Virtue and vice are not vague and mysterious principles in Caraka, and the separation that appears elsewhere between the moral and the physical sides of an action is not found in his teaching1.

He seems to regard the "good," or the all-round manifold

¹ Caraka-samhitā, III. 3, 28-38.

utility (hita) of an action, as its ultimate test. What a man has to do before acting is carefully to judge and anticipate the utility of his action, i.e. to judge whether it will be good for him or not; if the effects are beneficial for him, he ought to do it, and, if they are harmful, he ought not to do it1. Our ultimate standard of good actions lies in seeking our own good, and to this end the proper direction and guidance of our mind and senses are absolutely necessary. Caraka applies here also his old principle of the golden mean, and says that the proper means of keeping the mind in the right path consists in avoiding too much thinking, in not thinking of revolting subjects, and in keeping the mind active. Thoughts and ideas are the objects of the mind, and one has to avoid the atiyoga, mithyā-yoga and a-yoga of all thoughts, as just described. "Self-good," or ātma-hita, which is the end of all our actions, is described as not only that which gives us pleasure and supplies the material for our comfort, ease of mind and long life, but also that which will be beneficial to us in our future life. Right conduct (sad-vrtta) leads to the health and well-being of body and mind and secures sense-control (indriva-vijava).

The three springs of action are our desire for self-preservation (prānaisanā), our desire for the materials of comfort (dhanaisanā), and our desire for a happy state of existence in the future life (paralokaiṣaṇā). We seek our good not only in this life, but also in the after-life, and these two kinds of self-good are summed up in our threefold desire—for self-preservation, for the objects that lead to happiness, and for a blessed after-life. Right conduct is not conduct in accordance with the injunctions of the Vedas, or conduct which leads ultimately to the cessation of all sorrows through cessation of all desires or through right knowledge and the extinction of false knowledge, but is that which leads to the fulfilment of the three ultimate desires. The cause of sins is not transgression of the injunctions of the scriptures, but errors of right judgment or of right thinking (prajñāparādha). First and foremost is our desire for life, i.e. for health and prolongation of life; for life is the precondition of all other good things. Next to our desire for life is our desire for wealth and the pursuit of such vocations of life as lead to it. The third is

¹ buddhyā samyag idam mama hitam idam mamāhitam ity avekṣyāve ṣṣya kar-manām pravṛttīnām samyak pratipādanena ity ahita-karma-parityāṣena hita-karmācaranena ca. Cakrapāni on Caraka, 1. 8. 17.

the desire for a blessed after-life. In this connection Caraka introduces a discussion to prove the existence of a future state of existence. He says that a wise man should not entertain doubts regarding the existence of a future life, since such doubts might hinder the performance of right conduct. The mere fact that we cannot experience its existence with our senses is not a sufficient negative proof. For there are few things which can be directly experienced by the senses, and there are many which exist, but are never experienced by the senses. The very senses with which we experience other things cannot themselves be subject to senseexperience¹. Even sensible things cannot be perceived if they are too near or too distant, if they are covered, if the senses are weak or diseased, if the mind is otherwise engaged, if they are mixed up with similar things, if their light is overcome by stronger light, or if they are too small². It is therefore wrong to say that what is not perceived by the senses does not exist. If, again, it is argued that the foetus must derive its soul from the parents, then it may be pointed out that, if the soul of the foetus migrated from either of the parents, then, since the soul is without parts, it could not have migrated in parts, and such a total migration would mean that the parents would be left without any soul and would die. As the soul could not migrate from the parents to the child, so neither can the mind nor the intellect be said to have so migrated. Moreover, if all life must be derived from the migration of other souls, then how can insects come into being, as many do, without parent insects³? Consciousness exists as a separate and beginningless entity, and it is not created by anyone else. If, however, the supreme soul be regarded as its cause, then in that sense it may be conceived as having been produced therefrom4. The theory of the after-life consists according to Caraka principally in the view that the soul is existent and uncreated, and that it is associated with the foetus at a certain stage of its development in the womb. He also refers to the evidence of rebirth which we

¹ yair eva tāvad indriyaiḥ pratyakşam upalabhyate tāny eva santi cāpratyakṣāṇi. Caraka, 1, 11, 7.

² satām ca rūpānām ati-sannikarṣād ati-viprakarṣād āvaraṇāt karaṇa-daurbalyān mano 'navasthānāt samānābhihārāt abhibhavād ati-saukṣmyāc ca pratyakṣānupalabdhiḥ. Ibid. 11.8.

³ samsveda-jānām maśakādīnām tathodbhij-jānām gandūpadādīnām cetanānām mātā-pitarau na vidyete tatas tesām acaitanyam syān mātā-pitroś cetanakāraņayorabhāvāt. Cakrapāni on Caraka, 11. 11.

⁴ On this point Cakrapani gives a different interpretation in 1. 11. 13.

have in the difference of the child from the parents; in the fact that, though other causes are more or less the same, two children differ in colour, voice, appearance, intelligence and luck; in the fact that some are servants, whereas others are their rich masters; in the fact that some are naturally in good health, while others are in bad, or are different in the length of life; from the fact that infants know how to cry, suck, smile or fear without any previous instruction or experience; that with the same kind of efforts two persons reap two different kinds of results; that some are naturally adepts in certain subjects and dull in others; and that there are at least some who remember their past lives; for from these facts the only hypothesis that can be made is that these differences are due to the karma of one's past life, otherwise called daiva, and that the fruits of the good and bad deeds of this life will be reaped in another. It has also been pointed out in a previous section that a child does not owe his or her intellectual parts to the father or to the mother. These gifts belong to the soul of the child, and there is therefore no reason to suppose that the son of an intellectually deficient person will on that account be necessarily dull.

Caraka further urges that the truth of rebirth can be demonstrated by all possible proofs. He first refers to the verdict of the Vedas and of the opinions of philosophers, which are written for the good of the people and are in conformity with the views of the wise and the virtuous and not in opposition to the opinions of the Vedas. Such writings always recommend gifts, penances, sacrifices, truthfulness, non-injury to all living beings and sexcontinence as leading to heavenly happiness and to liberation (moksa). The sages say that liberation, or the cessation of rebirth, is only for those who have completely purged off all mental and bodily defects. This implies that these sages accepted the theory of rebirth as true; and there have been other sages who also have distinctly announced the truth of rebirth. Apart from the testimony of the Vedas and of the sages, even perception (pratyaksa) also proves the truth of rebirth. Thus it is seen that children are often very different from their parents, and even from the same parents the children born are often very different in colour, voice, frame of body, mental disposition, intelligence and luck, as described above. The natural inference to be based on these data directly experienced is that no one can avoid the effects of the deeds he has performed, and that therefore what was performed in a past birth is indestructible and always follows a man in his present birth as his daiva, or karma, the fruits of which show in his present life. The deeds of the present birth will again accumulate fruits, which will be reaped in the next birth. From the present fruits of pleasurable or painful experiences their past seeds as past karma are inferred, and from the present deeds as seeds their future effects as pleasurable or painful experiences in another birth are also inferred. Apart from this inference other reasons also lead to the same condition. Thus the living foetus is produced by the combination of the six elements, to which connection with the self from the other world is indispensable; so also fruits can only be reaped when the actions have been performed and not if they are not performed—there cannot be shoots without seeds. It may be noted in this connection that in no other system of Indian thought has any attempt been made to prove the theory of rebirth as has here been done. A slight attempt was made in the Nyāya system to prove the theory on the ground that the crying, sucking and the natural fear of infants implies previous experience. But Caraka in a systematic manner takes up many more points and appeals to the different logical proofs that may be adduced. Again, we find the nature of the fruits of action (karma) discussed in the Vyāsa-bhāsya on the Yoga-sūtra of Patañjali. It is said in the Yoga-sūtra, II. 13, that the karmas of past life determine the particular birth of the individual in a good or bad or poor or rich family and the length of life and pleasurable or painful experiences. But that physical differences of body, colour, voice, temperament, mental disposition and special intellectual features are also due to the deeds of the past life seems to be a wholly new idea. It is. however, interesting to note that, though Caraka attributes the divergence of intelligence to deeds of the past life, yet he does not attribute thereto the weakness or the strength of the moral will.

Caraka further refers to the collective evil effects of the misdeeds of people living in a particular locality, which may often lead to the outbreak of epidemics. Speaking of the outbreak of epidemic diseases, he says that they are due to the pollution of air and water, and to country and climatic revolutions. The pollution of air consists in its being unnatural for the season, dull and motionless, too violent, too dry, too cold, too warm, stormy, of the nature of whirlwind, too humid, dusty, smoky, impure or of

bad smell. The pollution of water consists in its being of unnatural colour, bad smell, bad taste, containing impurities (when devoid of its natural qualities), which are often avoided by water birds, and being unpleasant, and having its sources largely dried up. The pollution of a particular locality occurs when it is infested with lizards, wild animals, mosquitoes, flies, insects, mice, owls, predatory birds or jackals, or when it is full of wild creepers, grass, etc., or when there is a failure of crops, the air smoky, etc. The pollution of time consists in the happening of unnatural climatic conditions. The cause of these epidemic conditions is said to be the demerit (adharma) due to the evil deeds of past life, the commission of which is again due to bad deeds of previous life. When the chief persons of a country, city or locality transgress the righteous course and lead the people in an unrighteous manner, the people also in their conduct continue to grow vicious and sinful. And, as a result of the misdeeds of the people of the locality, the gods forsake that place, there is no proper rain, the air, water and the country as a whole become polluted and epidemics break out. Thus the misdeeds of a people can, according to Caraka, pollute the whole region and ultimately ruin it. When a country is ruined by civil war, then that also is due to the sins of the people, who are inflated with too much greed, anger, pride and ignorance. Thus epidemics are caused by the conjoint sins of the people of a particular region. But even at the time of the outbreak of such epidemics those who have not committed such bad actions as to deserve punishment may save themselves by taking proper medicines and by leading a virtuous life. Continuing to establish his theory that all climatic and other natural evils are due to the commission of sins or adharma. Caraka says that in ancient times people were virtuous, of strong and stout physique and extremely long-lived, and on account of their virtuous ways of living there were no climatic disturbances, no famines, no failure of crops, no drought and no pollutions leading to epidemics and diseases. But at the close of the satya-yuga, through over-eating some rich men became too fat, and hence they became easily tired, and hence became lazy, and on account of laziness they acquired the storing habit (sañcaya), and, through that, the tendency to receive things from others (parigraha), and, through that, greed (lobha). In the next, Treta, age, from greed there arose malice, from malice lying, from lying desire, anger, conceit, antipathy, cruelty,

violence (abhighāta), fear, sorrow and anxiety. Thus in the Tretā age dharma diminished by a quarter, and so the earthly production of harvest, etc. also diminished by a quarter, and the bodies of living beings lost their vitality accordingly; their length of life diminished, and diseases began to grow. So in the Dvāpara age there was a further diminution of the quantities of earthly productions and a further weakening of human constitution and shortening of the length of life.

It may be remembered that in Suśruta, III. I, it is said that many persons of the medical school of thought had conceived this world to have come into being either through time (kāla), in the natural process by a blind destiny (niyati), or through a mere nature (svabhāva), accidental concourse of things (yadrcchā), or through evolution (parinama) by the will of God; and they called each of these alternatives the prakrti, or the origin of the world1. But the notion of the Samkhya prakrti holds within it all these concepts, and it is therefore more appropriate to admit one prakrti as the evolving cause of the world. Gayi, in interpreting this, holds that prakrti is to be regarded as the evolving material cause, whereas time, natural process, etc. are to be regarded as instrumental causes for the world-manifestation. According to Suśruta the selves (ksetra-jña) are not in the medical school regarded as allpervasive (a-sarva-gata), as they are in the Sāmkhya system of thought. These selves, on account of their virtues or vices, transmigrate from one life to another as men or as different animals; for, though not all-pervasive, they are eternal and are not destroyed by death. The selves are not to be regarded as self-revealing, as in Sāmkhya or the Vedānta; but they can be inferred, as the substance or entity to which the feelings of pleasure and pain belong, and they are always endowed with consciousness. though they may not themselves be regarded as of the nature of pure consciousness. They are cetanavantah (endowed with con-

¹ The primary use of prakṛti may have been due to the idea of an enquiry regarding the source and origin of the world. Prakṛti literally means "source" or "origin." So the term was probably used in reference to other speculations regarding the origin of the world before it was technically applied as a Sāmkhya term. The ideas of svabhāva, kāla, etc. seem to have been combined to form the technical Sāmkhya concept of prakṛti, and two schools of Sāmkhya, the Kapila and the Patañjali schools, arose in connection with the dispute as to the starting of the evolution of prakṛti accidentally (yadṛcchā) or by the will of God. The idea of prakṛti was reached by combining all the alternative sources of world-manifestation that were current before, and so they are all conserved in the notion of prakṛti.

sciousness) and not cit-svarūpāh (of the nature of consciousness). They are extremely subtle or fine (parama-sūksma), and this epithet is explained by Dalhana as meaning that the selves are as small as atoms. But, being always endowed with consciousness, they can also through self-perception (pratyaksa) be perceived as existing. The transmigration of these selves is regulated by the merit and demerit of their deeds. Dalhana says that through excessive sins they are born as animals, through an admixture of virtues and sins they are born as men, and through a preponderance of virtues they are born as gods. But according to Caraka not only is the nature of transmigration controlled by the good or bad deeds of a man, but even the productivity of nature, its purity or pollution; and the thousand and one things in which nature is helpful or harmful to men are determined by good and bad deeds (dharma and adharma). Dharma and adharma are therefore regarded as the most important factors in determining most of the human conditions of life and world-conditions of environment. Such a view is not opposed to the Samkhva theory of world-creation; for there also it is held that the evolution of prakrti is determined by the good or bad deeds of the selves; but, though implied, yet in no Sāmkhya work is such a clear and specific determination of worldconditions and world-evolution through the merit and demerit of human beings to be found. Freedom of human will is almost wholly admitted by Caraka, and, where the fruits of previous actions are not of a confirmed character, they can be averted or improved by our efforts. Our efforts thus have on the one hand a cosmical or universal effect, as determining the conditions of the development of the material world, and on the other hand they determine the fate of the individual. The fruits of our actions determine our birth, our experiences and many intellectual gifts; but they do not determine the nature of our will or affect its strength of application in particular directions.

Springs of action in the Caraka-samhitā.

The chief feature of Caraka's springs of action consists in the fact that he considers three primary desires as the motive causes of all our actions. These are, as has already been said, the desire for life, the desire for riches and the desire for future life. In this Caraka seems to have a view uniquely different from that of most

of the systems of philosophy, which refer to a number of emotions as the root causes prompting us to action. Thus the Vaisesika regards attraction to pleasure and aversion to pain as the cause of all our actions. Pleasure is defined as being a sort of feeling which is approved and welcomed and towards which an attraction is naturally felt. Pleasures, therefore, when they arise, must always be felt, and there cannot be anything like unfelt pleasures. Apart from sensory pleasures, Śrīdhara in his Nyāya-kandalī discusses the existence of other kinds of pleasure, due to the remembering of past things, or to calmness and contentedness of mind or self-knowledge. Pleasures are, however, regarded as the fruits of meritorious deeds (dharma) performed before. Pain, the reverse of pleasure, may be defined as an experience from which we are repelled and which is the result of past misdeeds. Desire, as the wish to have what is unattained (aprāpta-prārthanā), may be either for the self (svārtha) or for others (parārtha). Such desires may be prompted by any of the following: longing for happiness in heaven or on earth (kāma), appetites (abhilāsa), longing for the continuation and recurrence of the enjoyment of pleasurable objects, compassion for others (karunā), disinclination to worldly enjoyment (vairāgya), intention of deceiving others (upadhā), subconscious motives (bhāva). Praśastapāda, however, distinguishes between desires for enjoyment and desires for work. But he does not include the positive Buddhist virtues of friendship (maitrī) and a feeling of happiness in the happiness of others (mudita), and he is content with only the negative virtue of compassion (karunā). He also counts anger, malice, suppressed revengefulness (manyu), jealousy of the good qualities of others (akṣamā), and envy arising from a sense of one's inferiority (amarsa). But, in spite of this elaborate classification, Prasastapada makes in reality two broad divisions, namely, desires arising from attachment to pleasures, and those from aversion to pain. Pain is as much a positive feeling as pleasure and cannot be regarded as mere negation of pleasure. Though Prasastapada knows that there is such a thing as desire for work, yet he does not give it any prominent consideration, and the net result of his classification of the springs of action is that he thinks that all desires are prompted by attachment to feelings of pleasure and antipathy to pain. Feelings, therefore, are to be regarded here as fundamentally determining all desires and through them all actions.

The Naiyāyikas think that attachment and antipathy can be

traced to a more fundamental root, viz. ignorance or delusion (moha). Thus Vātsyāyana, by tracing attachment or antipathy to ignorance, tends to intellectualize the psychological basis of Prasastapada. For moha would mean want of knowledge, and, if attachment and antipathy be due to want of knowledge, then one can no longer say that feelings ultimately determine our actions, as it is the absence of right knowledge that is found to be ultimately the determinant of the rise of all feelings and emotions. Javanta, however, in his Nyāya-mañjarī, counts ignorance (moha), attachment $(r\bar{a}ga)$ and antipathy (dvesa) as being three parallel defects (dosa) which prompt our efforts1. Under attachment he counts sexinclination (kāma), disinclination to part with that which would not diminish by sharing with others (matsara), jealousy (sprhā), inclination towards birth again and again (trsnā) and inclination towards taking forbidden things (lobha). Under dvesa he counts emotional outbursts of anger with burning bodily conditions, envy ($irsy\bar{a}$), jealousy at the good qualities of others ($as\bar{u}y\bar{a}$), injuring others (droha) and concealed malice (manyu). Under ignorance he counts false knowledge (mithyā-jñāna), perplexity due to indecision (vicikitsa), sense of false superiority (mada) and mistakes of judgment (pramāda). But he adds that of the three defects, raga, dvesa and moha, moha is the worst, since the other two arise through it. For it is only the ignorant who are under the sway of attachment and antipathy. To the objection that in that case moha ought not to be counted as a defect in itself, but as the source of the other two defects, Javanta replies that. though it is a source of the other two defects, it of itself also leads people to action and should therefore be counted as a defect in itself. It is no doubt true that all defects are due to false knowledge and are removed by right knowledge; yet it would be wrong to count the defects as being of only one kind of false knowledge (mithyā-jñāna); for the three defects are psychologically felt to have three distinctive characteristics. Jayanta, while admitting that the feelings of attachment or antipathy are due to ignorance. considers them to be psychologically so important as to be regarded as independent springs of action. Thus, while he was in nominal agreement with Vatsyayana in regarding attachment and antipathy as being due to moha, he felt their independent

 $^{^1}$ Teṣāṃ doṣāṇāṃ trayo rāśayo bhavanti rāgo dveṣo moha iti. Nyāya-mañjarı, p. 500.

psychological importance and counted them as parallel defects prompting our efforts.

Patanjali divides all our actions into two classes, vicious (klista) and virtuous (aklista). The virtuous actions are prompted by our natural propensity towards emancipation, while the vicious ones are prompted by ignorance (avidyā), egoism (asmitā), attachment (rāga), antipathy (dvesa) and the will to live (abhinivesa). The latter four, though of the nature of feeling, are yet regarded as being only manifestations of the growth and development of ignorance (avidyā). It is a characteristic peculiarity of the Sāmkhya philosophy that thoughts and feelings are not regarded there as being intrinsically different; for the gunas form the materials of both thoughts and feelings. What is thought in one aspect is feeling in another. It was on this account that false knowledge could be considered to have developed into the feelings of egoism, attachment and antipathy, and could be regarded as being of the same stuff as false knowledge. In the Nyāya psychology, thought and feelings being considered intrinsically different, a difficulty was felt in reconciling the fact that, while ignorance could be regarded as being the cause of the feelings of attachment and antipathy, the latter could not be regarded as being identical with ignorance (moha). Jayanta, therefore, while he traced raga and dvesa to moha, ontologically considered them as parallel factors determining our actions psychologically. In the Sāmkhva-Yoga metaphysics this difficulty could be obviated; for that school did not consider feelings to be different from thoughts, since the thoughts are themselves made up of feeling-stuff; hence even false knowledge (avidyā) need not be regarded as being wholly an intellectual element, since it is itself the product of the feeling-stuff—the gunas.

It is needless to refer in detail to the theories of the springs of action in other systems of Indian thought. From what has already been said it would appear that most systems of Indian Philosophy consider false knowledge to be at the root of all our worldly activities through the mediation of feelings of attachment, antipathy and self-love. There is an inherent pessimism in most systems of Indian thought, which consider that normally we are all under the evil influence of false knowledge and are all gliding on the downward path of sins and afflictions. They also consider that all attachments lead to bondage and slavery to passions, and thereby lead us away from the path of liberation. Actions are

judged as good or bad according as they lead to liberation or bondage; their efficacy is in securing the transcendental realization of the highest truth and the cessation of rebirth, or obscuration of the nature of reality and exposure to the miseries of rebirth.

But Caraka gives us a scheme of life in which he traces the springs of all our actions to the three fundamental motives or biological instincts of life-preservation, worldly desire of acquiring riches for enjoyment, and other worldly aspirations of self-realization. According to him these three fundamental desires sum up all springs of action. On this view will appears to be more fundamental than feeling or knowledge. Caraka does not seem to begin from the old and stereotyped idea that false knowledge is the starting-point of the world. His is a scheme of a well-balanced life which is guided by the harmonious play of these three fundamental desires and directed by perfect wisdom and unerring judgment. Evil and mischlef creep in through errors of judgment, by which the harmony of these desires is broken. All kinds of misdeeds are traced, not to feelings of attachment or antipathy, but to errors of judgment or foolishness (prajñāparādha). This prajñāparādha may be compared to the moha or avidyā of the Nyāya and Yoga. But, while the Nyaya and Yoga seem to refer to this moha or avidvā as a fundamental defect inherent in our mental constitution and determining its activities as a formative element, Caraka's prajñāparādha is not made to occupy any metaphysical status, but expresses itself only in the individual lapses of judgment.

Caraka, however, did not dare to come into conflict with the prevailing ethical and philosophical opinions of his time, and we find that in $S\bar{a}r\bar{i}ra$, I he largely accepts the traditional views. He says there that it is the phenomenal self (bhūtātman or saṃyoga-puruṣa) that feels pleasure and pain, and in connection with the duty of a physician to remove all physical sufferings produced by diseases he says that the ultimate healing of all pain consists in the permanent naiṣṭhikī (removal) of pain by the removal of grasping (upadhā)¹. He says there that grasping (upadhā) is itself sorrowful and the cause of all sorrows. All sorrows can be removed by the removal of all grasping tendencies. Just as a silkworm draws out its cocoon thread to its own destruction, so does

¹ Cakrapāṇi interprets upadhā as desire (tṛṣṇā); but it seems to me that it would have been more correct to interpret it as the Buddhist upādāna, or grasping. Cakrapāṇi on Caraka, IV. 1. 93.

the miserable man of ignorance draw desires and longings from the objects of sense. He is wise indeed who considers all objects as fire and withdraws himself from them. With the cessation of all actions (anārambha) and dissociation from sense-objects there is no more fear of being afflicted with sorrows. Sorrows, again, are said to proceed from four causes, namely, the wrong notion of noneternal things (e.g. sense-objects) as eternal (buddhi-vibhramśa), the want of the power of controlling the mind from undesirable courses (dhrti-vibhramsa), forgetfulness of the nature of right knowledge (smrti-vibhramsa) and the adoption of unhygienic courses (asātmyaarthāgama). Prajnāparādha is defined here as a wrong action that is done through the confusion of intelligence and want of selfcontrol and right knowledge (dhī-dhrti-smrti-vibhraṣṭa), and this is supposed to rouse up all maladies and defects (sarva-dosaprakopana). Some of the offences that may be counted under prajnāparādha are as follows: to set things in motion, to try to stop moving objects, to let the proper time for doing things pass by, to begin an action in the wrong manner, not to behave in the accustomed manner, not to behave modestly and politely, to insult respected persons, to go about in wrong places or at wrong times, to take objects which are known to be harmful, not to abide by the proper course of conduct described in the Caraka-samhitā, 1. 1. 6; the passions of jealousy, vanity, fear, anger, greed, ignorance, egoism, errors, all actions prompted by these and whatever else that is prompted by ignorance (moha) and self-ostentation (rajas). Prajñāparādha is further defined as error of judgment (viṣamavijnāna) and as wrong enterprise (viṣama-pravartanā), proceeding out of wrong knowledge or erroneous judgment. It will thus appear that it is wise to take prajñāparādha in the wider sense of error of judgment or misapplied intelligence, regarding it as the cause of all kinds of moral depravity, unhealthy and unhygienic habits and accidental injuries of all kinds. As Caraka admitted the existence of the self and of rebirth and regarded moral merit (dharma) and demerit (adharma) as the causes of all human enjoyment and sufferings, and of the productivity or unproductivity of the ground, and the hygienic or unhygienic conditions of water, air and the seasons, he had to include within prajňāparādha the causes that led to vices and sins. The causes of all sorrows are, firstly, wrong consideration of the non-eternal as eternal and of the injurious as good; secondly, want of self-control; and, thirdly, the defect of

memory (smrti-bhramsa), through which the right knowledge and right experience of the past cannot be brought into effect. Thus, though in a sense Caraka compromises with the traditional schools of philosophy in including philosophical ignorance or misconception within prajñāparādha, and though he thinks that philosophical ignorance produces sins, yet he takes prainaparadha in the very wide sense of error of judgment, leading to all kinds of transgression of laws of health and laws of society and custom, risky adventures, and all other indiscreet and improper actions. Prajñāparādha, therefore, though it includes the philosophical moha of the traditional school of philosophy, is yet something very much more, and is to be taken in the wider sense of error of judgment, Caraka, no doubt, admits jealousy, vanity, anger, greed. ignorance (moha), etc., as producing improper action, but he admits many other causes as well. But the one supreme cause of all these subsidiary causes is prajñāparādha, or error of judgment, taken in its wide sense. It will not, therefore, be wrong to suppose that, according to Caraka, all proper actions are undertaken through the prompting of three fundamental desires, the desire for life, the desire for wealth and enjoyment, and the desire for spiritual good. And all improper actions are due to improper understanding, confusion of thought, and misdirected intelligence (prajñāparādha). The three fundamental desires, unassociated with any error of judgment or lack of understanding, may thus be regarded as the root cause of all proper actions. There is, therefore, nothing wrong in giving full play to the functioning of the three fundamental desires, so long as there is no misdirected understanding and confusion to turn them into the wrong path. Caraka does not seem to agree with other systems of philosophy in holding the feelings of attachment and antipathy to be the springs of all actions. Actions are prompted by the normal active tendencies of the three fundamental desires, and they become sinful when our energies are wrongly directed through lack of understanding. Though Caraka had to compromise with the acknowledged view of the systems of Indian Philosophy that the cessation of all sorrows can be only through the cessation of all actions, yet it seems clear that the course of conduct that he approves consists in the normal exercise of the three fundamental desires, free from the commission of any errors of judgment (prajñāparādha). Thus Caraka does not preach the ideal of leaving off desires,

attachments, feelings and actions of all kinds, nor does he advocate the Gītā ideal of the performance of duties without attachment. His is the ideal of living one's life in a manner that is most conducive to health, long life, and proper enjoyment. Our only care should be that we do not commit any mistake in eating. drinking and other actions of life which may directly or indirectly (through the production of sins) produce diseases and sufferings or jeopardize our life and enjoyment in any way. This unique character of Caraka's ethical position is very clearly proved by the code of conduct, virtues and methods of leading a good life elaborated by Caraka. He no doubt shows a lip-sympathy with the ideal of giving up all actions (sannyāsa); but his real sympathies seem to be with the normal scheme of life, involving normal enjoyments and fruition of desires. A normal life, according to Caraka, ought also to be a virtuous life, as vices and sins are the sources of all sorrows, sufferings and diseases in this life and the next.

Good Life in Caraka.

It is well worth pointing out at the outset that "good life" in Caraka means not only an ethically virtuous life, but a life which is free from diseases, and which is so led that it attains its normal length. Moral life thus means a life that is free from the defect of prajñāparādha. It means wise and prudent life; for it is only the want of wisdom and prudence that is the cause of all physical, social, physiological, moral and spiritual mischiefs. To be a good man, it is not enough that one should practise the ethical virtues: a man should practise the physical, physiological and social virtues as well. He must try to live a healthy and long life, free from diseases and sufferings and free from reproaches of any kind. It is important to note that Caraka does not believe in the forced separation of the physical life from the mental and the moral. Physical diseases are to be cured by medicines, while mental diseases are to be cured by right and proper knowledge of things, self-control and self-concentration. The close interconnection between body and mind was well known from early times, and even the Mahā-bhārata (XII. 16) says that out of the body arise the mental diseases and out of the mind arise the bodily diseases. Caraka also thinks that a physician should try to cure not only the bodily diseases but also the mental diseases.

The Mahā-bhārata further says in the same chapter that there are three elements in the body, viz. heat, cold and air; when they are in a state of equipoise, the body is healthy, and when any one of them predominates, there is disease. The mind is constituted of sattva, rajas and tamas; when these are in a state of equipoise, the mind is in proper order, and when any one of them predominates, it becomes diseased. Caraka, however, thinks that it is only when rajas and tamas predominate that the mind gets diseased. But, whatever these differences may be, it is evident that, when Caraka speaks of life, he includes both mind and body, and it is the welfare of both that is the chief concern of the physician. Caraka's prohibitions and injunctions are therefore based on this twofold good of body and mind that ought to be aimed at.

After speaking of the harmfulness of attempting to control some of the bodily excretory movements, he recommends the necessity of attempting to control certain other mental and bodily tendencies. Thus he forbids all persons to indulge rashly in their unthinking tendencies to commit mistakes of mind, speech and action. A man should also control his passion of greed, and his feelings of grief, fear, anger, vanity, shamelessness, envy, attachment and solicitude. He should not speak harshly or talk too much or use stinging words or lie or speak irrelevantly or untimely. He should not injure others by his body, indulge in unrestricted sexgratifications, or steal. Injury to living beings (himsā) is supposed to produce sins and thereby affects one's longevity. Non-injury is thus described as being the best way of increasing life (ahimsā prāna-vardhanānām). The man who follows the above right course of life is called virtuous, and he enjoys wealth, satisfies his desires, abides by the laws (dharma) of a good life, and is happy. Along with the proper and well-controlled exercise of the moral functions Caraka advises people to take to well-controlled bodily exercises (vyāyāma). When moderately performed, they give lightness, power of doing work, steadiness (sthairya) and fortitude (duhkha-sahisnutā). Avoidance of unwise courses and non-commission of errors of judgment (tyāgah prajñāparādhānām), sensecontrol, remembrance of past experiences (smrti), due knowledge of one's own powers, due regard to proper time and place and good conduct prevent the inrush of mental and bodily diseases; for it is these which are the essentials of a good life, and a wise man always does what is good for himself. Caraka further advises

that one should not keep company with those who are sinful in character, speech and mind, or with those who are quarrelsome, greedy, jealous, crooked, light-minded or fond of speaking ill of others or cruel or vicious, or with those who associate with one's enemies. But one should always associate with those who are wise, learned, aged, with men of character, firmness, self-concentration, ready experience, with those who know the nature of things and are full of equanimity, and those who direct us in the right path, are good to all beings, possess a settled character and are peaceful and self-contented. In these ways a man should try, on the one hand, to secure himself against the inrush of mental troubles which upset one's moral life and, on the other hand, properly to attend to his bodily welfare by taking the proper kind of food at the proper time and attending to other details of physical well-being¹.

The rules of good conduct (sad-vṛṭta) are described in detail by Caraka as follows²:

A man should respect gods, cows, Brāhmanas, preceptors (guru), elderly persons, saints and teachers (ācārya), hold auspicious amulets, bathe twice and clean all the pores of the body and feet and cut his hair, beard and nails three times in a fortnight. He should be well-dressed, should always oil his head, ears, nose and feet, comb his hair, scent himself and smoke (dhūma-pā). He should recognize others with a pleasant face, help others in difficulties, perform sacrifices, make gifts, talk delightfully, nicely and for the good of others, be self-controlled (vasyātman) and of a virtuous temperament. He should envy the cause of another's prosperity in the form of his good character and other causes of his personal efficiency (hetāv irşyu), but should not be jealous of the fruits of these in the form of a man's prosperity or wealth (phale nersyu). He should be of firm decision, fearless, susceptible to the feeling of shame, intelligent, energetic, skilful, of a forgiving nature, virtuous and a believer (āstika). He should use umbrellas, sticks, turbans and shoes, and should at the time of walking look four cubits of ground in front of him; he should avoid going to impure, unclean and dirty places; he should try to appease those who are angry, soothe the fears of those who have become afraid, help the poor, keep his promises, bear harsh words. be self-controlled, remove the causes of attachments and antipathy (rāga-dvesa) and behave as the friend of all living beings. Again,

¹ See Caraka-samhitā, 1. 7.

one should not tell lies, or take that which belongs to others, should not commit adultery, or be jealous at other people's wealth, should not be given to creating enemies, should not commit sins, or do wrong even to a sinner, or speak about the defects or secrets of others; should not keep company with the sinful or with those who are the king's enemies or with madmen, the mean, wicked, outcast, or those who make abortions. One should not climb into bad vehicles, lie on hard beds, or beds without sheets or pillows. should not climb steep mountain sides or trees or bathe in fast flowing rivers with strong currents; one should not go about places where there are great fires raging, or laugh loudly or yawn or laugh without covering the face, or pick one's teeth. Again, one should not break the laws ordained by a large number of persons, or other laws in general; should not go about at night in improper places, or make friends with youngsters, old or greedy people, fools, sinners or eunuchs; one should not be fond of wines. gambling, prostitutes, divulge secrets, insult others, be proud or boastful or speak ill of old people, teachers, kings or assemblages of persons, or talk too much; one should not turn out relations. friends or those who know one's secrets. One should attend at the proper time to every action, should not undertake to do anything without properly examining it, or be too procrastinating, or be under the influence of anger and pleasure; one should not be very down-hearted in afflictions, or too elated in success, or too disappointed in failures; should practice sex-continence, try to be wise, make gifts, be friendly and compassionate to all and always contented. It is needless to continue to enumerate all the qualities, which would commonly be included within the requisites of a good life. In this Caraka seems to cut an absolutely new way, and in no other branch of Indian thought can we note such an assemblage of good qualities of all the different kinds necessary not only for a virtuous life, but for the healthy and successful life of a good citizen.

It has already been pointed out that error of judgment or delusion, in whichever sphere it may be exercised, is the root of all mischiefs and all troubles. And Caraka demonstrates this by enumerating in his schedule of good conduct proper behaviour in all the different concerns and spheres of life. To Caraka the conception of life is not as moral or immoral, but as good (hita) and bad (ahita). It is true, no doubt, that here and there stray statements are

found in the Caraka-samhitā which regard the cessation of all sorrows as the ultimate end of life; but it is obvious that Caraka's main approach to the subject shows very clearly that, though moral virtues are always very highly appreciated, yet the non-moral virtues, such as the proper taking care of the well-being of one's own body and the observance of social rules and forms of etiquette or normal prudent behaviour, are regarded as being equally necessary for the maintenance of a good life. Transgressions and sins are the causes of mental worries, troubles and also of many mental and physical diseases, and one ought therefore to take proper care that they may not enter into one's life; and it is said that the diseases produced by strong sinful acts cannot be cured by the ordinary means of the application of medicines and the like, until with the proper period of their sufferings they subside of themselves. But sins and transgressions are not the only causes of our desires, accidents and other domestic, social and political troubles. It is through our imprudent behaviour and conduct, which are due to error of judgment (prajñāparādha), as our other sins and immoral acts are, that all our bodily and mental troubles happen to us. A good life, which is the ideal of every person, is a life of peace, contentment and happiness, free from desires and troubles of all kinds. It is a life of prudence and well-balanced judgment, where every action is done with due consideration to its future consequences and where all that may lead to troubles and difficulties is carefully avoided. It is only such a life that can claim to be good and can be regarded as ideal. A merely moral or virtuous life is not our ideal, which must be good in every respect. Any transgression, be it of the rules of hygiene, rules of polite society, rules of good citizenship, or any deviation from the path which prudence or good judgment would recommend to be wise, may disturb the peace of life. A scheme of good life thus means a wise life, and observance of morality is but one of the many ways in which wisdom can be shown.

Ayur-veda, or the Science of Life, deals primarily with the ways in which a life may be good (hita), bad (ahita), happy (sukha) or unhappy (asukha). A happy life is described as a life undisturbed by bodily and mental diseases, full of youth and proper strength, vitality, energy, power of launching new efforts, endowed with wisdom, knowledge and efficient sense-organs—a life which is full of all kinds of desirable enjoyments and in which the ventures that

are undertaken are all successful. The opposite of this is what may be called an unhappy life. The happy life thus represents a life so far as it is happy and enjoyable and so far as it satisfies us. The good life is the life as it is moulded and developed by our right conduct. In a way it is the good life that makes a happy life. They who seek a good life should desist from the sins of taking other people's possessions and be truthful and self-controlled. They should perform every action with proper observation, care and judgment, and should not be hasty or make mistakes by their carelessness: they should attend to the attainment of virtue, wealth and the enjoyments of life without giving undue emphasis to any of them; they should respect those who are revered, should be learned. wise and of a peaceful mind and control their tendencies to attachment, anger, jealousy and false pride; they should always make gifts; they should lead a life of rigour (tapas) and attain wisdom. self-knowledge or philosophy (adhyātma-vidah), and behave in such a way that the interests of both the present life on earth and the life hereafter may be attended to with care and judgment, always remembering the lessons of past experience¹. It is now clear that the ideal of good life in Caraka is not the same as that of the different systems of philosophy which are technically called the Science of Liberation (moksa-śāstra). The fundamental idea of a good life is that a life should be so regulated that the body and mind may be free from diseases, that it should not run into unnecessary risks of danger through carelessness, that it should be virtuous, pure and moral; that it should be a prudent and wise life which abides by the laws of polite society and of good and loyal citizens, manifesting keen alertness in thought and execution and tending constantly to its own good—good for all interests of life, body, mind and spirit.

Āyur-veda Literature.

The systematic development of Indian medicine proceeded primarily on two principal lines, viz. one that of Suśruta and the other that of Caraka. It is said in Suśruta's great work, Suśruta-samhitā, that Brahmā originally composed the Āyur-veda in one hundred verses, divided into one thousand chapters, even before he had created human beings, and that later on, having regard to the shortness of human life and the poverty of the human intellect,

¹ Caraka-saṃhitā, 1. 30. 22.

he divided it into the eight parts, Salya, Sālākya, etc., alluded to in a previous section. But this seems to be largely mythical. It is further said in the same connection in the Suśruta-samhitā, I. 1 that the sages Aupadhenava, Vaitarana, Aurabhra, Pauskalāvata. Karavirya, Gopuraraksita, Suśruta and others approached Dhanvantari or Divodāsa, king of Kāśī, for medical instruction. Suśruta's work is therefore called a work of the Dhanvantari school. Though it was revised at a later date by Nāgārjuna, yet Susruta himself is an old writer. A study of the Jatakas shows that the great physician Ātreva, a teacher of Jīvaka, lived in Taxila shortly before Buddha¹. It has been said in a preceding section that in the enumeration of bones Suśruta shows a knowledge of Atreva's system of osteology. Hoernle has further shown in sections 42, 56, 60 and 61 of his "Osteology," that the Satapatha-Brāhmana, which is at least as old as the sixth century B.C., shows an acquaintance with Suśruta's views concerning the counting of bones. But, since Atreva could not have lived earlier than the sixth century B.C., and since the Satapatha-Brāhmana of about the sixth century B.C. shows an acquaintance with Suśruta's views, Hoernle conjectures that Suśruta must have been contemporary with Ātreya's pupil, Agniveśa². But, admitting Hoernle's main contentions to be true, it may be pointed out that by the term vedavādinah in Suśruta-samhitā, III. 5. 18 Suśruta may have referred to authorities earlier than Atreya, from whom Atreya also may have drawn his materials. On this view, then, the lower limit of Suśruta's death is fixed as the sixth or seventh century B.C., this being the date of the Śatapatha-Brāhmaṇa, while practically nothing can be said about the upper limit.

But it is almost certain that the work which now passes by the name of Suśruta-samhitā is not identically the same work that was composed by this elder Suśruta (vrddha Suśruta). Dalhana, who lived probably in the eleventh or the twelfth century, says in his Nibandha-samgraha that Nāgārjuna was the reviser of the Suśruta-samhitā³; and the Suśruta-samhitā itself contains a supplementary part after the Kalpa-sthāna, called the Uttara-tantra (later work). In the edition of Suśruta by P. Muralidhar, of Pharuknagar. there is a verse at the beginning, which says that that which was

Rockhill's Life of Buddha, pp. 65 and 96.
 Hoernle's Medicine of Ancient India, Part I, "Osteology," pp. 7 and 8.
 Pratisamskartāpiha Nāgārjuna eva. Dalhana's Nibandha-samgraha, 1. 1. 1.

so well taught for the good of the people by the great sage Dhanvantari to the good pupil Suśruta became famous all over the world as Suśruta-samhitā, and is regarded as the best and the chief of the threefold Ayur-veda literature, and that it was strung together in the form of a book by no other person than Nāgārjuna¹. Cakrapāni also in his Bhānumatī refers to a reviser (pratisamskartr); but he does not mention his name. Gayadāsa's panjikā on Suśruta, Suśruta-candrikā or Nyāya-candrikā, has an observation on the eighth verse of the third chapter of the Nidāna-sthāna, in which he gives a different reading by Nāgārjuna, which is the same as the present reading of Susruta in the corresponding passage². Again, Bhatta Narahari in his Tippani on the Astānga-hrdaya-samhitā. called Vāgbhata-khandana-mandana, in discussing mūdha-garbhanidāna, annotates on the reading vasti-dvāre vipannāyāh, which Vāgbhata changes in borrowing from Suśruta's vastimāra-vipannāvāh (11.8.14), and says that vasti-dvāre is the reading of Nāgārjuna³. That Nagarjuna had the habit of making supplements to his revisions of works is further testified by the fact that a work called Yogaśataka, attributed to Nāgārjuna, had also a supplementary chapter, called *Uttara-tantra*, in addition to its other chapters, *Kāya-cikitsā*, Śālākya-tantra, Śalya-tantra, Visa-tantra, Bhūtavidyā, Kaumāratantra, Rasāvana-tantra and Vājīkarana-tantra. This makes it abundantly clear that what passes as the Suśruta-samhitā was either entirely strung together from the traditional teachings of Susruta or entirely revised and enlarged by Nāgārjuna on the basis of a nuclear work of Suśruta which was available to Nāgārjuna. But was Nāgāriuna the only person who revised the Suśruta-samhitā? Dalhana's statement that it was Nāgārjuna who was the reviser of the work (pratisamskartāpīha Nāgārjuna eva) is attested by the verse of the Muralidhar edition (Nāgārjunenaiva grathitā); but the use of the emphatic word eva in both suggests that there may have been other editions or revisions of Suśruta by other writers as well. The hopelessly muddled condition of the readings,

> Upadiştā tu yā samyag Dhanvantari-maharşiņā Suśrutāya suśiṣyāya lokānām hita-vānchayā sarvatra bhuvi vikhyātā nāmnā Suśruta-yamhitā Ayur-vedut-rayīmadhye sreṣṭhā mānyā tathottamā sā ca Nāgārjunenaiva grathitā grantha-rūpataḥ.

² Nāgārjunas tu paṭhati; śarkarā sikatā meho bhasmākhyo 'śmari-vaikrtam iti. In the Nirnaya-Sāgara edition of 1915 this is II. 3. 13, whereas in Jīvānanda's edition it is II. 3. 8. See also Dr Cordier's Récentes Découvertes de MSS. Médicaux Sanscrits dans l'Inde, p. 13.

³ ata eva Nāgārjunair vasti-dvāra iti paṭhyate.

chapter-divisions and textual arrangements in the chapters in different editions of the Suśruta-samhitā is such that there can be no doubt that from time to time many hands were in operation on this great work. Nor it is proper to think that the work of revising Suśruta was limited to a pre-Cakrapani period. It is possible to point out at least one case in which it can be almost definitely proved that a new addition was made to the Suśruta-samhitā after Cakrapāni, or the text of Suśruta known to Dalhana was not known to Cakrapāṇi. Thus, in dealing with the use of catheters and the processes of introducing medicine through the anus (vasti-krivā) in IV. 38, the texts of the Suśruta-samhitā commented on by Dalhana reveal many interesting details which are untouched in the chapter on Vasti in the Caraka-samhitā (Uttara-vasti, Siddhisthāna, XII). This chapter of the Caraka-samhitā was an addition by Drdhabala, who flourished in Kāśmīra or the Punjab, probably in the eighth or the ninth century. When Cakrapani wrote his commentary in the eleventh century, he did not make any reference to the materials found in the Suśruta-samhitā, nor did he introduce them into his own medical compendium, which passes by the name of Cakradatta. Cakrapāni knew his Suśruta-samhitā well, as he had commented on it himself, and it is extremely unlikely that, if he had found any interesting particulars concerning vasti-kriyā in his text, he should not have utilized them in his commentary or in his own medical work. The inference, therefore, is almost irresistible that many interesting particulars regarding vasti-krivā, absent in the texts of the Susruta-samhitā in the ninth and eleventh centuries, were introduced into it in the twelfth century. It is difficult, however, to guess which Nāgārjuna was the reviser or editor of the Suśruta-samhitā; it is very unlikely that he was the famous Nāgārjuna of the Mādhyamikakārikā, the great teacher of Śūnyavāda; for the accounts of the life of this Nāgārjuna, as known from Chinese and Tibetan sources, nowhere suggest that he revised or edited the Suśrutasamhitā. Alberuni speaks of a Nāgārjuna who was born in Dihaka, near Somanātha (Gujarat), about one hundred years before himself, i.e. about the middle of the ninth century, and who had written an excellent work on alchemy, containing the substance of the whole literature of the subject, which by Alberuni's time had become very rare. It is not improbable that this Nāgārjuna was the author of the Kakṣapuṭa-tantra, which is

avowedly written with materials collected from the alchemical works of various religious communities and which deals with the eightfold miraculous acquirements (asta-siddhi). But Vrnda in his Siddha-yoga refers to a formula by Nāgārjuna which was said to have been written on a pillar in Pātaliputra¹. This formula is reproduced by Cakrapāņi Datta, Vangasena and by Nitvanātha Siddha in his Rasa-ratnākara. But since Vrnda, the earliest of these writers, flourished about the eighth or the ninth century, and since his formula was taken from an inscription, it is not improbable that this Nagariuna flourished a few centuries before him.

Of the commentaries on the Suśruta-samhitā the most important now current is Dalhana's Nibandha-samgraha, Dalhana quotes Cakrapāni, of A.D. 1060, and is himself quoted by Hemādri. of A.D. 1260. He therefore flourished between the eleventh and the thirteenth centuries. It has been pointed out that sufficient textual changes in the Susruta-samhitā had occurred between Cakrapāṇi and Dalhana's time to have taken at least about one hundred years. I am therefore inclined to think that Dalhana lived late in the twelfth, or early in the thirteenth, century at the court of King Sahapāla Deva, Cakrapāni had also written a commentary on the Suśruta-samhitā, called Bhānumatī, the first book of which has been published by Kaviraj Gangaprasad Sen. Dr Cordier notes that there is a complete manuscript of this at Benares. Niścala Kara and Śrīkantha Datta sometimes quote from Cakrapāni's commentary on the Suśruta-samhitā. Dalhana's commentary is called Nibandhasamgraha, which means that the book is collected from a number of commentaries, and he himself says in a colophon at the end of the Uttara-tantra that the physician Dalhana, son of Bharata, had written the work after consulting many other commentaries2. At the beginning of his Nibandha-samgraha he refers to Jaiyyata, Gayadāsa, Bhāskara's pañjikā, Śrīmādhava and Brahmadeva. In his work he further mentions Caraka, Hārīta, Jatukarna, Kāśyapa, Kṛṣṇātreya, Bhadraśaunaka, Nāgārjuna, the two Vāgbhatas, Videha, Hariścandra, Bhoja, Kārttika Kunda and others. Hariścandra was a commentator on the Caraka-samhitā. It is curious, however, that, though Dalhana refers to Bhaskara and Śrīmadhava

Nāgārjunena likhitā stambhe Pāṭaliputrake, v. 149.
 Nibandhān bahuśo vīkṣya vaidyaḥ Śrībhāratātmajaḥ uttara-sthānam akarot suspastam Dalhano bhisak.

at the beginning of his commentary, he does not refer to them in the body of it. Hoernle, however, is disposed to identify Bhāskara and Kārttika Kunda as one person. Vijayaraksita and Śrikantha Datta, commentators on Mādhava's Nidāna, refer to Kārttika Kunda in connection with their allusions to the Suśrutasamhitā, but not to Bhāskara. A Patna inscription (E.I.I. 340, 345) says that King Bhoja had given the title of Vidyapati to Bhaskara Bhatta. Hoernle thinks that this Bhaskara was the same as Bhaskara Bhatta. Hoernle also suggests that Vrnda Mādhava was the same as Śrīmādhava referred to by Dalhana. Mādhava in his Siddha-yoga often modifies Suśruta's statements. It may be that these modifications passed as Mādhava's Tippana. Since Gayadāsa and Cakrapāṇi both refer to Bhoja and do not refer to one another, it may be that Gayadāsa was a contemporary of Cakrapāņi. Hoernle thinks that the Brahmadeva referred to by Dalhana was Śribrahma, the father of Maheśvara, who wrote his Sāhasānka-carita in A.D. 1111. Maheśvara refers to Hariścandra as an early ancestor of his. It is not improbable that this Hariscandra was a commentator on Caraka. The poet Maheśvara was himself also a Kavirāja, and Heramba Sena's Gūdha-bodhaka-samgraha was largely based on Maheśvara's work. Jejjata's commentary passed by the name of Brhal-laghu-pañjikā; Gayadāsa's commentary was called the Suśruta-candrikā or Nyāya-candrikā and Śrīmādhava or Mādhava-Kara's Tippana was called Śloka-vārttika. Gayadāsa mentions the names of Bhoja, Suranandī and Svāmidāsa. Gayadāsa's pañjikā has been discovered only up to the Nidāna-sthāna, containing 3000 granthas. Among other commentators of Susruta we hear the names of Gomin, Āsādhavarman, Jinadāsa, Naradanta, Gadādhara, Bāṣpacandra, Soma, Govardhana and Praśnanidhāna.

It may not be out of place here to mention the fact that the Sāṃkhya philosophy summed up in the Sāṛra-sthāṇa of Suśruta is decidedly the Sāṃkhya philosophy of Iśvarakṛṣṇa, which, as I have elsewhere pointed out, is later than the Sāṃkhya philosophy so elaborately treated in the Caraka-saṃhitā¹. This fact also suggests that the revision of Suśruta was executed after the composition of Iśvarakṛṣṇa's work (about A.D. 200), which agrees with the view expressed above that the revision of Suśruta was the work of Nāgār-juna, who flourished about the fourth or the fifth century A.D. But it is extremely improbable that the elaborate medical doctrines

¹ History of Indian Philosophy, vol. 1, pp. 313-322.

of an author who lived at so early a date as the sixth century B.C. could have remained in a dispersed condition until seven, eight or nine hundred years later. It is therefore very probable that the main basis of Suśruta's work existed in a codified and well-arranged form from very early times. The work of the editor or reviser seems to have consisted in introducing supplements, such as the *Uttara-tantra*, and other chapters on relevant occasions. It does not seem impossible that close critical and comparative study of a number of published texts of the *Suśruta-saṃhitā* and of unpublished manuscripts may enable a future student to separate the original from the supplementary parts. The task, however, is rendered difficult by the fact that additions to the *Suśruta-saṃhitā* were probably not limited to one period, as has already been pointed out above.

It is well known that Atri's medical teachings, as collected by Agnivesa in his Agnivesa-tantra, which existed at least as late as Cakrapāṇi, form the basis of a revised work by Caraka, who is said to have flourished during the time of Kaniska, passing by the name of Caraka-samhitā1. It is now also well known that Caraka did not complete his task, but left it half-finished at a point in the Cikitsā-sthāna, seventeen chapters of which, together with the books called Siddhi-sthāna and Kalpa-sthāna, were added by Kapilabala's son, Drdhabala, of the city of Pañcanada, about the ninth century A.D. The statement that Drdhabala supplemented the work in the above way is found in the current texts of the Carakasamhitā². Niścala Kara in his Ratna-prabhā describes him as author of the Caraka-parisista, and Cakrapāni, Vijayaraksita and Arunadatta (A.D. 1240), whenever they have occasion to quote passages from his supplementary parts, all refer to Drdhabala as the author. The city of Pancanada was identified as the Puniab by Dr U.C. Dutt in his Materia Medica, which identification was accepted by Dr Cordier and referred to a supposed modern Panipur, north of Attock in the Punjab. There are several Pañcanadas in different parts of India, and one of them is mentioned in the fifty-ninth chapter of the Kāśī-khanda: Gangādhara in his commentary identifies this with Benares, assigning no reason for such identification. Hoernle, however, thinks that this Pancanada is the modern village of

On Caraka's being the court-physician of Kaniska see S. Levi, Notes sur les Indo-Scythes, in Journal Asiatique, pp. 444 sqq.
 Caraka-samhitā, vi. 30 and Siddhi-sthāna, vii. 8.

Pantzinor ("five channels" in Kashmir) and holds that Drdhabala was an inhabitant of this place. There are many passages in Caraka which the commentators believe to be additions of the Kāśmīra recension (Kāśmīra-pāṭha). Mādhava quotes a number of verses from the third chapter of the sixth section, on fevers, which verses are given with the omission of about twenty-four lines. Vijayaraksita, in his commentary on Mādhava's Nidāna, says that these lines belong to the Kāśmīra recension. Existing manuscripts vary very much with regard to these lines; for, while some have the lines, in others they are not found. In the same chapter there are other passages which are expressly noted by Cakrapānidatta as belonging to Kāśmīra recensions, and are not commented upon by him. There are also other examples. Hoernle points out that Jīvānanda's edition of 1877 gives the Kāśmīra version, while his edition of 1896, as well as the editions of Gangadhara, the two Sens and Abinas, have Caraka's original version. Mādhava never quotes readings belonging to the Kāśmīra recension. Hoernle puts together four points, viz. that Caraka's work was revised and completed by Drdhabala, that there existed a Kāśmīra recension of the Carakasamhitā, that Drdhabala calls himself a native of Pañcanada city, and that there existed a holy place of that name in Kāśmīra; and he argues that the so-called Kāśmīra recension represents the revision of the Caraka-samhitā by Dṛḍhabala. Judging from the fact that Mādhava takes no notice of the readings of the Kāśmīra recension, he argues that the latter did not exist in Mādhava's time and that therefore Mādhava's date must be anterior to that of Drdhabala.

But which portions were added to the *Caraka-samhitā* by Dṛḍhabala? The obvious assumption is that he added the last seventeen chapters of the sixth book (*Cikitsā*) and the seventh and eighth books¹. But such an assumption cannot hold good, since there is a great divergence in the counting of the number of the chapters in different manuscripts. Thus, while Jīvānanda's text marks Arśas, Atīsāra, Visarpa, Madātyaya and Dvivraṇīya as the ninth, tenth, eleventh, twelfth and thirteenth chapters of *Cikitsā* and therefore belonging to the original Caraka, Gaṅgādhara's text

asmin saptādaśādhyā kalpāḥ siddhaya eva ca nāsādyante 'gnīveśasya tantre Carakasaṃskṛte tān etān Kāpilabalaḥ śeṣān Dṛḍhabalo 'karot tantrasyāsya mahārthasya pūraṇārthaṃ yathāyatham. calls the ninth, tenth, eleventh, twelfth and thirteenth chapters Unmāda, Apasmāra, Kṣatakṣīṇa, Śvayathu and Udara. The seventeen chapters attributed to Dṛḍhabala have consequently different titles in the Gaṅgādhara and Jīvānanda editions. Hoernle has discussed very critically these textual problems and achieved notable results in attributing chapters to Caraka or Dṛḍhabala¹. But it is needless for us to enter into these discussions.

Mahāmahopādhyāya Kaviraj Gaṇanātha Sen, merely on the strength of the fact that the Rāja-tarangiṇī is silent on the matter², disputes the traditional Chinese statement that Caraka was the court-physician of Kaṇiṣka. There is no ground to believe as gospel truth a tradition, which cannot be traced to any earlier authority than Bhoja (eleventh century), that Patañjali was the author of a medical work, and that therefore Patañjali and Caraka could be identified. His comparisons of some passages from Caraka (IV. I) with some sūtras of Patañjali are hardly relevant and he finally has to rest for support of this identification on the evidence of Rāmabhadra Dīkṣita, a man of the seventeenth or the eighteenth century, who holds that Patañjali had written a work on medicine. He should have known that there were more Patañjalis than one, and that the alchemist and medical Patañjali was an entirely different person from Patañjali, the grammarian.

The most important commentary now completely available to us is the Ayur-veda-dīpikā, or Caraka-tātparya-tīkā, of Cakrapāṇidatta. Another important commentary is the Caraka-pañjikā by Svāmikumāra. He was a Buddhist in faith, and he refers to the commentator Hariścandra. The Caraka-tattva-pradīpikā was written in later times by Śivadāsasena, who also wrote the Tattva-candrikā, a commentary on Cakradatta. We hear also of other commentaries on Caraka by Bāṣpacandra or Vāpyacandra, Iśanadeva, Iśvarasena, Vakulakara, Jinadāsa, Munidāsa, Govardhana, Sandhyākara, Jaya nandī and the Caraka-candrikā of Gayadāsa.

Among other ancient treatises we may mention the Kāśyapa-saṃhitā, discovered in Kaṭhmāṇḍū, a medical dialogue between Kāśyapa, the teacher and Bhārgava, the student. It is interesting to note that it has some verses (MS., pp. 105-110) which are identical with part of the fifth chapter of the first book of Caraka. There is another important manuscript, called Bhāradvāja-

¹ J.R.A.S., 1908 and 1909.

² Pratyakşa-śārīram, introduction.

samhitā, which contains within it a small work called Bhesajakalpa, a commentary by Venkateśa1. Agniveśa's original work, the Agniveśa-samhitā, which was the basis of Caraka's revision, was available at least up to the time of Cakrapāṇi; Vijayarakṣita and Śrikanthadatta also quote from it2. Jatūkarņa's work also existed till the time of the same writers, as they occasionally quote from Jatūkarņa-samhitā3. The Parāsara-samhitā and Ksārapānisamhitā were also available down to Śrīkanthadatta's, or even down to Sivadāsa's, time. The Hārīta-samhitā (different from the printed and more modern text) was also available from the time of Cakrapāni and Vijayaraksita, as is evident from the quotations from it in their works. Bhela's work, called Bhela-samhitā, has already been published by the University of Calcutta. It may be remembered that Agniveśa, Bhela, Jatūkarna, Parāśara, Hārīta and Ksārapāni were all fellow-students in medicine, reading with the same teacher, Atreya-Punarvasu; Agnivesa, being the most intelligent of them all, wrote his work first, but Bhela and his other fellow-students also wrote independent treatises, which were read before the assembly of medical scholars and approved by them. Another work of the same school, called Kharanada-samhitā, and also a Viśvāmitra-samhitā, both of which are not now available, are utilized by Cakrapāni and other writers in their commentaries. The name samhitā, however, is no guarantee of the antiquity of these texts, for the junior Vāgbhata's work is also called Astāngahrdaya-samhitā. We have further a manuscript called Vararucisamhitā, by Vararuci, and a Siddha-sāra-samhitā by Ravigupta, son of Durgāgupta, which are of comparatively recent date. The Brahma-vaivarta-purāna refers to a number of early medical works, such as the Cikitsā-tattva-vijñāna of Dhanvantari, Cikitsā-darśana of Divodāsa, Cikitsā-kaumudī of Kāśīrāja, Cikitsā-sāra-tantra and Bhrama-ghna of Āśvinī, Vaidyaka-sarvasva of Nakula, Vyādhisindhu-vimardana of Sahadeva, Jñānārnava of Yama, Jivādana of Cyavana, Vaidya-sandeha-bhañjana of Janaka, Sarva-sāra of Candrasuta, Tantra-sāra of Jābāla, Vedānga-sāra of Jājali, Nidāna of Paila, Sarva-dhara of Karatha and Dvaidha-nirnaya-tantra of

¹ See Dr Cordier's Récentes Découvertes de MSS. Médicaux Sanscrits dans l'Inde (1898–1902).

² See Cakrapāṇi's commentary on Caraka-saṃhitā, 11. 2, also Śrikaṇṭha on the Siddha-yoga, Jearādhikāra.

³ Cakrapāṇi's commentary, II. 2 and II. 5, also Śrīkantha on the Nidāna (Kṣudra-roga).

Agastya¹. But nothing is known of these works, and it is difficult to say if they actually existed.

It is well known that there were two Vāgbhatas (sometimes spelt Vāhata). The earlier Vāgbhata knew Caraka and Suśruta. It is conjectured by Hoernle and others that the statement of I-tsing (A.D. 675-685), that the eight arts formerly existed in eight books, and that a man had lately epitomized them and made them into one bundle, and that all physicians in the five parts of India practised according to that book, alludes to the Astānga-samgraha of Vagbhata the elder. In that case Vagbhata I must have flourished either late in the sixth century or early in the seventh century; for I-tsing speaks of him as having epitomized the work "lately," and on the other hand time must be allowed for the circulation of such a work in the five parts of India. A comparison of Susruta and Vāgbhata I shows that the study of anatomy had almost ceased to exist in the latter's time. It is very probable that Vāgbhata was a Buddhist. The Astānga-samgraha has a commentary by Indu; but before Indu there had been other commentators, whose bad expositions were refuted by him2.

Mādhava, Dṛḍhabala and Vāgbhaṭa II all knew Vāgbhaṭa I. Mādhava mentions him by name and occasionally quotes from him both in the Siddha-yoga and in the Nidāna, and so also does Dṛḍhabala³. Hoernle has shown that Dṛḍhabala's 96 diseases of the eye are based on Vāgbhaṭa's 94. Vāgbhaṭa II towards the end of the Uttara-sthāna of his Aṣṭāṅga-hṛdaya-saṃhitā definitely expresses his debt to Vāgbhaṭa I. But they must all have flourished before Cakrapāṇi, who often refers to Dṛḍhabala and Vāgbhaṭa II. If, as Hoernle has shown, Mādhava was anterior to Dṛḍhabala, he also must necessarily have flourished before Cakrapāṇi. Hoernle's argument that Mādhava flourished before Dṛḍhabala rests upon the fact that Suśruta counts 76 kinds of eye-diseases, while Vāgbhaṭa I has 94. Dṛḍhabala accepts Vāgbhaṭa I's 94 eye-diseases with the addition of two more, added by Mādhava, making his list come to 96. Mādhava had accepted Suśruta's 76 eye-diseases and

¹ It is curious to notice that the Brahma-vaivarta-purāņa makes Dhanvantari, Kāśīrāja and Divodāsa different persons, which is contrary to Suśruta's statement noted above.

² Durvyākhyā-visa-suptasya Vāhaṭasyāsmad-uktayaḥ santu saṃvitti-dāyinyas sad-āgama-pariskrtā. Indu's commentary, 1. 1.

³ Siddha-yoga, 1. 27, Aṣṭāṅga-samgraha, 11. 1, Nidāna, 11. 22 and 23, Samgraha, 1. 266, Caraka-samhitā (Jivānanda, 1896), Cikitsita-sthāna, xvi. 31, Samgraha, 11. 26. Again, Cikitsita-sthāna, xvi. 53, etc., Samgraha, 11. 27, etc.

added two of his own1. The second point in Hoernle's argument is that Madhava in his quotations from Caraka always omits the passages marked by Vijayaraksita as Kāśmīra readings, which Hoernle identifies with the revision work of Drdhabala. These arguments of Hoernle appear very inconclusive; for, if the so-called Kāśmīra recension can be identified with Drdhabala's revision, both Drdhabala's Kāśmīra nativity and his posteriority to Madhava can be proved; but this proposition has not been proved. On the other hand, Cakrapāni alludes to a Drdhabala samskāra side by side with a Kāśmīra reading, and this seems to indicate that the two are not the same². The suggestion of Mādhava's anteriority on the ground that he counts 78 eyediseases is rather far-fetched. Mādhava's date, therefore, cannot be definitely settled. Hoernle is probably correct in holding that Drdhabala is anterior to Vagbhata³. However, the relative anteriority or posteriority of these three writers does not actually matter very much; for they lived at more or less short intervals from one another and their dates may roughly be assigned to a period between the eighth and tenth centuries A.D.

Vāgbhaṭa II's Aṣṭāṅga-hṛdaya-saṃhitā has at least five commentaries, viz. by Aruṇadatta (Sarvāṅga-sundarī), Āśādhara, Candracandana (Padārtha-candrikā), Rāmanātha and Hemādri (Āyur-veda-rasāyana). Of these Aruṇadatta probably lived in A.D. 1220. Mādhava's Rug-viniścaya, a compendium of pathology, is one of the most popular works of Indian Medicine. It has at least seven commentaries, viz. by Vijayarakṣita (Madhu-kośa), Vaidya-vācaspati (Ātaṅka-dīpana), Rāmanātha Vaidya, Bhavānīsahāya, Nāganātha (Nidāna-pradīpa), Gaṇeśa Bhisaj and the commentary known as Siddhānta-candrikā or Vivaraṇa-siddhānta-candrikā, by Narasiṃha Kavirāja⁴. Vijayarakṣita's commentary, however,

¹ Hoernle thinks that the total number of 76 eye-diseases ordinarily found in the printed editions of Mādhava's *Nidāna* is not correct, as they do not actually tally with the descriptions of the different eye-diseases given by Mādhava and do not include *pakṣma-kopa* and *pakṣma-śātā* varieties. Hoernle's "Osteology," p. 13.

² Cakra's commentary, 1. 7. 46-50.

¹ See Hoernle's "Osteology," pp. 14-16.

A Narasimha Kavirāja was the son of Nīlakantha Bhatta and the pupil of Rāmakṛṣṇa Bhatta. He seems to have written another medical work, called Madhu-matt. His Vivaraṇa-siddhānta-candrikā, though based on Vijaya's Madhu-koṣa, is an excellent commentary and contains much that is both instructive and new. The only manuscript available is probably the one that belongs to the family library of the author of the present work, who is preparing an edition of it for publication.

closes with the 33rd chapter, and the rest of the work was accomplished by Śrīkanthadatta, a pupil of Vijayarakṣita. Vṛnda (who may be the same as Mādhava) wrote a Siddha-yoga, a book of medical formulas, well known among medical writers.

In connection with this brief account of Indian medical works the Nava-nītaka, and the other mutilated medical treatises which have been discovered in Central Asia and which go by the name of "Bower manuscript," cannot be omitted. This manuscript is written on birch leaves in Gupta characters and is probably as old as the fifth century A.D. It is a Buddhist work, containing many medical formulas taken from Caraka, Suśruta and other unknown writers. It will, however, be understood that an elaborate discussion of chronology or an exhaustive account of Indian medical works would be out of place in a work like the present. The Ayur-veda literature, and particularly that part which deals with medical formulas and recipes, medical lexicons and the like, is vast. Aufrecht's catalogue contains the names of about 1500 manuscript texts, most of which have not yet been published, and there are many other manuscripts not mentioned in Aufrecht's catalogue. Among the books now much in use may be mentioned the works of Sarngadhara, of the fourteenth century, Sivadāsa's commentary on Cakrapāni, of the fifteenth century, and the Bhava-prakasa of Bhavamisra, of the sixteenth. Vangasena's work is also fairly common. Among anatomical texts Bhoja's work and Bhāskara Bhatta's Śārīra-padminī deserve mention. The Aupadhenava-tantra, Pauskalāvata-tantra, Vaitarana-tantra and Bhoja-tantra are alluded to by Dalhana. The Bhāluki-tantra and Kapila-tantra are mentioned by Cakrapāni in his Bhānumatī commentary. So much for the anatomical treatises. Videha-tantra, Nimi-tantra, Kānkāyana-tantra, Sātyaki-tantra, Karāla-tantra and Kṛṣṇātreya-tantra on eye-diseases are alluded to in Śrīkantha's commentary on Mādhava's Nidāna. The Śaunakatantra on eye-diseases is named in the commentaries of Cakrapāni and Dalhana. The Jivaka-tantra, Parvataka-tantra and Bandhakatantra are alluded to by Dalhana as works on midwifery. The Hiranyāksva-tantra on the same subject is named by Śrīkantha, whereas the Kāśyapa-samhitā and Ālambāyana-samhitā are cited by Śrīkantha on toxicology. The Uśanas-samhitā, Sanaka-samhitā, Lātyāyana-samhitā are also mentioned as works on toxicology.

Among some of the other important Tantras may be mentioned

Nāgārjuna's Yoga-śataka, containing the eight regular divisions of Indian Medicine, and Nāgārjuna's Jīva-sūtra and Bheṣaja-kalpa, all of which were translated into Tibetan. Three works on the Aṣṭāṅga-hṛdaya, called Aṣṭāṅga-hṛdaya-nāma-vaidūryaka-bhāṣya, Padār-tha-candrikā-prabhāsa-nāma, Aṣṭāṅga-hṛdaya-vṛtti and Vaidyakā-ṣṭāṅga-hṛdaya-vṛtter bheṣaja-nāma-sūcī, were also translated into Tibetan.

The Ayur-veda-sūtra is a work by Yogānandanātha, published with a commentary by the same author in the Mysore University Sanskrit series in 1922, with an introduction by Dr Shama Sastry. It is rightly pointed out in the introduction that this is a very modern work, written after the Bhāva-prakāśa, probably in the sixteenth century. It contains sixteen chapters and is an attempt to connect Ayur-veda with Patañjali's Yoga system. It endeavours to show how different kinds of food increase the sattva, rajas and tamas qualities and how yoga practices, fasting and the like, influence the conditions of the body. Its contribution, whether as a work of Ayur-veda or as a work of philosophy, is rather slight. It shows a tendency to connect Yoga with Ayur-veda, while the Vīra-siṃhāvalokita is a work which tries to connect astrology with the same.

CHAPTER XIV

THE PHILOSOPHY OF THE BHAGAVAD-GĪTĀ

The Gita Literature.

The Gītā is regarded by almost all sections of the Hindus as one of the most sacred religious works, and a large number of commentaries have been written on it by the adherents of different schools of thought, each of which explained the Gītā in its own favour. Saṅkara's bhāṣya is probably the earliest commentary now available; but from references and discussions found therein there seems to be little doubt that there were previous commentaries which he wished to refute.

Śańkara in his interpretation of the Gītā seeks principally to emphasize the dogma that right knowledge can never be combined with Vedic duties or the duties recommended by the legal scriptures. If through ignorance, or through attachment, a man continues to perform the Vedic duties, and if, as a result of sacrifices, gifts and tapas (religious austerities), his mind becomes pure and he acquires the right knowledge regarding the nature of the ultimate reality—that the passive Brahman is the all—and then, when all reasons for the performance of actions have ceased for him, still continues to perform the prescribed duties just like common men and to encourage others to behave in a similar manner, then such actions are inconsistent with right knowledge. When a man performs actions without desire or motive, they cannot be considered as karma at all. He alone may be said to be performing karma, or duties, who has any interest in them. But the wise man, who has no interest in his karma, cannot be said to be performing karma in the proper sense of the term, though to all outward appearances he may be acting exactly like an ordinary man. Therefore the main thesis of the Gītā, according to Sankara, is that liberation can come only through right knowledge and not through knowledge combined with the performance of duties. Sankara maintains that all duties hold good for us only in the stage of ignorance and not in the stage of wisdom. When once the right knowledge of identity with Brahman dawns and ignorance ceases, all notions of duality, which are presupposed by

the performance of actions and responsibility for them, cease¹. In interpreting Gitā, III. 1, Sankara criticizes the opinions of some previous commentators, who held that obligatory duties cannot be given up even when true wisdom is attained. In reply he alludes to legal scriptures (smṛti-śāstra), and asserts that the mere nonperformance of any duties, however obligatory, cannot lead to evil results, since non-performance is a mere negation and of mere negation no positive results can come out. The evil effects of the non-performance of obligatory duties can happen only to those who have not given up all their actions (a-samnyāsi-vişayatvāt pratyavāya-prāpteh). But those who have attained true wisdom and have consequently given up all their actions transcend the sphere of duties and of the obligatory injunctions of the Vedas, and the legal scriptures cannot affect them at all. The performance of duties cannot by itself lead to liberation; but it leads gradually to the attainment of purity of mind (sattva-śuddhi) and through this helps the dawning of the right knowledge, with which all duties cease². In a very lengthy discussion on the interpretation of Gītā, xvIII. 67, Sankara tries to prove that all duties presuppose the multiplicity of the world of appearance, which is due to ignorance or nescience, and therefore the sage who has attained the right knowledge of Brahman, the only reality, has no duties to perform. Final liberation is thus produced, not by true knowledge along with the performance of duties, but by true knowledge alone. The wise man has no duties of any kind. Sankara's interpretation of the $Git\bar{a}$ presupposes that the $Git\bar{a}$ holds the same philosophical doctrine that he does. His method of interpretation is based not so much on a comparison of textual passages. as simply on the strength of the reasonableness of the exposition of a view which can be consistently held according to his Vedanta philosophy, and which he ascribes to the Gîtā. The view taken in the present exposition of the Gitā philosophy is diametrically opposite to that of Sankara. It has been repeatedly pointed out that the Gitā asserts that even the wise man should perform his allotted duties, though he may have nothing to gain by the performance of such duties. Even God Himself as Krsna, though He had no unsatisfied cravings, passions or desires of any kind.

¹ Śańkara's interpretation of the GItā, II. 69. Yogāśrama edition, Benares, 1919.
² Ibid III. 4.

performed His self-imposed duties in order to set an example to all and to illustrate the fact that even the wise man should perform his prescribed duties¹.

Ānandajñāna wrote a commentary on Śańkara's Bhagavad-gītābhāsya, called Bhagavad-gītā-bhāsya-vivarana, and Rāmānanda wrote another commentary on that of Sankara, called Bhagavad-gītābhāsva-vyākhyā. He is also said to have written another work on the Gītā, called Gītāśaya. After Sankara there seems to have been some pause. We have two commentaries, one in prose and one in verse, by two persons of the same name, Yāmunācārya. The Yāmunācārya who was the author of a prose commentary is certainly, though a visistadvaita-vadin, not the celebrated Yamuna, the teacher of Rāmānuja. His commentary, which has been published by the Sudarsana Press, Conjeeveram, is very simple, consisting mainly of a mere paraphrase of the Gitā verses. He thinks that the first six chapters of the Gītā deal with the nature of true knowledge of God as a means to devotion, the second six with the nature of God as attainable by devotion and adoration, and the third six repeat the same subjects for a further clearing up of the problems involved.

Yāmuna, the great teacher of Rāmānuja, who is said to have been born in A.D. 906, summarized the subject-matter of the Gitā in a few verses called Gītārtha-samgraha, on which Nigamānta Mahādesika wrote a commentary known as Gītārtha-samgraha-rakṣā. This also was commented on by Varavara Muni, of the fourteenth century, in a commentary called Gitartha-samgraha-dipikā, published by the Sudarśana Press, Conjeeveram. Another commentary, called Bhagavad-gitärtha-samgraha-tikā, by Pratyaksadevayathācārya, is mentioned by Aufrecht. Yāmuna says that the object of the Gītā is to establish the fact that Nārāyana is the highest Brahman, attained only by devotion (bhakti), which is achieved through caste duties (sva-dharma), right knowledge and disinclination to worldly pleasures (vairāgya). It is said that the first six chapters of the Gītā describe the process of attaining self-knowledge by self-concentration (yoga) through knowledge and action along with self-subordination to God, the performance of all actions for God and detachment from all other things. Nigamanta Mahādeśika notes that karma may lead to self-realization either indirectly, through the production of knowledge, or directly by itself.

¹ Gītā, III. 22.

From the seventh to the twelfth chapters the processes of the attainment of devotion (bhakti-yoga) by knowledge and by actions are described, and it is held that the true nature of God can be realized only by such devotion. From the thirteenth to the eighteenth chapters, the nature of pradhana, of purusa, of the manifested world and of the supreme lord are described and distinguished along with the nature of action, of knowledge and of devotion. Yāmuna then goes on to describe the contents of the chapters of the Gita one by one. Thus he says that in the second chapter the nature of the saint of imperturbable wisdom (sthita-dhī) is described. Such right knowledge can be achieved only by a knowledge of the self as immortal and the habit of performing one's duties in an unattached manner. In the third chapter it is said that a man should perform his duties for the preservation of the social order (loka-raksā) without attachment, leaving the fruits of all his actions to God, and considering at the same time that the gunas are the real agents of actions and that it is wrong to pride oneself upon their performance. The fourth chapter describes the nature of God, how one should learn to look upon actions as implying no action (on account of unattachment), the different kinds of duties and the glory of knowledge. The fifth describes the advantages and the diverse modes of the path of duties and also the nature of the state of realization of Brahman. The sixth describes the nature of yoga practice, four kinds of yogins, the methods of yoga, the nature of yoga realization and the ultimate superiority of yoga as communion with God. The seventh describes the reality of God, how His nature is often veiled from us by prakrti or the gunas, how one should seek protection from God. the nature of the different kinds of devotees, and the superiority of the truly enlightened person. The eighth describes the lordly power of God and the reality of His nature as the unchanged and the unchangeable; it also describes the duties of those who seek protection in God and the nature of the true wisdom. The ninth describes the glory of God and His superiority even when He incarnates Himself as man, and the nature of devotional communion. The tenth describes the infinite number of God's noble qualities and the dependence of all things on Him, for initiating and increasing devotion. The eleventh describes how the true nature of God can be perceived, and demonstrates that it is only through devotion that God can be known or attained. The twelfth

describes the superiority of devotion, methods of attaining devotion, and different kinds of devotion; it is also held that God is highly pleased by the devotion of His devotees. The thirteenth describes the nature of the body, the purification of the self for self-realization. the cause of bondage and right discrimination. The fourteenth describes how the nature of an action is determined by the ties of guna, how the gunas may be made to cease from influencing us, and how God alone is the root of all the ways of the self's future destiny. The fifteenth describes how the supreme lord is different from the pure selves, as well as from selves in association with non-selves, on account of his all-pervasiveness and his nature as upholder and lord. The sixteenth describes the division of beings into godly and demoniac and also the privileged position of the scriptures as the authority for laying the solid foundation of knowledge of the true nature of our duties. The seventeenth distinguishes unscriptural things from scriptural. The eighteenth describes how God alone should be regarded as the ultimate agent of all actions, and states the necessity of purity and the nature of the effects of one's deeds. According to Yamuna karma-yoga, or the path of duties, consists of religious austerities, pilgrimage, gifts and sacrifices; iñāna-yoga, or the path of knowledge, consists of self-control and purity of mind; bhakti-yoga, or the path of devotion, consists in the meditation of God, inspired by an excess of joy in the communion with the divine. All these three paths mutually lead to one another. All three are essentially of the nature of the worship of God, and, whether regarded as obligatory or occasional, are helpful for discovering the true nature of one's self. When by self-realization ignorance is wholly removed, and when a man attains superior devotion to God, he is received into God.

Rāmānuja, the celebrated Vaiṣṇava teacher and interpreter of the *Brahma-sūtra*, who is said to have been born in A.D. 1017, wrote a commentary on the *Gītā* on *višiṣṭādvaita* lines, viz. monism qualified as theism. Veṅkaṭanātha, called also Vedāntācārya, wrote a sub-commentary thereon, called *Tātparya-candrikā*. Rāmānuja generally followed the lines of interpretation suggested in the brief summary by his teacher Yāmuna. On the question of the imperativeness of caste duties Rāmānuja says that the *Gītā* holds that the duties allotted to each caste must be performed, since the scriptures are the commands of God and no one can transgress His orders; so the duties prescribed by the scriptures as obligatory

are compulsory for all. The duties have, therefore, to be performed without desire for their fruits and purely because they are the injunctions of the scriptures (eka-śāstrārthatayā anustheyam). It is only when duties performed simply to please God, and as adoration of Him, have destroyed all impurities of the mind, and when the senses have become controlled, that a man becomes fit for the path of wisdom. A man can never at any stage of his progress forsake the duty of worshipping God, and it is only through such adoration of God that the sins accumulating in him from beginningless time are gradually washed away and he can become pure and fit for the path of knowledge. In interpreting III. 8 Rāmānuja says that the path of duties (karma-yoga) is superior to the path of knowledge (jñāna-yoga). The path of duties naturally leads to self-knowledge; so self-knowledge is also included within its scope. The path of knowledge alone cannot lead us anywhere; for without work even the body cannot be made to live. Even those who adhere to the path of knowledge must perform the obligatory and occasional (nitya-naimittika) duties, and it is through the development of this course that one can attain self-realization by duty alone. The path of duties is to be followed until self-realization (ātmāvalokana) and, through it, emancipation are obtained. But the chief duty of a man is to be attached to God with supreme devotion.

Madhvācārya, or Ānandatīrtha, who lived in the first three-quarters of the thirteenth century, wrote a commentary on the Bhagavad-gītā, called Gītā-bhāṣya, commented on by Jayatīrtha in his Prameya-dīpikā, and also a separate monograph interpreting the main purport of the Gītā, called Bhagavad-gītā-tātparya-nirṇaya, commented on by Jayatīrtha in his Nyāya-dīpikā. His main emphasis was on the fact that God is different from everything else, and that the only way of attaining our highest goal is through devotion (bhaktī) as love and attachment (sneha). In the course of his interpretation he also introduced long discussions in refutation of the monistic theory of Sankara. Since everything is dominated by the will of Hari the Lord, no one ought to feel any attachment to mundane things. Duties are to be performed by all. Kṛṣṇabhaṭṭa Vidyādhirāja, the sixth disciple from

¹ Anabhisamhita-phalena kevala-parama-purusārādhana-rūpenānusthitena karmanā vidhvasta-mano-malo 'vyākulendriyo jāāna-nisthāyām adhikaroti. Rāmānuja's commentary on the Gitā, 111. 3. See also ibid. 111. 4. Gujarati Press, Bombay, 1908.

Madhya, who lived in the first quarter of the fourteenth century. wrote a commentary on the Gītā, called Gītā-tīkā. Rāghavendra Svāmin, who lived in the seventeenth century and was a pupil of Sudhindra Yati, wrote three works on the Gita. called Gitavivrti, Gītārtha-samgraha and Gītārtha-vivarana. Commentaries were also written by Vallabhācārya, Vijñānabhiksu, Keśava Bhatta of the Nimbarka school (called Gītā-tattva-prakāsikā), Āñjaneya (called Hanumad-bhāsya), Kalyāna Bhatta (called Rasika-rañjinī), Tagaddhara (called Bhagavad-gitā-pradīpa), Jayarāma (called Gītāsārārtha-samgraha), Baladeva Vidyābhūsana (called Gītā-bhūsanabhāsva), Madhusūdana (called Gūdhārtha-dīpikā), Brahmānanda Giri, Mathurānātha (called Bhagavad-gītā-prakāśa), Dattātreva (called Prabodha-candrikā), Rāmakrsna, Mukundadāsa, Rāmanārāyana, Viśveśvara, Sankarānanda, Sivadayālu Śrīdharasvāmin (called Subodhini), Sadānanda Vyāsa (called Bhāva-prakāśa), Sūryapandita (Paramārtha-prapā), Nīlakantha (called Bhāvadīpikā), and also from the Saiva point of view by Rājānaka and Rāmakantha (called Sarvato-bhadra). Many other works were also written on the general purport of the Gītā, such as Bhagavadgītārtha-samgraha by Abhinavagupta and Nṛsimha Thakkura, Bhagavad-gitārtha-sāra by Gokulacandra, Bhagavad-gitā-laksābharana by Vādirāja, Bhagavad-gītā-sāra by Kaivalyānanda Sarasvatī, Bhagavad-gītā-sāra-samgraha by Narahari and Bhagavad-gītā-hetu-nirnaya by Vitthala Dīkṣita. Most of these commentaries are written either from the point of view of Sankara's bhāsya, repeating the same ideas in other language, or from the Vaisnava point of view, approving of the hold of normal duties of men in all stages of life and sometimes differing only in the conception of God and His relation with men. These can claim but little originality either of argument or of opinions, and so may well be left out of detailed consideration for our present purposes.

Gītā and Yoga.

Whoever may have written the Gītā, it seems very probable that he was not acquainted with the technical sense of yoga as the cessation of mental states (citta-vrtti-nirodha), as used by Patañjali in his Yoga-sūtra, I. I. I have elsewhere shown that there are three roots, yujir yoge and yuj samādhau, i.e. the root yujir, to join, and the root yuj in the sense of cessation of mental states or one-

pointedness, and yuj samyamane, i.e. yuj in the sense of controlling. In the Gitā the word yoga appears to have been used in many senses, which may seem to be unconnected with one another; yet it may not be quite impossible to discover relations among them. The primary sense of the word yoga in the Gītā is derived from the root vujir yoge or vuj, to join, with which is connected in a negative way the root vui in the sense of controlling or restricting anything to that to which it is joined. Joining, as it means contact with something, also implies disjunction from some other thing. When a particular type of mental outlook or scheme of action is recommended, we find the word buddhi-yoga used, which simply means that one has intimately to associate oneself with a particular type of wisdom or mental outlook. Similarly, when the word karma-yoga is used, it simply means that one has to associate oneself with the obligatoriness of the performance of duties. Again, the word yoga is used in the sense of fixing one's mind either on the self (ātman) or on God. It is clear that in all these varying senses the dominant sense is that of "joining." But such a joining implies also a disjunction, and the fundamental and indispensable disjunction implied is dissociation from all desires for pleasures and fruits of action (phala-tyāga). For this reason cases are not rare where *yoga* is used to mean cessation of desires for the fruits of action. Thus, in the Gita, vi. 2, it is said, "What is called cessation (of desires for the fruits of action) is what you should know, O Pandava, as Yoga: without renouncing one's desires (na hy asamnyasta-sankalpa) one cannot be a yogin¹." The reason why this negative concept of cessation of desires should be regarded as voga is that without such a renunciation of desires no higher kind of union is possible. But even such a dissociation from the fruits of desires (which in a way also means samyamana, or selfcontrol) is to be supplemented by the performance of duties at the preliminary stages; and it is only in the higher stages, when one is fixed in yoga (yogārūdha), that meditative peace (sama) can be recommended. Unless and until one succeeds in conquering all attachments to sense-objects and actions and in giving up all desires for fruits of actions, one cannot be fixed in yoga. It is by our attempts at the performance of our duties, trying all the time

¹ Asamnyasto'parityaktah phala-visayah sankalpo'bhisandhir yena so'samnyasta-sankalpah. Śankara's commentary, vi. 2. Na samnyastah phala-sankalpo yena. Śridhara's commentary on the above. Yogasrama edition, Benares, 1919.

to keep the mind clear from motives of pleasure and enjoyment. that we gradually succeed in elevating it to a plane at which it would be natural to it to desist from all motives of self-interest. pleasure and enjoyment. It is at this stage that a man can be called fixed in yoga or yogārūdha. This naturally involves a conflict between the higher self and the lower, or rather between the real self and the false; for, while the lower self always inclines to pathological and prudential motives, to motives of self-interest and pleasure, it has yet within it the higher ideal, which is to raise it up. Man is both a friend and a foe to himself; if he follows the path of his natural inclinations and the temptations of sense-enjoyment, he takes the downward path of evil, and is an enemy to his own higher interests; whereas it is his clear duty to raise himself up, to strive that he may not sink down but may elevate himself to a plane of detachment from all sense-pleasures. The duality involved in this conception of a friend and a foe, of conqueror and conquered, of an uplifting power and a gravitating spirit, naturally involves a distinction between a higher self (paramātman) and a lower self (ātman). It is only when this higher self conquers the lower that a self is a friend to itself. In a man who has failed to conquer his own passions and self-attachments the self is its own enemy. The implication, however, is that the lower self, though it gravitates towards evil, has yet inherent in it the power of self-elevation. This power of self-elevation is not something extraneous, but abides in the self, and the Gītā is emphatic in its command, "Thou shouldst raise thyself and not allow thyself to sink down; for the self is its own friend and its foe as well1."

It is only when the self thus conquers its lower tendencies and rises to a higher plane that it comes into touch with the higher self (paramātman). The higher self always remains as an ideal of elevation. The yoga activity of the self thus consists, on the one hand, in the efforts by which the yogin dissociates himself from the sense-attachments towards which he was naturally gravitating, and on the other hand, in the efforts by which he tries to elevate himself and to come into touch with the higher self. At the first stage a man performs his duties in accordance with the injunctions of the śāstras; then he performs his duties and tries to dissociate himself from all motives of self-interest and

enjoyment, and at the next stage he succeeds in conquering these lower motives and is in touch with the higher self. Even at this stage he may still continue to perform his duties, merely for the sake of duty, or he may devote himself to meditative concentration and union with the higher self or with God. Thus the Gītā says that the person who has conquered himself and is at peace with himself is in touch with paramatman. Such a person is a true philosopher; for he not only knows the truths, but is happy in the inner realization and direct intuitive apperception of such truths; he is unshakable in himself; having conquered his senses, he attaches the same value to gold and to stones; he is the same to friends and to enemies, to the virtuous as to the sinful; he is in union (with paramātman) and is called a yogin1. The fact that the word yogin is derived here from the root yuj, to join, is evident from a number of passages where the verb vuj is used in this connection2.

The Gitā advises a vogin who thus wants to unite himself with paramatman, or God, in a meditative union, to lead a lonely life, controlling his mind and body, desiring nothing and accepting nothing3. The yogin should scat himself on level ground, in a clean place, and, being firm on his threefold seat composed of kuśa grass, a leopard skin and soft linen, he should control his thoughts, senses and movements, make his mind one-pointed in God (tatra), gather himself up in union, and thus purify himself⁴. The yogin should eat neither too much nor too little, should neither sleep too much, nor dispense with sleep. He should thus

¹ Yukta ity ucyate yogī sama-lostāsma-kāñcanah, vi. 8. Sankara, however, splits it up into two independent sentences, as follows: ya Idršo yuktah samāhita iti sa ucyate kathyate; sa yogī sama-lostāsma-kāñcanah. Śridhara, again, takes a quite different view and thinks it to be a definition of the yogārūdha state and believes yukta to mean yogārūdha, which in my opinion is unjustifiable. My interpretation is simpler and more direct than either of these and can be justified by a reference to the context in vi. 7 and vi. 10.

² Yogi yunjita satatam ātmānam rahasi sthitah. Ibid. VI. 10.

Upaviśyāsane yunjyād yogam ātma-viśuddhaye. VI. 12.

Yukta āsīta mat-parah. VI. 14.

Yuñjann evam sadātmānam yogī niyata-mānasah. VI. 15, etc.

* Ekākī yata-cittātmā nirāšīr aparigrahah. VI. 10. The word ātmā in yatacittatma is used in the sense of body (deha), according to Sankara, Śridhara and others.

⁴ Both Śańkara and Śridhara make tatra an adjective to āsane. Such an adjective to asane would not only be superfluous, but would also leave ekagram without an object. The verb yuñjyāt, literally meaning "should link up," is interpreted by Sridhara as "should practise," apparently without any justification (VI. 12).

lead the middle course of life and avoid extremes. This avoidance of extremes is very unlike the process of *yoga* advised by Patañiali. Patañiali's course of yoga formulates a method by which the yogin can gradually habituate himself to a condition of life in which he can ultimately dispense with food and drink altogether and desist from all movements of body and mind. The object of a vogin in making his mind one-pointed is ultimately to destroy the mind. According to Patanjali the advancement of a yogin has but one object before it, viz. the cessation of all movements of mind (citta-vrtti-nirodha). Since this absolute cessation cannot be effected without stopping all movements of the body, desires and passions are to be uprooted, not only because they would make the mind fly to different objects, but also because they would necessitate movements of the body, which would again disturb the mind. The yogin therefore has to practise a twofold control of movements of body and mind. He has to habituate himself to dispensing with the necessity of food and drink, to make himself used to all kinds of privations and climatic inconveniences of heat and cold and ultimately to prepare himself for the stoppage of all kinds of bodily movements. But, since this cannot be successfully done so long as one inhales and exhales, he has to practise prānāyāma for absolute breath-control, and not for hours or days, but for months and years. Moral elevation is regarded as indispensable in yoga only because without absolute and perfect cessation of all desires and passions the movements of the body and mind could not be absolutely stopped. The yogin, however, has not only to cut off all new causes of disturbance leading to movements of body and mind, but also to practise one-pointedness of mind on subtler and subtler objects, so that as a result thereof the sub-conscious forces of the mind can also be destroyed. Thus, on the one hand, the mind should be made to starve by taking care that no new sense-data and no new percepts, concepts, thoughts, ideas or emotions be presented to it, and, on the other hand, steps are to be taken to make the mind one-pointed, by which all that it had apprehended before, which formed the great storehouse of the sub-conscious, is destroyed. The mind, thus pumped out on both sides, becomes absolutely empty and is destroyed. The ideal of Patañjali's Yoga is absolute extremism, consisting in absolute stoppage of all functions of body and mind.

The Gītā, on the other hand, prescribes the golden middle course

of moderate food, drink, sleep, movements of the body and activity in general. The object of the yogin in the Gitā is not the absolute destruction of mind, but to bring the mind or the ordinary self into communion with the higher self or God. To the yogin who practises meditation the Gītā advises steadiness of posture; thus it says that the yogin should hold his body, head and shoulders straight, and, being unmoved and fixed in his posture, should avoid looking to either side and fix his eyes on the tip of his nose. The Gitā is, of course, aware of the process of breath-control and prāṇāyāma; but, curiously enough, it does not speak of it in its sixth chapter on dhyāna-yoga, where almost the whole chapter is devoted to yoga practice and the conduct of yogins. In the fifth chapter, v. 27, it is said that all sense-movements and control of life-movements (prāṇa-karmāṇi) are like oblations to the fire of self-control. In the two obscure verses of the same chapter, v. 29 and 30, it is said that there are some who offer an oblation of prāna to apāna and of apāna to prāna and thus, stopping the movement of inhalation and exhalation (prānāpāna-gatī ruddhvā), perform the prānāyāma, while there are others who, taking a low diet, offer an oblation of prāna to prāna. Such actions on the part of these people are described as being different kinds of sacrifices, or yajña, and the people who perform them are called yajña-vidah (those who know the science of sacrifice), and not yogin. It is difficult to understand the exact meaning of offering an oblation of prāna to prāna or of prāna to apāna and of calling this sacrifice. The interpretations of Sankara, Śrīdhara and others give us but little help in this matter. They do not tell us why it should be called a yajña or how an oblation of prāna to prāna can be made, and they do not even try to give a synonym for juhvati (offer oblation) used in this connection. It seems to me, however, that there is probably a reference to the mystical substitution-meditations (pratīkopāsanā) which were used as substitutes for sacrifices and are referred to in the Upanisads. Thus in the Maitri Upanisad. VI. 9, we find that Brahman is to be meditated upon as the ego, and in this connection, oblations of the five $v\bar{a}vus$ to fire with such mantras as prānāya svāhā, apānāya svāhā, etc. are recommended. It is easy to imagine that, in a later process of development. for the actual offering of oblations to fire was substituted a certain process of breath-control, which still retained the old phraseology of the offering of oblations in a sacrifice. If this interpretation is

accepted, it will indicate how processes of breath-control became in many cases associated with substitution-meditations of the Vedic type¹. The development of processes of breath-control in connection with substitution-meditations does not seem to be unnatural at all, and, as a matter of fact, the practice of brānāyāma in connection with such substitution-meditations is definitely indicated in the Maitrī Upanisad, vi. 18. The movement of inhalation and exhalation was known to be the cause of all body-heat, including the heat of digestive processes, and Krsna is supposed to say in the Gītā, xv. 14, "As fire I remain in the body of living beings and in association with prāna and apāna I digest four kinds of food and drink." The author of the Gita, however, seems to have been well aware that the *prāna* and *apāna* breaths passing through the nose could be properly balanced (samau), or that the prana vayu could be concentrated between the two eyebrows or in the head (mūrdhni)2. It is difficult to say what is exactly meant by taking the prana in the head or between the eyebrows. There seems to have been a belief in the Atharva-siras Upanisad and also in the Atharva-śikhā Upanisad that the prāņa could be driven upwards, or that such prāna, being in the head, could protect it3. Manu also speaks of the prānas of young men rushing upwards when old men approached them. But, whatever may be meant, it is certain that neither the balancing of prāna and apāna nor the concentrating of prāna in the head or between the eyebrows is a phrase of Patanjali, the Yoga writer.

In describing the course of a yogin in the sixth chapter the Gītā advises that the yogin should lead the austere life of a Brahmacārin, withdraw his mind from all mundane interests and think only of God, dedicate all his actions to Him and try to live in communion with Him (yukta āsīta). This gives to his soul peace, through which he loses his individuality in God and abides in Him

¹ See Hindu Mysticism, by S. N. Dasgupta, Chicago, 1927, pp. 18-20.

² prānāpānau samau krtvā nāsābhyantara-cārinau, v. 27. The phrase samau krtvā is left unexplained here by Sankara. Srīdhara explains it as "having suspended the movement of prāna and apāna"—prānāpānāv ūrddhvādho-gatinirodhena samau krtvā kumbhakam krtvā. It is difficult, however, to say what is exactly meant by concentrating the prāna vāyu between the two eyebrows, bhruvor madhye prānam āvešya samyak (viii. 10). Neither Sankara nor Srīdhara gives us any assistance here. In mūrdhny ādhāyātmanah prānam āsthito yogadhāranām (viii. 12) mūrdhni is paraphrased by Śrīdhara as bhruvor madhye, or "between the eyebrows."

³ Atharva-śiras, 4 and 6 and Atharva-śikhā, 1.

in the bliss of self-effacement¹. A yogin can be said to be in union (with God) when he concentrates his mind on his own higher self and is absolutely unattached to all desires. By his efforts towards such a union (voga-sevavā) he restrains his mind from all other objects and, perceiving his self in himself, remains in peace and contentment. At this higher state the vogin enjoys absolute bliss (sukham ātvantikam), transcending all sense-pleasures by his pure reason, and, being thus fixed in God, he is never shaken away from Him. Such a vogin forsakes all his desires and controls all his senses by his mind, and, whenever the mind itself seeks to fly away to different objects, he tries to control it and fix it on his own self. Patiently holding his mind fixed in his self, he tries to desist from all kinds of thought and gradually habituates himself to shaking off attachments to sense-attractions. At this stage of union the yogin feels that he has attained his highest, and thus even the greatest mundane sorrows cannot affect him in the least. Yoga is thus sometimes defined as the negation of the possibility of all association with sorrows². One can attain such a state only by persistent and self-confident efforts and without being depressed by preliminary failures. When a yogin attains this union with himself or with God, he is like the motionless flame of a lamp in a still place, undisturbed by all attractions and unruffled by all passions3. The yogin who attains this highest state of union with himself or with God is said to be in touch with Brahman or to attain Brahmahood, and it is emphatically asserted that he is filled with ecstatic joy. Being in

¹ śāntiṃ nirvāṇa-paramāṃ mat-saṃsthām adhigacchati, vi. 15. The Gītā uses the words śānti and nirvāṇa to indicate the bliss of the person who abides in God. Both these words, and particularly the word nirvāṇa, have a definite significance in Buddhism. But the Gītā seems to be quite unacquainted with the Buddhistic sense of the word. I have therefore ventured to translate the word nirvaṇa as "bliss of self-effacement." The word is primarily used in the sense of "extinguishing a light," and this directly leads to the Buddhistic sense of the absolute destruction of the skandhas. But the word nirvāṇa is also used from very early times in the sense of "relief from sufferings" and "satisfaction." Thus the Mahā-bhārata, with which the Gītā is traditionally associated, uses it in this sense in 111. 10438:

sa pitvā šītalam toyam pipāsārtto mahī-patih; nirvāņam agamad dhīmān susukhī cābhavat tadā.

Again, in the Mahā-bhārata, XII. 7150 and 13014, nirvāṇa is described as being highest bliss (paramam sukham), and it is also associated with śānti, or peace, as it is in the above passage—śāntiṃ nirvāṇa-paramām. In Mahā-bhārata, VI. 1079, and in another place it is called a "state of the highest Brahman" (paramam brahma—ibid. XII. 13239).

² tam vidyād duḥkha-saṃyoga-viyogaṃ yoga-saṃjñitam, vi. 23.

³ Yathā dīpo nivāta-stho nengate sopamā smṛtā, VI. 19.

union with God, he perceives himself in all things, and all things in himself; for, being in union with God, he in one way identifies himself with God, and perceives God in all things and all things in God. Yet it is no mere abstract pantheism that is indicated here; for such a view is directly in opposition to the main tenets of the Gita, so often repeated in diverse contexts. It is a mystical state, in which, on the one hand, the yogin finds himself identified with God and in communion with Him, and, on the other hand, does not cease to have relations with the beings of the world, to whom he gives the same consideration as to himself. He does not prefer his own happiness to the happiness of others, nor does he consider his own misery and suffering as greater or more important or more worthy of prevention than those of others. Being in communion with God, he still regards Him as the master whom he adores, as the supreme Lord who pervades all things and holds them in Himself. By his communion with God the yogin transcends his lower and smaller self and discovers his greater self in God, not only as the supreme ideal of his highest efforts, but also as the highest of all realities. As soon as the vogin can detach himself from his lower self of passions and desires, he uplifts himself to a higher universe, where the distinction of meum and teum, mine and thine, ceases and the interest of the individual loses its personal limitations and becomes enlarged and universalized and identified with the interests of all living beings. Looked at from this point of view, yoga is sometimes defined in the Gītā as the outlook of equality (samatva)1.

In the Gitā the word yoga has not attained any definite technical sense, as it did in Patañjali's Yoga-sūtra, and, in consequence, there is not one definition of yoga, but many. Thus yoga is used in the sense of karma-yoga, or the duty of performance of actions, in v. 1, and it is distinguished from the sāmkhya path, or the path of knowledge, in II. 39. The word karma-yoga is mentioned in III. 3 as the path of the yogins, and it is referred to in III. 7, v. 2 and xIII. 24. The word buddhi-yoga is also used at least three times, in II. 49, x. 10 and xVIII. 57, and the bhakti-yoga also is used at least once, in xIV. 26. The one meaning of yoga that suits all these different contexts seems to be "association." It has already been said that this primary meaning of the word is the central idea of yoga in the Gītā. One of the main teachings of

the Gitā is that duties should be performed, and it is this obligatoriness of the performance of duties that in the $Git\bar{a}$ is understood by karma-yoga. But, if such duties are performed from motives of self-interest or gain or pleasure, the performance could not lead to any higher end. It is advised, therefore, that they should be performed without any motive of gain or pleasure. So the proper way in which a man should perform his duties, and at the same time keep himself clean and untarnished by the good and bad results, the pleasures, and sorrows, the praise and blame proceeding out of his own deeds, is to make himself detached from all desires for the fruits of actions. To keep oneself detached from the desires for the fruits of actions is therefore the real art (kauśala) of performing one's duties; for it is only in this way that a man can make himself fit for the higher union with God or his own higher self. Here, then, we have a definition of yoga as the art of performing one's duties (yogah karmasu kausalam - II. 50). The art of performing one's duties, e.g. the art of keeping oneself unattached, cannot however be called yoga on its own account; it is probably so-called only because it is the indispensable step towards the attainment of the real yoga, or union with God. It is clear, therefore, that the word yoga has a gradual evolution to a higher and higher meaning, based no doubt on the primary root-meaning of "association."

It is important to note in this connection that the process of prānāyāma, regarded as indispensable in Patanjali's Yoga, is not considered so necessary either for karma-yoga, buddhi-yoga, or for the higher kind of yoga, e.g. communion with God. It has already been mentioned that the reference to prānāyāma is found only in connection with some kinds of substitution-meditations which have nothing to do with the main concept of yoga in the Gita. The expression samādhi is used thrice in the noun form in the Gītā, in II. 44, 53 and 54, and three times in the verb form, in VI. 7, XII. 9 and xvII. II; but the verb forms are not used in the technical sense of Patanjali, but in the simple root-meaning of $sam + \bar{a} + \sqrt{dh\bar{a}}$. "to give" or "to place" (arpaṇa or sthāpana). In two cases (II. 44 and 53) where the word samādhi is used as a noun it has been interpreted by both Sankara and Sridhara as meaning the object in which the mind is placed or to which it is directed for communion, viz. God1. The author of the Gitā is well aware of

¹ In 11. 44, however, Sankara considers this object of mind to be antahkarana

the moral conflict in man and thinks that it is only by our efforts to come into touch with our higher self that the littleness of passions and desires for fruits of actions and the preference of our smaller self-interests can be transcended. For, once man is in touch with his highest, he is in touch with God. He has then a broader and higher vision of man and his place in nature, and so he identifies himself with God and finds that he has no special interest of his own to serve. The low and the high, the sinful and the virtuous, are the same in his eyes; he perceives God in all things and all things in God, and it is this state of communion that is the real yoga of the Gitā; and it is because in this state all inequalities of race, creed, position, virtue and vice, high and low vanish, that this superior realization of universal equality is also called *yoga*. Not only is this union with God called *yoga*, but God Himself is called Yogeśvara, or the Lord of communion. As a result of this union, the yogin enjoys supreme bliss and ecstatic joy, and is free from the least touch of sorrow or pain; and this absolute freedom from pain or the state of bliss, being itself a result of yoga, is also called yoga. From the above survey it is clear that the yoga of the Gītā is quite different from the yoga of Patañjali, and it does not seem at all probable that the Gītā was aware of Patañjali's yoga or the technical terms used by him1.

The treatment of yoga in the Gītā is also entirely different from its treatment in almost all the Upaniṣads. The Katha Upaniṣad speaks of sense-control as being yoga; but sense-control in the Gītā is only a preliminary to yoga and not itself yoga. Most of the yoga processes described in the other Upaniṣads either speak of yoga with six accessories (ṣaḍ-aṅga yoga) or of yoga with eight accessories (aṣṭāṅga-yoga), more or less after the manner of Pataṇjali. They introduce elaborate details not only of breath-control or prāṇāyāma, but also of the nervous system of the body, iḍā, piṅgalā and suṣumṇā, the nerve plexus, mūlādhāra and other similar objects, after the manner of the later works on the Ṣaṭ-

or buddhi. But Śridhara considers this object to be God, and in 11. 53 Śańkara and Śridhara are unanimous that the object, or the support of the union or communion of the mind, is God.

¹ pasya me yogam aisvaram, 1x. 5, etām vibhūtim yogam ca, x. 7. In the above two passages the word yoga seems to have a different meaning, as it is used there in the sense of miraculous powers; but even there the commentators Sankara and Śrīdhara take it to mean "association" (yukti) and interpret aisvaram yogam as "association of miraculous powers."

cakra system. Thus the Amrta-nāda enumerates after the manner of Patanjali the six accessories of yoga as restraint (pratyāhāra), concentration (dhyāna), breath-control (prānāyāma), fixation (dhāranā), reasoning (tarka) and meditative absorption (samādhi), and describes the final object of yoga as ultimate loneliness of the self (kaivalya). The Amrta-bindu believes in an all-pervading Brahman as the only reality, and thinks that, since mind is the cause of all bondage and liberation, the best course for a yogin to adopt is to deprive the mind of all its objects and thus to stop the activity of the mind, and thereby to destroy it, and bring about Brahmahood. Brahman is described here as being absolutely indeterminate, uninferable, infinite and beginningless. The Ksurika merely describes prānāyāma, dhyāna, dhāranā and samādhi in association with the nerves, susumnā, pingalā, etc. and the nerve plexuses. The Tejo-bindu is a Vedantic Upanisad of the ultramonistic type, and what it calls *yoga* is only the way of realizing the nature of Brahman as one and as pure consciousness and the falsity of everything else. It speaks of this yoga as being of fifteen accessories (pañca-daśānga yoga). These are yama (sense-control through the knowledge that all is Brahman), niyama (repetition of the same kinds of thoughts and the avoidance of dissimilar ones), tyāga (giving up of the world-appearance through the realization of Brahman), silence, a solitary place, the proper posture, steadiness of mind, making the body straight and erect, perceiving the world as Brahman (drk-sthiti), cessation of all states and breath-control (prāna-samyamana), perceiving all objects of the mind as Brahman (pratyāhāra), fixing the mind always on Brahman (dhāranā), self-meditation and the realization of oneself as Brahman. This is, however, a scheme of yoga quite different from that of Patanjali, as well as from that of the Gītā. The Triśikhabrāhmaņa speaks of a yoga with eight accessories (astānga-yoga). where the eight accessories, though the same in name as the eight accessories of Patanjali, are in reality different therefrom. Thus yama here means want of attachment (vairāgya), niyama means attachment to the ultimate reality (anuraktih pare tattve), āsana means indifference to all things, prāna-samyamana means the realization of the falsity of the world, pratyāhāra means the inwardness of the mind, dhāranā means the motionlessness of the mind. dhyāna means thinking of oneself as pure consciousness, and samādhi means forgetfulness of dhyānas. Yet it again includes

within its yama and niyama almost all the virtues referred to by Patañiali. It also speaks of a number of postures after the hathavoga fashion, and of the movement of prāna in the nerve plexuses, the ways of purifying the nerves and the processes of breath-control. The object of yoga is here also the destruction of mind and the attainment of kaivalya. The Dursana gives an astānga-voga with yama, niyama, āsana, prānāyāma, pratyāhāra, dhāranā, dhyāna and samādhi more or less after the fashion of Patañjali, with a supplementary treatment of nerves $(n\bar{a}d\bar{i})$ and the movement of the $pr\bar{a}na$ and other vāyus in them. The final object of yoga here is the attainment of Brahmahood and the comprehension of the world as māyā and unreal. The Dhyāna-bindu describes the self as the essential link of all things, like the fragrance in flowers or the thread in a garland or the oil in sesamum. It describes a sad-anga yoga with āsana, prāna-samrodha, pratyāhāra, dhāranā, dhyāna and samādhi. It also describes the four cakras or nerve plexuses, and speaks of the awakening of the serpent power (kundalini) and the practice of the mudrās. It speaks further of the balancing or unifying of prāna and apāna as leading to yoga¹. The object of this yoga is the attainment of the transcendent state of liberation or the realization of the paramatman. It is useless to refer to other Upanisads; for what has already been said will be enough to show clearly that the idea of Yoga in the Gitā is entirely different from that in the Yoga Upanisads, most of which are of comparatively late date and are presumably linked up with traditions different from that of the Gitā.

Sāmkhya and Yoga in the Gītā.

In the Gītā Sāmkhya and Yoga are sometimes distinguished from each other as two different paths, and sometimes they are identified. But though the Gītā is generally based on the doctrines of the guṇas, prakṛti and its derivatives, yet the word sāmkhya is used here in the sense of the path of knowledge or of philosophic wisdom. Thus in the Gītā, II. 39, the path of knowledge is distinguished from that of performance of duties. Lord Kṛṣṇa says there that he has just described the wisdom of Sāmkhya and he is going to describe the wisdom of Yoga. This

¹ Tadā prāṇāpānayor aikyaṃ kṛṭvā; see Dhyāna-bindu, 93-5 (Adyar Library edition, 1920). This seems to be similar to prāṇāpānau samau kṛṭvē of the Gītā.

seems to give us a clue to what is meant by Sāṃkhya wisdom. This wisdom, however, seems to be nothing more than elaboration of the doctrine of the immortality of soul and the associated doctrine of rebirth, and also the doctrine that, howsoever the body might be affected and suffer changes of birth, growth and destruction, the self is absolutely unaffected by all these changes; the self cannot be cut or burned; it is eternal, all-pervasive, unchangeable. indescribable and unthinkable. In another passage of the Gitā. XIII. 25, it is said that there are others who perceive the self in accordance with sāmkhya-yoga; and Śankara explains this passage to mean that sāmkhya-yoga means the realization of the self as being absolutely different from the three gunas, sattva, rajas and tamas. If this is Sāmkhya, the meaning of the word yoga in this passage (anye sāmkhyena yogena) is not explained. Śankara does not expound the meaning of the word yoga, but explains the word sāmkhya and says that this sāmkhya is yoga, which seems to be an evasion. Śrīdhara follows Śankara's interpretation of sāmkhya, but finds it difficult to swallow his identification of sāmkhya with yoga, and he interprets yoga here as the yoga (of Patañjali) with eight accessories, but does not explain how this astānga-yoga can be identified with sāmkhya. It is, no doubt, true that in the immediately preceding verse it is said that, howsoever a man may behave, if he knows the proper nature of purusa and of the prakrti and the gunas, he is never born again; but there is no reason to suppose that the phrase sāmkhyena yogena refers to the wisdom recommended in the preceding verse; for this verse summarizes different paths of self-realization and says that there are some who perceive the self in the self through the self, by meditation. others by sāmkhya-yoga and others by karma-yoga. In another passage it is said that the Sāmkhyas follow the path of knowledge (jnāna-yoga), while the Yogins follow the path of duties (Gītā. 111. 3). If the word yoga means "association," as it does in various contexts, then sāmkhya and sāmkhya-yoga would mean more or less the same thing; for sāmkhva-voga would only mean association with sāmkhya, and the phrase sāmkhyena yogena might mean either association with sāmkhya or the union of sāmkhya. It has already been said that, following the indications of the Gītā. II. 39, sāmkhya should mean the realization of the true nature of the self as immortal, all-pervasive, unchangeable and infinite. It has also been pointed out that it is such a true realization of the

self, with its corresponding moral elevation, that leads to the true communion of the self with the higher self or God. Thus this meaning of sāmkhya on the one hand distinguishes the path of sāmkhya from the path of yoga as a path of performance of duties. and at the same time identifies the path of samkhya with the path of yoga as communion with God. Thus we find that the Gita, v. 4, 5, says that "fools only think Samkhya and Yoga to be different, not so wise men," since, accepting either of them, one attains the fruit of them both. The goal reached by the followers of Sāmkhya is also reached by the Yogins; he who perceives Sāmkhya and Yoga to be the same perceives them in the right perspective. In these passages sāmkhva and voga seem from the context to refer respectively to karma-sannyāsu and karma-yoga. Sāmkhya here can only in a secondary way mean the renunciation of the fruits of one's actions (karma-sannyāsa). The person who realizes the true nature of his self, and knows that the self is unchangeable and infinite, cannot feel himself attached to the fruits of his actions and cannot be affected by ordinary mundane desires and cravings. As in the case of the different uses of the word yoga, so here also the word sāmkhya, which primarily means "true knowledge," is also used to mean "renunciation"; and since karma-yoga means the performance of one's duties in a spirit of renunciation, sāmkhya and yoga mean practically the same thing and are therefore identified here; and they are both regarded as leading to the same results. This would be so, even if voga were used to denote "communion"; for the idea of performance of one's duties has almost always communion with God as its indispensable correlate. Thus in the two passages immediately following the identification of sāmkhya and voga we find the Gītā (v. 6, 7) saying that without karma-yoga it is hard to renounce karma; and the person who takes the path of karma-yoga speedily attains Brahman. The person who thus through karma-voga comes into union (with Brahman) is pure in spirit and self-controlled, and, having identified himself with the universal spirit in all beings, he is not affected by his deeds.

One thing that emerges from the above discussion is that there is no proof that the word sāmkhya in the Gītā means the discernment of the difference of prakṛti and the guṇas from puruṣa, as Sankara in one place suggests (Gītā, XIII. 25), or that it refers to the cosmology and ontology of prakṛti, the guṇas and their

evolutes of the traditional Kapila-Sāṃkhya. The philosophy of the guṇas and the doctrine of puruṣa were, no doubt, known to the Gītā; but nowhere is this philosophy called sāṃkhya. Sāṃkhya in the Gītā means true knowledge (tattva-jñāna) or self-knowledge (ātma-bodha). Saṅkara, commenting on the Gītā, XVIII. 13, interprets sāṃkhya to mean vedānta, though in verse XIII. 25 he interprets the word as meaning the discernment of the difference between the guṇas and the puruṣa, which would decidedly identify the sāṃkhya of the Gītā with the Kapila-Sāmkhya.

The Mahā-bhārata also refers to sāmkhya and yoga in several places. But in almost all places sāmkhya means either the traditional school of Kapila-Sāmkhya or some other school of Sāmkhya, more or less similar to it: yoga also most often refers either to the yoga of Patañjali or some earlier forms of it. In one place are found passages identifying sāmkhya and yoga, which agree almost word for word with similar passages of the Gitā1. But it does not seem that the sāmkhya or the yoga referred to in the Mahā-bhārata has anything to do with the idea of Sāmkhya or yoga in the Gitā. As has already been pointed out, the yoga in the Gitā means the dedication to God and renunciation of the fruits of one's karma and being in communion with Him as the supreme Lord pervading the universe. The chapter of the Mahābhārata just referred to speaks of turning back the senses into the manas and of turning the manas into ahamkāra and ahamkāra into buddhi and buddhi into prakrti, thus finishing with prakrti and its evolutes and meditating upon pure purusa. It is clear that this system of yoga is definitely associated with the Kapila school of Sāmkhya. In the Mahā-bhārata, XII. 306, the predominant feature of yoga is said to be dhyāna, and the latter is said to consist of concentration of mind (ekāgratā ca manasah) and breath-control (prāṇāyāma). It is said that the yogin should stop the functions of his senses by his mind, and the movement of his mind by his reason (buddhi), and in this stage he is said to be linked up (vukta) and is like a motionless flame in a still place2. This passage naturally reminds one of the description of dhyāna-yoga in the Gītā, vi. 11-13, 16-19 and 25, 26; but the fundamental idea of yoga,

¹ yad eva yogāḥ paśyanti tat sāmkhyair api drśyate ekam sāmkhyan ca yogan ca yaḥ paśyati sa tattva-vit. Mahā-bhārata, vII. 316. 4. Compare the Gītā, v. 5.
² Cf. the Gītā, vI. 19, yathā dīpo nivāta-sthah, etc.

as the dedication of the fruits of actions to God and communion with Him, is absent here.

It is needless to point out here that the yoga of the $Git\bar{a}$ is in no way connected with the yoga of Buddhism. In Buddhism the sage first practises sīla, or sense-control and mind-control, and thus prepares himself for a course of stabilization or fixation of the mind (samādhāna, upadhārana, patitthā). This samādhi means the concentration of the mind on right endeavours and of its states upon one particular object (ekārammana), so that they may completely cease to shift and change (sammā ca avikkhippamānā). The sage has first to train his mind to view with disgust the appetitive desires for food and drink and their ultimate loathsome transformations as various nauseating bodily elements. When a man habituates himself to emphasizing the disgusting associations of food and drink, he ceases to have any attachment to them and simply takes them as an unavoidable evil, only awaiting the day when the final dissolution of all sorrows will come. Secondly, the sage has to habituate his mind to the idea that all his members are made up of the four elements, earth, water, fire and wind, like the carcass of a cow at the butcher's shop. Thirdly, he has to habituate his mind to thinking again and again (anussati) about the virtues or greatness of the Buddha, the Sangha, the gods and the law of the Buddha, about the good effects of sīla and the making of gifts (cāgānussati), about the nature of death (maranānussati) and about the deep nature and qualities of the final extinction of all phenomena (upasamānussati). He has also to pass through various purificatory processes. He has to go to the cremation grounds and notice the diverse horrifying changes of human carcasses and think how nauseating, loathsome, unsightly and impure they are; from this he will turn his mind to living human bodies and convince himself that they, being in essence the same as dead carcasses, are as loathsome as the latter. He should think of the anatomical parts and constituents of the body as well as of their processes, and this will help him to enter into the first jhāna, or meditation, by leading his mind away from his body. As an aid to concentration the sage should sit in a quiet place and fix his mind on the inhaling (passāsa) and the exhaling (assāsa) of his breath. so that, instead of breathing in a more or less unconscious manner, he may be aware whether he is breathing quickly or slowly; he ought to mark this definitely by counting numbers, so that by

fixing his mind on the numbers counted he may realize the whole process of inhalation and exhalation in all stages of its course. Next to this we come to brahma-vihāra, the fourfold meditation of mettā (universal friendship), karunā (universal pity), muditā (happiness in the prosperity and happiness of all) and upekkhā (indifference to any kind of preferment of oneself, one's friend, enemy or a third party). In order to habituate himself to meditation on universal friendship, a man should start with thinking how he would himself like to root out all misery and become happy, how he would himself like to avoid death and live cheerfully, and then pass over to the idea that other beings would also have the same desires. He should thus habituate himself to thinking that his friends, his enemies and all those with whom he is not connected might all live and become happy. He should fix himself to such an extent in this meditation that he should not find any difference between the happiness or safety of himself and that of others. Coming to ihanas, we find that the objects of concentration may be earth, water, fire, wind, colours, etc. In the first stage of concentration on an object there is comprehension of the name and form of the object; at the next stage the relational movement ceases, and the mind penetrates into the object without any quivering. In the next two stages there is a buoyant exaltation and a steady inward bliss, and, as a result of the onepointedness which is the culminating effect of the progressive meditation, there is the final release of the mind (ceto-vimutti) the Nibbāna.

It is easy to see that, though Patañjali's yoga is under a deep debt of obligation to this Buddhist yoga, the yoga of the Gītā is unacquainted therewith. The pessimism which fills the Buddhist yoga is seen to affect not only the outlook of Patañjali's yoga, but also most of the later Hindu modes of thought, in the form of the advisability of reflecting on the repulsive sides of things (pratipakṣa-bhāvanā) which are seemingly attractive. The ideas of universal friendship, etc. were also taken over by Patañjali and later on passed into Hindu works. The methods of concentration on various ordinary objects also seem to be quite unlike what we find in the Gītā. The Gītā is devoid of any tinge of pessimism such as we find in the Buddhist yoga. It does not anywhere recommend the habit of brooding over the repulsive

¹ See Nyāya-mañjarī, Vairāgya-śataka, Śānti-śataka.

aspects of all things, so as to fill our minds with a feeling of disgust for all worldly things. It does not rise to the ideal of regarding all beings as friends or to that of universal compassion. Its sole aim is to teach the way of reaching the state of equanimity. in which the saint has no preferences, likes and dislikes—where the difference between the sinner and the virtuous, the self and the not-self has vanished. The idea of yoga as self-surrendering union with God and self-surrendering performance of one's duties is the special feature which is absent in Buddhism. This selfsurrender in God, however, occurs in Patañjali's yoga, but it is hardly in keeping with the technical meaning of the word yoga, as the suspension of all mental states. The idea appears only once in. Patañjali's sūtras, and the entire method of yoga practices, as described in the later chapters, seems to take no notice of it. It seems highly probable, therefore, that in Patañjali's sūtras the idea was borrowed from the Gītā, where this self-surrender to God and union with Him is defined as yoga and is the central idea which the Gītā is not tired of repeating again and again.

We have thus completely failed to trace the idea of the Gitā to any of the different sources where the subject of yoga is dealt with, such as the Yoga Upaniṣads, Patañjali's Yoga-sūtras, Buddhist Yoga, or the Mahā-bhārata. It is only in the Pañca-rātra works that the Gitā meaning of yoga as self-surrender to God is found. Thus Ahirbudhnya-samhitā describes yoga as the worship of the heart (hrdayārādhana), the offering of an oblation (havih) of oneself to God or self-surrender to God (bhagavate ātma-samarpaṇam), and yoga is defined as the linking up (saṃyoga) of the lower self (jīvātman) with the higher self (paramātman). It seems, therefore, safe to suggest that the idea of yoga in the Gītā has the same traditional source as in the Pañca-rātra works.

Sāṃkhya Philosophy in the Gītā.

It has been said before that there is no proof that the word $s\bar{a}mkhya$ in the $G\bar{\imath}t\bar{a}$ means the traditional $S\bar{a}mkhya$ philosophy; yet the old philosophy of prakṛti and puruṣa forms the basis of the philosophy of the $G\bar{\imath}t\bar{a}$. This philosophy may be summarized as follows:

¹ The Ahirbudhnya-saṃhitā, of course, introduces many observations about the nerves (nāḍi) and the vāyus, which probably became associated with the Pañca-rātra tradition in later times.

Prakrti is called mahad brahma (the great Brahma or the great multiplier as procreatress) in the $Git\bar{a}$, xiv. 3^1 . It is said there that this prakrti is described as being like the female part, which God charges with His energy for the creation of the universe. Wherever any living beings may be born, the great Brahman or prakrti is to be considered as the female part and God as the father and fertilizer. Three types of qualities are supposed to be produced from prakṛti (guṇāh prakṛti-sambhavāh)2. These are sattva, rajas and tamas, which bind the immortal self in its corporeal body. Of these, sattva, on account of its purity, is illuminating and untroubling (anāmayam, which Śrīdhara explains as nirupadravam or śāntam), and consequently, on account of these two qualities, binds the self with the attachment for knowledge (jñäna-sangena) and the attachment for pleasure (sukha-sangena). It is said that there are no living beings on earth, or gods in the heavens, who are not pervaded by the three gunas produced from the prakrti³. Since the gunas are produced from the prakrti through the fertilization of God's energy in prakrti, they may be said to be produced by God, though God always transcends them. The quality of sattva, as has been said above, associates the self with the attachments for pleasure and knowledge. The quality of rajas moves to action and arises from desire and attachment (trsnāsanga-samudbhavam), through which it binds the self with egoistic attachments for action. The quality of tamas overcomes the illumination of knowledge and leads to many errors. Tamas, being a product of ignorance, blinds all living beings and binds them down with carelessness, idleness and sleep. These three qualities predominate differently at different times. Thus, sometimes the quality of sattva predominates over rajas and tamas, and such a time is characterized by the rise of knowledge in the mind through all the different sense-gates; when rajas dominates sattva and tamas, the mind is characterized by greed, efforts and endeavours for different kinds of action and the rise of passions, emotions and desires; when tamas predominates over sattva and rajas, there is ignorance, lethargy, errors, delusions and false beliefs.

The different categories are avyakta, or the undifferentiated

¹ mama yonir mahad brahma tasmin garbham dadhāmy aham. XIV. 3. I have interpreted mahad brahma as prakṛti, following Śrīdhara and other commentators. Śaṅkara surreptitiously introduces the word māyā between mama and yoni and changes the whole meaning.

² Gitā, xīv. 5.

³ Ibid. xvIII. 40.

prakrti, buddhi (intellect), ahamkāra (egohood), manas (mind-organ) and the ten senses, cognitive and conative. Manas is higher and subtler than the senses, and buddhi is higher than the manas, and there is that (probably self) which transcends buddhi. Manas is regarded as the superintendent of the different senses; it dominates them and through them enjoys the sense-objects. The relation between the buddhi and ahamkāra is nowhere definitely stated. In addition to these, there is the category of the five elements (mahābhūta)¹. It is difficult to say whether these categories were regarded in the Gitā as being the products of prakrti or as separately existing categories. It is curious that they are nowhere mentioned in the Gitā as being products of prakrti, which they are in Sāmkhya, but on the other hand, the five elements, manas, ahamkāra and buddhi are regarded as being the eightfold nature (prakrti) of God2. It is also said that God has two different kinds of nature, a lower and a higher; the eightfold nature just referred to represents the lower nature of God, whereas His higher nature consists of the collective universe of life and spirit3. The gunas are noticed in relation to prakrti in III. 5, 27, 29, XIII. 21, XIV. 5, XVIII. 40, and in all these places the gunas are described as being produced from prakrti, though the categories are never said to be produced from prakrti. In the Gītā, IX. 10, however, it is said that prakrti produces all that is moving and all that is static through the superintendence of God. The word prakrti is used in at least two different senses, as a primary and ultimate category and as a nature of God's being. It is quite possible that the primary meaning of prakrti in the Gītā is God's nature; the other meaning of prakrti, as an ultimate principle from which the gunas are produced, is simply the hypostatization of God's nature. The whole group consisting of pleasure, pain, aversion, volition, consciousness, the eleven senses, the mind-organ, the five elements, egohood, intellect (buddhi), the undifferentiated (avyakta, meaning prakrti existing, probably, as the sub-conscious mind) power of holding the senses and the power of holding together the diverse mental functions (samghāta) with their modifications and changes, is called ksetra. In another place the body alone is called ksetra4. It seems, therefore, that the word ksetra signifies in its broader sense not only the body, but also the entire mental plane, involving

¹ Gītā, III. 42, XIII. 6 and 7, XV. 9.

² Ibid. VII. 4.

³ *Ibid.* vii. 5.

⁴ Ibid. XIII. 2.

the diverse mental functions, powers, capabilities, and also the undifferentiated sub-conscious element. In this connection it may be pointed out that *kṣetra* is a term which is specially reserved to denote the complex of body and mind, exclusive of the living principle of the self, which is called *kṣetra-jña*, or the knower of the *kṣetra*, or *kṣetrin*, the possessor of the *kṣetra* or the body-mind complex. It is said that, just as the sun illuminates this whole world, so does the *kṣetrin* illuminate the whole *kṣetra*.

It will be remembered that it is said in the Gītā that God has two different natures, one the complex whole of the five elements, ahamkära, buddhi, etc., and the other the collective whole of life and spirit (jīva-bhūta). It will also be remembered that, by the fertilization of God's power in prakrti, the gunas, or the characteristic qualities, which pervade all that is living, come into being. The gunas, therefore, as diverse dynamic tendencies or characteristic qualities, pervade the entire psychosis-complex of ahamkāra, buddhi, the senses, consciousness, etc., which represents the mental side of the ksetra. Ksetra-jña, or the ksetrin, is in all probability the same as purusa, an all-pervading principle as subtle as ākāśa (space), which, though it is omnipresent, remains untouched by any of the qualities of the body, in which it manifests itself. It is difficult to say what, according to the Gitā, prakṛti is in itself, before the fertilization of God's energy. It does not seem that prakrti can be regarded as being identical with God. It appears more to be like an ultimate principle coexistent with God and intimately connected with Him. There is, however, no passage in the Gītā by which the lower prakrti of God, consisting of the categories, etc., can be identified with prakrti; for prakrti is always associated with the gunas and their production. Again, it is nowhere said in the Gitā that the categories ahamkāra, senses. etc., are in any way the products of the gunas; the word guna seems to imply only the enjoyable, emotional and moral or immoral qualities. It is these gunas which move us to all kinds of action, produce attachments and desires, make us enjoy or suffer, and associate us with virtues and vices. Prakrti is regarded as the mother-source from which all the knowable, enjoyable, and dynamic qualities of experience, referred to as being generated by the successive preponderance of the gunas, are produced. The categories of the psychosis and the five elements, which form the

mental ground, do not, therefore, seem to be products of the gunas or the prakrti. They seem to constitute a group by themselves, which is referred to as being a lower nature of God, side by side with His higher nature as life and spirit. Ksetra is a complex of both the guna elements of experience and the complex categories of body and mind. There seem, therefore, to be three different principles, the aparā prakṛti (the lower nature), parā prakṛti or purusa, and prakrti. Prakrti produces the gunas, which constitute experience-stuff; the aparā prakrti holds within itself the material world of the five elements and their modifications as our bodies, the senses and the mind-categories. It seems very probable, therefore, that a later development of Samkhya combined these two prakrtis as one, and held that the gunas produced not only the stuff of our experience, but also all the mind-categories, the senses, etc., and the five gross elements and their modifications. The gunas, therefore, are not the products of prakrti, but they themselves constitute prakrti, when in a state of equilibrium. In the Gītā prakrti can only produce the gunas through the fertilizing energy of God; they do not constitute the prakrti, when in a state of equilibrium. It is hard to realize the connection between the aparā prakrti and the prakrti and the gunas. The connection, however, can be imagined to take place through the medium of God, who is the fertilizer and upholder of them both. There seems to be but one purusa, as the all-pervading fundamental life-principle which animates all bodies and enjoys and suffers by its association with its experiences, remaining at the same time unaffected and untouched by the effects of the gunas. This naturally presumes that there is also a higher and a lower purusa, of which the former is always unattached to and unaffected by the gunas, whereas the lower purusa, which is different in different bodies, is always associated with the prakrti and its gunas and is continually affected by their operations. Thus it is said that the purusa, being in prakrti, enjoys the gunas of prakrti and this is the cause of its rebirth in good or bad bodies1. There is also in this body the higher purusa (purusah parah), which is also called paramatman, being the passive perceiver, thinker, upholder, enjoyer and the great lord2. The word puruşa is used in the Gītā in four distinct senses, firstly, in the

¹ Gītā, XIII. 21.

upadrastānumantā ca bhartā bhoktā mahesvaraḥ paramātmeti cāpy ukto dehe 'smin puruṣaḥ paraḥ. Ibid. xɪɪɪ. :3.

sense of purusottama, or God1; secondly, in the sense of a person2; and the Gitā distinctly speaks of the two other purusas as kṣara (changeable) and akşara (unchangeable). The kṣara is all living beings, whereas the aksara is changeless. It is this higher self (uttamah purusah), different from the other purusa and called also paramatman, that pervades the three worlds and upholds them as their deathless God³. God, however, transcends both the ksara purusa and the aksara purusa and is therefore called purusottama4. Both prakrti and the paramatman purusa are beginningless. The paramātman puruşa, being changeless and beyond the sphere of the gunas, is neither the agent of anything nor affected by the gunas, though it resides in the body. Prakti is regarded as the ground through which all causes, effects, and their agents are determined. It is the fundamental principle of all dynamic operations, motivations and actions, whereas purusa is regarded as the principle which makes all experiences of joys and sorrows possible⁵. The paramatman purusa, therefore, though all-pervasive, vet exists in each individual, being untouched by its experiences of joy, sorrow and attachment, as its higher self. It is only the lower self that goes through the experiences and is always under the influence of the gunas. Any attempts that may be made to rise above the sphere of the gunas, above attachments and desires, above pleasures and pains, mean the subordination of the lower self to the pure and deathless higher self. Every attempt in this direction implies a temporary communion (yoga) with the higher self. It has already been pointed out that the Gitā recognizes a conflict between the higher and the lower selves and advises us to raise the lower self by the higher self. In all our moral efforts there is always an upward and a downward pull by the higher purusa on the one side, and the gunas on the other; yet the higher purusa does not itself make the pulls. The energy of the downward pull is derived from the gunas and exerted by the lower self. In all these efforts the higher self stands as the unperturbed ideal of equanimity, steadiness, unchangeableness in good or evil, joys or sorrows. The presence of this superior self is sometimes intuited by self-meditation, sometimes through philosophic knowledge, and sometimes by our moral

¹ sanātanas tvam puruşo mato me. Gītā, xi. 18. tram ādi-devah puruşah purāṇah. Ibid. xi. 38. For puruşatama see ibid. viii. 1, x. 15, xi. 3, xv. 18 and xv. 19. ² Ibid. ii. 15, ii. 21, ii. 60, iii. 4, etc. ³ Ibid. xv. 16 and 17. ⁴ Ibid. xv. 15 and 18. ⁵ Ibid. xiii. 20.

efforts to perform our duties without attachment and without desires¹. Each moral effort to perform our allotted duties without attachment means also a temporary communion (yoga) with the higher self or with God. A true philosophic knowledge, by which all actions are known to be due to the operations of the prakṛti and its gunas and which realizes the unattached nature of the true self, the philosophic analysis of action and the relation between God, the higher self, the lower self, and the prakṛti, and any devotional realization of the nature of God and dedication of all action to Him, and the experience of the supreme bliss of living in communion with Him, mean a communion with the higher self or God, and are therefore yoga.

It is easy to notice here the beginnings of a system of thought which in the hands of other thinkers might well be developed into the traditional school of Sāmkhya philosophy. It has already been pointed out that the two prakrtis naturally suggested the idea of unifying them into the one prakrti of the Samkhya. The higher and the lower purusas, where the latter enjoys and suffers, while the former remains unchanged and unperturbed amidst all the experiences of joy and sorrow on the part of the latter, naturally remind one of the Upanisadic simile of the two birds in the same tree, of whom the one eats tasteful fruits while the other remains contented without them2. The Gita does not seem to explain clearly the nature of the exact relation between the higher purusa and the lower purusa. It does not definitely state whether the lower purusa is one or many, or describe its exact ontological states. It is easy to see how any attempt that would aim at harmonizing these two apparently loosely-connected purusas into one self-consistent and intelligible concept might naturally end in the theory of infinite, pure, all-pervasive purusas and make the lower purusa the product of a false and illusory mutual reflection of prakrti and purusa. The Gītā uses the word māvā in three passages (VII. 14 and 15, XVIII. 61); but it seems to be used there in the sense of an inscrutable power or ignorance, and not in that of illusory or magical creation. The idea that the world or any of the mental or spiritual categories could be merely an illusory appearance seems never to have been

dhyānenātmani paśyanti kecid ātmānam ātmanā anye sāmkhyena yogena karma-yogena cāpare. Gtā, XIII. 25.
Mundaka, III. 1. 1 and Švetāśvatara, 4. 6.

contemplated in the Gitā. It is not, therefore, conceivable that the lower, or the ksara, purusa might be mere illusory creation, accepted as a necessary postulate to explain the facts of our undeniable daily experience. But it is difficult to say how this kṣetra-jña purusa can have a separate existence from the para purusa (which is absolutely free from the gunas), as enjoying the gunas of prakrti, unless the former be somehow regarded as the result of the functioning of the latter. Such a view would naturally support a theory that would regard the lower purusa as being only the para purusa as imaged or reflected in the gunas. The para purusa, existing by itself, free from the influence of the gunas, is in its purity. But even without losing its unattached character and its lonely purity it may somehow be imaged in the gunas and play the part of the phenomenal self, the jiva or the lower purusa, enjoying the gunas of prakrti and having the superior purusa as its ultimate ground. It cannot be denied that the Gītā theory of puruşa is much looser than the later Samkhya theory; but it has the advantage of being more elastic, as it serves better to explain the contact of the lower purusa with the higher and thereby charges the former with the spirit of a higher ideal.

The qualities of sattva, rajas and tamas were regarded as the universal characteristics of all kinds of mental tendencies, and all actions were held to be prompted by specific kinds of sattva, rajas or tamas. Mental tendencies were also designated accordingly as sāttvika, rājasa or tāmasa. Thus religious inclinations (śraddhā) are also described as being of a threefold nature. Those who are of sāttvika nature worship the gods, those who are of rājasa nature worship the yaksas and the raksas and those who are of tāmasa nature worship ghosts and demons. Those who, prompted by vanity, desires and attachments, perform violent ascetic penances unauthorized by the scriptures and thereby starve and trouble their body and spirit, are really demoniac in their temperament. Again, sāttvika sacrifices are those performed solely out of reverence for the scriptural injunctions and from a pure sense of duty, without any desire or motive for any other kind of worldly or heavenly good. Again, rājasa sacrifices are those which are performed for the realization of some benefits or good results or for the satisfaction of some vanity or pride. Tāmasa sacrifices are those which are performed without proper faith, with improper ceremonials, transgressing Vedic injunctions. Again, tapas also is described as

being threefold, as of body (śārīra), of speech (vānmaya) and of mind (mānasa). Adoration of gods, Brahmins, teachers and wise men, sincerity and purity, sex-continence and non-injury are known as physical or bodily tapas. To speak in a manner that would be truthful, attractive, and conducive to good and would not be harmful in any way, and to study in the regular and proper way are regarded as the tapas of speech (vān-maya tapas). Mental (mānasa) tapas consists of sincerity of mind, friendliness of spirit, thoughtfulness and mental control, self-control and purity of mind. The above threefold tapas performed without any attachment for a reward is called sāttvika tapas. But tapas performed out of vanity, or for the sake of higher position, respectability in society, or appreciation from people, is called rajasa—such a tapas can lead only to unsteady and transient results. Again, the tapas which is performed for the destruction of others by ignorant self-mortification is called tāmasa tapas. Gifts, again, are called sāttvika when they are made to proper persons (holy Brahmins) on auspicious occasions, and in holy places, merely out of sense of duty. Gifts are called rājasa when they are made as a return for the good done to the performer, for gaining future rewards, or made unwillingly. Again, gifts are called tāmasa when they are made slightingly, to improper persons, in unholy places, and in ordinary places. Those who desire liberation perform sacrifices and tapas and make gifts without aiming at the attainment of any mundane or heavenly benefits. Knowledge also is regarded as sāttvika, rājasa and tāmasa. Sāttvika wisdom consists in looking for unity and diversity and in realizing one unchangeable reality in the apparent diversity of living beings. Rājasa knowledge consists in the scientific apprehension of things or living beings as diverse in kind, character and number. Tāmasa knowledge consists in narrow and untrue beliefs which are satisfied to consider a little thing as the whole and entire truth through sheer dogmatism, and unreasonable delusion or attachment. An action is called sāttvika when it is performed without any desire for a reward, without attachment and without aversion. It is called rājasa when it is performed with elaborate endeavours and efforts, out of pride and vanity, for the satisfaction of one's desires. It is called tāmasa when it is undertaken out of ignorance and without proper judgment of one's own capacities, and when it leads to waste of energy, harm and injury. An agent (kartr) is called sattvika when he is free from attachment

and vanity and absolutely unruffled in success and failure, persevering and energetic. Again, an agent is called rajasa if he acts out of motives of self-interest, is impure, is filled with sorrow or joy in failure or success, and injures others. An agent is called tāmasa if he is careless, haughty, thoughtless, deceptive, arrogant, idle, procrastinating and melancholic. Understanding (buddhi) is said to be sāttvika when it grasps how a man has to set himself in the path of virtue, how to refrain from vice, what ought and what ought not to be done, of what one has to be afraid and how to be fearless, what is bondage, and what is liberation. Rājasa understanding is that by which one wrongly grasps the nature of virtue and vice, and of right and wrong conduct. Tamasa understanding is that which takes vice as virtue and out of ignorance perceives all things wrongly. That mental hold (dhrti) is called sāttvika which by unfailing communion holds together the sense-functions and biomotor and mind activities. That happiness which in the beginning appears to be painful, but which is in the end as sweet as nectar, and which is the direct result of gaiety of mind, is called sāttvika sukha. The happiness arising out of sense-object contact, which in the beginning is as attractive as nectar, but in the end is as painful as poison, is rājasa. That happiness which arises out of sleep, idleness and errors, and blinds one in the beginning and in the end, is called tāmasa. So also the food which increases life, facilitates mind-function, increases powers of enjoyment, makes one healthy and strong, and is sweet, resistible and delightful is liked by the sāttvika people. That food is liked by rājasa people which is hot, sour, salt, dry and causes pain and brings on diseases. The food which is impure, tasteless, old and rotten is liked by tāmasa people. All this goes to show that the gunas, sattva, rajas and tamas, are determinants of the tendencies of, or rather the stuff of, the moral and immoral, pleasurable and painful planes or characteristics of our experience. Sattva represents the moral and supermoral planes, rajas the ordinary mixed and normal plane, and tamas the inferior and immoral characteristics of our experience.

Avyakta and Brahman.

The word avyakta is primarily used in the Gitā in the sense of "the unmanifested." Etymologically the word consists of two parts, the negative particle a meaning "negation," and vyakta meaning "manifested," "differentiated" or "revealed." In this

sense the word is used as an adjective. There is another use of the word in the neuter gender (avyaktam), in the sense of a category. As an illustration of the first sense, one may refer to the Gita, II. 25 or VIII. 21. Thus in II. 25 the self is described as the unmanifested; unthinkable and unchangeable. In the Upanisads, however, it is very unusual to characterize the self as avvakta or unmanifested; for the self there is pure consciousness and self-manifested. In all later Vedantic works the self is described as anubhūti-svabhāva, or as being always immediately intuited. But in the $Git\bar{a}$ the most prominent characteristic of the self is that it is changeless and deathless; next to this, it is unmanifested and unthinkable. But it does not seem that the Gitā describes the self as pure consciousness. Not only does it characterize the self as avyakta or unmanifested, but it does not seem anywhere to refer to it as a self-conscious principle. The word cetanā, which probably means consciousness, is described in the Gitā as being a part of the changeable ksetra, and not the ksetra $i\tilde{n}a^{1}$. It may naturally be asked how, if the self was not a conscious principle, could it be described as ksetra-iña (that which knows the ksetra)? But it may well be replied that the self here is called ksetra-jña only in relation to its ksetra, and the implication would be that the self becomes a conscious principle not by virtue of its own inherent principle of consciousness, but by virtue of the principle of consciousness reflected or offered to it by the complex entity of the ksetra. The ksetra contains within it the conscious principle known as cetanā, and it is by virtue of its association with the self that the self appears as ksetra-jña or the knower.

It may not be out of place here to mention that the term kṣetra is never found in the Upaniṣads in the technical sense in which it is used in the Gītā. The term kṣetra-jña, however, appears in Śvetāśvatara, vi. 16 and Maitrāyaṇa, ii. 5 in the sense of puruṣa, as in the Gītā. The term kṣetra, however, as used in the Gītā, has more or less the same sense that it has in Caraka's account of Sāṃkhya in the Caraka-saṃhitā, iii. 1.61-63. In Caraka, however, avyakta is excluded from the complex constituent kṣetra, though in the Gītā it is included within the constituents of kṣetra. Caraka again considers avyakta (by which term he means both the Sāṃkhya prakṛti and the puruṣa) as kṣetra-jña, whereas the Gītā takes only the puruṣa as kṣetra-jña. The puruṣa of the Gītā is further

¹ Gitā, XIII. 7.

characterized as the life-principle (jīva-bhūta, VII. 5 and XV. 7) by which the whole world is upheld. The Gītā does not, however, describe in what particular way the life-principle upholds the world. In Caraka's account also the atman is referred to as the life-principle. and it is held there that it is the principle which holds together the buddhi, the senses, the mind and the objects-it is also the principle for which good, bad, pleasure, pain, bondage, liberation, and in fact the whole world-process happens. In the Caraka-samhitā purusa is regarded as cetanā-dhātu, or the upholder of consciousness; yet it is not regarded as conscious by itself. Consciousness only comes to it as a result of the joint operation of manas. the senses, the objects, etc. In the Gītā purusa is not regarded as the cetanā-dhātu, but cetanā or consciousness is regarded as being a constituent of the ksetra over which the purusa presides. Thus knowledge can accrue to purusa as ksetra-jña, only in association with its ksetra. It may well be supposed that purusa as ksetra-iña and as a life-principle upholds the constituents of the ksetra, and it is probable that the purusa's position as a cognizer or knower depends upon this intimate association between itself and the ksetra.

Another relevant point is suggested along with the considerations of the nature of the purusa as the cognizer, namely, the consideration of the nature of purusa as an agent (kartr). It will be pointed out in another section that the fruition of actions is rendered possible by the combined operations of adhisthana, kartr. kārana, cestā and daiva, and this doctrine has been regarded as being a Sāmkhya doctrine, though it has been interpreted by Sankara as being a Vedantic view. But both Samkhya and the Vedanta theories are explicitly of the sat-kārya-vāda type. According to the sat-kārya-vāda of the traditional Sāmkhya philosophy the fruition of actions is the natural result of a course of unfolding evolution, consisting in the actualization of what was already potentially present. On the Vedantic sat-kārva-vāda view all operations are but mere appearances, and the cause alone is true. Neither of these doctrines would seem to approve of a theory of causation which would imply that anything could be the result of the joint operation of a number of factors. That which is not cannot be produced by the joint operation of a collocation of causes. It may be remembered, however, that the Gitā explicitly formulates the basic principle of sat-kārya-vāda, that what exists cannot be destroyed and that what does not exist cannot come into being.

This principle was applied for proving the deathless character of the self. It is bound to strike anyone as very surprising that the Gītā should accept the sat-kārya-vāda doctrine in establishing the immortality of the self and should assume the a-sat-kārya-vāda doctrine regarding the production of action. It is curious, however, to note that a similar view regarding the production of action is to be found in Caraka's account of Sāmkhya, where it is said that all actions are produced as a result of a collocation of causes—that actions are the results of the collocation of other entities with the agent (kartr)¹.

The word avyakta is also used in the sense of "unknowability" or "disappearance" in the Gita, 11. 28, where it is said that the beginnings of all beings are invisible and unknown; it is only in the middle that they are known, and in death also they disappear and become unknown. But the word avyakta in the neuter gender means a category which is a part of God Himself and from which all the manifested manifold world has come into being. This avyakta is also referred to as a prakrti or nature of God, which, under His superintendence, produces the moving and the unmoved—the entire universe². But God Himself is sometimes referred to as being avyakta (probably because He cannot be grasped by any of our senses), as an existence superior to the avyakta, which is described as a part of His nature, and as a category from which all things have come into being³. This avvakta which is identical with God is also called aksara, or the immortal, and is regarded as the last resort of all beings who attain their highest and most perfect realization. Thus there is a superior avyakta, which represents the highest essence of God, and an inferior avyakta, from which the world is produced. Side by side with these two avvaktas there is also the prakrti, which is sometimes described as a coexistent principle and as the $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ or the blinding power of God, from which the gunas are produced.

The word "Brahman" is used in at least two or three different senses. Thus in one sense it means *prakṛti*, from which the *guṇas* are produced. In another sense it is used as an essential nature of God. In another sense it means the Vedas. Thus in the Gītā,

¹ Caraka-samhitā, IV. 1. 54.

² Gītā, IX. 10, mayādhyaksena prakrtih sūyate sacarācaram.

⁸ Ibid. VIII. 20 and VIII. 21; also IX. 4, where it is said, "All the world is pervaded over by me in my form as avyakta; all things and all living beings are in me, but I am not exhausted in them."

III. 15, it is said that the sacrificial duties are derived from Brahman (Vedas). Brahman is derived from the eternal; therefore the omnipresent Brahman is always established in the sacrifices1. The idea here is that, since the Vedas have sprung from the eternal Brahman, its eternal and omnipresent character is transmitted to the sacrifices also. The word "omnipresent" (sarva-gata) is probably used in reference to the sacrifices on account of the diverse and manifold ways in which the sacrifices are supposed to benefit those who perform them. In the Gita, IV. 32, also the word "Brahman" in Brahmano mukhe is used to denote the Vedas. But in IV. 24 and 25, where it is said that all sacrifices are to be made with the Brahman as the object and that the sacrificial materials, sacrificial fire, etc. are to be looked upon as being Brahman, the word "Brahman" is in all probability used in the sense of God2. In v. 6, 10, 19 also the word "Brahman" is used in the sense of God or Isvara; and in most of the other cases the word is used in the sense of God. But according to the Gitā the personal God as Iśvara is the supreme principle, and Brahman, in the sense of a qualityless, undifferentiated ultimate principle as taught in the Upanisads, is a principle which, though great in itself and representing the ultimate essence of God, is nevertheless upheld by the personal God or Isvara. Thus, though in VIII. 3 and X. 12 Brahman is referred to as the differenceless ultimate principle, yet in xiv. 27 it is said that God is the support of even this ultimate principle, Brahman. In many places we also hear of the attainment of Brahmahood (brahma-bhūta, v. 24, VI. 27, XVIII. 54, or brahma-bhūva, XIV. 26). and also of the attainment of the ultimate bliss of Brahman (Brahma-nirvāna, 11. 72, v. 24, 25, 26). The word brahma-bhūta does not in the Gitā mean the differenceless merging into oneness, as in the Vedanta of Sankara. It is wrong to think that the term "Brahman" is always used in the same sense in which Sankara used it. The word "Brahman" is used in the sense of an ultimate differenceless principle in the Upanisads, and the Upanisads were apprized by all systems of Hindu thought as the repository of all sacred knowledge. Most systems regarded the attainment of a changeless eternal state as the final goal of realization. As an illustration, I may refer to the account of

¹ Gitā, III. 15.

² Śridhara, in interpreting this verse (IV. 24), explains it by saying, tad evam parameśwarārādhana-lakṣanam kar na jñāna-hetutvena bandhakatvābhāvād akarmaiya

Sāmkhya given by Caraka, in which it is said that, when a man gives up all attachment and mental and physical actions, all feelings and knowledge ultimately and absolutely cease. At this stage he is reduced to Brahmahood (brahma-bhūta), and the self is no longer manifested. It is a stage which is beyond all existence and which has no connotation, characteristic or mark¹. This state is almost like a state of annihilation, and yet it is described as a state of Brahmahood. The word "Brahman" was appropriated from the Upanisads and was used to denote an ultimate superior state of realization, the exact nature of which differed with the different systems. In the Gitā also we find the word "Brahman" signifying a high state of self-realization in which, through a complete detachment from all passions, a man is self-contented within himself and his mind is in a perfect state of equilibrium. In the Gitā, v. 19, Brahman is defined as the faultless state of equilibrium (nirdosam hi samam brahma), and in all the verses of that context the sage who is in a state of equanimity and equilibrium through detachment and passionlessness is said to be by virtue thereof in Brahman; for Brahman means a state of equanimity. In the Gītā, XIII. 13. Brahman is described as the ultimate object of knowledge, which is beginningless, and cannot be said to be either existent or non-existent (na sat tan nāsad ucvate). It is said that this Brahman has His hands and feet, eyes, head, mouth and ears everywhere in the world, and that He envelopes all. He is without senses, but He illuminates all sense-qualities; Himself unattached and the upholder of all, beyond the gunas. He is also the enjoyer of the gunas. He is both inside and outside of all living beings, of all that is moving and that is unmoved. He is both near and far, but unknowable on account of His subtle nature. Being one in many, yet appearing as many, the upholder of all living beings, the devourer and overpowerer of all, He is the light of all light, beyond all darkness, He is both knowledge and the object of knowledge, residing in the heart of all. It is easy to see that the whole concept of Brahman, as herein stated, is directly borrowed from the Upanisads. Towards the end of this chapter it is said that he who perceives the many living beings as being in one, and realizes everything as an emanation or elaboration from that, becomes Brahman. But in the next chapter Kṛṣṇa as God says. "I am the upholder of the immortal and imperishable Brahman of absolute bliss and of the eternal dharma." In the Gītā, xiv. 26, it is said that "he who worships me unflinchingly through devotion, transcends all gunas and becomes Brahman." It has just been remarked that the Gītā recognizes two different kinds of avyaktas. It is the lower avyakta nature of God which has manifested itself as the universe; but there is a higher avyakta, which is beyond it as the eternal and unchangeable basis of all. It seems very probable, therefore, that Brahman is identical with this higher avyakta. But, though this higher avyakta is regarded as the highest essence of God, yet, together with the lower avyakta and the selves, it is upheld in the super-personality of God.

The question whether the Gitā is a Sāmkhya or a Vedānta work, or originally a Sāmkhya work which was later on revised, changed, or enlarged from a Vedanta point of view, need not be elaborately discussed here. For, if the interpretation of the Gītā, as given herein, be accepted, then it will be evident that the Gītā is neither a Sämkhya work nor a Vedanta work. It has been pointed out that the word $s\bar{a}mkhya$, in the $G\bar{\imath}t\bar{a}$, does not mean the traditional Sāmkhya philosophy, as found in Īśvarakrsna's Kārikā. But there are, no doubt, here the scattered elements of an older philosophy, from which not only the Samkhya of Iśvarakrsna or the Sasti-tantra (of which Isvarakrsna's work was a summary) developed, but even its earlier version, as found in Caraka's account, could be considered to have developed. There is no doubt that the Gītā's account of Sāmkhya differs materially from the Sāmkhya of the Sasti-tantra or of Iśvarakrsna, from the Sāmkhya of Caraka, from the Sāmkhya of Pañcasikha in the Mahā-bhārata and from the Sāṃkhya of Patañjali and the Vyāsa-bhāṣya. Ordinarily the Sāmkhya of Patañjali is described as a theistic Sāmkhya (seśvara-sāmkhya); but the Iśvara of Patañjali is but loosely attached to the system of Sāmkhya thought as expounded in Yoga. The Isvara there appears only as a supernormal, perfect being, who by his permanent will removes the barriers in the path of the evolution of prakrti in accordance with the law of karma. He thus merely helps the fulfilment of the teleology of the blind prakrti. But in the Gitā both the purusas and the root of the cosmic nature are but parts of God, the super-person (purusottama). The prakrti, from which the gunas which have only subjectivistic characteristics are derived, is described as the māyā power of God, or like a

consort to Him, who, being fertilized by His energies, produces the gunas. The difference of the philosophy of the Gitā from the various schools of Sāmkhya is very evident. Instead of the one prakrti of Sāmkhya we have here the three prakrtis of God. The gunas here are subjectivistic or psychical, and not cosmical. It is because the Gitā admits a prakrti which produces the subjectivistic gunas by which the purusas are bound with ties of attachment to their experiences, that such a prakrti could fitly be described as gunamayi māyā (māyā consisting of gunas). The purusas, again, though they are many, are on the whole but emanations from a specific prakrti (divine nature) of God. The purusas are not stated in the Gitā to be of the nature of pure intelligence, as in the Sāmkhya; but the cognizing element of consciousness (cetanā) is derived from another prakrti of God, which is associated with the purusa. It has also been pointed out that the $Git\bar{a}$ admits the sat-kārva-vāda doctrine with reference to immortality of the self, but not with reference to the fruition of actions or the rise of consciousness. The Sāmkhya category of tan-mātra is missing in the Gitā, and the general teleology of the prakrti of the Sāmkhya is replaced by the super-person of God, who by his will gives a unity and a purpose to all the different elements that are upheld within Him. Both the Sāmkhya of Kapila and that of Patañjali aim at securing, either through knowledge or through Yoga practices, the final loneliness of the translucent purusas. The Gitā, however, is anxious to secure the saintly equanimity and a perfect, unperturbed nature by the practice of detachment of the mind from passions and desires. When such a saintly equanimity and self-contentedness is achieved, the sage is said to be in a state of liberation from the bondage of guna-attachments, or to be in a state of Brahmahood in God. The philosophy of the Gītā thus differs materially from the traditional Sāmkhya philosophy on almost every point. On some minor points (e.g. the absence of tan-mātras, the nature of the production of knowledge and action, etc.) the Gītā philosophy has some similarities with the account of the Sāmkhya given in the Caraka-samhitā, IV. 1, as already described in the first volume of this work1.

The question whether the *Gitā* was written under a Vedāntic influence cannot be answered, unless one understands what is exactly meant by this Vedāntic influence; if by Vedāntic influence

¹ A History of Indian Philosophy, vol. 1, 1922, pp. 213-222.

one means the influence of the Upanisads, then the Gītā must plainly be admitted to have borrowed very freely from the Upanisads, which from the earliest times had been revered for their wisdom. If, however, by Vedantic influence one means the philosophy of Vedanta as taught by Sankara and his followers, then it must be said that the Gitā philosophy is largely different therefrom. It has already been pointed out that, though Brahman is often described in Upanisadic language as the highest essence of God, it is in reality a part of the super-personality of God. The Gita, moreover, does not assert anywhere that Brahman is the only reality and all else that appears is false and unreal. The word $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ is, no doubt, used in the $G\bar{\imath}t\bar{a}$ in three passages; but its meaning is not what Sankara ascribes to it in his famous interpretation of Vedantic thought. Thus in the Gita, VII. 14, maya is described as being of the nature of gunas, and it is said that he who clings to God escapes the grip of the māyā or of the gunas. In the Gītā, VII. 15, the word māyā is also probably used in the same sense, since it is said that it is ignorant and sinful men who, through demoniac ideas, lose their right wisdom under the influence of māyā and do not cling to God. In all probability, here also māyā means the influence of rajas and tamas; for it has been repeatedly said in the Gītā that demoniac tendencies are generated under the preponderating influence of rajas and tamas. In the Gitā, xvIII. 61, it is said that God resides in the heart of all living beings and moves them by māyā, like dolls on a machine. It has been pointed out that the psychical tendencies and moral or immoral propensities which move all men to action are produced under the influence of the gunas, and that God is the ultimate generator of the gunas from the prakrti. The maya, therefore, may well be taken here to mean gunas, as in the Gītā, VII. 14. Śrīdhara takes it to mean the power of God. The gunas are, no doubt, in a remote sense, powers of God. But Sankara's paraphrasing of it as deception (chadmanā) is quite inappropriate. Thus it is evident that the $Git\bar{a}$ does not know the view that the world may be regarded as a manifestation of māvā or illusion. It has also been pointed out that the word "Brahman" is used in the Gita in the sense of the Vedas, of faultless equanimity, of supreme essence and of prakrti, which shows that it had no such crystallized technical sense as in the philosophy of Sankara. The word had in the Gītā all the looseness of Upanisadic

XIV]

usage. In the Gitā the word avidyā, so famous in Śankara's philosophy of the Vedānta, is nowhere used. The word ajñāna is used several times (v. 15, 16; x. 11; xIII. 11; xIV. 8, 16, 17; xVI. 4); but it has no special technical sense in any of these passages. It has the sense of "ignorance" or "misconception," which is produced by tamas (ajñānaṃ tamasaḥ phalam, xIV. 16) and which in its turn produces tamas (tamas tv ajñāna-jaṃ viddhi, xIV. 8).

Conception of Sacrificial Duties in the Gītā.

The Vedic view of the obligatoriness of certain kinds of sacrifices or substitution-meditations permeated almost all forms of Hindu thought, excepting the Vedanta philosophy as interpreted by Sankara. The conception of the obligatoriness of duties finds its best expression in the analysis of vidhi in the Mimāmsā philosophy. Vidhi means the injunctions of the Vedas, such as, "Thou should'st perform such and such sacrifices"; sometimes these are conditional, such as, "Those who wish to attain Heaven should perform such and such sacrifices"; sometimes they are unconditional, such as, "Thou should'st say the three prayers." The force of this vidhi, or injunction, is differently interpreted in the different schools of Mīmāmsā. Kumārila, the celebrated commentator, in interpreting Jaimini's definition of dharma, or virtue, as a desirable end (artha) or good which is enjoined by the Vedic commands (codanā-lakṣano 'rtho dharmah, Mīmāmsā-sūtra, 1. 1), says that it is the performance of the Vedic injunctions, sacrifices, etc. (yāgādih) that should be called our duty. The definition of virtue, then, involves the notion that only such a desired end (on account of the pain associated with it not exceeding the associated pleasure) as is enjoined by Vedic commands is called *dharma*. The sacrifices enjoined by the Vedas are called dharma, because these would in future produce pleasurable experiences. So one's abstention from actions prohibited by Vedic commands is also called dharma, as by this means one can avoid the undesirable effects and sufferings of punishments as a result of transgressing those commands. Such sacrifices, however, are ultimately regarded as artha, or desired ends, because they produce pleasurable experiences. The imperative of Vedic commands is supposed to operate in a twofold manner, firstly, as initiating a volitional tendency in obedience to the verbal command (śābdī bhāvanā), and, secondly, in releasing

Ibid. p. 344.

the will to the actual performance of the act enjoined by the command (ārthī bhāvanā). The propulsion of verbal commands is not like any physical propulsion; such a propulsion only arises as a result of one's comprehension of the fact that the performance of the acts enjoined will lead to beneficial results, and it naturally moves one to perform those acts out of selfinterest¹. So of the twofold propulsion (bhāvanā) implied in a Vedic imperative the propulsion to act, as communicated by the verbal command, is called sābdī bhāvanā; and this is followed by the actual efforts of the person for the performance of the act2. The prescriptive of the command (vidhi) is comprehended directly from the imperative suffix (lin) of the verb, even before the meaning of the verb is realized. If this is so, it is contended that the imperative, as it is communicated by the command, is a pure contentless form of command. This contention is admitted by the Bhatta school, which thinks that, though in the first stage we have communication of the contentless pure form of the imperative, yet at the successive stages the contentless form of duty is naturally supplemented by a more direct reference to the concrete context, as denoted by the verb with which the suffix is associated. So the process of the propulsion of bhāvanā, though it starts at the first instance with the communication of a pure contentless form, passes, by reason of its own necessity and the incapacity of a contentless form of duty to stand by itself, gradually through more and more concrete stages to the actual comprehension of the duty implied by the concrete meaning of the associated verb3. So the communication of the contentless duty and its association with the concrete verbal meaning are not two different meanings, but are

¹ adṛṣṭe tu viṣaye śreyah-sādhanādhigamaḥ śabdaika-nibandhana iti tad-adhi-gamopāyaḥ śabda eva pravartakaḥ; ata eva śabdo 'pi na svarūpa-mātrena pravartako vāyv-ādi-tulyatva-prasangāt;...arthapratītim upajanayataḥ śabdasya pravartakatvam. Nyāya-mañjarī, p. 342. The Vizianagram Sanskrit Series, Benares, 1805.

^{1895.}Lin-ādeḥ śabdasya na prattti-janana-mātre vyāpāraḥ kintu puruṣa-pravṛttāv api; sa cāyam lin-ādi-vyāpāraḥ śabda-bhāvanā-nāmadheyo vidhir ity ucyate sa eva ca pravartakaḥ...yo bhavana-kriyā-kartṛ-viṣayaḥ prayojaka-vyāpāraḥ puruṣa-stho yatra bhavana-kriyāyāḥ kartā svargādikarmatām āpadyate so 'rtha-bhāvanā-śabdena ucyate. Ibid. p. 343.

Yady apy amśair asamsprstām vidhiḥ sprśati bhāvanām tathāpy aśaktito nāsau tan-mātre paryavasyati anustheye hi vişaye vidhiḥ puṃsām pravartakaḥ aṃśa-trayena cāpūrṇām nānutisthati bhāvanām tasmāt prakrānta-rūpo 'pi vidhis tāvat pratikṣate yāvad yogyatvam āpannā bhāvanā'nyānapekṣiṇī.

rather the prolongation of one process of communication, just as cooking includes all the different associated acts of putting the pan on the fire, lighting the fire, and the like¹. These two *bhāvanās*, therefore, mean nothing more than the reasoning of the will and its translation into definite channels of activity, as the performance of the sacrifice, etc., and *vidhi* here means simply the prompting or the propulsion (*vyāpāraḥ preraṇā-rūpaḥ*); and it is such prompting that initiates in the performer the will, which is later on translated into concrete action.

Another Mīmāmsā view objects to this theory of dual bhāvanā and asserts that the suffix lin involves the notion of an order to work (prerana), as if the relation of the Vedas to us were one of master and servant, and that the Vedic vidhi as expressed in the lin suffix conveys the command (praisya-praisayoh sambandhah). The vidhi goads us to work, and, being goaded by it, we turn to work. It does not physically compel us to act; but the feeling we have from it that we have been ordered to act constitutes the driving power. The knowledge of vidhi thus drives us to our Vedic duties. When a man hears the command, he feels that he has been commanded and then he sets to work. This setting to work is quite a different operation from the relation of the command and the commanded, and comes after it. The essence of a Vedic sentence is this command or nivoga. A man who has formerly tasted the benefits of certain things or the pleasures they produced naturally intends to have them again; here also there is a peculiar mental experience of eagerness, desire or intention (ākūta), which goads him on to obey the Vedic commands. This akūta is a purely subjective experience and cannot, therefore, be experienced by others, though one can always infer its existence from the very fact that, unless it were felt in the mind, no one would feel himself goaded to work². Niyoga, or a prompting to work (prerana), is the sense of all vidhis, and this rouses in us the intention of working in accordance with the command. The actual performance of an action is a mere counterpart of the intention (ākūta), that is subjectively felt as roused by the niyoga or the

² Ayam api bhautika-vyāpāra-hetur ātmākūta-viseso na pramānān:ara-vedyo bhavati na ca na vedyate tat-samvedane sati cestā yadvantam drstvā tasyāpi tādrk-

preranā'vagamo 'numīyate. Ibid. p. 348.

¹ Yathā hi sthāly-adhisrayanāt prabhrtyā nirākānkşaudana-nispatter ekaiveyam pāka-kriyā salilāvaseka-tandulāvapana-darvī-vighattanāsrāvanādy-aneka-kṣanasamudāya-svabhāvā tathā prathama-pada-jñānāt prabhrti ā nirākānṣa-vākyārthaparicchedād ekaiveyam šābdī pramitih. Nyāya-mañjarī, p. 345.

driving power of the vidhi. This view differs from the view of Kumārila in this, that it does not suppose that the propulsion of the Vedic command takes effect in a twofold $bh\bar{a}van\bar{a}$, through the whole process of the conception and the materialization of the action in accordance with the Vedic commands. The force of the command is exhausted in prompting us to action and arousing in us the inward resolution $(\bar{a}k\bar{u}ta)$ to obey the command. The actual performance of the action comes as a natural consequence (artha). The force of the vidhi has a field of application only when our ordinary inclinations do not naturally lead us to the performance of action. Vidhi, therefore, operates merely as a law of command which has to be obeyed for the sake of the law alone, and it is this psychological factor of inward resolution to obey the law that leads to the performance of action.

Mandana, in his Vidhi-viveka, discusses the diverse views on the significance of vidhi. He interprets vidhi as a specific kind of prompting (pravartanā). He distinguishes the inner volitional intention of attaining an end and its translation into active effort leading to muscular movements of the body. Pravartanā here means the inner volitional direction of the mind towards the performance of the action, as well as actual nervous changes which are associated with it. The command of the Vedas naturally brings with it a sense of duty or of "oughtness" (kartavyatā), and it is this sense of kartavyatā that impels people to action without any reference to the advantages and benefits that may be reaped by such actions. The psychological state associated with such a feeling of "oughtness" is said to be of the nature of instincts (pratibhā). It is through an instinctive stimulus to work, proceeding from the sense of "oughtness," that the action is performed.

The Nyāya doctrine differs from the above view of vidhi as a categorically imperative order and holds that the prompting of the Vedic commands derives its force from our desire for the attainment of the benefits that we might reap if we acted in accordance with them. So the ultimate motive of the action is the attainment of pleasure or the avoidance of pain, and it is only with a view to attaining the desired ends that one is prompted to follow the Vedic

¹ Bhāva-dharma eva kaścit samīhita-sādhanānuguno vyāpāra-padārthah; tad yathā ātmano buddhy-ādi-janana-pravṛttasya manaḥ-saṃyoga eva'yam bhāva-dharmah tadvad atrāpi spandas tad-itaro vā bhāva-dharmah pravṛtti-jananā'-nukūlatayā vyāpāra-viśeṣaḥ pravartanā. Vācaspati's Nyāya-kanikā on Vidhiviveka, pp. 243, 244.

commands and perform the sacrifices. In this view, therefore, the prompting, or preraṇā, has not in it that self-evident call of the pure imperative or the rousing of the volitional tendency through the influence of the imperative; the prompting felt is due only to the rise of desires for the end.

Most of the above interpretations of vidhi are of much later date than the Gītā. No systematic discussion of the nature of vidhi which can be regarded as contemporaneous with or prior to the date of the Gītā is now available. But even these latter-day explanations are useful in understanding the significance of the force of the notion of the imperative in the Gita. It is clear from the above discussion that the notion of the imperative of vidhi cannot be called moral in our sense of the term, as has been done in a recent work on Hindu Ethics1. For the imperative of vidhi is limited to the injunctions of the Vedas, which are by no means coextensive with our general notion of morality. According to the Mīmāmsā schools just described virtue (dharma) consists in obedience to Vedic injunctions. Whatever may be enjoined by the Vedas is to be considered as virtue, whatever is prohibited by the Vedas is evil and sin, and all other things which are neither enjoined by the Vedas nor prohibited by them are neutral, i.e. neither virtuous nor vicious². The term dharma is therefore limited to actions enjoined by the Vedas, even though such actions may in some cases be associated with evil consequences leading to punishments due to the transgression of some other Vedic commands. The categorical imperative here implied is scriptural and therefore wholly external. The virtuous character of actions does not depend on their intrinsic nature, but on the external qualification of being enjoined by the Vedas.

¹ S. K. Maitra's *Hindu Ethics*, written under Dr Seal's close personal

supervision and guidance.

² Kumārila holds that even those sacrifices which are performed for the killing of one's enemies are right, because they are also enjoined by the Vedas. Prabhākara, however, contends that, since these are performed only out of the natural evil propensities of men, their performance cannot be regarded as being due to a sense of duty associated with obedience to the injunctions of the Vedas. Kumārila thus contends that, though the Syena sacrifice is attended with evil consequences, yet, since the performer is only concerned with his duty in connection with the Vedic commands, he is not concerned with the evil consequences; and it is on account of one's obedience to the Vedic injunctions that it is called right, though the injury to living beings that it may involve will bring about its punishment all the same. Sāṃkhya and some Nyāya writers, however, would condemn the Syena sacrifice on account of the injury to living beings that it involves.

Whatever is not enjoined in the Vedas or not prohibited in them is simply neutral. It is clear, therefore, that the term *dharma* can be translated as "virtue" only in a technical sense, and the words "moral" and "immoral" in our sense have nothing to do with the concept of *dharma* or *adharma*.

The $Git\bar{a}$ distinguishes between two kinds of motives for the performance of sacrifices. The first motive is that of greed and self-interest, and the second is a sense of duty. The $Git\bar{a}$ is aware of that kind of motive for the performance which corresponds to the Nyāya interpretation of Vedic vidhis and also to the general Mīmāmsā interpretation of vidhi as engendering a sense of duty. Thus it denounces those fools who follow the Vedic doctrines and do not believe in anything else; they are full of desires and eager to attain Heaven, they take to those actions which lead to rebirth and the enjoyment of mundane pleasures. People who are thus filled with greed and desires, and perform sacrifices for the attainment of earthly goods, move in an inferior plane and are not qualified for the higher scheme of life of devotion to God with right resolution. The Vedas are said to be under the influence of mundane hankerings and desires, and it is through passions and antipathies, through desires and aversions, that people perform the Vedic sacrifices and think that there is nothing greater than these. One should therefore transcend the sphere of Vedic sacrifices performed out of motives of self-interest. But the Gītā is not against the performance of Vedic sacrifices, if inspired by a sheer regard for the duty of performing sacrifices. Anyone who looks to his own personal gain and advantages in performing the sacrifices, and is only eager to attain his pleasurable ends, is an inferior type of man; the sacrifices should therefore be performed without any personal attachment, out of regard for the sacred duty of the performance. Prajapati created sacrifices along with the creation of men and said, "The sacrifices will be for your good-you should help the gods by your sacrifices, and the gods will in their

¹ Vyavasāyātmikā buddhiḥ samādhau na vidhtyate. Gītā, 11. 44. The word samādhau is explained by Śrīdhara as follows: samādhiś cittaikāgryam, parameśvarābhimukhatvam iti yāvat; tasmin niścayātmikā buddhis tu na vidhīyate. Samādhi is thus used here to mean one-pointedness of mind to God. But Śańkara gives a very curious interpretation of the word samādhi, as meaning mind (antaḥkaraṇa or buddhi), which is hardly justifiable. Thus he says, samādhiyate 'smin puruṣopabhogāya sarvam iti samādhir antaḥkaraṇam buddhiḥ. The word vyavasāyātmikā is interpreted by commentators on 11. 41 and 11. 44 as meaning niścayātmikā (involving correct decision through proper pramāṇas or proof). 1 prefer, however, to take the word to mean "right resolution."

turn help you to grow and prosper. He who lives for himself without offering oblations to the gods and supporting them thereby is misappropriating the share that belongs to the gods."

This view of the Gītā is different from that of the later Mīmāmsā, which probably had a much earlier tradition. Thus Kumārila held that the final justification of Vedic sacrifices or of dharma was that it satisfied our needs and produced happiness it was artha. The sacrifices were, no doubt, performed out of regard for the law of Vedic commands; but that represented only the psychological side of the question. The external ground for the performance of Vedic sacrifices was that it produced happiness for the performer and satisfied his desires by securing for him the objects of desire. It was in dependence on such a view that the Nyāya sought to settle the motive of all Vedic sacrifices. The Naiyāvikas believed that the Vedic observances not only secured for us all desired objects, but that this was also the motive for which the sacrifices were performed. The Gītā was well aware of this view, which it denounces. The Gītā admitted that the sacrifices produced the good of the world, but its whole outlook was different; for the Gītā looked upon the sacrifices as being bonds of union between gods and men. The sacrifices improved the mutual good-will, and it was by the sacrifices that the gods were helped, and they in their turn helped men, and so both men and the gods prospered. Through sacrifices there was rain, and by rain the food-grains grew and men lived on the foodgrains. So the sacrifices were looked upon as being sources not so much of individual good as of public good. He who looks to the sacrifices as leading to the satisfaction of his selfish interests is surely an inferior person. But those who do not perform the sacrifices are equally wicked. The Vedas have sprung forth from the deathless eternal, and sacrifices spring from the Vedas, and it is thus that the deathless, all-pervading Brahman is established in the sacrifices1. The implied belief of the Gitā was that the prosperity of the people depended on the fertility of the soil, and that this again depended upon the falling of rains, and that the rains depended on the grace of gods, and that the gods could live prosperously only if the sacrifices were performed; the sacrifices were derived from the Vedas, the Vedas from the all-pervading Brahman, and the Brahman again forms the main content of the

Vedas. Thus there was a complete cycle from Brahman to sacrifices, from sacrifices to the good of the gods and from the good of the gods to the good and prosperity of the people. Everyone is bound to continue the process of this cycle, and he who breaks it is a sinful and selfish man, who is not worth the life he leads¹. Thus the ideal of the $G\bar{\imath}t\bar{a}$ is to be distinguished from the ideal of the Mīmāmsā in this, that, while the latter aimed at individual good, the former aimed at common good, and, while the latter conceived the Vedic commands to be the motives of their action, the former valued the ideal of performing the sacrifices in obedience to the law of continuing the process of the cycle of sacrifices, by which the world of gods and of men was maintained in its proper state of prosperity. When a man works for the sacrifices, such works cannot bind him to their fruits; it is only when works are performed from motives of self-interest that they can bind people to their good and bad fruits2.

The word dharma in the Gitā does not mean what Jaimini understood by the term, viz. a desirable end or good enjoined by the sacrifices (codanā-laksano 'rtho dharmah). The word seems to be used in the Gitā primarily in the sense of an unalterable customary order of class-duties or caste-duties and the general approved course of conduct for the people, and also in the sense of prescribed schemes of conduct. This meaning of dharma as "old customary order" is probably the oldest meaning of the word, as it is also found in the Atharva-Veda, 18.3. I (dharmam purānam anupālayanti)3. Macdonell, in referring to Maitrāyana, IV. 1 Q. Kāthaka, XXXI. 7 and Taittirīya, III. 2. 8. 11, points out that bodily defects (bad nails and discoloured teeth) and marrying a younger daughter while her elder sister is unmarried are coupled with murder, though not treated as equal to it, and that there is no distinction in principle between real crimes and what are now regarded as fanciful bodily defects or infringements of merely conventional practices. In the Satapatha-brāhmana, XIV. 4. 2. 26, also we find dharma for a Ksattriya4 is illustrated as being the characteristic duties of a Ksattriya. The central meaning of the word dharma in the Gītā is therefore the oldest Vedic meaning of the word, which is

¹ Gītā, 111. 16. ² Ibid. 111. 9.

^{*} dharma, dharman are the regular words, the latter in the Rg-veda and both later, for "law" or "custom." See Macdonell's Vedic Index, p. 390.

⁴ tad etat ksattrasya ksattram yad dharmah tasmād dharmāt param nāsti. Dr Albrecht Weber's edition, Leipzig, 1924.

a much earlier meaning than the latter-day technical meaning of the word as it is found in Mīmāmsā. Dharma does not in the Gītā mean sacrifices (vajña) or external advantages, as it does in Mīmāmsā, but the order of conventional practices involving specific castedivisions and caste-duties. Accordingly, the performance of sacrifices is dharma for those whose allotted duties are sacrifices. Adultery is in the Vedas a vice, as being transgression of dharma, and this is also referred to as such (dharme naște, 1. 39) in the Gitā. In the Gitā, 11. 7, Arjuna is said to be puzzled and confused regarding his duty as a Ksattriya and the sinful course of injuring the lives of his relations (dharma-sammūdha-cetāh). The confusion of dharma and adharma is also referred to in XVIII. 31 and 32. In the Gita, IV. 7 and 8, the word dharma is used in the sense of the established order of things and conventionally accepted customs and practices. In 11, 40 the way of performing one's duties without regard to pleasures or sorrows is described as a particular and specific kind of dharma (asya dharmasya), distinguished from dharma in general.

The vaiña (sacrifice) is said to be of various kinds, e.g. that in which oblations are offered to the gods is called daiva-vajña; this is distinguished from brahma-yajña, in which one dedicates oneself to Brahman, where Brahman is the offerer, offering and the fire of oblations, and in which, by dedicating oneself to Brahman, one is lost in Brahman¹. Then sense-control, again, is described as a kind of yajña, and it is said that in the fire of the senses the sense-objects are offered as libations and the senses themselves are offered as libations in the fire of sense-control: all the sensefunctions and vital functions are also offered as libations in the fire of sense-control lighted up by reason. Five kinds of sacrifices (vajña) are distinguished, viz. the vajña with actual materials of libation, called dravya-yajña, the yajña of asceticism or self-control, called tapo-yajña, the yajña of union or communion. called yoga-yajña, the yajña of scriptural studies, called svādhyāyayajña, and the vajña of knowledge or wisdom, called jñāna-vajña². It is easy to see that the extension of the application of the term vajña from the actual material sacrifice to other widely divergent methods of self-advancement is a natural result of the extension of the concept of sacrifice to whatever tended towards self-advancement. The term yajña had high and holy associations, and the

¹ Gītā, IV. 24 and 25.

² Ibid. IV. 26-28; see also 29 and 30.

newly discovered systems of religious endeavours and endeavours for self-advancement came to be regarded as but a new kind of yajña, just as the substitution-meditations (pratīkopāsanā) were also regarded as being but new forms of yajña. Thus, while thought advanced and newer modes of self-realization began to develop, the older term of yajña came to be extended to these new types of religious discipline on account of the high veneration in which the older institution was held.

But, whatever may be the different senses in which the term yajña is used in the Gita, the word dharma has not here the technical sense of the Mīmāmsā. The Gītā recommends the performance of sacrifices to the Brahmins and fighting to the Ksattrivas, and thus aims at continuity of conventional practices which it regards as dharma. But at the same time it denounces the performance of actions from desire, or passions or any kind of selfish interest. A man should regard his customary duties as his dharma and should perform them without any idea of the fulfilment of any of his own desires. When a man performs karma from a sense of disinterested duty, his karma is no longer a bondage to him. The Gītā does not, on the one hand, follow the old karmaideal, that one should perform sacrifices in order to secure earthly and heavenly advantages, nor does it follow, on the other hand, the ideal of the Vedanta or of other systems of philosophy that require us to abandon our desires and control our passions with a view to cleansing the mind entirely of impurities, so as to transcend the sphere of duties and realize the wisdom of the oneness of the spirit. The Gitā holds that a man should attain the true wisdom. purge his mind of all its desires, but at the same time perform his customary duties and be faithful to his own dharma. There should be no impelling force other than regard and reverence for his own inner law of duty with reference to his own dharma of conventional and customary practices or the duties prescribed by the śāstra.

Sense-control in the Gītā.

The uncontrollability of the senses was realized in the Katha Upanisad, where the senses are compared with horses. The Gītā says that, when the mind is led on by fleeting sense-attractions, the man loses all his wisdom, just as a boat swings to and fro in deep waters in a strong gale. Even in the case of the wise

man, in spite of his efforts to keep himself steady, the troubled senses might lead the mind astray. By continually brooding over sense-objects one becomes attached to them; out of such attachments there arise desires, out of desires there arises anger, out of anger blindness of passions, through such blindness there is lapse of memory, by such lapse of memory a man's intelligence is destroyed, and as a result of that he himself is destroyed. Man is naturally inclined towards the path of evil, and in spite of his efforts to restrain himself he tends towards the downward path. Each particular sense has its own specific attachments and antipathies, and attachment $(r\bar{a}ga)$ and antipathy are the two enemies. The Gitā again and again proclaims the evil effects of desires and attachments (kāma), anger (krodha) and greed (lobha) as the three gates of Hell, being that which veils wisdom as smoke veils fire, as impurities sully a mirror or as the foetus is covered by the womb². Ariuna is made to refer to Krsna the difficulty of controlling the senses. Thus he says, "My mind, O Krsna, is violent, troubled and changeful; it is as difficult to control it as it is to control the winds³." True yoga can never be attained unless and until the senses are controlled.

The Pāli work Dhamma-pada is also filled with similar ideas regarding the control of attachments and anger. Thus it says, "He has abused me, beaten me, worsted me, robbed me—those who dwell not upon such thoughts are freed from hate. Never does hatred cease by hating, but hatred ceases by love; this is the ancient law....As the wind brings down a weak tree, so Māra overwhelms him who lives looking for pleasures, has his senses uncontrolled, or is immoderate in his food, slothful and effeminate. ... As rain breaks through an ill-thatched house, so passion will break through an undisciplined mind4." Again, speaking of mind, it says, "As an arrow-maker levels his arrow, so a wise man levels his trembling, unsteady mind, which it is difficult to guard and hold back....Let the wise man guard his mind, incomprehensible, subtle, capricious though it is. Blessed is the guarded mind⁵." Again, "Not nakedness, nor matted hair, not dirt, nor fastings, not lying on earth, nor ashes, nor ascetic postures, none of these things purify a man who is not free from desires6." Again, "From

6 Ibid. x. 141.

¹ Gītā, 11. 60, 62, 63.
² Ibid. 111. 34, 37-39; XVI. 21.
³ VI. 34.
⁴ Dhamma-pada (Poona, 1923), 1. 4, 5, 7, 13.
⁵ Ibid. 111. 36, 38.

attachment (piyato) comes grief, from attachment comes fear; he who is free from attachment knows neither grief nor fear. From affection (pemato) come grief and fear. He who is free from affection knows neither grief nor fear. From lust (rati) come grief and fear. He who is free from affection knows neither grief nor fear. From lust (kāma) come grief and fear. He who is free from lust knows neither grief nor fear. From desire (tanhā) come grief and fear. He who is free from desire knows neither grief nor fear!."

It is clear from the above that both the Gitā and the Dhammapada praise sense-control and consider desires, attachments, anger and grief as great enemies. But the treatment of the Gītā differs from that of the Dhamma-pada in this, that, while in the Dhammapada there is a course of separate lessons or moral instructions on diverse subjects, the Gītā deals with sense-control as a means to the attainment of peace, contentment and desirelessness, which enables a man to dedicate all his actions to God and follow the conventional courses of duties without looking for anything in them for himself. The Gitā knows that the senses, mind and intellect are the seats of all attachments and antipathies, and that it is through the senses and the mind that these can stupefy a man and make his knowledge blind2. All the sense-affections of cold and heat, pleasure and sorrow, are mere changes of our sensibility, are mere touches of feeling which are transitory and should therefore be quietly borne³. It is only by controlling the senses that the demon of desire, which distorts all ordinary and philosophic knowledge, can be destroyed. But it is very hard to stifle this demon of desire, which always appears in new forms. It is only when a man can realize within himself the great being which transcends our intellect that he can control his lower self with his higher self and uproot his desires. The self is its own friend as well as its own foe, and one should always try to uplift oneself and not allow oneself to sink down. The chief aim of all sense-control is to make a man's thoughts steady, so that he can link himself up in communion with God4.

The senses in the $Git\bar{a}$ are regarded as drawing the mind along with them. The senses are continually changing and fleeting, and they make the mind also changeful and fleeting; and, as a result of

¹ Dhamma-pada, xv1. 212-216.

³ Ibid. II. 14.

² Gītā, 111. 40.

⁴ Ibid. 11. 61; 111. 41, 43; VI. 5, 6.

that, the mind, like a boat at sea before a strong wind, is driven to and fro, and steadiness of thought and wisdom (prajñā) are destroyed. The word prajñā is used in the Gītā in the sense of thought or wisdom or mental inclinations in general. It is used in a more or less similar sense in the Brhad-aranyaka Upanişad, IV. 4. 21, and in a somewhat different sense in the Mandukya Upanisad, 7. But the sense in which Patanjali uses the word is entirely different from that in which it is used in the Gītā or the Upanisads. Patañjali uses the word in the technical sense of a specific type of mystical cognition arising out of the steady fixing of the mind on an object, and speaks of seven stages of such prajñā corresponding to the stages of yoga ascension. Prajñā in the Gītā means, as has just been said, thought or mental inclination. It does not mean jñāna, or ordinary cognition, or vijnāna as higher wisdom; it means knowledge in its volitional aspect. It is not the kriyākhyaiñāna, as moral discipline of yama, niyama, etc., of the Pañca-rātra work Jayākhya-samhitā. It means an intellectual outlook, as integrally connected with, and determining, the mental bent or inclination. When the mind follows the mad dance of the senses after their objects, the intellectual background of the mind determining its direction, the prajñā is also upset. Unless the prajñā is fixed, the mind cannot proceed undisturbed in its prescribed fixed course. So the central object of controlling the senses is the securing of the steadiness of this prajñā (vase hi yasyendriyāni tasya prajñā pratisthitā—II. 57). Prajñā and dhī are two words which seem to be in the Gitā synonymous, and they both mean mental inclination. This mental inclination probably involves both an intellectual outlook, and a corresponding volitional tendency. Sense-control makes this prajñā steady, and the Gītā abounds in praise of the sthita-prājāa and sthita-dhī, i.e. of one who has mental inclination or thoughts fixed and steady¹. Sense-attachments are formed by continual association with sense-objects, and attachment begets desire, desire begets anger, and so on. Thus all the vices spring from sense-attachments. And the person who indulges in sense-gratifications is rushed along by the passions. So, just as a tortoise collects within itself all its limbs, so the person who restrains his senses from the sense-objects has his mind steady and fixed. The direct result of sense-control is thus steadiness of will, and of mental inclinations or mind (prajñā).

The person who has his praiñā fixed is not troubled in sorrows and is not eager to gain pleasures, he has no attachment, no fear and no anger1. He is indifferent in prosperity and in adversity and neither desires anything nor shuns anything2. He alone can obtain peace who, like the sea receiving all the rivers in it, absorbs all his desires within himself; not so the man who is always busy in satisfying his desires. The man who has given up all his desires and is unattached to anything is not bound to anything, has no vanity and attains true peace. When a man can purge his mind of attachments and antipathies and can take to sense-objects after purifying his senses and keeping them in full control, he attains contentment (prasada). When such contentment is attained, all sorrows vanish and his mind becomes fixed (buddhih paryavatisthate)3. Thus sense-control, on the one hand, makes the mind unruffled, fixed, at peace with itself and filled with contentment, and on the other hand, by making the mind steady and fixed, it makes communion with God possible. Sense-control is the indispensable precondition of communion with God; when once this has been attained, it is possible to link oneself with God by continued efforts⁴. Thus sense-control, by producing steadiness of the will and thought, results in contentment and peace on the one hand, and on the other makes the mind fit for entering into communion with God.

One thing that strikes us in reading the *Gītā* is that the object of sense-control in the *Gītā* is not the attainment of a state of emancipated oneness or the absolute cessation of all mental processes, but the more intelligible and common-sense ideal of the attainment of steadiness of mind, contentment and the power of entering into touch with God. This view of the object of self-control is therefore entirely different from that praised in the philosophic systems of Patañjali and others. The *Gītā* wants us to control our senses and mind and to approach sense-objects with such a controlled mind and senses, because it is by this means alone that we can perform our duties with a peaceful and contented mind and turn to God with a clean and unruffled heart⁵. The main emphasis of this sense-control is not on the mere external control of volitional activities and the control of motor propensities

¹ Gitā, 11. 56.
² Ibid. 11. 57.
³ Ibid. 11. 65; see also 11. 58, 64, 68, 70, 71.
⁴ Ibid. vi. 36.

rāga-dveṣa-vimuktais tu viṣayān indriyais caran ātma-vasyair vidheyātmā prasādam adhigacchati. Ibid. 11. 64.

in accordance with the direction of passions and appetites, but on the inner control of the mind behind these active senses. When a person controls only his physical activities, and yet continues to brood over the attractions of sense, he is in reality false in his conduct (mithyācāra). Real self-control does not mean only the cessation of the external operations of the senses, but also the control of the mind. Not only should a man cease from committing actions out of greed and desire for sense-gratification, but his mind should be absolutely clean, absolutely clear of all impurities of sense-desires. Mere suspension of physical action without a corresponding control of mind and cessation from harbouring passions and desires is a vicious course.

The Ethics of the Gītā and the Buddhist Ethics.

The subject of sense-control naturally reminds one of Buddhism. In the Vedic religion performance of sacrifices was considered as the primary duty. Virtue and vice consisted in obedience or disobedience to Vedic injunctions. It has been pointed out that these injunctions implied a sort of categorical imperative and communicated a sense of vidhi as law, a command which must be obeyed. But this law was no inner law of the spirit within, but a mere external law, which ought not to be confused with morality in the modern sense of the term. Its sphere was almost wholly ritualistic, and, though it occasionally included such commands as "One should not injure anyone" (mā himsyāt), yet in certain sacrifices which were aimed at injuring one's enemies operations which would lead to such results would have the imperative of a Vedic command, though the injury to human beings would be attended with its necessary punishment. Again, though in later Samkhya commentaries and compendiums it is said that all kinds of injuries to living beings bring their punishment, yet it is doubtful if the Vedic injunction "Thou shouldst not injure" really applied to all living beings, as there would be but few sacrifices where animals were not killed. The Upanisads. however, start an absolutely new line by the substitution of meditations and self-knowledge for sacrificial actions. In the

¹ Cf. Dhamma-pada, 1. 2. All phenomena have mind as their precursor, are dependent upon mind and are made up of mind. If a man speaks or acts with a pure mind, happiness accompanies him, just as a shadow follows a man incessantly.

primary stage of Upanisadic thoughts a conviction was growing that instead of the sacrificial performances one could go through a set form of meditations, identifying in thought certain objects with certain other objects (e.g. the dawn as the horse of horsesacrifice) or even with symbolic syllables, OM and the like. In the more developed stage of Upanisadic culture a new conviction arose in the search after the highest and the ultimate truth, and the knowledge of Brahman as the highest essence in man and nature is put forward as the greatest wisdom and the final realization of truth and reality, than which nothing higher could be conceived. There are but few moral precepts in the Upanisads, and the whole subject of moral conflict and moral efforts is almost silently dropped or passes unemphasized. In the Taittiriya Upanisad, 1. 11, the teacher is supposed to give a course of moral instruction to his pupil after teaching him the Vedas-Tell the truth, be virtuous, do not give up the study of the Vedas; after presenting the teacher with the stipulated honorarium (at the conclusion of his studies) the pupil should (marry and) continue the line of his family. He should not deviate from truth or from virtue (dharma) or from good. He should not cease doing good to others, from study and teaching. He should be respectful to his parents and teachers and perform such actions as are unimpeachable. He should follow only good conduct and not bad. He should make gifts with faith (śraddhā), not with indifference, with dignity, from a sense of shame, through fear and through knowledge. If there should be any doubt regarding his course of duty or conduct, then he should proceed to act in the way in which the wisest Brahmins behaved. But few Upanisads give such moral precepts, and there is very little in the Upanisads in the way of describing a course of moral behaviour or of emphasizing the fact that man can attain his best only by trying to become great through moral efforts. The Upanisads occupy themselves almost wholly with mystic meditations and with the philosophic wisdom of selfknowledge. Yet the ideas of self-control, peace and cessation of desires, endurance and concentration are referred to in Brhadāranyaka, IV. 4. 23, as a necessary condition for the realization of the self within us1. In Katha, VI. 11, the control of the senses (indriya-dhārana) is referred to as yoga, and in Mundaka, III. 2. 2,

¹ śánto dánta uporatas titikşuh samāhito bhūtvātmany eva ātmānam pašyati. Brh. 1V. 4. 23.

it is said that he who consciously desires the objects of desire is again and again born through desires; but even in this world all desires vanish for him who is self-realized in himself and is self-satisfied. The idea that the path of wisdom is different from the path of desires was also known, and it was felt that he who sought wisdom (vidyābhīpsita) was not drawn by many desires².

The point to be discussed in this connection is whether the central idea of the Gītā, namely, sense-control and more particularly the control of desires and attachments, is derived from the Upanisads or from Buddhism. It has been pointed out that the Upanisads do not emphasize the subject of moral conflict and moral endeavours so much as the nature of truth and reality as Brahman, the ultimate essence or man and the manifold appearance of the world. Yet the idea of the necessity of sensecontrol and the control of desires, the settling of the mind in peace and contentment, is the necessary precondition for fitness for Vedic knowledge. Thus Sankara, the celebrated commentator on the Upanisads, in commenting on Brahma-sūtra, I. I. I, says that a man is fit for an enquiry after Brahman only when he knows how to distinguish what is permanent from what is transitory (nityānitya-vastu-viveka), and when he has no attachment to the enjoyment of the fruits of his actions either as mundane pleasures or as heavenly joys (ihāmutra-phala-bhoga-virāga). The necessary qualifications which entitle a man to make such an enquiry are disinclination of the mind for worldly joys (sama), possession of proper control and command over the mind, by which it may be turned to philosophy (dama), power of endurance (viṣaya-titikṣā), cessation of all kinds of duties (uparati), and faith in the philosophical conception of truth and reality (tattva-śraddhā). It may be supposed, therefore, that the Upanisads presuppose a high degree of moral development in the way of self-control and disinclination to worldly and heavenly joys. Detachment from senseaffections is one of the most dominant ideas of the Gītā, and the idea of Mundaka, III. 2. 2, referred to above, is re-echoed in the Gītā, 11. 70, where it is said that, just as the waters are absorbed in the calm sea (though poured in continually by the rivers), so the person in whom all desires are absorbed attains peace, and

¹ kāmān yaḥ kāmayate manyamānaḥ sa kāmabhir jāyate tatra tatra paryāpta-kāmasya kṛtātmanas tu ihaiva sarve praviliyanti kāmāḥ. Muṇdaka, 111. 2. 2.
² Kaṭha, 11. 4.

not the man who indulges in desires. The Gītā, of course, again and again emphasizes the necessity of uprooting attachments to pleasures and antipathy to pains and of controlling desires (kāma); but, though the Upaniṣads do not emphasize this idea so frequently, yet the idea is there, and it seems very probable that the Gītā drew it from the Upaniṣads. Hindu tradition also refers to the Upaniṣads as the source of the Gītā. Thus the Gītā-māhātmya describes the Upaniṣads as the cows from which Kṛṣṇa, the cowherd boy, drew the Gītā as milk¹.

But the similarity of Buddhist ethical ideas to those of the Gitā is also immense, and, had it not been for the fact that ideas which may be regarded as peculiarly Buddhistic are almost entirely absent from the Gitā, it might well have been contended that the Gitā derived its ideas of controlling desires and uprooting attachment from Buddhism. Tachibana collects a long list of Buddhist vices as follows²:

```
anganam, impurity, lust, Sn. 517.
 ahankāro, selfishness, egoism, A. 1. 132; M. III. 18, 32.
 mamankaro, desire, A. I. 132; M. III. 18, 32.
 mamāyitam, selfisliness, S.N. 466.
 mamattam, grasping, egoism, S.N. 872, 951.
 apekhā, desire, longing, affection, S.N. 38; Dh. 345.
 icchā, wish, desire, covetousness.
 ejā, desire, lust, greed, craving, S.N. 751; It. 92.
 āsā, desire, longing, S.N. 634, 794, 864; Dh. 397.
 pipāsā, thirst.
 esā, esanā, wish, desire, thirst, Dh. 335.
 ākānkhā, desire, longing, Tha. 20.
 kiñcanam, attachment, S.N. 949; Dh. 200.
gantho, bond, tie, S.N. 798; Dh. 211.
ādāna-gantho, the tied knot of attachment, S.N. 794.
giddhi, greed, desire, Sn. 328; M. 1. 360, 362.
gedho, greed, desire, Sn. 65, 152.
gahanam, entanglement, Dh. 394.
gāho, seizing, attachment.
jālini, snare, desire, lust, Dh. 180; A. II. 211.
pariggaho, attachment, Mahānid. 57.
chando, wish, desire, intention, S.N. 171, 203, etc.
jațā, desire, lust, S.N. I. 13; V.M. 1.
jigimsanatā, covetousness, desire for, Vibhanga, 353.
nijigimsanatā, covetousness, V.M. 1. 23.
tanhā, tasinā, lust, unsatisfied desire, passion.
            Sarvopanişado gāvo dogdhā gopāla-nandanaḥ.
            <sup>2</sup> The Ethics of Buddhism, by S. Tachibana, p. 73.
```

```
upādānam, clinging, attachment, Dh. 11. 58, 111. 230.
panidhi, wish, aspiration, Sn. 801.
pihā, desire, envy, Tha. 1218.
pemam, affection, love, A. III. 249.
bandho, thong, bondage, attachment, Sn. 623; Dh. 344.
bandhanam, bond, fetter, attachment, Sn. 522, 532; Dh. 345.
nibandho, binding, attachment, S. II. 17.
vinibandhanam, bondage, desire, Sn. 16.
anubandho, bondage, affection, desire, M. III. 170; Jt. 91.
upanibandho, fastening, attachment, V.M. 1. 235.
paribandho, Com. on Thi. p. 242.
rāgo, human passion, evil, desire, lust, passim.
sārāgo, sārajjanā, sārajjitattam, affection, passion, Mahānid. 242.
rati, lust, attachment, Dh. 27.
manoratho, desire, wish (?).
ruci, desire, inclination, Sn. 781.
abhilāso, desire, longing, wish, Com. on Peta-vattu, 154.
lālasā, ardent desire (?).
ālayo, longing, desire, lust, Sn. 535, 635; Dh. 411.
lobho, covetousness, desire, cupidity, Sn. 367; Dh. 248.
lobhanam, greed, Tha. 343.
lubhanā, lobhitattam, do. (?).
vanam, desire, lust, Sn. 1131; Dh. 284, 344.
vanatho, love, lust, Dh. 283, 284.
nivesanam, clinging to, attachment, Sn. 470, 801.
sango, fetter, bond, attachment, Sn. 473, 791; Dh. 397.
āsatti, attachment, hanging on, clinging, Sn. 777; Vin. 11. 156;
     Š. I. 212.
visattikā, poison, desire, Sn. 333; Dh. 180.
santhavam, friendship, attachment, Sn. 207, 245; Dh. 27.
ussado, desire (?), Sn. 515, 783, 785.
sneho, sineho, affection, lust, desire, Sn. 209, 943; Dh. 285.
āsayo, abode, intention, inclination, V.H. 1. 140.
anusayo, inclination, desire, A. I. 132; Sn. 14, 369, 545.
sibbanī, desire (?), Sn. 1040.
kodho, anger, wrath, Sn. 1. 245, 362, 868, 928; Dh. 221-3; It. 4,
     12, 109.
kopo, anger, ill-will, ill-temper, Sn. 6.
\bar{a}gh\bar{a}to, anger, ill-will, hatred, malice, D. 1. 3, 31; S. 1. 179.
patigho, wrath, hatred, Sum. 116.
doso, anger, hatred, passim.
viddeso, enmity, hatred (?).
dhūmo, anger (?), Sn. 460.
upanāho, enmity, Sn. 116.
vyāpādo, wish to injure, hatred, fury, Sum. 211; It. 111.
anabhiraddhi, anger, wrath, rage, D. 1. 3.
veram, wrath, anger, hatred, sin, Sn. 150; Dh. 3-5, 201.
virodho, opposition, enmity (?).
```

roso, anger (?).
rosanam, anger (?).
vyārosaṇam, anger, Sn. 148.
aññāṇam, ignorance, It. 62.
moho, fainting, ignorance, folly, passim.
mohanam, ignorance, S.N. 399, 772.
avijjā, ignorance, error, passion.

It is interesting to note that three vices, covetousness, hatred and ignorance, and covetousness particularly, appear under different names and their extirpation is again and again emphasized in diverse ways. These three, ignorance, covetousness and hatred or antipathy, are the roots of all evils. There are, of course, simpler commandments, such as not to take life, not to steal, not to commit adultery, not to tell a lie, and not to take intoxicating drinks, and of these stealing gold, drinking liquors, dishonouring one's teacher's bed, and killing a Brahmin are also prohibited in the Chāndogva Upanisad, v. 10. 9-10¹. But, while the Chandogya only prohibits killing Brahmins, the Buddha prohibited taking the life of any living being. But all these vices, and others opposed to the atthangasīla and dasa-kusala-kamma, are included within covetousness, ignorance and hatred. The Gītā bases its ethics mainly on the necessity of getting rid of attachment and desires from which proceeds greed and frustration of which produces anger. But, while in Buddhism ignorance ($avidy\bar{a}$) is considered as the source of all evil, the Gitā does not even mention the word. In the twelvefold chain of causality in Buddhism it is held that out of ignorance (avijjā) come the conformations (sankhāra), out of the conformations consciousness (viññāna), out of consciousness mind and body (nāma-rūpa), out of mind and body come the six fields of contact (ayatana), out of the six fields of contact comes sensecontact, out of sense-contact comes feeling, out of feeling come desires (tanhā), out of desires comes the holding fast to things (upādāna), out of the holding fast to things comes existence (bhava), out of existence comes birth (jāti), and from birth come old age, decay and death. If ignorance, or avijja, is stopped.

¹ There is another list of eightfold prohibitions called atthangāstla; these are not to take life, not to take what is not given, to abstain from sex-relations, to abstain from falsehood, from drinking liquors, from eating at forbidden times, from dancing and music and from beautifying one's body by perfumes, garlands, etc. There is also another list called dasa-kusala-kamma, such as not to take life, not to take what is not given, not to commit adultery, not to tell a lie, not to slander, not to abuse or talk foolishly, not to be covetous, malicious and sceptical.

then the whole cycle stops. But, though in this causal cycle ignorance and desires are far apart, yet psychologically desires proceed immediately from ignorance, and a frustration of desires produces anger, hatred, etc. In the Gitā the start is taken directly from attachment and desires (kāma). The Buddhist word tṛṣṇā $(tanh\bar{a})$ is seldom mentioned in the $Git\bar{a}$; whereas the Upanisadic word kāma takes its place as signifying desires. The Gitā is not a philosophical work which endeavours to search deeply into the causes of attachments, nor does it seek to give any practical course of advice as to how one should get rid of attachment. The Vedanta system of thought, as interpreted by Sankara, traces the origin of the world with all its evils to ignorance or nescience (avidvā). as an indefinable principle; the Yoga traces all our phenomenal experience to five afflictions, ignorance, attachment, antipathy, egoism and self-love, and the last four to the first, which is the fountain-head of all evil afflictions. In the Gītā there is no such attempt to trace attachment, etc. to some other higher principle. The word ajñāna (ignorance) is used in the Gitā about six or eight times in the sense of ignorance; but this "ignorance" does not mean any metaphysical principle or the ultimate startingpoint of a causal chain, and is used simply in the sense of false knowledge or ignorance, as opposed to true knowledge of things as they are. Thus in one place it is said that true knowledge of things is obscured by ignorance, and that this is the cause of all delusion1. Again, it is said that to those who by true knowledge (of God) destroy their own ignorance (ajñāna) true knowledge reveals the highest reality (tat param), like the sun². In another place iñāna and ajñāna are both defined. Jñāna is defined as unvacillating and abiding self-knowledge and true knowledge by which truth and reality are apprehended, and all that is different from this is called ajñāna3. Ajñāna is stated elsewhere to be the result of tamas, and in two other places tamas is said to be the product of ajñāna4. In another place it is said that people are blinded by ignorance (ajñāna), thinking, "I am rich, I am an aristocrat, who else is there like me? I shall perform sacrifices make gifts and enjoy⁵." In another place ignorance is said to

¹ ajñānenāvrtam jñānam tena muhyanti januavah. v. 15.

² jñānena tu tad-ajñānam yesām nāsitam ātmanah. v. 16. 3 adhyātma-jñāna-nityatvam tattva-jñānārtha-darsanam etaj-jñānam iti proktam ajñānam yad ato 'nyathā. Gitā, xiii. 12.

produce doubts (samsaya), and the Gītā lecture of Kṛṣṇa is supposed to dispel the delusion of Arjuna, produced by ignorance1. This shows that, though the word ajñāna is used in a variety of contexts, either as ordinary ignorance or ignorance of true and absolute philosophic knowledge, it is never referred to as being the source of attachment or desires. This need not be interpreted to mean that the Gitā was opposed to the view that attachments and desires were produced from ignorance; but it seems at least to imply that the Gitā was not interested to trace the origin of attachments and desires and was satisfied to take their existence for granted and urged the necessity of their extirpation for peace and equanimity of mind. Buddhist Hinayana ethics and practical discipline are constituted of moral discipline (sīla), concentration (samādhi) and wisdom (pannā). The śila consisted in the performance of good conduct (caritta) and desisting (vāritta) from certain other kinds of prohibited action. Sila means those particular volitions and mental states, etc. by which a man who desists from committing sinful actions maintains himself on the right path. Sila thus means (1) right volition (cetana), (2) the associated mental states (cetasika), (3) mental control (samvara), and (4) the actual non-transgression (in body and speech) of the course of conduct already in the mind by way of the preceding three silas, called avitikkama. Samvara is spoken of as being of five kinds, viz. (1) pātimokkha-samvara (the control which saves him who abides by it), (2) sati-samvara (the control of mindfulness), (3) ñānasamvara (the control of knowledge), (4) khanti-samvara (the control of patience) and (5) viriya-samvara (the control of active restraint). Pātimokkha-samvara means all self-control in general. Sati-samvara means the mindfulness by which one can bring in the right and good associations, when using one's cognitive senses. Even when looking at any tempting object, a man will, by virtue of his mindfulness (sati), control himself from being tempted by not thinking of its tempting side and by thinking on such aspects of it as may lead in the right direction. Khanti-samvara is that by which one can remain unperturbed in heat and cold. By the proper adherence to sila all our bodily, mental and vocal activities (kamma) are duly systematized, organized and stabilized (samādhānam, upadhāranam. patittha). The practice of sila is for the practice of jhana (meditation). As a preparatory measure thereto, a man must train himself

¹ Gitā, IV. 42; XVIII. 72.

continually to view with disgust the appetitive desires for eating and drinking (āhāre paṭikūla-saññā) by emphasizing in the mind the various troubles that are associated with seeking food and drink and their ultimate loathsome transformations as various nauseating bodily elements. He must habituate his mind to the idea that all the parts of our body are made up of the four elements, viz. kṣiti (earth), ap (water), etc. He should also think of the good effects of śīla, the making of gifts, of the nature of death and of the deep nature and qualities of the final extinction of all phenomena, and should practise brahma-vihāra, as the fourfold meditation of universal friendship, universal pity, happiness in the prosperity and happiness of all, and indifference to any kind of preferment for himself, his friend, his enemy or a third party¹.

The Gītā does not enter into any of these disciplinary measures. It does not make a programme of universal altruism or hold that one should live only for others, as is done in Mahāyāna ethics, or of the virtues of patience, energy for all that is good (vīrya as kuśalotsāha), meditation and true knowledge of the essencelessness of all things. The person who takes the vow of saintly life takes the vow of living for the good of others, for which he should be prepared to sacrifice all that is good for him. His vow does not limit him to doing good to his co-religionists or to any particular sects, but applies to all human beings, irrespective of caste, creed or race, and not only to human beings, but to all living beings. Mahāyāna ethical works like the Bodhi-caryāvatārapañjikā or Śiksā-samuccaya do not deal merely with doctrines or theories, but largely with practical instructions for becoming a Buddhist saint. They treat of the practical difficulties in the path of a saint's career and give practical advice regarding the way in which he may avoid temptations, keep himself in the straight path of duty, and gradually elevate himself to higher and higher states.

The Gitā is neither a practical guide-book of moral efforts nor a philosophical treatise discussing the origin of immoral tendencies and tracing them to certain metaphysical principles as their sources; but, starting from the ordinary frailties of attachment and desires, it tries to show how one can lead a normal life of duties and responsibilities and yet be in peace and contentment in a state of equanimity and in communion with God. The Gitā

¹ See A History of Indian Philosophy, by S. N. Dasgupta, vol. 1, p. 103.

has its setting in the great battle of the Mahā-bhārata. Krsna is represented as being an incarnation of God, and he is also the charioteer of his friend and relation, Arjuna, the great Pandava hero. The Pandava hero was a Ksattriva by birth, and he had come to the great battle-field of Kuruksetra to fight his cousin and opponent King Duryodhana, who had assembled great warriors, all of whom were relations of Arjuna, leading mighty armies. In the first chapter of the Gitā a description is given of the two armies which faced each other in the holy field (dharma-kṣetra) of Kuruksetra. In the second chapter Arjuna is represented as feeling dejected at the idea of having to fight with his relations and of eventually killing them. He says that it was better to beg from door to door than to kill his respected relations. Krsna strongly objects to this attitude of Arjuna and says that the soul is immortal and it is impossible to kill anyone. But, apart from this metaphysical point of view, even from the ordinary point of view a Ksattriya ought to fight, because it is his duty to do so, and there is nothing nobler for a Ksattriya than to fight. The fundamental idea of the Gītā is that a man should always follow his own caste-duties, which are his own proper duties, or sva-dharma. Even if his own proper duties are of an inferior type, it is much better for him to cleave to them than to turn to other people's duties which he could well perform. It is even better to die cleaving to one's caste-duties, than to turn to the duties fixed for other people, which only do him harm1. The caste-duties of Brahmins, Ksattriyas, Vaisyas and Sūdras are fixed in accordance with their natural qualities. Thus sensecontrol, control over mind, power of endurance, purity, patience, sincerity, knowledge of worldly things and philosophic wisdom are the natural qualities of a Brahmin. Heroism, bravery, patience, skill, not to fly from battle, making of gifts and lordliness are the natural duties of a Ksattriya. Agriculture, tending of cattle and trade are the natural duties of a Sudra. A man can attain his highest only by performing the specific duties of his own caste. God pervades this world, and it is He who moves all beings to work. A man can best realize himself by adoring God and by the performance of his own specific caste-duties. No sin can come to a man who performs his own caste-duties. Even if one's caste-duties were sinful or wrong, it would not be wrong

for a man to perform them; for, as there is smoke in every fire, so there is some wrong thing or other in all our actions. Arjuna is thus urged to follow his caste-duty as a Kṣattriya and to fight his enemies in the battle-field. If he killed his enemies, then he would be the master of the kingdom; if he himself was killed, then since he had performed the duties of a Kṣattriya, he would go to Heaven. If he did not engage himself in that fight, which was his duty, he would not only lose his reputation, but would also transgress his own dharma.

Such an instruction naturally evokes the objection that war necessarily implies injury to living beings; but in reply to such an objection Krsna says that the proper way of performing actions is to dissociate one's mind from attachment; when one can perform an action with a mind free from attachment, greed and selfishness, from a pure sense of duty, the evil effects of such action cannot affect the performer. The evil effects of any action can affect the performer when in performing an action he has a motive of his own to fulfil. But, if he does not seek anything for himself, if he is not overjoyed in pleasures, or miserable in pains, his works cannot affect him. A man should therefore surrender all his desires for selfish ends and dedicate all his actions to God and be in communion with Him, and yet continue to perform the normal duties of his caste and situation of life. So long as we have our bodies, the necessity of our own nature will drive us to work. So it is impossible for us to give up all work. To give up work can be significant only if it means the giving up of all desires for the fruits of such actions. If the fruits of actions are given up, then the actions can no longer bind us to them. That brings us in return peace and contentment, and the saint who has thus attained a perfect equanimity of mind is firm and unshaken in his true wisdom. and nothing can sway him to and fro. One may seek to attain this state either by philosophic wisdom or by devotion to God. and it is the latter path which is easier. God, by His grace, helps the devotee to purge his mind of all impurities, and so by His grace a man can dissociate his mind from all motives of greed and selfishness and be in communion with Him; he can thus perform his duties, as fixed for him by his caste or his custom, without looking forward to any reward or gain.

The Gitā ideal of conduct differs from the sacrificial ideal of

¹ Gītā, xvIII. 44-48.

conduct in this, that sacrifices are not to be performed for any ulterior end of heavenly bliss or any other mundane benefits, but merely from a sense of duty, because sacrifices are enjoined in the scriptures to be performed by Brahmins; and they must therefore be performed from a pure sense of duty. The Gitā ideal of ethics differs from that preached in the systems of philosophy like the Vedanta or the Yoga of Patañjali in this, that, while the aim of these systems was to transcend the sphere of actions and duties, to rise to a stage in which one could give up all one's activities, mental or physical, the ideal of the Gītā was decidedly an ideal of work. The Gitā, as has already been pointed out, does not advocate a course of extremism in anything. However elevated a man may be, he must perform his normal caste-duties and duties of customary morality. The $Git\bar{a}$ is absolutely devoid of the note of pessimism which is associated with early Buddhism. The śila, samādhi and paññā of Buddhism have, no doubt, in the Gitā their counterparts in the training of a man to disinclination for joys and attachments, to concentration on God and the firm and steady fixation of will and intelligence; but the significance of these in the Gitā is entirely different from that which they have in Buddhism. The Gitā does not expound a course of approved conduct and prohibitions, since, so far as these are concerned, one's actions are to be guided by the code of caste-duties or duties of customary morality. What is required of a man is that he should cleanse his mind from the impurities of attachment, desires and crayings. The samādhi of the Gītā is not a mere concentration of the mind on some object, but communion with God, and the wisdom, or prajñā, of the Gītā is no realization of any philosophic truth, but a fixed and unperturbed state of the mind, where the will and intellect remain unshaken in one's course of duty, clear of all consequences and free from all attachments, and in a state of equanimity which cannot be shaken or disturbed by pleasures or sorrows

It may naturally be asked in this connection, what is the general standpoint of Hindu Ethics? The Hindu social system is based on a system of fourfold division of castes. The Gitā says that God Himself created the fourfold division of castes into Brahmins, Kṣattriyas, Vaiśyas and Śūdras, a division based on characteristic

 $^{^1}$ Sankara, of course, is in entire disagreement with this interpretation of the $Git\bar{a}$, as will be discussed in a later section.

qualities and specific duties. Over and above this caste division and its corresponding privileges, duties and responsibilities, there is also a division of the stages of life into that of Brahma-cārin student, grha-stha—householder, vāna-prastha—retired in a forest, and bhiksu—mendicant, and each of these had its own prescribed duties. The duties of Hindu ethical life consisted primarily of the prescribed caste-duties and the specific duties of the different stages of life, and this is known as varnāśrama-dharma. Over and above this there were also certain duties which were common to all, called the sādhārana-dharmas. Thus Manu mentions steadiness (dhairya), forgiveness (kṣamā), self-control (dama), non-stealing (cauryābhāva), purity (śauca), sense-control (indriva-nigraha), wisdom $(dh\bar{\imath})$, learning $(vidy\bar{a})$, truthfulness (satya) and control of anger (akrodha) as examples of sādhārana-dharma. Praśastapāda mentions faith in religious duties (dharma-śraddhā), non-injury (ahimsā), doing good to living beings (bhūta-hitatva), truthfulness (satya-vacana), non-stealing (asteya), sex-continence (brahmacarya), sincerity of mind (anupadhā), control of anger (krodhavarjana), cleanliness and ablutions (abhisecana), taking of pure food (śuci-dravya-sevana), devotion to Vedic gods (viśista-devatā-bhakti), and watchfulness in avoiding transgressions (apramāda). The caste-duties must be distinguished from these common duties. Thus sacrifices, study and gifts are common to all the three higher castes, Brahmins, Kşattriyas and Vaisyas. The specific duties of a Brahmin are acceptance of gifts, teaching, sacrifices and so forth; the specific duties of a Ksattriya are protection of the people, punishing the wicked, not to retreat from battles and other specific tasks; the duties of a Vaisya are buying, selling, agriculture, breeding and rearing of cattle, and the specific duties of a Vaisva. The duties of a Sūdra are to serve the three higher castes¹.

Regarding the relation between varna-dharma and sādhāraṇa-dharma, a modern writer says that "the sādhāraṇa-dharmas constitute the foundation of the varṇāśrama-dharmas, the limits within which the latter are to be observed and obeyed. For

¹ The Gttā, however, counts self-control (śama), control over the mind (dama), purity (śauca), forgiving nature (kṣānti), sincerity (ārjava), knowledge (jñāna), wisdom (vijñāna) and faith (āstikya) as the natural qualities of Brahmins. The duties of Kṣattriyas are heroism (śaurya), smartness (tejas), power of endurance (dhṛti), skill (dākṣya), not to fly in battle (yuddhe cāpy apalāyana), making of gifts (dāna) and power of controlling others (tśvara-bhāva). The natural duties of Vaiśyas are agriculture, rearing of cows and trade. Gttā, XVIII. 42-44.

example, the Brahmin in performing religious sacrifice must not appropriate another's property, non-appropriation being one of the common and universal duties. In this way he serves his own community as well as subserves (though in a negative way) the common good of the community—and so, in an indirect way, serves the common good of humanity. Thus the individual of a specific community who observes the duties of his class does not serve his own community merely, but also and in the same process all other communities according to their deserts and needs, and in this way the whole of humanity itself. This, it will be seen, is also the view of Plato, whose virtue of justice is the common good which is to be realized by each class through its specific duties; but this is to be distinguished from the common good which constitutes the object of the sādhārana-dharmas of the Hindu classification. The end in these common and universal duties is not the common well-being, which is being correctly realized in specific communities, but the common good as the precondition and foundation of the latter; it is not the good which is commonin-the-individual, but common-as-the-prius-of-the-individual. Hence the sādhārana duties are obligatory equally for all individuals, irrespective of their social position or individual capacity¹." The statement that the common good (sādhārana-dharma) could be regarded as the precondition of the specific caste-duties implies that, if the latter came into conflict with the former, then the former should prevail. This is, however, inexact; for there is hardly any instance where, in case of a conflict, the sādhārana-dharma, or the common duties, had a greater force. Thus, for example, non-injury to living beings was a common duty; but sacrifices implied the killing of animals, and it was the clear duty of the Brahmins to perform sacrifices. War implied the taking of an immense number of human lives; but it was the duty of a Kşattriya not to turn away from a battle-field, and in pursuance of his obligatory duty as a Ksattriya he had to fight. Turning to traditional accounts, we find in the Rāmāvana that Sambūka was a Sūdra saint (muni) who was performing ascetic penances in a forest. This was a transgression of caste-duties; for a Sudra could not perform tapas, which only the higher caste people were allowed to undertake, and hence the performance of tapas by the Sūdra saint Sambūka was regarded

¹ Ethics of the Hindus, by S. K. Maitra under Dr Seal's close personal supervision and guidance, pp. 3-4.

as adharma (vice); and, as a result of this adharma, there was a calamity in the kingdom of Rāma in the form of the death of an infant son of a Brahmin. King Rāma went out in his chariot and beheaded Sambūka for transgressing his caste-duties. Instances could be multiplied to show that, when there was a conflict between the caste-duties and the common duties, it was the former that had the greater force. The common duties had their force only when they were not in conflict with the caste-duties. The Gîtā is itself an example of how the caste-duties had preference over common duties. In spite of the fact that Arjuna was extremely unwilling to take the lives of his near and dear kinsmen in the battle of Kuruksetra Krsna tried his best to dissuade him from his disinclination to fight and pointed out to him that it was his clear duty, as a Kşattriya, to fight. It seems therefore very proper to hold that the common duties had only a general application, and that the specific caste-duties superseded them, whenever the two were in conflict.

The Gitā does not raise the problem of common duties, as its synthesis of nivṛtti (cessation from work) and pravṛtti (tending to work) makes it unnecessary to introduce the advocacy of the common duties; for its instruction to take to work with a mind completely detached from all feelings and motives of self-seeking, pleasure-seeking and self-interest elevates its scheme of work to a higher sphere, which would not be in need of the practice of any select scheme of virtues.

The theory of the Gitā that, if actions are performed with an unattached mind, then their defects cannot touch the performer, distinctly implies that the goodness or badness of an action does not depend upon the external effects of the action, but upon the inner motive of action. If there is no motive of pleasure or self-gain, then the action performed cannot bind the performer; for it is only the bond of desires and self-love that really makes an action one's own and makes one reap its good or bad fruits. Morality from this point of view becomes wholly subjective, and the special feature of the Gitā is that it tends to make all actions non-moral by cutting away the bonds that connect an action with its performer. In such circumstances the more logical course would be that of Śańkara, who would hold a man who is free from desires and attachment to be above morality, above duties and above responsibilities. The Gitā, however, would not advocate

the objective nivrtti, or cessation of work; its whole aim is to effect subjective nivrtti, or detachment from desires. It would not allow anyone to desist from his prescribed objective duties; but, whatever might be the nature of these duties, since they were performed without any motive of gain, pleasure or self-interest, they would be absolutely without fruit for the performer, who, in his perfect equanimity of mind, would transcend all his actions and their effects. If Arjuna fought and killed hundreds of his kinsmen out of a sense of his caste-duty, then, howsoever harmful his actions might be, they would not affect him. Yudhisthira, however, contemplated an expiation of the sin of killing his kinsmen by repentance, gifts, asceticism, pilgrimage, etc., which shows the other view, which was prevalent in the Mahā-bhārata period, that, when the performance of caste-duties led to such an injury to human lives, the sinful effects of such actions could be expiated by such means¹. Yudhisthira maintained that of asceticism (tapas), the giving up of all duties (tyāga), and the final knowledge of the ultimate truth (avadhi), the second is better than the first and the third is better than the second. He therefore thought that the best course was to take to an ascetic life and give up all duties and responsibilities, whereas Arjuna held that the best course for a king would be to take upon himself the normal responsibilities of a kingly life and at the same time remain unattached to the pleasures of such a life². Regarding also the practice of the virtues of non-injury, etc., Arjuna maintains that it is wrong to carry these virtues to extremes. Howsoever a man may live, whether as an ascetic or as a forester, it is impossible for him to practise non-injury to all living beings in any extreme degree. Even in the water that one drinks and the fruits that one eats, even in breathing and winking many fine and invisible insects are killed. So the virtue of non-injury, or, for the matter of that, all kinds of virtue, can be practised only in moderation, and their injunctions always imply that they can be practised only within the bounds of a commonsense view of things. Non-injury may

asaktah saktavad gacchan nihsango mukta-bandhanah samah satrau ca mitre ca sa vai mukto mahīpate;

to which Yudhisthira replies:

tapas tyāgo 'vadhir iti niścayas tv eşa dhīmatām parasparam jyāya eṣām yeṣām naihśreyasī matih. Ibid. XII. 18. 31 and XII. 19. 9.

¹ Mahā-bhārata, x11. 7. 36 and 37.

² Thus Arjuna says:

be good; but there are cases where non-injury would mean doing injury. If a tiger enters into a cattle-shed, not to kill the tiger would amount to killing the cows. So all religious injunctions are made from the point of view of a practical and well-ordered maintenance of society and must therefore be obeyed with an eye to the results that may follow in their practical application. Our principal object is to maintain properly the process of the social order and the well-being of the people¹. It seems clear, then, that, when the $Git\bar{a}$ urges again and again that there is no meaning in giving up our normal duties, vocation and place in life and its responsibilities, and that what is expected of us is that we should make our minds unattached, it refers to the view which Yudhiṣṭhira expresses, that we must give up all our works. The $Git\bar{a}$ therefore repeatedly urges that $ty\bar{a}ga$ does not mean the giving up of all works, but the mental giving up of the fruits of all actions.

Though the practice of detachment of mind from all desires and motives of pleasure and enjoyment would necessarily involve the removal of all vices and a natural elevation of the mind to all that is high and noble, yet the Gitā sometimes denounces certain types of conduct in very strong terms. Thus, in the sixteenth chapter, it is said that people who hold a false philosophy and think that the world is false and, without any basis, deny the existence of God and hold that there is no other deeper cause of the origin of life than mere sex-attraction and sex-union, destroy themselves by their foolishness and indulgence in all kinds of cruel deeds, and would by their mischievous actions turn the world to the path of ruin. In their insatiable desires, filled with pride. vanity and ignorance, they take to wrong and impure courses of action. They argue too much and think that there is nothing greater than this world that we live in, and, thinking so, they indulge in all kinds of pleasures and enjoyments. Tied with bonds of desire, urged by passions and anger, they accumulate money in a wrongful manner for the gratification of their sense-desires. "I have got this to-day," they think, "and enjoy myself; I have so much hoarded money and I shall have more later on"; "that enemy has been killed by me, I shall kill other enemies also, I am

a lord, I enjoy myself, I am successful, powerful and happy, I am rich, I have a noble lineage, there is no one like me, I perform sacrifices, make gifts and enjoy." They get distracted by various kinds of ideas and desires and, surrounded by nets of ignorance and delusion and full of attachment for sense-gratifications, they naturally fall into hell. Proud, arrogant and filled with the vanity of wealth, they perform improperly the so-called sacrifices, as a demonstration of their pomp and pride. In their egoism, power, pride, desires and anger they always ignore God, both in themselves and in others¹. The main vices that one should try to get rid of are thus egoism, too many desires, greed, anger, pride and vanity, and of these desire and anger are again and again mentioned as being like the gates of hell².

Among the principal virtues called the divine equipment (daivi sampat) the Gītā counts fearlessness (abhaya), purity of heart (sattva-samśuddhi), knowledge of things and proper action in accordance with it, giving, control of mind, sacrifice, study, tapas, sincerity (ārjava), non-injury (ahimsā), truthfulness (satya), control of anger (akrodha), renunciation (tyāga), peacefulness of mind (śānti), not to backbite (apaiśuna), kindness to the suffering (bhūtesu daya), not to be greedy (alolupatva), tenderness (mārdava), a feeling of shame before people in general when a wrong action is done (hri), steadiness (acapala), energy (teias), a forgiving spirit (ksānti), patience (dhrti), purity (sauca), not to think ill of others (adroha), and not to be vain. It is these virtues which liberate our spirits, whereas vanity, pride, conceit, anger, cruelty and ignorance are vices which bind and enslave us3. The man who loves God should not hurt any living beings, should be friendly and sympathetic towards them, and should yet be unattached to all things, should have no egoism, be the same in sorrows and pleasures and full of forgivingness for all. He should be firm, self-controlled and always contented. He should be pure, unattached, the same to all, should not take to actions from any personal motives, and he has nothing to fear. He is the same to friends and enemies, in appreciation and denunciation; he is the same in heat and cold, pleasure and pain: he is the same in praise and blame, homeless and always satisfied with anything and everything; he is always unperturbed and absolutely unattached to all things⁴. If one carefully goes through

¹ Gītā, xvi. 8-18.

³ Ibid. xv1. 1-5.

² lbid. xvi. 21.

⁴ Ibid. XII. 13-19; see also ibid. XIII. 8-11.

the above list of virtues, it appears that the virtues are preeminently of a negative character—one should not be angry, hurtful to others, egoistic, proud or vain, should not do anything with selfish motives, should not be ruffled by pleasure and pain, heat and cold and should be absolutely unattached. Of the few positive virtues, sincerity and purity of heart, a forgiving spirit, tenderness, friendliness, kindness, alertness and sympathy seem to be most prominent. The terms maitra (friendliness) and karunā (compassion) might naturally suggest the Buddhist virtues so named, since they do not occur in the Upanisads¹. But in the Gītā also they are mentioned only once, and the general context of the passage shows that no special emphasis is put on these two virtues. They do not imply any special kind of meditation of universal friendship or universal piety or the active performance of friendly and sympathetic deeds for the good of humanity or for the good of living beings in general. They seem to imply simply the positive friendly state of the mind that must accompany all successful practice of non-injury to fellow-beings. The Gītā does not advocate the active performance of friendliness, but encourages a friendly spirit as a means of discouraging the tendency to do harm to others. The life that is most admired in the Gītā is a life of unattachedness, a life of peace, contentment and perfect equanimity and unperturbedness in joys and sorrows. The vices that are denounced are generally those that proceed from attachment and desires, such as egoism, pride, vanity, anger, greediness, etc. There is another class of virtues which are often praised, namely those which imply purity, sincerity and alertness of mind and straightness of conduct. The negative virtue of sense-control, with its positive counterpart, the acquirement of the power of directing one's mind in a right direction, forms the bed-rock of the entire superstructure of the Gītā code of moral and virtuous conduct.

The virtue of sameness (samatva), however, seems to be the great ideal which the $G\bar{\imath}t\bar{a}$ is never tired of emphasizing again and again. This sameness can be attained in three different stages: subjective sameness, or equanimity of mind, or the sameness in joys and sorrows, praise and blame and in all situations of life; objective sameness, as regarding all people, good, bad or indifferent, a friend or an enemy, with equal eyes and in the same

 $^{^1}$ The term maitra occurs only once in the Muktikopanişat, II. 34, and the Muktika is in all probability one of the later Upanişads.

impartial spirit; and the final stage of the achievement of this equanimity is the self-realized state when one is absolutely unperturbed by all worldly things—a state of transcendence called gunātīta. Thus in the Gītā, II. 15, it is said that he whom senseaffections and physical troubles cannot affect in any way, who is unperturbable and the same in joys and sorrows, attains immortality. In 11. 38 Krsna asks Arjuna to think of joys and sorrows, gain and loss, victory and defeat as being the same, and to engage himself in the fight with such a mind; for, if he did so, no sin would touch him. In 11. 47 Krsna says to Arjuna that his business is only to perform his duties and not to look for the effects of his deeds; it is wrong to look for the fruits of deeds or to desist from performing one's duties. In II, 48 this sameness in joys and sorrows is described as yoga, and it is again urged that one should be unperturbed whether in success or in failure. The same idea is repeated in 11. 55, 56 and 57, where it is said that a true saint should not be damped in sorrow or elated in joy, and that he should not be attached to anything and should take happiness or misery indifferently, without particularly welcoming the former or regretting the latter. Such a man is absolutely limited to his own self and is self-satisfied. He is not interested in achieving anything or in not achieving anything; there is no personal object for him to attain in the world¹. To such a man gold and stones, desirables and undesirables, praise and blame, appreciation and denunciation, friends and foes are all alike2. Such a man makes no distinction whether between a friend and foe, or between a sinner and a virtuous man³. Such a man knows that pleasures and pains are welcomed and hated by all and, thinking so, he desires the good of all and looks upon all as he would upon himself-on a learned Brahmin of an elevated character, on a cow, an elephant, a dog or a candāla; and the wise behave in the same way4. He sees God in all beings and knows the indestructible and the immortal in all that is destructible. He who knows that all beings are pervaded by all, and thus regards them all with an equal eye, does not hurt his own spiritual nature and thus attains his highest⁵. As the culmination of this development, there is the state in which a man transcends all the corporeal and mundane characteristics of the threefold gunas, and, being freed from birth, death, old age and

¹ Gitā, 111. 17, 18.

⁴ Ibid. vi. 31; also v. 18.

² Ibid. xiv. 24, 25.

³ Ibid. vi. 9.

⁵ Ibid. XIII. 28.

sorrow, attains immortality. He knows that the worldly qualities of things, the *gunas*, are extraneous to his own spiritual nature, and by such thoughts he transcends the sphere of all worldly qualities and attains Brahmahood¹.

Apart from the caste-duties and other deeds that are to be performed without any attachment, the Gitā speaks again and again of sacrifices, tapas and gifts, as duties which cannot be ignored at any stage of our spiritual development. It is well worth pointing out that the Gitā blames the performance of sacrifices either for the attainment of selfish ends or for making a display of pomp or pride. The sacrifices are to be performed from a sense of duty and of public good, since it is only by the help of the sacrifices that the gods may be expected to bring down heavy showers, through which crops may grow in plenty. Physical tapas is described as the adoration of gods, Brahmins, teachers and wise men, as purity, sincerity, sex-continence and non-injury; tapas in speech is described as truthful and unoffending speech, which is both sweet to hear and for the good of all, and also study; mental tapas is described as serenity of mind (manah-prasāda), happy temper (saumyatva), thoughtfulness (mauna), self-control (ātma-vinigraha) and sincerity of mind; and the higher kind of tapas is to be performed without any idea of gain or the fulfilment of any ulterior end². Gifts are to be made to good Brahmins in a holy place and at an auspicious time, merely from a sense of duty. This idea that gifts are properly made only when they are made to good Brahmins at a holy time or place is very much more limited and restricted than the Mahāyāna idea of making gifts for the good of all, without the slightest restriction of any kind. Thus it is said in the Siksā-samuccaya that a Bodhisattva need not be afraid among tigers and other wild animals in a wild forest, since the Bodhisattva has given his all for the good of all beings. He has therefore to think that, if the wild animals should eat him. this would only mean the giving his body to them, which would be the fulfilment of his virtue of universal charity. The Bodhisattvas take the vow of giving away their all in universal charity³.

Thus the fundamental teaching of the Gītā is to follow casteduties without any motive of self-interest or the gratification of sense-desires. The other general duties of sacrifices, tapas and

¹ Gītā, XIV. 20, 23, 26. ² Ibid. XVI. 11-17. ³ Śikṣā-samuccaya, ch. XIX, p. 349.

gifts are also to be practised by all and may hence be regarded in some sense as being equivalent to the sadharana-dharmas of the Vaisesika and Smrti literature. But, if caste-duties or customary duties come into conflict with the special duties of non-injury (ahimsā), then the caste-duties are to be followed in preference. It does not seem that any of the other special duties or virtues which are enjoined can come into conflict with the general casteduties; for most of these are for the inner moral development, with which probably no caste-duties can come into conflict. But, though there is no express mandate of the Gītā on the point, yet it may be presumed that, should a Sūdra think of performing sacrifices, tapas or gifts or the study of the Vedas, this would most certainly be opposed by the Gita, as it would be against the prescribed caste-duties. So, though non-injury is one of the special virtues enjoined by the Gītā, yet, when a Ksattriya kills his enemies in open and free fight, that fight is itself to be regarded as virtuous (dharmya) and there is for the Ksattriya no sin in the killing of his enemies. If a person dedicates all his actions to Brahman and performs his duties without attachment, then sinfulness in his actions cannot cleave to him, just as water cannot cleave to the leaves of a lotus plant1. On the one hand the Gitā keeps clear of the ethics of the absolutist and metaphysical systems by urging the necessity of the performance of caste and customary duties, and yet enjoins the cultivation of the great virtues of renunciation, purity, sincerity, non-injury, selfcontrol, sense-control and want of attachment as much as the absolutist systems would desire to do; on the other hand, it does not adopt any of the extreme and rigorous forms of selfdiscipline, as the Yoga does, or the practice of the virtues on an unlimited and universalist scale, as the Buddhists did. It follows the middle course, strongly emphasizing the necessity of selfcontrol, sense-control and detachment from all selfish ends and desires along with the performance of the normal duties. This detachment from sense-pleasures is to be attained either through wisdom or, preferably, through devotion to God.

Analysis of Action.

The consideration of the $G\bar{\imath}t\bar{a}$ ethics naturally brings in the problem of the analysis of the nature of action, volition and agent. The principal analysis of volition in Hindu Philosophy is to be found in the Nyäva-Vaiśesika works. Praśastapāda divides animal activities into two classes, firstly, those that are of a reflex nature and originate automatically from life-functions (jīvana-pūrvaka) and subserve useful ends (kām api artha-kriyām) for the organism, and, secondly, those conscious and voluntary actions that proceed out of desire or aversion, for the attainment of desirable ends and the avoidance of undesirable ones. Prabhākara holds that volitional actions depend on several factors, firstly, a general notion that something has to be done (kāryatā-jñāna), which Gangabhatta in his Bhātta-cintāmani explains as meaning not merely a general notion that a particular work can be done by the agent, but also the specific notion that an action must be done by him-a sense which can proceed only from a belief that the action would be useful to him and would not be sufficiently harmful to him to dissuade him from it. Secondly, there must be the belief that the agent has the power or capacity of performing the action (krti-sādhyatā-jñāna). This belief of krti-sādhyatā-jñāna leads to desire (cikīrsā). The Prabhākaras do not introduce here the important factor that an action can be desired only if it is conducive to the good of the agent. Instead of this element they suppose that actions are desired when the agent identifies himself with the action as one to be accomplished by him-an action is desired only as a kind of selfrealization. The Nyāya, however, thinks that the fact that an action is conducive to good and not productive of serious mischief is an essential condition of its performance.

The Gitā seems to hold that everywhere actions are always being performed by the gunas or characteristic qualities of prakṛti, the primal matter. It is through ignorance and false pride that one thinks himself to be the agent¹. In another place it is said that for the occurrence of an action there are five causes, viz. the body, the agent, the various sense-organs, the various life-functions and biomotor activities, and the unknown objective causal elements or the all-controlling power of God (daiva)². All actions

¹ Gītā, III. 27; XIII. 29.

adhişthānam tathā kartā karaņam ca pṛthag-vidham vividhās ca pṛthak ceṣtā daivam caivātra pañcamam. Ibid. XVIII. 14.

being due to the combined operation of these five elements, it would be wrong to think the self or the agent to be the only performer of actions. Thus it is said that, this being so, he who thinks the self alone to be the agent of actions, this wicked-minded person through his misapplied intelligence does not see things properly. Whatever actions are performed, right or wrong, whether in body, speech or mind, have these five factors as their causes2. The philosophy that underlies the ethical position of the Gītā consists in the fact that, in reality, actions are made to happen primarily through the movement of the characteristic qualities of prakrti, and secondarily, through the collocation of the five factors mentioned, among which the self is but one factor only. It is, therefore, sheer egoism to think that one can, at his own sweet will, undertake a work or cease from doing works. For the prakrti, or primal matter, through its later evolutes, the collocation of causes, would of itself move us to act, and even in spite of the opposition of our will we are led to perform the very action which we did not want to perform. So Krsna says to Arjuna that the egoism through which you would say that you would not fight is mere false vanity, since the prakrti is bound to lead you to action3. A man is bound by the active tendencies or actions which necessarily follow directly from his own nature, and there is no escape. He has to work in spite of the opposition of his will. Prakrti, or the collocation of the five factors, moves us to work. That being so, no one can renounce all actions. If renouncing actions is an impossibility, and if one is bound to act, it is but proper that one should perform one's normal duties. There are no duties and no actions which are absolutely faultless, absolutely above all criticism; so the proper way in which a man should purify his actions is by purging his mind of all imperfections and impurities of desires and attachment. But a question may arise how, if all actions follow necessarily as the product of the five-fold collocation, a person can determine his actions? The general implication of the Gitā seems to be that, though the action follows necessarily as the product of the fivefold collocation, yet the self can give a direction to these actions; if a man wishes to dissociate himself from all attachments and desires by dedicating the fruits of all his actions to God and clings to God with such a purpose, God helps him to attain his noble aim.

¹ Gitā, xviii. 16.

² Ibid. xvIII. 15.

³ Ibid. xvIII. 59.

Eschatology.

The Gītā is probably the earliest document where a definite statement is made regarding the imperishable nature of existent things and the impossibility of that which is non-existent coming into being. It says that what is non-existent cannot come into being, and that what exists cannot cease to be. In modern times we hear of the principle of the conservation of energy and also of the principle of the conservation of mass. The principle of the conservation of energy is distinctly referred to in the Vyāsa-bhāsya on Patanjali-sūtra, IV. 3, but the idea of the conservation of mass does not seem to have been mentioned definitely anywhere. Both the Vedantist and the Samkhyist seem to base their philosophies on an ontological principle known as sat-kārya-vāda, which holds that the effect is already existent in the cause. The Vedanta holds that the effect as such is a mere appearance and has no true existence; the cause alone is truly existent. The Samkhya, on the other hand, holds that the effect is but a modification of the causal substance, and, as such, is not non-existent, but has no existence separate from the cause; the effect may therefore be said to exist in the cause before the starting of the causal operation (kārana-vyāpāra). Both these systems strongly object to the Buddhist and Nyāya view that the effect came into being out of non-existence, a doctrine known as a-sat-kārya-vāda. Both the Sāmkhya and the Vedānta tried to prove their theses, but neither of them seems to have realized that their doctrines are based upon an a priori proposition which is the basic principle underlying the principle of the conservation of energy and the conservation of mass, but which is difficult to be proved by reference to a posteriori illustration. Thus, the Sāmkhya says that the effect exists in the cause, since, had it not been so, there would be no reason why certain kinds of effects, e.g. oil, can be produced only from certain kinds of causes, e.g. sesamum. That certain kinds of effects are produced only from certain kinds of causes does not really prove the doctrine of satkārya-vāda, but only implies it; for the doctrine of sat-kārya-vāda rests on an a priori principle such as that formulated in the Gitā -that what exists cannot perish, and that what does not exist cannot come into being1. The Gītā does not try to prove this proposition, but takes it as a self-evident principle which no one could

¹ nāsato vidyate bhāvo nābhavo vidyate sataļi. Gītā, 11. 16.

challenge. It does not, however, think of applying this principle, which underlies the ontological position of the Samkhya and the Vedanta, in a general way. It seems to apply the principle only to the nature of self (ātman). Thus it says, "O Arjuna, that principle by which everything is pervaded is to be regarded as deathless: no one can destroy this imperishable one. The bodies that perish belong to the deathless eternal and unknowable self; therefore thou shouldst fight. He who thinks the self to be destructible, and he who thinks it to be the destroyer, do not know that it can neither destroy nor be destroyed. It is neither born nor does it die, nor, being once what it is, would it ever be again.... Weapons cannot cut it, fire cannot burn it, water cannot dissolve it and air cannot dry it." The immortality of self preached in the Gītā seems to have been directly borrowed from the Upanisads, and the passages that describe it seem to breathe the spirit of the Upanisads not only in idea, but also in the modes and expressions. The ontological principle that what exists cannot die and that what is not cannot come into being does not seem to have been formulated in the Upanisads. Its formulation in the Gitā in support of the principle of immortality seems, therefore, to be a distinct advance on the Upanisadic philosophy in this direction.

The first argument urged by Krsna to persuade Arjuna to fight was that the self was immortal and that it was the body only that could be injured or killed, and that therefore Arjuna need not feel troubled because he was going to kill his kinsmen in the battle of Kuruksetra. Upon the death of one body the self only changed to another, in which it was reborn, just as a man changed his old clothes for new ones. The body is always changing, and even in youth, middle age and old age, does not remain the same. The change at death is also a change of body, and so there is no intrinsic difference between the changes of the body at different stages of life and the ultimate change that is effected at death. when the old body is forsaken by the spirit and a new body is accepted. Our bodies are always changing, and, though the different stages in this growth in childhood, youth and old age represent comparatively small degrees of change, yet these ought to prepare our minds to realize the fact that death is also a similar change of body only and cannot, therefore, affect the unperturbed nature of the self, which, in spite of all changes of body at successive

births and rebirths, remains unchanged in itself. When one is born one must die, and when one dies one must be reborn. Birth necessarily implies death, and death necessarily implies rebirth. There is no escape from this continually revolving cycle of birth and death. From Brahmā down to all living creatures there is a continuous rotation of birth, death and rebirth. In reply to Ariuna's questions as to what becomes of the man who, after proceeding a long way on the path of yoga, is somehow through his failings dislodged from it and dies, Krsna replies that no good work can be lost and a man who has been once on the path of right cannot suffer; so, when a man who was proceeding on the path of yoga is snatched away by the hand of death, he is born again in a family of pure and prosperous people or in a family of wise yogins; and in this new birth he is associated with his achievements in his last birth and begins anew his onward course of advancement, and the old practice of the previous birth carries him onward, without any effort on his part, in his new line of progress. By his continual efforts through many lives and the cumulative effects of the right endeavours of each life the vogin attains his final realization. Ordinarily the life of a man in each new birth depends upon the desires and ideas that he fixes upon at the time of his death. But those that think of God, the oldest instructor, the seer, the smallest of the small, the upholder of all, shining like the sun beyond all darkness, and fix their life-forces between their eyebrows, and control all the gates of their senses and their mind in their hearts, ultimately attain their highest realization in God. From the great Lord, the great unmanifested and incomprehensible Lord, proceeds the unmanifested (avvakta), from which come out all manifested things (vyaktayah sarvāh), and in time again return to it and again evolve out of it. Thus there are two forms of the unmanifested (avyakta), the unmanifested out of which all the manifested things come, and the unmanifested which is the nature of the eternal Lord from whom the former come1. The ideas of deva-yana and pity-yana, daksinayana and uttarāyana, the black and the white courses as mentioned in the Upanisads, are also referred to in the Gītā. Those who go through smoke in the new-moon fortnight and the later six months (when the sun is on the south of the equator), and thus take the black course, return again; but those who take the white course of fire

¹ Gitā, viii. 16-23.

in the full-moon fortnight and the former six months (when the sun is on the north of the equator) do not return again¹. No very significant meaning can be made out of these doctrines. They seem to be but the perpetuation of the traditional faiths regarding the future courses of the dead, as referred to in the *Chāndogya Upaniṣad*. The *Gītā*, again, speaking of others, says that those who follow the sacrificial duties of the Vedas enjoy heavenly pleasures in heaven, and, when their merits are exhausted by the enjoyments of the good fruits of their actions, they come back to earth. Those who follow the path of desires and take to religious duties for the attainment of pleasures must always go to heaven and come back again—they cannot escape this cycle of going and coming. Again, in the *Gītā*, xvi. 19, Kṛṣṇa says, "I make cruel vicious persons again and again take birth as ferocious animals."

The above summary of the eschatological views of the Gītā shows that it collects together the various traditionally accepted views regarding life after death without trying to harmonize them properly. Firstly, it may be noted that the Gitā believes in the doctrine of karma. Thus in xv. 2 and in xv. 9 it is said that the world has grown on the basis of karma, and the Gītā believes that it is the bondage of karma that binds us to this world. The bondage of karma is due to the existence of attachment. passions and desires. But what does the bondage of karma lead to? The reply to such a question, as given by the Gita, is that it leads to rebirth. When one performs actions in accordance with the Vedic injunctions for the attainment of beneficial fruits. desire for such fruits and attachment to these desirable fruits is the bondage of karma, which naturally leads to rebirth. The proposition definitely pronounced in the Gītā, that birth necessarily means death and death necessarily means birth, reminds us of the first part of the twelvefold causal chain of the Buddha-"What being, is there death? Birth being, there is death." It has already been noticed that the attitude of the Gitā towards Vedic performances is merely one of toleration and not one of encouragement. These are actions which are prompted by desires and, like all other actions similarly prompted, they entail with them the bonds of karma; and, as soon as the happy effects produced by the merits of these actions are enjoyed and lived through, the performers of these actions come down from heaven to the earth and

¹ Gītā, VIII. 24-26.

are reborn and have to pass through the old ordeal of life. The idea that, there being birth, there is death, and that, if there is death there is also rebirth, is the same in the Gītā as in Buddhism; but the Gītā form seems to be very much earlier than the Buddhistic form; for the Buddhistic form relates birth and death through a number of other causal links intimately connected together in an interdependent cycle, of which the Gita seems to be entirely ignorant. The Gitā does not speak of any causal chain, such as could be conceived to be borrowed from Buddhism. It, of course, knows that attachment is the root of all vice; but it is only by implication that we can know that attachment leads to the bondage of karma and the bondage of karma to rebirth. The main purpose of the Gitā is not to find out how one can tear asunder the bonds of karma and stop rebirth, but to prescribe the true rule of the performance of one's duties. It speaks sometimes, no doubt, about cutting asunder the bonds of karma and attaining one's highest; but instruction as regards the attainment of liberation or a description of the evils of this worldly life does not form any part of the content of the Gita. The Gita has no pessimistic tendency. It speaks of the necessary connection of birth and death not in order to show that life is sorrowful and not worth living, but to show that there is no cause of regret in such universal happenings as birth and death. The principal ideas are, no doubt, those of attachment, karma, birth, death and rebirth; but the idea of Buddhism is more complex and more systematized, and is therefore probably a later development at a time when the Gitā discussions on the subject were known. The Buddhist doctrine that there is no self and no individual anywhere is just the opposite of the Gītā doctrine of the immortality of the self.

But the Gītā speaks not only of rebirth, but also of the two courses, the path of smoke and the path of light, which are referred to in the Chāndogya Upaniṣad¹. The only difference between the Upaniṣad account and that of the Gītā is that there are more details in the Upaniṣad than in the Gītā. But the idcas of deva-yāna and pitṛ-yāna do not seem to fit in quite consistently with the idea of rebirth on earth. The Gītā, however, combines the idea of rebirth on earth with the deva-yāna-pitṛ-yāna idea and also with the idea of ascent to heaven as an effect of the merits

¹ Chāndogya Upanişad, v. 10.

accruing from sacrificial performances. Thus the Gītā combines the different trains of ideas just as it finds them traditionally accepted, without trying to harmonize them properly. It does not attempt to discuss the point regarding the power of karma in determining the nature of rebirths, enjoyments and sufferings. From some passages (IV. 9 or VI. 40-45) it might appear that the bonds of karma produced their effects independently by their own powers, and that the arrangement of the world is due to the effect of karma. But there are other passages (XVI. 19) which indicate that karma does not produce its effects by itself, but that God rewards or punishes good and bad deeds by arranging good and bad births associated with joys and sorrows. In the Gītā, v. 15, it is said that the idea of sins and virtues is due to ignorance, whereas, if we judge rightly, God does not take cognizance either of vices or of virtues. Here again there are two contradictory views of karma: one view in which karma is regarded as the cause which brings about all inequalities in life, and another view which does not attribute any value to good or bad actions. The only way in which the two views can be reconciled in accordance with the spirit of the Gitā is by holding that the Gitā does not believe in the objective truth of virtue or vice (punya or pāpa). There is nothing good or bad in the actions themselves. It is only ignorance and foolishness that regards them as good or bad; it is only our desires and attachments which make the actions produce their bad effects with reference to us, and which render them sinful for us. Since the actions themselves are neither good nor bad, the performance of even apparently sinful actions, such as the killing of one's kinsmen on the battle-field, cannot be regarded as sinful, if they are done from a sense of duty; but the same actions would be regarded as sinful, if they were performed through attachments or desires. Looked at from this point of view, the idea of morality in the Gitā is essentially of a subjective character. But though morality, virtue and vice, can be regarded from this point of view as subjective, it is not wholly subjective. For morality does not depend upon mere subjective conscience or the subjective notions of good and bad. The caste-duties and other duties of customary morality are definitely fixed, and no one should transgress them. The subjectivity of virtue and vice consists in the fact that they depend entirely on our good or bad actions. If actions are performed from a sense of obedience to scriptural commands, casteduties or duties of customary morality, then such actions, in spite of their bad consequences, would not be regarded as bad.

Apart from these courses of rebirth and ascent to heaven, the last and best and ultimate course is described as being liberation, which transcends all that can be achieved by all kinds of merits attained by sacrifices, gifts or tapas. He who attains this highest achievement lives in God and is never born again¹. The highest realization thus consists in being one with God, by which one escapes all sorrows. In the Gita liberation (moksa) means liberation from old age and death. This liberation can be attained by true philosophic knowledge of the nature of ksetra, or the mind-body whole, and the ksetra-jña, the perceiving selves, or the nature of what is truly spiritual and what is non-spiritual, and by clinging to God as one's nearest and dearest2. This liberation from old age and death also means liberation from the ties of karma associated with us through the bonds of attachment, desires, etc. It does not come of itself, as the natural result of philosophic knowledge or of devotion to God; but God, as the liberator, grants it to the wise and to those who cling to Him through devotion3. But whether it be achieved as the result of philosophic knowledge or as the result of devotion to God, the moral elevation, consisting of dissociation from attachment and the right performance of duties in an unattached manner, is indispensable.

God and Man.

The earliest and most recondite treatment regarding the nature and existence of God and His relation to man is to be found in the Gītā. The starting-point of the Gītā theism may be traced as far back as the Puruṣa-sūkta, where it is said that the one quarter of the puruṣa has spread out as the cosmic universe and its living beings, while its other three-quarters are in the immortal heavens⁴. This passage is repeated in Chāndogya, III. 12.6 and in Maitrāyaṇī, VI. 4, where it is said that the three-quarter Brahman sits root upward above (ūrdhva-mūlaṃ tripād Brahma). This idea, in a slightly modified form, appears in the Katha Upaniṣad, VI. 1, where it is said that this universe is the eternal Aśvattha

¹ Gītā, VIII. 28; IX. 4. ² Ibid. VII. 29; XIII. 34. ³ Ibid. XVIII. 66. pādo 'sya viśvā bhūtām' tripād asyāmṛtam divi. Puruṣa-sūkta,

tree which has its root high up and its branches downwards (ūrdhva-mūlo 'vāk-śākhah). The Gītā borrows this idea and says, "This is called the eternal Asyattha (pipul tree) with its roots high up and branches downwards, the leaves of which are the Vedas; and he who knows this, he knows the Vedas" (xv. 1). Again it is said, "Its branches spread high and low, its leaves of sense-objects are nourished by the gunas, its roots are spread downwards, tied with the knots of karma, the human world" (xv. 2); and in the next verse, it is said, "In this world its true nature is not perceived; its beginning, its end, and the nature of its subsistence, remain unknown; it is only by cutting this firmly rooted Asvattha tree with the strong axe of unattachment (asanga-sastrena) that one has to seek that state from which, when once achieved, no one returns." It is clear from the above three passages that the Gitā has elaborated here the simile of the Asvattha tree of the Katha Upanisad. The Gitā accepts this simile of God, but elaborates it by supposing that these branches have further leaves and other roots, which take their sap from the ground of human beings, to which they are attached by the knots of karma. This means a duplication of the Aśvattha tree, the main and the subsidiary. The subsidiary one is an overgrowth, which has proceeded out of the main one and has to be cut into pieces before one can reach that. The principal idea underlying this simile throws a flood of light on the Gitā conception of God, which is an elaboration of the idea of the Puruşa-sūkta passage already referred to. God is not only immanent, but transcendent as well. The immanent part, which forms the cosmic universe, is no illusion or $m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$; it is an emanation, a development, from God. The good and the evil, the moral and the immoral of this world, are all from Him and in Him. The stuff of this world and its manifestations have their basis, an essence, in Him, and are upheld by Him. The transcendent part, which may be said to be the root high up, and the basis of all that has grown in this lower world, is itself the differenceless reality -- the Brahman. But, though the Brahman is again and again referred to as the highest abode and the ultimate realization. the absolute essence, yet God in His super-personality transcends even Brahman, in the sense that Brahman, however great it may be, is only a constitutive essence in the complex personality of God. The cosmic universe, the gunas, the purusas, the mindstructure composed of buddhi, ahamkāra, etc., and the Brahman.

are all constituents of God, having their separate functions and mental relations; but God in His super-personality transcends them all and upholds them all. There is, however, one important point in which the Gita differs from the Upanisads—this is, its introduction of the idea that God takes birth on earth as man. Thus in the Gītā, IV. 6 and IV. 7, it is said that "whenever there is a disturbance of dharma and the rise of adharma, I create myself; though I am unborn, of immortal self and the lord of all beings, yet by virtue of my own nature (prakrti) I take birth through my own māyā (blinding power of the gunas)." This doctrine of the incarnation of God, though not dealt with in any of the purely speculative systems, yet forms the corner-stone of most systems of religious philosophy and religion, and the Gitā is probably the earliest work available to us in which this doctrine is found. The effect of its introduction and of the dialogue form of the $Git\bar{a}$, in which the man-god Krsna instructs Arjuna in the philosophy of life and conduct, is that the instruction regarding the personality of God becomes concrete and living. As will be evident in the course of this section, the Gītā is not a treatise of systematic philosophy, but a practical course of introduction to life and conduct, conveyed by God Himself in the form of Krsna to His devotee, Arjuna. In the Gitā abstract philosophy melts down to an insight into the nature of practical life and conduct, as discussed with all the intimacy of the personal relation between Kṛṣṇa and Arjuna, which suggests a similar personal relation between God and man. For the God in the Gitā is not a God of abstract philosophy or theology, but a God who could be a man and be capable of all personal relations.

The all-pervasive nature of God and the fact that He is the essence and upholder of all things in the world is again and again in various ways emphasized in the Gitā. Thus Kṛṣṇa says, "There is nothing greater than I, all things are held in me, like pearls in the thread of a pearl garland; I am the liquidity in water, the light of the sun and the moon, manhood (pauruṣa) in man; good smell in earth, the heat of the sun, intelligence in the intelligent, heroism in the heroes, strength in the strong, and I am also the desires which do not transgress the path of virtue¹." Again, it is said that "in my unmanifested (avyakta) form I pervade the whole world; all beings exist completely in me, but

I am not exhausted in them; yet so do I transcend them that none of the beings exist in me—I am the upholder of all beings. I do not exist in them and yet I am their procreator1." In both these passages the riddle of God's relation with man, by which He exists in us and yet does not exist in us and is not limited by us, is explained by the fact of the threefold nature of God; there is a part of Him which has been manifested as inanimate nature and also as the animate world of living beings. It is with reference to this all-pervasive nature of God that it is said that "as the air in the sky pervades the whole world, so are all beings in 'me' (God). At the end of each cycle (kalpa) all beings enter into my nature (prakrtim vānti māmikām), and again at the beginning of a cycle I create them. I create again and again through my nature (prakrti); the totality of all living beings is helplessly dependent on prakrti²." The three prakrtis have already been referred to in the previous sections—prakrti of God as cosmic matter, prakrti as the nature of God from which all life and spirit have emanated, and prakrti as māyā, or the power of God from which the three gunas have emanated. It is with reference to the operation of these prakrtis that the cosmic world and the world of life and spirit may be said to be existent in God. But there is the other form of God, as the transcendent Brahman, and, so far as this form is concerned, God transcends the sphere of the universe of matter and life. But in another aspect of God, in His totality and superpersonality, He remains unexhausted in all, and the creator and upholder of all, though it is out of a part of Him that the world has come into being. The aspect of God's identity with, and the aspect of His transcendence and nature as the father, mother and supporter of the universe, are not separated in the Gitā, and both the aspects are described often in one and the same passage. Thus it is said, "I am the father, mother, upholder and grandfather of this world, and I am the sacred syllable OM, the three Vedas, Rk, Sāman and Yajus; I am the sacrifice, the oblations and the fire, and yet I am the master and the enjoyer of all sacrifices. I am the final destiny, upholder, matter, the passive illuminator, the rest, support, friend, the origin, the final dissolution, the place, the receptacle and the immortal seed. I produce heat and shower, I destroy and create, I am both death and the deathless, the good and the bad3." With reference to His transcendent part it is

¹ Gitā, 1x. 3-5.

² Ibid. 1x. 6-8.

⁸ Ibid. IX. 16-19, 24.

said, "The sun, the moon and fire do not illuminate it-it is my final abode, from which, when once achieved, no one returns1." And again, immediately after, it is said, "It is my part that forms the eternal soul-principle (*jīva-bhūta*) in the living, which attracts the five senses and the manas which lie buried in prakrti, and which takes the body and goes out of it with the six senses, just as air takes out fragrance from the flowers2." And then God is said to be the controlling agent of all operations in this world. Thus it is said, "By my energy I uphold the world and all living beings and fill all crops with their specific juices; as fire in the bodies of living beings, and aided by the biomotor prāna functions, I digest the four kinds of food; I am the light in the sun, the moon and fire." Again it is said, "I reside in the hearts of all; knowledge, forgetfulness and memory all come from me; I alone am to be known by the Vedas; I alone know the Vedas, and I alone am the author of the Vedanta3." From these examples it is evident that the Gītā does not know that pantheism and deism and theism cannot well be jumbled up into one as a consistent philosophic creed. And it does not attempt to answer any objections that may be made against the combination of such opposite views. The Gītā not only asserts that all is God, but it also again and again repeats that God transcends all and is simultaneously transcendent and immanent in the world. The answer apparently implied in the $G\bar{\imath}t\bar{a}$ to all objections to the apparently different views of the nature of God is that transcendentalism, immanentalism and pantheism lose their distinctive and opposite characters in the melting whole of the super-personality of God. Sometimes in the same passage, and sometimes in passages of the same context, the Gītā talks in a pantheistic, a transcendental or a theistic vein, and this seems to imply that there is no contradiction in the different aspects of God as preserver and controller of the world, as the substance of the world, life and soul, and as the transcendent substratum underlying them all. In order to emphasize the fact that all that exists and all that is worthy of existence or all that has a superlative existence in good or bad are God's manifestation, the Gītā is never tired of repeating that whatever is highest, best or even worst in things is God or

¹ Gtta, xv. 6.

² Ibid. xv. 7 and 8. It is curious that here the word Isvara is used as an epithet of jiva.

⁸ Ibid. xv. 8, 12, 13, 14, 15.

God's manifestation. Thus it is said, 'I am the gambling of dice in all deceptive operations, I am victory in all endeavours, heroism of the heroes and the moral qualities (sattva) of all moral men (sattvavatām)"; and after enumerating a number of such instances Krsna says that, wherever there are special gifts or powers or excellence of any kind, they are to be regarded as the special manifestation of God¹. The idea that God holds within Himself the entire manifold universe is graphically emphasized in a fabulous form, when Krsna gives Arjuna the divine eye of wisdom and Arjuna sees Krsna in his resplendent divine form, shining as thousands of suns burning together, with thousands of eyes, faces and ornaments, pervading the heavens and the earth, with neither beginning nor end, as the great cosmic person into whose mouths all the great heroes of Kuruksetra field had entered, like rivers into the ocean. Kṛṣṇa, after showing Arjuna his universal form, says, "I am time (kāla), the great destroyer of the world, and I am engaged in collecting the harvest of human lives, and all that will die in this great battle of Kuruksetra have already been killed by me; you will be merely an instrument in this great destruction of the mighty battle of Kuruksetra. So you can fight, destroy your enemies, attain fame and enjoy the sovereignty without any compunction that you have destroyed the lives of your kinsmen."

The main purport of the Gitā view of God seems to be that ultimately there is no responsibility for good or evil and that good and evil, high and low, great and small have all emerged from God and are upheld in Him. When a man understands the nature and reality of his own self and its agency, and his relation with God, both in his transcendent and cosmic nature, and the universe around him and the gunas of attachment, etc., which bind him to his worldly desires, he is said to have the true knowledge. There is no opposition between the path of this true knowledge (iñānayoga) and the path of duties; for true knowledge supports and is supported by right performance of duties. The path of knowledge is praised in the Gitā in several passages. Thus it is said, that just as fire burns up the wood, so does knowledge reduce all actions to ashes. There is nothing so pure as knowledge. He who has true faith is attached to God, and he who has controlled his senses. attains knowledge, and having attained it, secures peace. He who

is foolish, an unbeliever, and full of doubts, is destroyed. He who is always doubting has neither this world, nor the other, nor does he enjoy any happiness. Even the worst sinner can hope to cross the sea of sins in the boat of knowledge¹. In the Gita, IV. 42, Krsna says to Arjuna, "Therefore, having destroyed the ignorance of your heart by the sword of knowledge, and having cut asunder all doubts, raise yourself up." But what is this knowledge? In the Gitā, IV. 36, in the same context, this knowledge is defined to be that view of things by which all beings are perceived in this self or God. The true knowledge of God destroys all karma in the sense that he who has perceived and realized the true nature of all things in God cannot be attached to his passions and desires as an ignorant man would be. In another passage, already referred to, it is said that the roots of the worldly Asvattha tree are to be cut by the sword of unattachment. The confusion into which Arjuna falls in the $Git\bar{a}$, III. 1 and 2, regarding the relative excellence of the path of karma and the path of knowledge is wholly unfounded. Krsna points out in the Gita, III. 3, that there are two paths, the path of knowledge and the path of duties (jñāna-yoga and karma-yoga). The confusion had arisen from the fact that Krsna had described the immortality of soul and the undesirability of Vedic actions done with a motive, and had also asked Arjuna to fight and yet remain unattached and perform his duty for the sake of duty. The purpose of the Gītā was to bring about a reconciliation between these two paths, and to show that the path of knowledge leads to the path of duties by liberating it from the bonds of attachment; for all attachment is due to ignorance, and ignorance is removed by true knowledge. But the true knowledge of God may be of a twofold nature. One may attain a knowledge of God in His transcendence as Brahman, and attain the philosophic wisdom of the foundation of all things in Brahman as the ultimate substance and source of all manifestation and appearance. There is another way of clinging to God as a super-person, in a personal relation of intimacy, friendship and dependence. The Gitā admits that both these ways may lead us to the attainment of our highest realization. But it is the latter which the Gītā prefers and considers easier. Thus the Gitā says (XII. 3-5) that those who adore the indefinable, unchangeable, omnipresent, unthinkable, and the unmanifested, controlling all their senses, with equal eyes for all

and engaged in the good of all, by this course attain Him. Those who fix their mind on the unmanifested (avyakta) find this course very hard. But those who dedicate all their actions to God and, clinging to Him as their only support, are devoted to Him in constant communion, them He saves soon from the sea of death and rebirth!

The most important point in which the $Git\bar{a}$ differs from the Upanisads is that the Gitā very strongly emphasizes the fact that the best course for attaining our highest realization is to dedicate all our actions to God, to cling to Him as our nearest and dearest, and always to be in communion with Him. The Gītā draws many of its ideas from the Upanisads and looks to them with respect. It accepts the idea of Brahman as a part of the essence of God, and agrees that those who fix their mind on Brahman as their ideal also attain the high ideal of realizing God. But this is only a compromise; for the Gitā emphasizes the necessity of a personal relation with God, whom we can love and adore. The beginning of our association with God must be made by dedicating the fruits of all our actions to God, by being a friend of all and sympathetic to all, by being self-controlled, the same in sorrow or happiness, self-contented, and in a state of perfect equanimity and equilibrium. It is through such a moral elevation that a man becomes apt in steadying his mind on God and ultimately in fixing his mind on God. In the Gitā Kṛṣṇa as God asks Arjuna to give up all ceremonials or religious courses and to cling to God as the only protector, and He promises that because of that God will liberate him². Again, it is said that it is by devotion that a man knows what God is in reality and, thus knowing Him truly as He is, enters into Him. It is by seeking entire protection in God that one can attain his eternal state3.

But, though in order to attain the height at which it is possible to fix one's mind on God, one should first acquire the preliminary qualification of detaching oneself from the bonds of passions and desires, yet it is sometimes possible to reverse the situation. The Gitā thus holds that those whose minds and souls are full of God's love, who delight in constantly talking and thinking of God and always adore God with love, are dear to Him, and God, through His great mercy and kindness, grants them the proper wisdom and destroys the darkness of their ignorance by the light of knowledge⁴.

¹ Gitā, xii. 6, 7. ² Ibid. xviii. 66. ³ Ibid. xviii. 55, 62. ⁴ Ibid. x. 9-11.

In the Gitā, xvIII. 57-58, Kṛṣṇa as God asks Arjuna to leave all

self-elevation and detach himself from passions and desires and establish himself in equanimity, he may still, simply by clinging to God and by firm devotion to Him, bring himself within the sphere of His grace, and by grace alone acquire true wisdom and

¹ Gītā, IX. 30-32. ⁸ Ibid. VII. 20-22.

² Ibid. IV. 11.

⁴ Ibid. IV. 13-15; V. 29; VII. 14.

achieve that moral elevation, with little or no struggle, which is attained with so much difficulty by others. The path of bhakti is thus introduced in the Gitā, for the first time, as an independent path side by side with the path of wisdom and knowledge of the Upanisads and with the path of austere self-discipline. Moral elevation, self-control, etc. are indeed regarded as an indispensable preliminary to any kind of true self-realization. But the advantage of the path of devotion (bhakti) consists in this, that, while some seekers have to work hard on the path of self-control and austere self-discipline, either by constant practice or by the aid of philosophic wisdom, the devotee makes an easy ascent to a high elevation -not because he is more energetic and better equipped than his fellow-workers in other paths, but because he has resigned himself completely to God; and God, being pleased with his devotees who cling fast to Him and know nothing else, grants them wisdom and raises them up through higher and higher stages of self-elevation, self-realization and bliss. Arjuna treated Kṛṣṇa, the incarnation of God on earth, as his friend, and Krsna in the rôle of God exhorted him to depend entirely on Him and assured him that He would liberate him-He was asking him to give up everything else and cling to Him as his only support. The Gitā lays down for the first time the corner-stone of the teachings of the Bhāgavata-purāna and of the later systems of Vaisnava thought, which elaborated the theory of bhakti and described it as the principal method of self-elevation and self-realization.

Another important feature of the Gītā doctrine of devotion consists in the fact that, as, on the one hand, God is contemplated by His devotees in the intimate personal relation of a father, teacher, master and friend, with a full consciousness of His divinity and His nature as the substratum and the upholder of the entire animate and inanimate cosmic universe, so, on the other hand, the transcendent personality of God is realized not only as the culmination of spiritual greatness and the ultimate reconciliation of all relative differences, of high and low, good and bad, but as the great deity, with a physical, adorable form, whom the devotee can worship not only mentally and spiritually, but also externally, with holy offerings of flowers and leaves. The transcendent God is not only immanent in the universe, but also present before the devotee in the form of a great deity resplendent with brightness, or in the personal form of the man-god Kṛṣṇa, in whom

God incarnated Himself. The Gītā combines together different conceptions of God without feeling the necessity of reconciling the oppositions or contradictions involved in them. It does not seem to be aware of the philosophical difficulty of combining the concept of God as the unmanifested, differenceless entity with the notion of Him as the super-person Who incarnates Himself on earth in the human form and behaves in the human manner. It is not aware of the difficulty that, if all good and evil should have emanated from God, and if there be ultimately no moral responsibility, and if everything in the world should have the same place in God, there is no reason why God should trouble to incarnate Himself as man, when there is a disturbance of the Vedic dharma. If God is impartial to all, and if He is absolutely unperturbed, why should He favour the man who clings to Him, and why, for his sake, overrule the world-order of events and in his favour suspend the law of karma? It is only by constant endeavours and practice that one can cut asunder the bonds of karma. Why should it be made so easy for even a wicked man who clings to God to release himself from the bonds of attachment and karma, without any effort on his part? Again, the Gita does not attempt to reconcile the disparate parts which constitute the complex super-personality of God. How are the unmanifested or avyakta part as Brahman, the avyakta part as the cosmic substratum of the universe, the prakrti part as the producer of the gunas, and the prakrti part as the jivas or individual selves, to be combined and melted together to form a complex personality? If the unmanifested nature is the ultimate abode (param dhāma) of God, how can God as a person, who cannot be regarded as a manifestation of this ultimate reality, be considered to be transcendent? How can there be a relation between God as a person and His diverse nature as the cosmic universe, jiva and the gunas? In a system like that of Sankara Brahman and Isvara, one and the many could be combined together in one scheme, by holding Brahman as real and Isvara and the many as unreal and illusory. produced by reflection of Brahman in the māyā, the principle of illusoriness. But, howsoever Sankara might interpret the Gitā, it does not seem that it considered Isvara or the world as in the least degree illusory. In the Upanisads also the notion of Isvara and the notion of Brahman are sometimes found side by side. As regards God as Isvara, the Gita not only does not think him to be

illusory, but considers him the highest truth and reality. Thus there is no way of escaping from any of the categories of realitythe two asyaktas, prakrti, jiva and the super-personality of Isvara comprehending and transcending them all. The concepts of Brahman, jiva, the unmanifested category from which the world proceeds, and the gunas are all found in the Upanisads in passages which are probably mostly unrelated. But the Gitā seems to take them all together, and to consider them as constituents of Iśvara, which are also upheld by Him in His superior form, in which He transcends and controls them all. In the Upanisads the doctrine of bhakti can hardly be found, though here and there faint traces of it may be perceived. If the Upanisads ever speak of Isvara, it is only to show His great majesty, power and glory, as the controller and upholder of all. But the Gitā is steeped in the mystic consciousness of an intimate personal relation with God, not only as the majestic super-person, but as a friend who incarnates Himself for the good of man and shares his joys and sorrows with him, and to whom a man could cling for support in troubles and difficulties and even appeal for earthly goods. He is the great teacher, with whom one can associate oneself for acquisition of wisdom and the light of knowledge. But He could be more than all this. He could be the dearest of the dear and the nearest of the near, and could be felt as being so intimate, that a man could live simply for the joy of his love for Him; he could cling to Him as the one dear friend, his highest goal, and leave everything else for Him; he could consider, in his deep love for Him, all his other religious duties and works of life as being relatively unimportant; he could thus constantly talk of Him, think of Him, and live in Him. This is the path of bhakti or devotion, and the Gitā assures us that, whatever may be the hindrances and whatever may be the difficulties, the bhakta (devotee) of God cannot be lost. It is from the point of view of this mystic consciousness that the Gitā seems to reconcile the apparently philosophically irreconcilable elements. The Gitā was probably written at a time when philosophical views had not definitely crystallized into hard-and-fast systems of thought, and when the distinguishing philosophical niceties, scholarly disputations, the dictates of argument, had not come into fashion. The Gita, therefore, is not to be looked upon as a properly schemed system of philosophy, but as a manual of right conduct and right perspective of things in the light of a mystical approach to God in self-resignation, devotion, friendship and humility.

Viṣṇu, Vāsudeva and Kṛṣṇa.

Visnu, Bhagavat, Nārāyaṇa, Hari and Kṛṣṇa are often used in a large section of Indian religious literature as synonymous names of the supreme lord. Of these Visnu is an important god of the Rg-Veda, who is one of the adityas and who makes three strides in the sky, probably as he manifests himself in the eastern horizon, as he rises to the zenith and as he sets in the west. He is also represented in the Rg-Veda as a great fighter and an ally of Indra. It is further said that he has two earthly steps and another higher step which is known only to himself. But in the Rg-Veda Visnu is certainly inferior to Indra, with whom he was often associated, as is evident from such names as Indrā-visnu (R.V. IV. 55. 4; VII. 99. 5; VIII. 10. 2, etc.). According to later tradition Vișnu was the youngest, the twelfth of the ādityas, though he was superior to them all in good qualities1. His three steps in the Rg-Vedic allusion have been explained in the Nirukta as referring to the three stages of the sun's progress in the morning, at midday and at evening. One of the names of Visnu in the Rg-Veda is Śipivista, which Durgācārya explains as "surrounded with the early rays" (sipi-samjñair bāla-rasmibhir āvista)2. Again, the sage praises Visnu in the Rg-Veda in the following terms: "I, a master of hymns and knowing the sacred customs, to-day praise that name of thine, Sipivista. I, who am weak, glorify thee, who art mighty and dwellest beyond this world3." All this shows that Visnu was regarded as the sun, or endowed with the qualities of the sun. The fact that Visnu was regarded as dwelling beyond this world is probably one of the earliest signs of his gradually increasing superiority. For the next stage one must turn to the Satapatha-brāhmana. In 1. 2. 4 of that work it is said that the demons (asura) and the gods were vying with one another; the gods were falling behind, and the demons were trying to distribute the world among themselves; the gods followed them. making Visnu the sacrifice as their leader (te yajñam eva Visnum puraskrtyeyuh), and desired their own shares; the demons felt jealous and said that they could give only so much ground as would

Ekādasas tathā Tvastā dvādaso Visnur ucyate jaghanyajas tu sarvesām ādityānām guņādhikah.

Mahā-bhārata, 1. 65. 16. Calcutta, Bangavasi Press, second edition, 1908. ² Nirukta, v. 9. Bombay edition, 1918.

³ Rg-Veda, vii. 100. 5, translated by Dr L. Sarup, quoted in Nirukta, v. 8.

be occupied by Visnu when he lay down, Visnu being a dwarf (vāmano ha Vișnur āsa). The gods felt dissatisfied at this, and they approached him with various mantras and in consequence attained the whole world. Again, in xIV. I of the same work, Kuruksetra is referred to as being the place of the sacrificial performances of the gods, and it is said there that in industry, rigorism (tapas), faith, etc. Visnu was the best of all gods and was regarded as being superior to them all (tasmād āhur Vișnur devānām śresthah), and was himself the sacrifice. Again, in Taittirīyasamhitā, 1. 7. 5. 4, in Vājasaneyi-samhitā, 1. 30; 11. 6. 8; v. 21, in Atharva-Veda, v. 26. 7; VIII. 5. 10, etc., Visnu is referred to as the chief of the gods (Visnu-mukhā devā). Again, Visnu as sacrifice attained unlimited fame. Once he was resting his head on the end of his bow; and, when some ants, perceiving that, said, "How should we be rewarded, if we could gnaw the strings of the bow," the gods said that they would then be rewarded with food; and so the ants gnawed away the strings, and, as the two ends of the bow sprang apart, Visnu's head was torn from his body and became the sun¹. This story not only shows the connection of Visnu with the sun, but also suggests that the later story of Krsna's being shot with an arrow by an archer originated from the legend of Visnu's being killed by the flying ends of his bow. The place of Visnu (Visnu-pada) means the zenith, as the highest place of the sun, and it is probable that the idea of the zenith being the place of Visnu led also to the idea that Visnu had a superior place transcending everything, which was, however, clearly perceived by the wise. Thus, at the beginning of the daily prayer-hymns of the Brahmans, known as sandhyā, it is said that the wise see always that superior place of Visnu, like an open eve in the sky². The word vaisnava is used in the literal sense of "belonging to Visnu" in the Vājasaneyi-samhitā, v. 21, 23, 25, Taittiriya-samhitā, v. 6. 9. 2. 3, Aitareya-brāhmana, III. 38, Satapatha-brāhmaṇa, 1. 1. 4. 9; III. 5. 3. 2, etc.; but the use of the word in the sense of a sect of religion is not to be found anywhere in the earlier literature. Even the Gitā does not use the word, and it is not found in any of the earlier Upanisads; it can be traced only in the later parts of the Mahā-bhārata.

1 Satapatha-brāhmana, XIV. 1.

² tad Visnoh paramam padam sadā pasyanti sūrayah divīva cakşur ātatam. Ācamana-mantra of the daily sandhyā prayer-hymn.

Again, it is well known that the supreme man, or purusa, is praised in very high terms in the man-hymn (Puruşa-sūkta) of the Rg-Veda, x. 90, where it is said that purusa is all that we see, what is past and what is future, and that everything has come out of him; the gods performed sacrifice with him with the oblations of the seasons. and out of this sacrifice purusa was first born, and then the gods and all living beings; the various castes were born out of him; the sky, the heavens and the earth have all come out of him; he is the creator and upholder of all; it is by knowing him that one attains immortality; there is no other way of salvation. It is curious that there should be a word nārāyana, similar in meaning (etymologically nara + phak, born in the race or lineage of man) to purusa, which was also used to mean the supreme being and identified with purusa and Visnu. In Satapatha-brāhmana, XIV. 3. 4, purusa is identified with nārāyana (purusam ha nārāyanam Prajāpatir uvāca). Again, in Satapatha-brāhmana, XIII. 6. 1, the idea of the purusa-sūkta is further extended, and the purusa nārāyana is said to have performed the pañca-rātra sacrifice (pañcarātram yaiña-kratum) and thereby transcended everything and become everything. This pañca-rātra sacrifice involves the (spiritual) sacrifice of purusa (purusa-medho vajña-kratur bhavati, XIII. 6. 7). The five kinds of sacrifice, five kinds of animals, the year with the five kinds of seasons, the five kinds of indwelling entities (pañca-vidham adhyātmam) can all be attained by the pañca-rātra sacrifices. The sacrifice was continued for five days, and the Vedic habit of figurative thinking associated each of the days of the sacrifice with various kinds of desirable things, so that the five-day sacrifice was considered to lead to many things which are fivefold in their nature. The reference to the five kinds of indwelling entities soon produced the pañca-rātra doctrine of the manifestation of God in various modes as the external deity of worship $(arc\bar{a})$, inner controller (antar-vāmin), as various manifestations of His lordly power (vibhava), as successive deity-forms in intimate association as vyūha and as the highest God (para). This idea is also found in the later Pānca-rātra scriptures, such as Ahirbudhnyasamhitā (1. 1) and the like, where God is described as having his highest form along with the vyūha forms. Purusa is thus identified with nārāyana, who, by sacrifice of purusa (purusa-medha), became all this world. The etymological definition of nārāyaṇa as "one who has descended from man (nara)," as herein suggested in accordance

with Pānini, IV. 1. 99, is not, however, accepted everywhere. Thus Manu, I. 10, derives nārāyana from nāra, meaning "water," and ayana, meaning "abode," and nāra (water), again, is explained as "that which has descended from nara," or supreme man1. The Mahā-bhārata, III. 12,952 and 15,819 and XII. 13,168, accepts Manu's derivation; but in v. 2568 it says that the supreme God is called nārāyana because he is also the refuge of men². The Taittiriya-Āranyaka, x. 1. 6, identifies nārāyana with Vāsudeva and Visnu³. It may be suggested in this connection that even the Upanisad doctrine of the self as the supreme reality is probably a development of this type of ideas which regarded man as supreme God. The word purusa is very frequently used in the Upanisads in the sense of man, as well as in that of the highest being or supreme reality. In the Mahā-bhārata nara and nārāyana are referred to as being the forms of the supreme lord. Thus it is said, "The four-faced Brahma, capable of being understood only with the aid of the niruktas, joined his hands and, addressing Rudra, said, "Let good happen to the three worlds. Throw down thy weapons, O lord of the universe, from desire of benefiting the universe. That which is indestructible, immutable, supreme, the origin of the universe, uniform and the supreme actor, that which transcends all pairs of opposites and is inactive, has, choosing to be displayed, been pleased to assume this one blessed form (for, though double, the two represent but one and the same form). This nara and nārāyana (the displayed forms of supreme Brahman) have taken birth in the race of dharma. The foremost of all deities, these two are observers of the highest vows and endued with the severest penances. Through some reason best known to Him I myself have sprung from the attribute of His Grace Eternal, as thou hast; for, though thou hast ever existed since all the pure creations, thou too hast sprung from His Wrath. With myself then, these deities and all the great Rsis, do thou adore this displayed form of Brahman and let there be peace unto all

āpo nārā iti proktā āpo vai nara-sūnavaḥ

tā yad asyāyanam pūrvam tena nārāyanah smrtah. Manu, 1. 10. Water is called nāra; water is produced from man, and, since he rested in water in the beginning, he is called nārāyana. Kullūka, in explaining this, says that nara, or man, here means the supreme self, or Brahman.

Narāṇām ayanāc cāpi tato nārāyaṇah smṛtaḥ. Mahā-bhārata, v. 2568.
Nārāyaṇāya vidmahe vāsudevāya dhīmahi tan no Viṣṇuh pracodayāt.
Taittiriya Āraṇyaka, p. 700. Ānandāśrama Press, Poona, 1898.

the worlds without any delay¹." In the succeeding chapter (i.e. Mahā-bhārata, Śānti-parva, 343) nara and nārāyaṇa are described as being two foremost of sages (rṣi) and two ancient deities engaged in the practice of penances, observing high vows and depending upon their own selves and transcending the very sun in energy.

The word bhagavat in the sense of blissful and happy is a very old one and is used in the Rg-Veda, I. 164. 40; VII. 41. 4, X. 60. 12 and in the Atharva-Veda, II. 10. 2; V. 31. 11, etc. But in the Mahā-bhārata and other such early literature it came to denote Visnu or Vāsudeva, and the word bhāgavata denoted the religious sect which regarded Visnu as Nārayana or Vāsudeva as their supreme god. The Pali canonical work Niddesa refers to various superstitious religious sects, among which it mentions the followers of Vāsudeva, Baladeva, Punnabhadda, Manibhadda, Aggi, Nāga, Suparna, Yakkha, Asura, Gandhabba, Mahārāja, Canda, Suriya, Inda, Brahmā, dog, crow, cow, etc. It is easy to understand why a Buddhist work should regard the worship of Vāsudeva as being of a very low type; but at any rate it proves that the worship of Vāsudeva was prevalent during the period when the Niddesa was codified. Again, in commenting upon Pānini, IV. 3. 98 (Vāsudevārjunābhyām vun), Patanjali points out that the word Vāsudeva here does not denote the Vasudeva who was the son of Vasudeva of the Ksattriva race of Vrsnis, since, had it been so, the suffix $vu\tilde{n}$, which is absolutely equivalent to vun, could well be by Pānini, IV. 3. 99 (gotra-ksattriyākhyebhyo bahulam vuñ), by which vuñ is suffixed to names of Ksattriva race. Patanjali thus holds that the word Vāsudeva is in this rule not used to refer to any Ksattriya race, but is a name of the Lord (samjñaisā tatra bhagavatah). If Patañjali's interpretation is to be trusted, for which there is every reason, Vāsudeva as God is to be distinguished from the Ksattriva Vāsudeva, the son of Vasudeva of the race of Vrsnis. It was well established in Pānini's time that Vāsudeva was God, and that His followers were called Vāsudevaka, for the formation of which word by the vun suffix Pāṇini had to make the rule (IV. 3. 98). Again, the Ghosundi inscription in Rajputana, which is written in Brāhmī, an early form of about 200-150 B.C., contains a reference to the building of a wall round the temple of Vāsudeva and Samkarsana. In the Besnagar inscription of about 100 B.C.

¹ Mahā-bhārata, Śānti-parva, 342. 124-129. P. C. Roy's translation, Mokṣa-dharma-parva, p. 817. Calcutta.

Heliodorus, son of Diya, describes himself as a great devotee of Bhagavat (parama-bhagavata), who had erected a pillar bearing an image of Garuda. In the Nanaghat inscription of 100 B.C. Vāsudeva and Samkarsana appear together as deities to whom adorations are addressed along with other gods. If the testimony of Patanjali is accepted, the religious sect of Vasudevas existed before Panini. It is generally believed that Patanjali lived in 150 B.C., since in course of interpreting a grammatical rule which allowed the use of the past tense in reference to famous contemporary events not witnessed by the speaker he illustrates it by using a past tense in referring to the Greek invasion of the city of Sāketa (aruņad Yavanah Sāketam); as this event took place in 150 B.C., it is regarded as a famous contemporary event not witnessed by Patañjali. Patañjali was the second commentator of Pāṇini, the first being Kātyāyana. Sir R. G. Bhandarkar points out that Patañjali notices variant readings in Kātyāyana's Vārttikas, as found in the texts used by the schools of Bhāradvājīyas, Saunāgas and others, some of which might be considered as emendations of the Vārttikas, though Patanjali's introduction of them by the verb pathanti, "they read," is an indication that he regarded them as different readings1. From this Sir R. G. Bhandarkar argues that between Kātyāyana and Patañjali a considerable time must have elapsed, which alone can explain the existence of the variant readings of Kātyāyana's text in Patanjali's time. He therefore agrees with the popular tradition in regarding Pānini as a contemporary of the Nandas, who preceded the Mauryas. Kātyāyana thus flourished in the first half of the 5th century B.C. But, as both Goldstücker and Sir R.G. Bhandarkar have pointed out, the Vārttika of Kātyāyana notices many grammatical forms which are not noticed by Pānini, and this, considering the great accuracy of Pāṇini as a grammarian, naturally leads to the supposition that those forms did not exist in his time. Goldstücker gives a list of words admitted into Pāṇini's sūtras which had gone out of use by Kätyāyana's time, and he also shows that some words which probably did not exist in Pāṇini's time had come to be used later and are referred to by Kātyāyana. All this implies that Pāṇini must have flourished at least two or three hundred years before Kātyāyana. The reference to the Vāsudeva sect in Pānini's sūtras naturally suggests its existence before his time. The allusions

¹ Sir R. G. Bhandarkar's Early History of the Deccan, p. 7.

to Vāsudeva in the inscriptions referred to above can be regarded as corroborative evidence pointing to the early existence of the Vāsudeva sect, who worshipped Vāsudeva or Bhagavat as the supreme Lord.

Turning to literary references to Vāsudeva and Kṛṣṇa, we find the story of Vasudeva, who is also called by his family name Kanha and Keśava (probably on account of his bunch of hair), in the Ghata-jātaka. The story agrees in some important details with the usual accounts of Krsna, though there are some new deviations. A reference to the Vrsni race of Ksattriyas is found in Pānini, IV. 1. 114 (rsy-andhaka-vrsni-kurubhyaś ca). The word is formed by an unadi suffix, and it literally means "powerful" or "a great leader"." It also means "heretic" (pāṣaṇḍa) and one who is passionately angry (canda). It is further used to denote the Yādava race, and Krsna is often addressed as Vārsneya, and in the Gītā, x. 37, Kṛṣṇa says, "Of the Vṛṣṇis I am Vāsudeva." 'The Vrsnis are referred to in Kautilya's Artha-śāstra, where the group of Vrsnis (vrsni-sangha) is said to have attacked Dvaipāyana. The Ghata-jātaka also has the story of the curse of Kanha Dvaipāyana as the cause of the destruction of the Vrsnis. But the Mahā-bhārata (XVI. 1) holds that the curse was pronounced by Viśvāmitra, Kanva and Nārada upon Śāmba, the son of Kṛṣṇa. Two Vāsudevas are mentioned in the Mahā-bhārata: Vāsudeva, the king of the Paundras, and Vasudeva or Krsna, the brother of Samkarsana, and both of them are mentioned as being present in the great assemblage of kings at the house of King Drupada for the marriage of Draupadī; it is the latter Vāsudeva who is regarded as God. It is very probable that Vāsudeva originally was a name of the sun and thus became associated with Visnu, who with his three steps traversed the heavens; and a similarity of Krsna or Vāsudeva to the sun is actually suggested in the Mahā-bhārata, XII. 341. 41, where Nārāyaṇa says, "Being like the sun, I cover the whole world with my rays, and I am also the sustainer of all beings and am hence called Vāsudeva."

Again, the word *Sātvata* also is used as a synonym of Vāsudeva or Bhāgavata. The word *Sātvata* in the plural form is a name of a tribe of the Yādavas, and in the *Mahā-bhārata*, vii. 7662, the phrase *Satvatāṃ varaḥ* is used to denote Sātyaki, a member of the Yādava race, though this appellation is applied to Kṛṣṇa in a

¹ Yüthena vrşņir ejati, Rg-Veda, 1. 10. 2.

large number of places in the Mahā-bhārata1. In the later Bhāgavata-purāna (IX. 9. 50) it is said that the Sātvatas worship Brahman as Bhagavan and as Vasudeva. In the Mahā-bhārata, vi. 66. 41. Samkarsana is said to have introduced the sātvata rites in worshipping Vasudeva. If Satvata was the name of a race, it is easy to imagine that the persons may have had special rites in worshipping Vāsudeva. Yāmunācārya, the great teacher of Rāmānuja in the tenth century A.D., says that those who adore God (bhagavat), the supreme person, with purity (sattva), are called bhāgavata and sātvata². Yāmuna strongly urges that Sātvatas are Brāhmanas by caste, but are attached to Bhagavat as the supreme lord. Yāmuna, however, seems to urge this in strong opposition to the current view that Satvatas were a low-caste people, who had not the initiation with the holy thread and were an outcast people originated from the Vaisyas³. The Sātvatas are said to be the fifth low-caste people, who worship in the temples of Visnu by the orders of the king, and are also called Bhagavatas4. The Satvatas and Bhagavatas are those who make their living by worshipping images and are hence low and disreputable. Yāmuna urges that this popular view about the Bhagavatas and the Satvatas is all incorrect; for, though there are many Satvatas who make a living by worshipping images, not all Satvatas and Bhagavatas do so; and there are many among them who worship Bhagavat, as the supreme person, solely by personal devotion and attachment.

From Patañjali's remarks in commenting on Pāṇini, Iv. 3. 98, it is seen that he believed in the existence of two Vāsudevas, one a leader of the Vṛṣṇi race and the other God as Bhagavat. It has already been pointed out that the name Vāsudeva occurs also in the *Ghaṭa-jātaka*. It may therefore be argued that the name Vāsudeva was an old name, and the evidence of the passage of the *Niddesa*, as well as that of Patañjali, shows that it was a name of God or Bhagavat. The later explanation of Vāsudeva as "the son of Vasudeva" may therefore be regarded as an

¹ Mahā-bhārata, v. 2581, 3041, 3334, 3360, 4370; 1x. 2532, 3502; x. 726; xtt. 1502, 1614, 7533.

² tataš ca sattvād bhagavān bhajyate yaih parah pumān

te sātvatā bhāgavatā ity ucyanie dvijottamaih. Yāmuna's Āgama-prāmāṇya, p. 7. 6.

Thus Manu (x. 23) says: vaiśyāt tu jāyate vrātyāt sudhanvācārya eva ca kārūşaś ca vijanmā ca maitras sātvata eva ca.

pañcamah sātvato nāma Visnor āyatanam hi sah pūjayed ājñayā rājñām sa tu bhāgavatah smṛtah,

unauthorized surmise. It is very probable that Vāsudeva was worshipped by the race of Yadavas as a tribal hero according to their own tribal rites and that he was believed to be an incarnation of Visnu, who was in his turn associated with the sun. Megasthenes, in his account of India as he saw it, speaks of the Sourasenoi -an Indian nation in whose land are two great cities, Methora and Kleisobora, through which flows the navigable river Jobaresas worshipping Heracles. "Methora" in all probability means Mathura and "Jobares" Jumna. It is probable that Heracles is Hari, which again is a name of Vasudeva. Again in the Mahabhārata, vi. 65, Bhīsma says that he was told by the ancient sages that formerly the great supreme person appeared before the assembly of gods and sages, and Brahmā began to adore Him with folded hands. This great Being, who is there adored as Vāsudeva, had first created out of Himself Samkarsana, and then Pradyumna, and from Pradyumna Aniruddha, and it was from Aniruddha that Brahmā was created. This great Being, Vāsudeva, incarnated Himself as the two sages, Nara and Nārāyana. He Himself says in the Mahā-bhārata, vi. 66, that "as Vāsudeva I should be adored by all and no one should ignore me in my human body"; in both these chapters Kṛṣṇa and Vāsudeva are identical, and in the Gītā Kṛṣṇa says that "of the Vṛṣṇis I am Vāsudeva." It has also been pointed out that Vasudeva belonged to the Kanhāyana gotra. As Sir R. G. Bhandarkar says, "It is very probable that the identification of Krsna with Vasudeva was due to the similarity of the gotra name with the name of Kṛṣṇa¹." From the frequent allusions to Vāsudeva in Patanjali's commentary and in the Mahā-bhārata, where he is referred to as the supreme person, it is very reasonable to suppose that the word is a proper noun, as the name of a person worshipped as God, and not a mere patronymic name indicating an origin from a father Vasudeva. Krsna, Janārdana, Keśava, Hari, etc. are not Vrsni names, but were used as personal appellations of Vāsudeva. Patanjali in his commentary on Pāṇini, Iv. 3. 98, notes that Vāsudeva, as the name of a Ksattriya king of the race of Vrsnis, is to be distinguished from Vāsudeva as the name of God. This God, worshipped by the Satvatas according to their family rites, probably came to be identified with a Vṛṣṇi king Vāsudeva, and some of the personal characteristics of this king became also personal

¹ Sir R. G. Bhandarkar's Vaisnavism and Saivism, pp. 11-12.

characteristics of the god Vāsudeva. The word Kṛṣṇa occurs several times in the older literature. Thus Krsna appears as a Vedic rsi, as the composer of Rg-Veda, VIII. 74. In the Mahā-bhārata Anukramani Krsna is said to have descended from Angiras. Krsna appears in the Chandogya Upanisad (III. 17) as the son of Devakī, as in the Ghaţa-jātaka. It is therefore probable that Vāsudeva came to be identified with Krṣṇa, the son of Devakī. The older conception of Krsna's being a rtvij is found in the Mahā-bhārata, and Bhīsma in the Sabhā-parva speaks of him as being a rtvii and well-versed in the accessory literature of the Vedas (vedānga). It is very probable, as Dr Ray Chaudhury points out, that Krsna, the son of Devaki, was the same as Vāsudeva, the founder of the Bhagavata system; for he is referred to in the Ghata-jātaka as being Kanhāyana, or Kanha, which is the same as Krsna, and as Devaki-putra, and in the Chandogya Upanisad, III. 17. 6, also he is referred to as being Devaki-putra. In the Ghata-jātaka Krsna is spoken of as being a warrior, whereas in the Chandogya Upanisad he is a pupil of Ghora Āṅgirasa, who taught him a symbolic sacrifice, in which penances (tapas), gifts (dāna), sincerity (ārjava), non-injury (ahimsā) and truthfulness (satya-vacana) may be regarded as sacrificial fees (daksinā). The Mahā-bhārata, II. 317, describes Krsna both as a sage who performed long courses of asceticism in Gandhamādana, Puşkara and Badarī, and as a great warrior. He is also described in the Mahā-bhārata as Vāsudeva, Devakī-putra and as the chief of the Satvatas, and his divinity is everywhere acknowledged there... But it is not possible to assert definitely that Vāsudeva, Krsna the warrior and Krsna the sage were not three different persons, who in the Mahā-bhārata were unified and identified, though it is quite probable that all the different strands of legends refer to one identical person.

If the three Kṛṣṇas refer to one individual Kṛṣṇa, he must have lived long before Buddha, as he is alluded to in the *Chāndogya*, and his *guru* Ghora Āngirasa is also alluded to in the *Kauṣitaki-brāhmaṇa*, xxx. 6 and the *Kāṭḥaka-saṃḥitā*, I. I, which are pre-Buddhistic works. Jaina tradition refers to Kṛṣṇa as being anterior to Pārśvanātha (817 B.C.), and on this evidence Dr Ray Chaudhury thinks that he must have lived long before the closing years of the ninth century B.C.¹

¹ Early History of the Vaisnava Sect, p. 39.

Bhāgavata and the Bhagavad-gītā.

The Mahā-bhārata (XII. 348) associates the Bhagavad-gītā with the doctrines of the Ekanti-Vaisnavas It is said there that the God Hari (bhagavān Hari) always blesses those that are devoted to God without any idea of gain (ekāntin) and accepts their adorations, offered in accordance with proper rites (vidhi-prayukta)1. This ekānta religion (ekānta-dharma) is dear to Nārāyaṇa, and those who adhere to it attain to Hari, as Nīlakantha, the commentator on the Mahā-bhārata, points out, without passing through the three stages of Aniruddha, Pradyumna and Samkarsana. The ekāntin faith leads to much higher goals than the paths of those that know the Vedas and lead the lives of ascetics. The principles of this ekāntin faith were enunciated by the Bhagavat himself in the battle of the Pāndavas and the Kurus, when Arjuna felt disinclined to fight. This faith can be traced originally to the Sāma-veda. It is said that, when Nārāyaṇa created Brahmā, he gave him this sātvata faith, and from that time forth, as the Mahā-bhārata states, there has been a host of persons who were instructed in this faith and followed it. It was at a much later stage briefly described in the Hari-gītā2. This faith is very obscure and very difficult to be practised, and its chief feature is cessation from all kinds of injury. In some places it is said to recognize one vyūha: in other places two, and in others three, vyūhas are mentioned. Hari, however, is the final and absolute reality; he is both the agent, the action and the cause, as well as the absolute beyond action (akartā). There are, however, but few ekāntins in the world: had the world been filled with ekāntins, who never injured anyone, were always engaged in doing good to others and attained self-know-

¹ Ekāntino niṣkāma-bhaktāḥ, Nīlakantha's commentary on the Mahā-bhārata,

x11. 348. 3.
² kathito hari-gītāsu samāsa-vidhi-kalpitaļi, Hari-gītā. 53. The traditional teaching of the Gitā doctrines is represented as ancient in the Gitā itself (IV. 1-3), where it is said that Bhagavan declared it to Vivasvan, and he related it to Manu, and Manu to Ikşvāku, and so on, until after a long time it was lost; it was again revived by Kṛṣṇa in the form of the Bhagavad-gītā. In the Mahā-bhārata, XII. 348, it is said that Sanatkumāra learned this doctrine from Nārāyaņa, from him Prajapati, from him Raibhya and from him Kukşi. It was then lost. Then again Brahmā learned it from Nārāyaṇa, and from him the Barhişada sages learned it, and from them Jyeştha. Then again it was lost; then again Brahmā learned it from Nārāyaṇa, and from him Dakṣa learned it, and from him Vivasvān, and from Vivasvān Manu, and from Manu Iksvāku. Thus the tradition of the Bhagavadgītā, as given in the poem itself, tallies with the Mahā-bhārata account.

ledge, then the golden age, kṛta yuga, would have come again. This ekānta religion is a faith parallel to that of the Sāṃkhya-yoga, and the devotee who follows it attains Nārāyaṇa as his ultimate state of liberation. From this description in the Mahā-bhārata it seems that the doctrine of the Gītā was believed to be the ekāntin doctrine originally taught by Nārāyaṇa to Brahmā, Nārada and others long before the recital of the Gītā by Kṛṣṇa in the Mahā-bhārata battle. It is further known that it had at least four or five different schools or variant forms, viz. eka-vyūha, dvi-vyūha, tri-vyūha, catur-vyūha and ekānta, and that it was known as the Sātvata religion.

Yāmunācārya in his Agama-prāmānya tries to combat a number of views in which the Bhāgavatas were regarded as being inferior to Brahmins, not being allowed to sit and dine with them. The Satvatas, again, are counted by Manu as a low-caste people, born from outcast Vaisyas and not entitled to the holy thread 1. The Sātvatas were, of course, regarded as the same as Bhāgavatas, and their chief duties consisted in worshipping for their living in Visnu temples by the order of the king². They also repaired or constructed temples and images for their living, and were therefore regarded as outcasts. That the Bhagavatas did in later times worship images and build images and temples is also evident from the fact that most of the available Pañca-rātra works are full of details about image-building and image-worship. The Gītā (IX. 26) also speaks of adoration with water, flowers and leaves, which undoubtedly refers to image-worship. Samkarsana, as the brother or companion of Krsna, is mentioned in Patañjali's Mahā-bhāsva (II. 2. 24) in a verse quoted by him, and in II. 2. 34 he seems to quote another passage, in which it is related that different kinds of musical instruments were played in the temple of Dhanapati, Rāma and Keśava, meaning Balarāma, Samkarsana and Krsna³.

As Yāmuna points out, the opponents of the Bhāgavata school urge that, since the ordinary Brahminic initiation is not deemed

- ¹ vaisyāt tu jāyate vrātyāt sudhanvācārya eva ca
- kārūṣas ca vijanmā ca maitrah sasvata eva ca. Āgama-prāmāṇya, p. 8.
- pañcamah sātvato nāma Visnor āyatanām hi sa pūjayed ājñayā rājñām sa tu bhāgavatah smrtah. Ibid.
- Sankarşana-dvittyasya balam Krşnasya ardhitam.

Mahā-bhāşya, 11. 2. 27.

mṛdanga-śankha-paṇavāḥ pṛthan nadanti saṃsadi prāsāde dhana-pati-rāma-keśavānām.

Ibid. 11. 2. 34.

a sufficient qualification for undertaking the worship of Visuu, and since special and peculiar forms of initiation and ceremonial performances are necessary, it is clear that the Bhagavata forms of worship are not Vedic in their origin. The fourteen Hindu sciences, viz. the six vedāngas on Vedic pronunciation (śiksā), ritual (kalpa), grammar (vyākarana), metre (chandas), astronomy (jyotisa), lexicography (nirukta), the four Vedas, Mīmāmsā, argumentative works or philosophy (nyāya-vistara), the mythologies (purāna) and rules of conduct (dharma-sāstra), do not refer to the Pañca-rātra scriptures as being counted in their number. So the Bhagavata or the Pañca-rātra scriptures are of non-Vedic origin. But Yāmuna contends that, since Nārāyana is the supreme god, the Bhāgavata literature, which deals with his worship, must be regarded as having the same sources as the Vedas; the Bhagavatas also have the same kind of outer dress as the Brahmins and the same kinds of lineage. He further contends that, though satvata means an outcast, vet sātvata is a different word from sātvata, which means a devotee of Vișnu. Moreover, not all Bhāgavatas take to professional priestly duties and the worshipping of images for their livelihood; for there are many who worship the images through pure devotion. It is very easy to see that the above defence of the Bhagavatas, as put forward by one of their best advocates, Yāmunācārya, is very tame and tends to suggest very strongly that the Bhagavata sect was non-Vedic in its origin and that image-worship, image-making, image-repairing and temple-building had their origin in that particular sect. Yet throughout the entire scriptures of the Pañcarātra school there is the universal and uncontested tradition that it is based on the Vedas. But its difference from the Vedic path is well known. Yāmuna himself refers to a passage (Agamaprāmānya, p. 51) where it is said that Sandilya, not being able to find his desired end (purusārtha) in all the four Vedas, produced this scripture. The Gītā itself often describes the selfish aims of sacrifices, and Krsna urges Arjuna to rise above the level of the Vedas. It seems, therefore, that the real connection of the Pañcarātra literature is to be found in the fact that it originated from Vāsudeva or Visnu, who is the supreme God from whom the Vedas themselves were produced. Thus the Isvara-samhitā (1. 24-26) explains the matter, and states that the Bhagavata literature is the great root of the Veda tree, and the Vedas themselves are but trunks of it, and the followers of Yoga are but its branches. Its

main purpose is to propound the superiority of Vāsudeva, who is the root of the universe and identical with the Vedas¹.

The affinity of this school of thought to the Upanisad school becomes apparent when it is considered that Vasudeva was regarded in this system as the highest Brahman². The three other vyūhas were but subordinate manifestations of him, after the analogy of prajñā, virāt, viśva and taijasa in monistic Vedānta. Patanjali's Mahā-bhāsya does not seem to know of the four vyūhas, as it mentions only Vāsudeva and Samkarsana; and the Gitā knows only Vāsudeva. It seems, therefore, that the vyūha doctrine did not exist at the time of the Gītā and that it evolved gradually in later times. It is seen from a passage of the Mahābhārata, already referred to, that there were different variations of the doctrine and that some accepted one $vy\bar{u}ha$, others two, others three and others four. It is very improbable that, if the vyūha doctrine was known at the time of the Gitā, it should not have been mentioned therein. For the Gītā was in all probability the earliest work of the ekāntin school of the Bhāgavatas³. It is also interesting in this connection to note that the name Nārāyana is never mentioned in the $Git\bar{a}$, and Vāsudeva is only identified with Visnu, the chief of the ādityas. Thus Sir R. G. Bhandarkar says, "It will be seen that the date of the Bhagavad-gītā, which contains

mahato veda-vykşasya mūla-bhūto mahān ayaṃ skandha-bhutā ṛṣ-ādyās te šākhā-bhūtāš ca yoginaḥ jagan-mūlasya vedasya Vāsudevasya mukhyataḥ praripādakatā siddhā mūla-vedākhyatā dvijāḥ.

Īśvara-samhitā, 1, 21-26.

yasmāt samyak param brahma Vāsudevākhyam avyayam asmād avāpyate sāstrāj jñāna-pārvena karmaņā.

Pauskarāgama, as quoted in Rāmānuja-bhāsya, 11. 2. 42.

The Chāndogya Upanişad (v11. 1. 2) refers also to the study of ekāyana, as in the passage vāko-vākyam ekāyanam; ekāyana is also described as being itself a Veda in Śrīpraśna-saṃhitā, 11. 38, 39:

vedam ekäyanam nāma vedānām sirasi sthitam tad-arthakam pañca-rātram mokṣa-dam tat-kriyāvatām yasminn eko mokṣa-mārgo vede proktah sanātanah mad-ārādhana-rūpeṇa tasmād ekāyanam bhavet.

See also the article "The Pañca-rātras or Bhāgavata-śāstra," by Govindācārya Svāmin, $\mathcal{J}.R.A.S.$ 1911.

³ That the ekāntin faith is the same as the Sātvata or the Pañca-rātra faith is evident from the following quotation from the Pādma-tantra, 1V. 2. 88:

sūris suhrd bhāgavatas sātvatah pañca-kāla-vit

ekāntikas tan-mayas ca pañca-rātrika ity api.

This faith is also called $ek\bar{a}yana$, or the path of the One, as is seen from the following passage from the $\bar{I}svara-samhit\bar{a}$, 1. 18:

mokṣāyanāya vai panthā etad-anyo na vidyate tasmād ekāyanam nāma pravadanti manīṣiṇaḥ. no mention of the *vyūhas* or personified forms, is much earlier than those of the inscriptions, the *Niddesa* and Patañjali, i.e. it was composed not later than the beginning of the fourth century before the Christian era; how much earlier it is difficult to say. At the time when the *Gītā* was conceived and composed the identification of Vāsudeva with Nārāyaṇa had not yet taken place, nor had the fact of his being an incarnation of Viṣṇu come to be acknowledged, as appears from the work itself....Viṣṇu is alluded to as the chief of the Ādityas and not as the supreme being, and Vāsudeva was Viṣṇu in this sense, as mentioned in chapter x, because the best thing of a group or class is represented to be his *vibhūti* or special manifestation¹."

The date of the Gītā has been the subject of long discussions among scholars, and it is inconvenient for our present purposes to enter into an elaborate controversy. One of the most extreme views on the subject is that of Dr Lorinser, who holds that it was composed after Buddha, and several centuries after the commencement of the Christian era, under the influence of the New Testament. Mr 'Telang in the introduction to his translation of the Bhagavad-gitā points out—as has been shown above—that the Bhagavad-gītā does not know anything that is peculiarly Buddhistic. Attempt has also been made to prove that the Gītā not only does not know anything Buddhistic, but that it also knows neither the accepted Sāmkhya philosophy nor the Yoga of Patanjali's Yoga-sūtra. This, together with some other secondary considerations noted above, such as the non-identification of Vāsudeva with Nārāyana and the non-appearance of the vyūha doctrine. seems to be a very strong reason for holding the Gitā to be in its general structure pre-Buddhistic. The looseness of its composition, however, always made it easy to interpolate occasional verses. Since there is no other consideration which might lead us to think that the Gitā was written after the Brahma-sūtras, the verse Brahma-sūtra-padais caiva hetumadbhir viniscitaih has to be either treated as an interpolation or interpreted differently. Sankara also thought that the Brahma-sūtra referred to the Gitā as an old sacred writing (smrti), and this tallies with our other considerations regarding the antiquity of the Gītā. The view of Dr Lorinser, that the Bhagavad-gitā must have borrowed at least some of its materials from Christianity, has been pretty successfully refuted by

¹ Vaisnavism and Saivism, p. 13.

Mr Telang in the introduction to his translation, and it therefore need not be here again combated. Dr Ray Chaudhury also has discussed the problem of the relation of Bhagavatism to Christianity, and in the discussion nothing has come out which can definitely make it seem probable that the Bhagavata cult was indebted to Christianity at any stage of its development; the possibility of the Gitā being indebted to Christianity may be held to be a mere fancy. It is not necessary here to enter into any long discussion in refuting Garbe's view that the $G\bar{\imath}t\bar{a}$ was originally a work on Sāmkhya lines (written in the first half of the second century B.C.), which was revised on Vedantic lines and brought to its present form in the second century A.D.; for I suppose it has been amply proved that, in the light of the uncontradicted tradition of the Mahā-bhārata and the Pañca-rātra literature, the Gitā is to be regarded as a work of the Bhāgavata school, and an internal analysis of the work also shows that the Gitā is neither an ordinary Sämkhya nor a Vedānta work, but represents some older system wherein the views of an earlier school of Sāmkhya are mixed up with Vedāntic ideas different from the Vedanta as interpreted by Sankara. The arbitrary and dogmatic assertion of Garbe, that he could clearly separate the original part of the Gitā from the later additions, need not, to my mind, be taken seriously. The antiquity of the Bhagavata religion is, as pointed out by Tilak, acknowledged by Senart (The Indian Interpreter, October 1909 and January 1910) and Bühler (Indian Antiquary, 1894), and the latter says, "The ancient Bhagavata, Sātvata or Pañca-rātra sect, devoted to the worship of Nārāyana and his deified teacher Krsna Devaki-putra, dates from a period long anterior to the rise of the Jainas in the eighth century B.C." And assuredly the Gitā is the earliest available literature of this school. As regards external evidence, it may be pointed out that the Gitā is alluded to not only by Kālidāsa and Bāna, but also by Bhāsa in his play Karna-bhāra¹. Tilak also refers to an article by T. G. Kale in the Vedic Magazine, VII. pp., 528-532, where he points out that the Bodhāyana-Grhya-sesa-sūtra, II. 22. 9, quotes the Gītā, IX. 26.

hato 'pi labhate svargam jitvā tu labhate yasah ubhe bahumate loke nāsti nisphalatā raņe, which repeats the first two lines of the Gītā, 11.37.

¹ Tilak quotes this passage on page 574 of his *Bhagavad-gītā-rahasya* (Bengali translation of his Marathi work) as follows:

and the Bodhāyana-Pitr-medha-sūtra, at the beginning of the third *praśna*, quotes another passage of the $Git\bar{a}^1$. Incidentally it may also be mentioned that the style of the $G\bar{\imath}t\bar{a}$ is very archaic; it is itself called an Upanisad, and there are many passages in it which are found in the Isa (Isa, 5, cf. the Bhagavad-gita, XIII. 15 and VI. 29), Mundaka (Mund. II. 1. 2, cf. the Gītā, XIII. 17), Kāthaka (II. 15, II. 18 and 19 and II. 7, cf. the Gita, VIII. 11; II. 20 and 29) and other Upanisads. We are thus led to assign to the Gītā a very early date, and, since there is no definite evidence to show that it was post-Buddhistic, and since also the Gītā does not contain the slightest reference to anything Buddhistic, I venture to suggest that it is pre-Buddhistic, however unfashionable such a view may appear. An examination of the Gītā from the point of view of language also shows that it is archaic and largely un-Pāṇinean. Thus from the root yudh we have yudhya (VIII. 7) for yudhyasva; yat, which is ātmane-pada in Pāninean Sanskrit, is used in parasmai-pada also, as in VI. 36, VII. 3, IX. 14 and XV. 11; ram is also used in parasmai-pada in X. 9. The roots kānks, vraj, viś and ing are used in Paninean Sanskrit in parasmai-pada, but in the Gitā they are all used in ātmane-pada as well—kānks in I. 31, vraj in II. 54, viś in XXIII. 55 and ing in VI. 19 and XIV. 23. Again, the verb ud-vij, which is generally used in ātmane-pada, is used in parasmai-pada in v. 20; nivasisyasi is used in XII. 8 for nivatsyasi, mā śucah for mā śocīh in xvi. 5; and the usage of prasavisyadhvam in III. 10 is quite ungrammatical. So yamah samyamatām in x. 29 should be yamah samyacchatām, he sakheti in XI. 41 is an instance of wrong sandhi, priyāyārhasi in XI. 44 is used for priyāyāh arhasi, senānīnām in X. 24 is used for senānyām². These linguistic irregularities, though they may not themselves be regarded as determining anything definitely, may yet be regarded

tad āha bhagavān,

patram puşpam phalum toyam yo me bhaktya prayacchati tad aham bhakty-upahrtam asnāmi prayatātmanah.

Also, Bodhāyana-Pitr-medha-sūtra: yatasya vai manuşyasya dhruvam maranam iti vijāniyāt tasmāj jāte na prahrsyen mrte ca na visīdeta.
Compare the Gītā, jātasya hi dhruvo mrtyuh, etc.

N.B. These references are all taken from Tilak's Bhagavad-gitā-rahasya pp. 574, etc.

² For enumeration of more errors of this character see Mr V. K. Rajwade's article in the Bhandarkar commemoration volume, from which these have been collected.

¹ Bodhāyana-Grhya-śeşa-sūtra:

as contributory evidence in favour of the high antiquity of the Gitā. The Gitā may have been a work of the Bhāgavata school written long before the composition of the Mahā-bhārata, and may have been written on the basis of the Bhārata legend, on which the Mahā-bhārata was based. It is not improbable that the Gitā, which summarized the older teachings of the Bhāgavata school, was incorporated into the Mahā-bhārata, during one of its revisions, by reason of the sacredness that it had attained at the time.

INDEX¹

abādhita, 108 acapala, 510 abādhita - svayam - prakāšataiva asya Acceptance of gift, 505 sattā, 36 Accessories, 160, 183, 184 Abdomen, 289, 353 Accessory cause, 109, 186 abhaya, 510 Accidental happenings, 372 Accretion, 235 n., 326; of energy, abhāva, 142, 162, 193, 227 abheda, 207 abhedo nīla-tad-dhiyoh, 26 n. Acetabulum, 287 n. 2 abhicāra-karma, 284 acetana, 36 Abhidharma-kośa, 58 n. Acid, 337 n., 358, 359, 361, 362 Abhidharma-kośa-vyākhyā, 58 n., 62 n. Acidity, 335 n. abhidhānābhidheya - jñāna - jñeyādilak acintya, 362-364 sanah, 3 n. Action, 148, 187, 194, 241, 360, 403abhighāta, 339, 410 405, 412, 421, 440, 441, 467, 488, abhihitānvaya-vāda, 227 507, 508, 515, 516 Active agent, 244 abhilāso, 497 abhilāsa, 412 Active functioning, 238 Abhinanda, 232 Active operation, 154 Abhinavagupta, 49, 443 Active restraint, 500 Activity, 238, 256, 341, 368, 369, 481, Abhinavanārāyaņa, 78 504, 515; of the self, 197 Abhinavanārāyaņendra Sarasvatī, 78, Act of knowledge, 69 Acts, 15 abhiniveśa, 414 abhiprapacyamāna, 314 Actual, 23 n.; data, 214 Abhiprāya-prakāšikā, 83, 87 n., 148 n. Acyutakṛṣṇānanda Tīrtha, 220 Additional assistance, 183 abhisecana, 505 abhivyajyate, 303 adharma, 321, 409, 411, 416, 484, 487, abhivyakti, 173 507, 525 abhraja, 300, 301, 331 n. adhika, 384, 385, 389 n. adhikarana, 108 n., 359, 390 abhyanujñā, 388 Adhikarana-manjari, 148 n. abhyāsa, 360, 370 Adhikarana-māla, 81 abhyupagama-siddhānta, 383 Ablutions, 267, 505 Adhikarana-ratna-mālā, 148 n. Abnormal states, 335 Adhikarana-sangati, 148 n. adhikarana-siddhänta, 383 Abode, 497 Abscess, 299 adhimoksa, 24 adhipati, 342, 352 Absence, 19 adhisthāna, 113, 194, 279, 472 Absolute destruction, 248 Absolute oneness, 128 adhisthāyaka, 366 Absolute truth, 3 adhyavasāya, 373 Absolutist, 514 adhyāsa, 9, 103 Abstract idea, 211 Adhyāsa-bhāsya, 6 n., 222 n. Abstraction, 28 adhyātma-vidah, 423 ad infinitum, 40, 70, 376 Abuse, 498 n. Adoration, 439 Academic dispute, 373 Academy of Sciences, 164 n. adroha, 510

¹ The words are arranged in the order of the English alphabet. Sanskrit and Pali technical terms and words are in small italies; names of books are in italies with a capital. English words and other names are in Roman with a capital. Letters with discritical marks come after ordinary ones.

adrsta, 207, 306, 360	Agnivesa-samhitā, 277, 432
adrstādi-ksubdham, 206	Agniveśa-tantra, 429
adrstädi-sahakrtam, 197	Agniveśya, 228, 230
adrstārtha, 383	agrahana, 104
Adultery, 498 n.	Agrahāyaņa, 282
Advaita-bhūṣaṇa, 52 n.	Agriculture, 502, 505
Advaita-bodha-dīpikā, 54, 216	ahamkāra, 75, 102, 104, 217, 238, 239,
Advaita-brahma-siddhi, 57	245, 257, 262, 305, 347, 458, 463,
Advaita-candrikā, 55	464, 496, 524
Advaita-cintā-kaustubha, 56	ahaṃtā, 235, 237
Advaita-cintāmaņi, 55	a-hetu, 386
Advaita-dīpikā, 53, 216	ahetu-sama, 380 n. 4, 382 n.
Advaita-dīpikā-vivaraņa, 53	ahetutah, 166
Advaita-makaranda, 56	ahiṃsā, 505, 510, 514, 544
Advaita-makaranda-ţīkā, 193	Ahirbudhnya-samhita, 461, 537
Advaita-mañjarī, 225	ahita, 277, 278, 421, 422
Advaita-muktā-sāra, 57 n.	aihika, 253
Advaita-nirnaya, 219	aikamatya, 282
Advaita-pañca-ratna, 53, 216	aindriya, 254
Advaita Philosophy, 2 n.	Air, 74, 187, 194, 235, 302, 325, 330-
Advaita-ratna, 54	334, 359, 360, 362, 419
Advaita-ratna-koşa, 54	Airy, 357, 359
Advaita-ratna-raksana, 225, 226	Aitareya, 78, 259 n. 3
Advaita-ratna-vyākhyāna, 54	Aitareya-brāhmaņa, 536
Advaita-siddhānta-vidyotana, 57 n.	Aitareyopanişad-bhāşya, 78
Advaita-siddhi, 53, 56, 118, 198, 199,	aitihya, 376, 379
223 n., 225, 226	Ajita, 61
Advaita-siddhy-upanyāsa, 225 n.	ajñāna, 3, 9, 10, 50, 55, 73, 74, 76,
Advaita-śāstra-sāroddhāra, 55	101, 102, 108, 110, 112, 113, 115,
advaita-śruti, 80	153, 154, 195, 196, 204, 217, 222,
Advaita-vāda, 216	389, 479, 499, 500; its nature, de-
advaita-vāsanā, 218	pendence on self and transformation
Advaitānanda, 56, 82 n., 232	into world-appearance, 10; its no-
Advaitānubhūti, 81	tion in Padmapāda or Prakāsātman
Advancement, 519	different from that of Nāgārjuna, 9;
Advayānanda, 79	its transformations, 10, 53; Vācas-
Advayāraņya, 231	pati's view of its causality, 11
Advayāśrama, 204	ajñānam nābhāva upādānatvān mṛdvat,
Adyar, 49, 84 n., 87	197
Affection, 490, 497	ajñāta-sattvānabhyupagama, 17, 270
Affections of vāta, 336	akartā, 545
Affective tone, 23	Akhaṇḍānanda, 52, 103, 193
Affirmations, 75, 166, 271, 387	Akhaṇḍānanda Muni, 10, 31 n.
Afflictions, 22, 304, 414, 499	Akhaṇḍātma-prakāśikā, 57 n.
agada-tantra, 276	Akhilātman, 99
Agasti, 228, 230	akhyāti, 87 n.
Agastva, 433	aklişta, 414
Age, 370	akrodha, 505, 510
Agent, 77, 169, 310, 314, 358, 368,	a-kṛtaka, 182
441, 469, 470, 515, 516	akşaka-samjñe, 286 n. 4
Agg. 539	Aksapāda, 393, 394, 398–401
Agni, 75, 292 n., 300 n. 2, 303, 304	alaji, 299
Agnihotra, 54	alambuṣā, 354
agni-karma, 330	alasālā, 298 n. 6
Agm-Purāna, 279 n.	Alberuni, 426
Agnistoma, L', 345 n.	Alchemy, 426
Agnivesa, 393, 395, 399, 424, 429,	Alertness, 511; of mind, 511
432	algaṇḍu, 297

Alimsa, 300	Angry, 367
Alkaline, 357, 358	anila, 330
All, 195	Animal, 359, 513
Allāla Sūri, 52 n.	Animate, 359, 360
All-pervading, 16, 372, 525, 526	Aniruddha, 543, 545
All-pervasive, 160	anirvacanīyam nīlādi, 111
aloka-samvrta, 5	anirvacanīyatā, 155
alolupatva, 510	anirvacanīyatā-vacana, 105
Alternating, 63	anirvacaniyā, 89, 117, 203, 224
Alternative, 18, 377	anirvācya, 35, 111
Altindische Grammatik, 345 n.	anirvācyatva, 194
Amalānanda, 52, 57, 58, 74 n. 86, 103,	anirvācyā avidyā, 109
107-109, 119, 260	anitya, 22 n., 120
Amaradāsa, 54	anitya-sama, 380 n. 4
Amara-koşa, 55	aniyata-vipāka, 249
amarşa, 412	Ankle-bones, 284
amāvāsyā, 292 n.	Annam Bhatta, 82 n.
Amīvā, 300	Annihilation, 266
amla, 312 n. 3, 357, 358, 361	Annotations, 87
Amṛtānanda, 31 n., 454	anrta, 383
Amulets, 277, 281, 282, 293, 294, 301,	antahkarana-caitanyayor aikyādhyāsāt
364	206
amūrta, 254	antaḥkaraṇas, 34, 50, 56, 65, 72, 75 n.,
amsa, 286 n. 2, 287	76, 77, 88, 89 n., 101, 104–106, 109,
amsa-phalaka, 286 n. 4	113, 114, 206-210, 217, 268, 292,
aṃsa-pīṭha, 287 n. 2	295, 306, 344, 452, 484 n. I
amśāmśa-vikalpa, 338	antalikarana-višista, 33
anabhilapyenātmanā, 20	antahkaraṇāvacchinnam caitanyam, 206
anabhiraddhi, 497	antah-sauşiryam, 307
anabhişanga, 373	antarikṣaṃ, 292 n.
anadhigata, 212, 213	Antaryāmi-brāhmaṇa, 251
anadhigatatva, 213	antaryāmin, 215, 537
anaikāntikatva, 123	Antecedence, 160, 172
Analogy, 36, 42, 148, 155, 180, 189,	Antipathy, 24, 101, 245, 248, 267, 409,
391; of dreams, 28; of play, 42	412-414, 490, 498, 499
Analysis, 65; of consciousness, 62	antrebhyah, 288
ananubhāṣaṇa, 389 n.	anubandha, 338 n., 368 n., 389, 497
ananuyojya, 384	anubandhya, 338 n.
ananyathā-siddha, 160	anubhava, 149
Ananyānubhava, 82 n.	Anubhava-dīpikā, 78
anarthaka, 384, 385	Anubhava-vilāsa, 57 n.
Anatomical texts, 435	Anubhavānanda, 58, 86
Anatomical treatises, 435	anubhūti, 199
Anatomy, 355, 433	anubhūti-svahhāva, 471
anavasthā, 174	Anubhūtisvarūpācārya, 116, 192, 194
anādy-anirvācyāvidyāśrayaņāt, 12	anumata, 389, 391
anāgatāvekṣaṇa, 389, 392	anumāna, 139, 194, 373, 376, 379, 398
anāhata-cakra, 355	401 n.
anākhyam anabhivyaktam, 232	anupadhā, 505
anāmayam, 462	anupalabdhi-sama, 380 n. 4
anārambha, 416	anupasaya, 397
anāsrava, 22	Anupatāla, 300
anātman, 6	anus, 296, 426
anekatā, 370	anus 190, 420 anus 190, 497
anekānta, 389	anutpatti-sama, 380 n. 4
anekāntha, 391	anuvrtta, 63
	anu-vyavasāya, 151
Anger, 267, 333, 373, 409, 492, 497, 499, 509-511	anuyoga, 384
433, 203 211	unnyogu, 304

33	
	a posteriori, 517
anuyojya, 384	
anūkya, 287 n. 1	Apparatus, 180
Anvaya-prakāšikā, 56	Apparent reality, 4
anvaya-vyatireki, 400 n.	Appaya Diksita, 10, 11, 17, 44, 47, 49,
anvaya - vyatireki - sādhya - višesam	52-56, 79, 82 n., 106 n., 108, 216 n.,
vādy-abhimatam sādhayati, 121	218, 219; his date, lineage and
Anvayārtha-prakāšikā, 116	works, 218 ff.
anvayi, 400 n.	Appearance, 3, 5, 8, 13, 20-22, 28,
anvitābhidhāna-vāda, 227	31, 37, 101, 105, 109, 194, 195, 232,
anyathā-khyāti, 87 n., 204, 222	235, 236, 239, 252, 371, 438, 517;
anya pūrvapurva-bhrama-samskārah,	of unity, 65
100	Appetites, 493
anyedyuh, 297	Appetitive desire, 501
anyonya-milat-komala-saddala, 257	Appreciation, 512
anyonyabhāva, 122, 131, 132	Apprehension, 22
angam eva alpatvād upāngam, 273	apradhāna, 370
anganam. 496	aprama, 128
Angiras, 281, 544	apramāda, 505
Angirasa-kalpa, 283	apratibhā, 389 n.
angulayah, 285	apratyak, 63
Anguttara-nikāya, 394	aprāpta-kāla, 389 n.
ańkura, 169	aprăpta-prărthană, 412
aññāṇam, 498	apräptayoh präptih samyogah, 158
anu, 261	a priori, 517
anu-hrasva, 189	apsarāļi, 228
ann-hrasva measure, 190	apūrva, 80
anuhrasva parimāna, 189	apūrva-vidhi, 46
anda, 322 n.	Arāya, 300
ap, 75, 501	arbuda, 286 n. 3, 314
apacit, 298 n. 7	arcā, 537
apadeśa, 389, 391	
apagataişanah, 245	Ardent desire, 497
	ardha-supta-prabuddha, 264
apahnava-vacana, 105	ardhānjali-parimāņa, 343 n.
apaišuna, 510	Argument, 18, 26 n., 29, 278, 376
apara, 360, 370	arhatattva, 248
aparam ojas, 343 n.	Ariştanemi, 229
apara prakrti, 465	Arjuna, 487, 489, 500, 502, 507,
aparicehinnālambanākāra, 23	508, 512, 516, 518, 525, 529-532,
aparoksa, 6, 63, 105	545
aparokṣa-prattti-virodhāt, 194	Armpits, 326 n.
aparoksa-vyavahāra-yogya, 149	Arṇava-varṇana, 126
Aparokṣānubhava, 78	aroga, 334 n.
Aparokṣānubhūti, 80	arpaņa, 452
apa-siddhänta, 389 n.	Arrogant, 510
Apasmāra, 431	Arśas, 430
apavarga, 44, 248	Arteries, 256 n., 289, 290
apavarja, 389, 391	artha, 327, 340, 359, 479, 482, 485
apāna, 258-260, 291, 311, 332, 373,	artha-kriyā-kāritva, 32, 108
448, 449, 455	artha-kriyā-sāmarthya, 183
apāna vāyu, 355	artha-kriyā-sāmarthya-sattvam, 30 n.
apānāya svāhā, 448	artha-prāpakatva, 137
apānga, 342, 351	artha-prāpti, 384
apārthaka, 384, 385, 388, 389 n.	Artha-śāstra, 274, 541
apekhā, 496	arthavatī, 20
apekşā, 95	
apekṣā-buddhi, 157, 158	arthāntara, 388, 389 n.
	arthāpatti, 18, 389, 391
Aperture, 354 n., 355, 356	arthāpatti-sama, 380 n. 4, 382 n.
Apoha-siddhi, 49	Artificial process, 358

Aruṇadatta, 429, 434	aşṭāṅga-yoga, 453–455
aruṇā, 291, 344 n.	aşthīvantau, 285
asamprajñāta, 250	aṣṭhīvat, 285 n. 4
asaṃsargāgraha, 154, 155	Atala, 76
Asanga, 164	Atharva, 274, 390
asanga, 268	Atharvan texts, 299
asanga-bhāvanā, 264	Atharvanic charms, 281
asanga-sastrena, 524	Atharvanic hymns, 289
a-sarva-gata, 410	Atharvanic rites, 283, 294
asat, 155, 373	Atharva-sikhā Upanişad, 449
a-sat-kārya-vāda, 39, 179, 473, 517	Atharva-śiras Upanisad, 449
asat-khyāti, 87 n.	Atharva-Veda, 273-275, 277-280, 283,
asātmya-arthāgama, 416	284, 288, 290, 291, 293-295, 301,
Ascetic, 373; life, 508; postures, 489	331, 340, 343 n., 344-346, 364, 486,
Asceticism, 229, 267, 508	536, 539; as Atharva and Angiras,
Asiatic Society of Bengal, 205	281; Äyur-veda an upānga of it, 273;
asmitā, 414	Ayur-veda its upaveda, 274; diseases
aspanda, 265	and their symptoms in, 301 ff.;
Aspects, 238	diseases mentioned in, 296 ff.; dis-
Aspiration, 497	tinguishes hirā and dhamanī, 344 n.;
Ass, 160, 386 n.	head and brain in, 340; its bone
Assembly, 378	system critically compared and con-
Assimilation, 331	trasted with that of Caraka, Suśruta,
Associated, 501	Vāgbhaṭa, 284 ff.; its contents as
Association, 15, 21, 25, 34, 156, 169,	arranged by Bloomfield, 295 ff.; its
183, 188, 195, 239, 321, 358, 369,	principal contents, 281 ff.; its prob-
375, 451, 452, 456, 500	able priority to Rg-veda, 280, 281;
asteya, 505	its relation with Ayur-veda, 275; its
asthi, 317, 328	śākhās, 283 ff.; its theory of vāyus,
asthi-māmsa-maya, 257	291, 292; on sirā and dhamani,
asthira, 230, 241	289 ff.; rivalry between drugs and
asti, 386 n.	charms in, 293 ff.; theory of the
Astragalus, 284 n. 3	origin of diseases in, 299 ff; vāyu,
Astringent, 358, 359	pitta and kapha in, 331; what nāḍī
Astrology, 436	means in, 345
Astronomy, 49	Atharva-Veda and Gopatha-Brāhmaṇa,
asukhan šauk 255	295 n. 1, 296 n. 1 Atharvaveda in Kashmir, 283 n.
asukham āyuḥ, 277	Atharvängirasah, 281
asura, 314, 535, 539 Asura-veda, 274 n. 3	atideśa, 389, 391
asūyā, 413	atikrāntāvekṣaṇa, 389, 392
asvādu, 358	atimūtra, 296
aśubha, 341	atirikta, 388
aśuddha, 36	atisayādhāna, 183
Aśvattha, 524	atiyoga, 320, 321, 405
Asvattha tree, 523, 524	atIndriya, 347, 366
astakā, 292	atīsāra, 296, 430
asta-siddhi, 427	Atīta-kāla, 387
Aştanga Āyur-veda, 276	Atomic, 367; changes, 194; measure,
Aşṭāṅga-hṛdaya, 364 n., 436	189; theory, 151, 189
Aşṭāṅga - hṛdaya - nāma - vaidūryaka-	Atoms, 20, 25, 157, 187-190, 193, 199,
bhāṣya, 436	306, 371
Aṣṭāṅga-hṛdaya-saṃhitā, 425, 432-	Atri, 399, 401, 429
434	Attachment, 24, 101, 243, 304, 412-
Aştānga-hṛdaya-vṛtti, 436	414, 489, 490, 497-499, 501, 503,
Aştānga-samgraha, 263, 274 n. 3, 284	504, 507, 510, 511, 513, 514, 516,
n. 3, 304 n. 1, 317 n. 1, 328, 329 n.,	521-523
433	Attention, 23, 24

A
Attentive reflection, 24
Attock, 429
Attractions, 239
atyantāsat, 194
atthanga-sīla, 498
Auditory organ, 344
Auditory sense, 374
Aufrecht, Th., 435, 439
aupacārika, 328, 329
Aupadhenava, 424
Aupadhenava-tantra, 435
aupamya, 377, 379
aupapāduka, 308
Aurabhra, 424
Auricular, 353
Auspicious rites, 281
Austerities, 441
auşadha, 295
aușadhi, 359
ausnya, 362 n.
Authenticity, 78
Autumn, 335, 370
Autumnal fever, 299
avabhāsint, 317
avaccheda, 105
avacchedakatā, 124
avaccheda-vāda, 106
avacchinna, 96
Avadhāni Yajvā, 218 n.
avadhi, 508
avasthā, 44
avastu, 202, 203
avayavī, 187
avedanam, 265
aredyatva, 149, 150
avedyatve satyaparokşa-vyavahāra-
yogyatvam, 149 n.
Assemble as aside as a
Averrhoa acida, 360 n.
Aversion, 335, 515
Aviddhakarņa, 172
avidyamāna, 5
avidyā, 5, 6, 8, 9, 12, 13, 44, 48, 50, 72,
71 81 85 88-00 08 00 101
73, 84, 85, 88-90, 98, 99, 104, 105, 109-111, 117, 118, 148, 187,
105, 109-111, 117, 118, 148, 187,
204-206, 209, 221, 234, 249, 304,
414, 415, 479, 498, 499; de-
414, 415, 479, 498, 499; described as śakti by Gaudapāda, 8; in neither of its senses can be
in neither of its senses can be
material cause, 12; its meanings, 12;
nature of its causality according to
Anandabodha, also according to
Vācaspati's Brahma-tattva-samīksā,
12; not psychological ignorance, but
special technical category, 12; Pad-
mapada's interpretation regarding
the creative power of, 9; so called
because of its unintelligibility, 12
occurse of its unintenigibility, 12

avidyā-dvitaya, 100 avidvā-dvitava-sacivasva, 109 avidyā māyā mithyā-pratyaya iti, 84 avidyā-nivrtti, 85 avidvā-potency, 10 avidyā-sahita-brahmopādānam, 11 avidyā stuff, 104 avidyā-śakti, 9, 203 avidyopādāna-bheda-vādins, 90 avijjā, 498 avijñātārtha, 389 n. avinābhāva, 140, 376, 380 avisamvādi, 136 aviśesa-sama, 380 n. 4, 382 n. avisaya, 6 avitikkama, 500 avyabhicāri, 136, 381 n. avyabhicārī anubhavah, 135 avyakta, 43, 104, 263, 357, 358, 462, 463, 470, 471, 473, 476, 519, 525, 530, 533 avyakto vyakta-karmā, 263 avyapadeśātmā, 234 avyapadeśya, 265, 374, 401 Avvayātman Bhagavat Pūjyapāda, 198 avyākṛta, 23 n., 104 avyāpya-vrttitva-višesito, 158 Awaking consciousness, 19 Awareness, 13, 14, 17-20, 25-30, 31 n., 32, 63-65, 67, 68, 70, 71, 73, 117, 118, 134, 151, 197, 201, 206, 211, 212, 214; of blue, 27 Ayodhyā, 230 ayoga, 321, 405 ayuta-siddha, 191 ayuta-siddhatva, 191 ābhāsa, 252 ābhicārika, 281 Abhoga, 52, 108 ācārya, 420 Ācārya Dīkṣita, 218 Ācārya Jetāri, 49 Ācāryasūri, 171 äcchādya, 112 ādāna-gantho, 496 ādhāra, 113, 144 ādhāra-cakra, 355, 356 Ādiśūra, 126 ādityas, 292 n., 535, 549 ägama, 304 Āgama-prāmāņya, 542 n. 2, 546, 547 Agama-śāstra-vivarana, 78 āghāto, 497 āgneya, 313, 329 n., 359 āhāre paţikūla-saññā, 501

Ãhrika, 172	Ānanda-vai
ājñā-cakra, 353 n., 355, 356	Ānandānub
ākānkṣā, 496	Ānandāśrar
ākāśa, 74, 75, 104, 160, 194, 204, 235,	Ānandātma
244, 302, 312, 315, 360, 362, 367,	āntarikṣa, 3
	Ānvīksikī,
371, 374, 379 ākāśa-dhātu, 307	Āñjaneya,
Ākāśagotto, 276	āpah, 292 n
Ākāśa tan-mātra, 245	āpta, 280, 3
ākāśātmaka, 359	āptopadeša,
ākūta, 481, 482	āpya, 359
ālambana, 29, 155	ārambhakar
Alamvāyana-samhitā, 435	ārjava, 505
ālaya-vijnāna, 22, 24	Arșa-Rāmā
ālayo, 497	ārtava, 313
ālocaka, 304, 341	ārtavāļi, 29 ārthī bhāva
ālocaka-pitta, 342	
āma-garbha, 322 n.	Aranikopan
āmalaka, 294	Aryadeva, g
Amalānanda, 82	Arya-dṛḍhā
āmāśaya, 330, 331	Arya-vidyā
ānanda, 223	āsana, 454,
Ānandabodha, 50, 51, 70, 89 n., 92,	āsanga, 44
116, 117, 124, 148 n., 194, 196; his	āsatti, 497
doctrine of avidyā probably borrow-	āsayo, 497
ed from Mandana, 90; as inspirer	āsā, 496
of many later works of Vedanta, 118;	āspada, 7
his date and works, 116; his interpre-	āsrāva, 296
tation of the nature of the self, 118;	āssāsa, 459
his refutation of "difference," 116,	āstika, 420
117; his view of the nature of avidy \bar{a} ,	āstikya, 505
117 7	Aśādhara, 4
Ánandabodha Bhaṭṭārakācārya, 12, 49,	āśraya, 19,
69, 147 n.	āśraya-bhūt
Ānandabodhendra, 231	Aśresa, 300
Ānandabodhendra Bhiksu, 259 n. 2	Aśvalāyana
Anandabodhendra Sarasvatī, 231	Aśvini, 432
Ananda-dīpa, 57 n.	Aşādhavarn
Ānanda-dīpa-tīkā, 57 n.	Atanka-dipa
Ānandagiri, 43 n., 83, 103, 124, 192,	ātivāhika ša
193, 344	Atma-bodha
Anandajñāna, 1 n., 43, 49-51, 78-81,	Atma-bodha
92, 100, 116, 119, 124, 172, 189, 192, 194, 196, 205, 210, 439; con-	ātma-dharm
192, 194, 190, 205, 210, 439; con-	ātma-jānīnd
tents of his work Tarka-samgraha,	Atma-jñāno
193, 194; his criticism of Nyāya-	Atma-jñāno
Vaisesika categories, 193, 194; his	ātma-khyāti
interpretation of the indescribable-	ātma-māna,
ness of world-appearance and ajñā-	ātman, 8, 2
na, 194, 195; his teachers, 192; his	307 n. 5,
works, 193	472, 518
Ananda-lahari, 79	ātmanaḥ sa
Ānanda-laharī-tarī, 79	151
Ānanda-mandākinī, 225	ātm 1-samav
Anandapūrņa, 52, 57, 83, 87 n., 103,	197 ātma sneha
123, 126 n.	ātma-sneha, Ātmasukha,
Anandatīrtha, 442	riunasukila,

rdhana, 126 n. bhuva, 57 n. ma, 196 an, 58, 86 357 390, 392 443 373 , 373, 376, 377 ıṃ, 329 n. 5 n., 510, 544 īyaņa, 231 92 n. mā, 480 usad, 252 n. 51, 124, 164, 165 āśaya-pariprechā, 5 ī-sudhā-kara, 112 n. 455 5 n. 434 23, 85, 357 taḥ, 59 n. ı-śrauta-sūtra, 394 nan, 428 ana, 434 artra, 305 a, 79, 81 a-vyākhyāna, 81 n., 103 nopacārah, 21 n. driyāni, 310 opadeša, 78 padeša-įīkā, 193 i, 87 n. 24 21, 58, 149, 194, 238, 302, 309, 310, 405, 444, 445, amvid-rūpatva, 118, 148, vāyī viṣaya-prakāśo jñānam, , 24 , 232

560 Index

Ātmasvarūpa, 52 n. ātma-śaktyā, 330 ātma-vinigraha, 513 Atmānātma-viveka, 79 Ātmārpaņa-stava, 219 ātmāśrayatva, 17 ātmāvalokana, 442 Ātmopadeša-vidhi, 79 Ātreya, 277, 308, 310, 327, 333, 395, 424 Atreya bhikşu, 395 Ātreya-Caraka, 284, 293, 295 Atreya-Caraka school, 289 Ātreva Gautama, 394 Ātreya Punarvasu, 276 n., 357, 432 āvaraņa, 22, 73 āvaraņa-šakti, 74 āvaraņatvāt, 197 āvartta, 351 äyatana, 395, 498 āyāma, 348 n. Äyur-veda, 258 n., 273–276, 278, 280, 288, 293, 295, 320, 328 n., 354 n., 357, 365, 366, 371, 372, 383, 385, 387, 389, 390, 392, 393, 395, 396, 398, 399, 402, 422, 423, 436; an upaveda of Atharva-Veda, 274; a part of Atharva-Veda, 278; apertures of the dhamants in, 350; application of inductive methods for the discovery of cause in Caraka, 396 ff.; are vāvu, pitta and kapha only hypothetical entities? 336 ff.; as a science of life, 277; a separate Veda superior to the other Vedas, 274, 275; a vedānga, 274; brain the centre of manas in, according to Bhela, 340; brain the seat of sensations, 346; Caraka school closely associated with Atharva-Veda, 278, 279; Caraka's view of nadt, sira, dhamani and srotas as ducts, 346 ff.; categories of Caraka and Vaisesika, 369-372; causes of things according to Suśruta, 372; circulation of dhātu in growth, 322, 323; cognitive currents in, 347; constructive and destructive operations of vāyu, pitta and kapha, 339; control of body and mind, 419, 420; Drdhabala's distinction of sirās and dhamanīs, 348 n.; dhamanīs in relation to cognition according to Suśruta, 351 ff.; dhātu-mala in, 331; different functions of vāyu, pitta and kapha, 337, 338; different kinds of ducts in, 347; dispute, methods of, 377 ff.; disputes, terms of, 379 ff.; disturb-

ance of dosas according to seasons, 335; divergent views on the development of the foetus referred to in Caraka-samhitā, 307, 308; divergent views regarding vāyu as narrated in Caraka, 332 ff.; dosa as prakrti, 334; dravya, rasa, vīrya, vipāka, prabhāva, 362-366; early references to, 276, 277; epidemics caused by collective evil effects, 408 ff.; equilibrium of dhātus, 327; ethical position of Caraka, 418; fallacies, 380 ff.; foetal development in Susruta and Caraka, its different stages, 313 ff.; formation of foetus in Caraka, Suśruta and Vägbhața, 302-304; freedom of will in, 411; Ayur-veda, function of dhamanis in, according to Suśruta, 350 ff.; function of the different ducts, 347 ff.; future life, belief in, 406; good, conception of, 404, 405; good life and happy life, 422, 423; good life in Caraka, 418 ff.; good of the body and of the mind, 418, 419; heart in the Upanişads contrasted with, 344; heart the vital centre of the pranas in, 340; hetuvidyā in Caraka, 395; inference in, compared with Nyāya and Sāmkhya, 399, 400; is beginningless, 274; its relation with Atharva-Veda, 275; its theory of dhātu-sāmya and dhātuvaisamya, 319 ff.; its unbroken tradition, 274; jāti fallacy, conception of, compared with Nyāya, 380-382; yukti, misrepresentation by Santaraksita, 376; yukti pramāņa of, 375; yukti pramāņa refuted by Sāntaraksita, 375, 376; life, its definition, 367; literature, 422 ff., 435; manas and the senses, 367; manas, its theory, 366, 367; meaning of ojas in, 343 n.; medical discussions in, 378; nā it, sirā and dhamant as ducts in. 345, 346; natural place of vāyu, pitta and kapha, 331, 336; nature of pitta, 330, 331; necessity of logical tricks in, 401, 402; number of sirā, srotas and dhamani according to Suśruta, 349; number of sirās in, according to Suśruta, 352; number of snāyus in, according to Suśruta, 352; origin in the knowledge of hetu and linga. 395; origin of the world, Susruta on. 410; param and aparam ojas in, 343; perception, obstruction of, 377; perception theory of, 373, 374; period of life in, 402; possible existence of

Index 561

a pre-Caraka literature of it, 277; prajñāparādha, according to Caraka, 416, 417; pramāņas in, 373; prāņa in, 263; principles of growth, 321, 322; psychological theories of perception of Bhela in, 341; psycho-physical parallelism in, according to Caraka, 339; rasas, their number, 357-359; rasas, their origin, 359, 360; rebirth, nature of, determined by past life, 406, 407; rebirth, proofs of, 407, 408; relation of head and heart in, 343; right conduct, rules of, according to Caraka, 420 ff.; samvogipuruşa, its conception, 368; sancaya and prakopa of dosas, 335; scheme of life in Caraka, 415; seat of pranaccording to Caraka, 342; secretory character of vāyu, pitta and kapha, 338; self and the body, 368; self and knowledge, 368; self and manas, 369; self and the transcendent self (paraḥ ātmā), 368; self, in association with manas, 373; self, nature of, according to Suśruta, 410; sorrows, cause of, according to Caraka, 415, 416; soul, conception of, 372; special categories in Caraka, 389; special categories in Suśruta, 389 ff.; springs of action and right conduct in, 405; springs of action in Caraka compared with those of other systems, 411 ff.; substance and qualities, 360-362; subtle body and self in Caraka, 310; Suśruta and Sāmkhya, 372; Suśruta's distinction of śirās and dhamanīs, 348 ff.; Suśruta's views regarding brain as the seat of cognitive and conative nerves, 342; synonyms for srotas, 348 n.; the combination of the dosas in different relations, 338; the organs in relation to the ducts, 348; theory of dhātus and upa-dhātus, 322-324; theory of doșa according to Suśruta, 329, 330; theory of the formation of the body, 334; theory of karma in, compared with other theories of karma, 402-404; theory of mala-dhātus, 325 ff.; theory of prabhava, 323; three classes of inference in Caraka, 398, 399; transgressions (prajñāparādha) the obstacle to good life, in Caraka, 421, 422; transmigration determined by dharma and adharma, 411; ultimate healing in, 415; upānga of Atharva-Veda, 273; validity of the Vedas established through it, 279, 280; views of the different Upanisa-Is regarding the nādis contrasted with, 345; vāyu, pitta and kapha and their operations in the building of the body, 334 ff.; what is its nature? 276

Ayur-veda-dīpikā, 274 n. 2, 275 n., 302, 431

Ayur-veda-rasāyana, 434

Āyur-veda-sūtra, 436

āyuṣo 'nuvṛtti-pratyaya-bhūta, 333

āyuṣyāṇi, 295

Backbite, 510 Backbone, 286 Bad, 246; deeds, 411 Badness, 507 Badiša, 316, 357 barsaza, 205 n. 1 baesazya, 295 n. 1 bahu-śruta, 85 Balabhadra Bhattācārya, 225 n. Baladeva, 539 Baladeva Vidyābhūşaņa, 443 Balance, 326 bali, 278 Balkh, 357 bandha, 232, 234, 267 Bandhaka-tantra, 435 bandhanam, 497 bandho, 497 Barren woman, 234 Basic concept of mind, 24 Basic entity, 23 n. Basis, 11, 29; of truth, 11 Battle, 505 Battle-field, 522 Bādarāyaņa, 45, 260; his philosophy, 42; his philosophy is some kind of bhedābheda-vāda or immanence in transcendence, 42 bādha, 222 bādhakas tarkah, 141 bāhu, 285 n. 6, 338

bādha, 222
bādha, 222
bādha, 285 n. 6, 338
Bālabhadra, 55
Bālagopāla, 78
Bālagopāla Yogindra, 78
Bālakrsnadāsa, 78
Bālakrsnadāsa, 78
Bālabatāra-tarka, 49
Bālhika, 298 n. 4, 316
Bāṇa, 550
Bāṣpacandra, 428, 431
Beard, 325
Beginningless, 12, 195, 217, 454; avidyā, 48; contact, 158; series, 184;

time, 249 Being, 10, 36, 46, 148, 203, 234, 238, 501

•
Dainy non-buing 224
Being-non-being, 234
Benares, 429
Bengal, 126, 225 n.
Besnagar, 539
Bhadanta Yogasena, 184
Bhadra, 284
Bhadrakāpya, 316, 357
Bhadrasaunaka, 427
bhaga, 285 n. 7
bhagandara, 276
Bhagavad-bhakti-rasāyana, 225
Bhagavad-gītā, 79, 442
Bhagavad-gitā-bhāṣya, 439
Bhagavad-gītā-bhāṣya-vivaraṇa, 439
Bhagavad-gītā-bhāṣya-vyākhyā, 439
Bhagavad-gitā-gūḍhārtha-dipikā, 225
Bhagavad-gitä-hetu-nirnaya, 443
Bhagavad-gītā-lakṣābharaṇa, 443
Bhagavad-gitā-pradīpa, 443
Bhagavad-gītā-prakāśa, 443
Bhagavad-gītā-rahasya, 550, 551 n. 1
Bhagavad-gitārtha-saṃgraha, 443
Bhagavad-gitārtha-saṃgraha-ṭīkā, 439
Bhagavad-gitārtha-sāra, 443
Bhagavad-gitā-sāra, 443
Bhagavad-gitā-sāra-samgraha, 443
Bhagavad-gitā-tātparya-nirnaya, 442
Bhagavat, 539-542; and Vișnu, 539,
540
340
bhayāsthi, 285 n. 7
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7
bhayāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaişajya, 293, 295
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaisajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyana, 226
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyana, 226 bhaktir ādesyā, 278
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyana, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhāiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhaktir ādeśyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhakti-rādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaisajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyana, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhāiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyana, 226 bhakti-rādeṣyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bharthari, 171
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhāiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyana, 226 bhakti-rādeṣyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bharthari, 171
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhājajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyana, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bharttprapāca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaisajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyana, 226 bhaktir ādesyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bharttprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhakti-rāsāyama, 226 bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bharttpari, 171 Bharttprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n.
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhājajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bhartrhari, 171 Bhartrprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhāiṣājya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmāmya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bhartpari, 171 Bharttprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264 Bhatta Kallata, 263
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhājajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bhartrhari, 171 Bhartrprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyana, 226 bhaktir ādesyā, 278 Bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bhartrhari, 171 Bhartrprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264 Bhatta Kallata, 263 Bhatta Narahari, 425
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmāmya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bharttpari, 171 Bharttprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264 Bhatta Kallaţa, 263 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhattoi Diksita, 54, 55, 217, 210
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmāmya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bharttpari, 171 Bharttprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264 Bhatta Kallaţa, 263 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhattoi Diksita, 54, 55, 217, 210
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhāiṣājya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmāmya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bhartphari, 171 Bhartprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264 Bhatta Kallaţa, 263 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhattoji Dikṣita, 54, 55, 217, 219 bhautikī, 334
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhakti-rādeṣyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bharttpari, 171 Bharttprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Kallata, 263 Bhatta Narahari, 425 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhattoji Dikṣita, 54, 55, 217, 219 bhautikī, 334 bhava, 498
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhakti ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bhartrpari, 171 Bhartrprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264 Bhatta Kallata, 263 Bhatta Narahari, 425 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhattoji Dikṣita, 54, 55, 217, 219 bhautikī, 334 bhara, 498 Bhavabhūti, 111, 112
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhājajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhakti-rāsāyama, 226 bhakti-sāmāmya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bhartrhari, 171 Bhartrprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Narahari, 425 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhattoji Dikṣita, 54, 55, 217, 219 bhattikī, 334 bhata, 498 Bhavabhūti, 111, 112 Bhavadāsa, 87 n.
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmāmya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bhartphari, 171 Bhartprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264 Bhatta Kallaţa, 263 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhattoji Dlkṣita, 54, 55, 217, 219 bhautikī, 334 bhava, 498 Bhavabhūti, 111, 112 Bhavadāsa, 87 n. Bhavanātha, 126 n.
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhakti-rāsāyama, 226 bhakti-rāsāyama, 225 bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bharttpari, 171 Bharttprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Kallata, 264 Bhatta Kallata, 263 Bhatta Narahari, 425 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhattoji Dlkṣita, 54, 55, 217, 219 bhautikī, 334 bhava, 498 Bhavadāsa, 87 n. Bhavanātha, 126 n. Bhavanātāha, 126 n. Bhavanātāha, 126 n.
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bhartrhari, 171 Bhartrprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264 Bhatta Kallata, 263 Bhatta Narahari, 425 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhattoji Dikṣita, 54, 55, 217, 219 bhautiki, 334 bhara, 498 Bhavadāsa, 87 n. Bhavanātha, 126 n. Bhavanātha, 126 n. Bhavanātha, 126 n. Bhavanātha, 126 n. Bhavanāthay, 434 Bhava, 164
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhājajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhakti-rādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bhartrhari, 171 Bhartrprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264 Bhatta Kallata, 263 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhattoji Dikṣita, 54, 55, 217, 219 bhautikt, 334 bhava, 498 Bhavabhūti, 111, 112 Bhavadāsa, 87 n. Bhavanātha, 126 n. Bhavānīsahāya, 434 Bhava, 164 Bhāgavata, 251, 544-547, 552; and the
bhagāsthi, 285 n. 7 bhaiṣajya, 293, 295 bhakti, 226, 442, 439, 531, 532, 534 Bhakti-rasāyama, 226 bhaktir ādešyā, 278 Bhakti-sāmānya-nirūpaṇa, 225 bhakti-yoga, 440, 441, 451 Bhandarkar, R. G., 540, 543, 548 Bharadvāja, 229, 308, 395, 399 Bharata, 427 Bhartrhari, 171 Bhartrprapañca, 1, 36, 43, 44, 100; his philosophy of bhedābheda, 43 Bhattacarya Sivaprasad, 232 Bhattacharya, B., 20 n., 172 n. Bhatta Ānanda, 264 Bhatta Kallata, 263 Bhatta Narahari, 425 Bhatta Rāghava, 122, 123 Bhattoji Dikṣita, 54, 55, 217, 219 bhautiki, 334 bhara, 498 Bhavadāsa, 87 n. Bhavanātha, 126 n. Bhavanātha, 126 n. Bhavanātha, 126 n. Bhavanātha, 126 n. Bhavanāthay, 434 Bhava, 164

Bhāgavata-purāṇa, 220, 532, 542 Bhāgavata - purāṇa - prathama - śloka vyākhyā, 225 Bhagavatism, 550 bhājana-loka-sanniveśa-vijnapti, 23 Bhāluki-tantra, 435 Bhāmatī, 11, 25 n., 29, 36, 52, 56, 82, 106-109, 111, 171, 215 n., 220, 222 n., 269 n. 2, 427 Bhāmatī-tilaka, 52 n., 108 Bhāmatī-vilāsa, 108 Bhāmatī-vyākhyā, 108 Bhānuit Dīksita, 55 Bhānumatī, 362, 363 n., 425, 435 Bhāradvāja-samhitā, 431 Bhāradvājīyas, 540 bhāra-hāra, 62 Bhāra-hāra-sūtra, 61 Bharata legend, 552 bhāratī sthāna, 355 Bharati Tirtha, 52 n., 81, 216 n. Bhargava, 431 Bhasa, 394, 550 Bhasarvajña, 122 Bhāskara, 43 n., 193, 201, 427, 428 Bhāskara Bhatta, 435 Bhāskara Dīksita, 56 Bhāsurānanda, 79 Bhāsā-pariccheda, 263 n. 1 Bhāsya-bhāva-prakāsikā, 148 n. Bhāsya-dīpikā, 103 Bhāsya-tippana, 78 Bhāsyārtha-nyāya-mālā, 81 Bhatta-cintamani, 515 Bhaū Sastri, 11 n. bhāva, 193, 412 Bhāva-dīpikā, 443 bhāva-mātra, 19 Bhāvamiśra, 435 bhāvanā, 235, 480-482 bhāvanā-mātra-sāra, 235 Bhāvanā-viveka, 87 n. Bhāva-prakāśa, 263, 288 n. 1, 433, 435, 436 Bhāva-prakāsikā, 79 bhāva-rūpa, 105, 114 Bhāva-śuddhi, 87 n. Bhāva-tattva-prakāšikā, 98, 148 bhāvatva, 142 Bhāvaviveka, 164, 165 bhāvābhāvayor dvayor api parasparapratiksepātmakatvāt, 142 bhāvādvaita, 85 Bhāvārtha-dīpikā, 79 Bhāvivikta, 172 bheda, 92, 116, 218, 401 n. Bheda-dhikkāra, 51, 54, 55, 216, 218

Bheda-dhikkāra-satkriyā, 51, 55	Bloomfield, 2
Bheda-dhikkāra-satkriyojjvalā, 51	Blue, 13, 19,
bhedābheda, 44, 46, 201, 202; earliest	117, 176, 33
references to, 43; philosophy of	70, 71
Bhartṛprapañca, 43	Boastfulness,
bhedābheda-vāda, 42, 43	Bodha-sāra, 5
Bhela, 285 n. 6, 340, 341, 395, 432;	Bodha-vidhi, 7
his psycho-physiological theories,	bodhātmaka, 2
340 ff.	Bodhāvana. 4
Bhela-samhitā, 432	Bodhāyana-G
bhesaja, 275, 295, 370	Bodhāyana-Pi
Bhesaja-kalpa, 432, 436	Bodhendra, 70
bheşajāni, 281	Bodhi-caryāva
bhikşu, 505	Bodhisattva, 5
Bhişma, 543	Bodiless eman
bhoga-gandham perityajet, 267	Bodily, 500; e
Bhoja, 324 n., 427, 428, 435	Body, 248, 20
Bhoja-tantra, 435	340, 352, 3
bhoktr, 244	501
Bhrama-ghna, 432	Body-building
bhrājaka, 303, 330, 351	Bolling, 289, 2
bhruvor madhye, 449 n. 2	Bond, 497
bhringa-rāja, 297	Bondage, 174,
Bhusunda, 257	252, 267, 41
Bhuvah, 76	
Bhuvanasundara Sūri, 120, 123	Bone, 278, 27 channels, 34
Bhūḥ, 76	Bony material
bhūmi, 292 n.	"Bower Manu
bhūta, 261, 282, 302 n. 2, 314 n., 315,	brahma-bhūta,
	brahma-bhūya
319, 334, 371 bhūta-hitatva, 505	brahma-caitan
bhūta-prakṛti, 197	brahma-cakra,
bhūta-sūkṣmaiḥ, 311	brahma-carya,
bhūta-vidyā, 276, 425	Brahmacārin,
bhūta-vikāra, 358 n.	Brahmadatta,
	Brahmadeva,
bhūtātman, 303, 304, 415	Brahmagraha,
bhūteşu dayā, 510 Bibliotheca Indica, 344 n.	Brahmahood,
Bile, 276, 317, 325 Bilious fever, 298	477, 513 Brahma-jāla-si
Billows, 329	Brahma-know
Binding, 497	87, 100, 11
Biomotor, 261, 515; forces, 75, 259,	252
262; functions, 104	Brahman, 1, 2,
Birth, 498, 512, 519	41, 42, 45-4
	96, 99-102,
Bitter, 242, 337 n., 357, 359 bija, 235	118, 126, 1:
bijāṅkuravat, 257	190, 191, 1
Blackness, 238	215, 217, 2
Bladder, 289, 290, 336, 348, 351	240, 243-24
Blame, 512	386, 437, 4
Blind, 309	473-476, 48
Blindness, 333, 342	523, 524, 5. nature of ca
Bliss, 46, 450, 504; of mind, 513	Brahma na jag
Elissfulness, 223	Brahmanandir
Blood, 282, 298, 304, 307, 313, 317,	
318, 322-324, 329-331, 335, 347,	brahma-nāḍī, 3
349, 352, 361, 372; currents, 348	brahman-cons

76 n., 295 26, 27, 29, 30-32, 71, 30, 344; 349; awareness, 373 7 79 265 3, 251 rhya-śeşa-sūtra, 550 itṛ-medha-sūtra, 550 atāra-pañjikā, 4 n., 501 513 ncipation, 252 exercises, 419 61, 320, 325, 327, 331, 365, 387, 447, 469, 498, g, 338 299, 301 n. 2 , 181, 187, 204, 232, 246, 15, 470, 488, 497, 520 79, 317, 324, 348, 352; 48 ls, 347 uscripts," 435 , 474, 475 , 474 ıya, 77 , 353 n. 505 282, 449, 505 99 427, 428 300 37, 55, 81, 92, 450, 475, utta, 394 ledge, 43, 47, 56, 85, 15, 203, 204, 223, 227, , 8, 10, 11, 16, 28, 36-39, 48, 51, 73, 80, 84, 88, 90, 104-106, 110, 112-115, 28, 156, 163, 168, 170, 95, 196, 202, 203, 205, 221, 222, 234, 236-238, 45, 265, 271, 275, 340, 439, 440, 448, 450, 454, 85, 486, 494, 495, 514, 30, 533, 534, 538, 548; ausality, 10, 11 gat-kāraņam, 84 n, 43 n. 354, 356 ciousness, 77

Breathing forth, 259

Brahma-nirvāna, 474
Brahmano mukhe, 474
Brahma-pariṇāma-vāda, 43
Brahma-partiama-odda, 43 Brahma-prakāśikā, 49, 82 n.
Luchum and the area area
brahma-randhra, 353 n., 356
Brahma-rākṣasa, 282
Brahma-siddhi, 83, 84, 86–88, 92, 93,
95, 98, 106, 117, 110 n., 112, 178,
198, 199
Brahma-sıddhi-ţīkā, 45, 83
Brahma-siddhi-vyākhyā-ratna, 83
Brahma-stuti, 148 n.
Brahma-sūtra, 2, 5, 6, 8, 25, 28, 29, 43 n., 46, 56, 82, 92, 103, 108 n.,
42 n 46 56 82 02 103 108 n.
148 n., 189, 196, 204, 205, 218, 220,
discussion as to whether it pro-
fesses pure monism or bhedābheda,
44 ff.; does not support Sankara's
philosophy, 2
Brahma-sütra-bhāṣya, 30, 80, 81,
148 n.
Brahma-sūtra-bhāṣya-vyākhyā, 82 n.
Brahma - sūtra - bhāṣyārtha - saṃgraha,
82 n.
Brahma-sutra-dīpikā, 82
Brahma-sutra-vṛtti, 82
Brahma-sutro-panyasa, 82 n.
Brahma-tattva-prakāšikā, 82 n.
Brahma-tattva-samīkṣā, 12
Brahma-tattva-samhitoddīpanī, 45 n.
Brahma-vaivarta, 274, 432, 433 n.
Brahmavāda, 283
Brahma-Veda, 280 n.
brahma-vicara, 56
Brahma-vidyābharana, 56, 82 n.
brahma-vihāra, 460, 501
Brahmavijñāna, 54
brahma-yajña, 487
Brahma, 197, 229, 245, 274, 423, 519,
539, 546
Brahmananda Giri, 443
Brahmānanda Sarasvatī, 54, 57 n., 77 n.,
79, 81, 82, 251 n., 252 n.
Brahmānanda-vilāsa, 57 n.
Brahmananda Yati, 82
Brahmin Sutikṣṇa, 230
Brahmopanişat, 251
Brain, 340, 353 n., 356
Bravery, 502
Brahmanas, 292, 295 n. 1, 301, 420
Deshaming 222, 293 n. 1, 301, 420
Brahmins, 228, 469, 488, 498, 502, 504,
505-507, 512, 513, 539
Breast, 286
Breath, 259
Breath-control, 268, 444, 447, 448,
455
Breathing activity, 75

Breath-regulation, 256 Breeding, 505 Broken, 337, 338 Bronchi, 286 n. 2 Bronchial tubes, 289 n. 3 Bronchitis, 386 Brow, 287 Brhad-āranyaka-bhāsya-tīkā, 193 Brhad-āranyaka-bhāsya-vārttika - tīkā, Brhad-āraņyaka Upanişad, 1, 73, 78, 83, 251, 259 n. 3, 260, 288 n. 1, 344, c 345, 391, 394 Brhad-āranyakopanisad-bhāsya, 48, 78 Brhad-āranyakopanisad-bhāsya-vārttika, 78, 98 Brhad-yoga-vāsistha, 232 Brhal-laghu-panjika, 428 Brhaspati-smrti, 251 budbuda, 312 n. 3 Buddha, 22 n., 61, 276, 424, 459, 498, 520 Buddhadeva, 171 Buddhaghoşa, 164 Buddhapālita, 164, 165 Buddhas, 3 Buddhi, 75, 76, 104, 109, 179-181, 238, 239, 245, 262, 305, 341, 344, 347 n., 369, 373, 386, 387, 458, 463, 464, 484 n. 1, 524 Buddhism, 58, 117, 228, 450 n. 1, 459, 461, 495, 498, 504, 521; analysis of recognition, 65; and Vedanta on the notion of self-consciousness and recognition of identity, 33 ff.; avidyā in, and in Gitā, 498-500; criticisms of the concept of God of Nyāya and Yoga, 176-178; criticism of the Samkhya parināma doctrine, 171 ff.; development of the foetus in the Sāli-stamba-sūtra, 307; ideal life of Mahāyāna, 501; its arguments against the self as individual entity, 58 ff.; its attempt to interpret self-identity by the assumption of two separate concepts, 68; its criticism of Nyāya-Vaiśeşika categories, 187 ff.; its criticism of the Vedantic identity of self as shown in memory, 66; its doctrine of momentariness and artha-krivākāritā, 182 ff.; its idealism compared with that of Sankara and Yogavāsistha, 268 ff.; its refutation of criticism of the non-permanency of entities by heretical thinkers, 185 ff.; refutation of the soul theory of various systems of Indian thought in.

178-181; sīla in, 500, 501; status of cakşur-vaiśeşika, 341 the object in, 35; the Vātsīputrīyas cala, 332, 338 doctrine of soul, 59 ff.; Vasubandhu's Caland, W., 345 n. refutation of the soul theory of the Calcutta University, 2 n. Vātsīputrīyas in, 58 ff.; views, list Camphor, 91 of, in, 496 ff. Canals, 352 Buddhist arguments, 176, 188 Canda, 539 Buddhistic, 119, 151, 170, 395, 521, Candracandana, 434 Candragomin, 49 Buddhistic idealism, 2, 3, 22 n., 25-27, Candrakīrti, 3, 51, 164-168, 171, 307; 29, 30, 35, 205, 270, 398; its exand Dinnaga, 167 planation of the apparent duality of candramāḥ, 292 n. Candrikā, 98, 99, 192, 232 object and awareness, and the diversity of objects, 26; its theory that Canvas, 199 things simultaneous are identical, caṇḍāla, 512 26 n.; that all ideas are due to Candeśvara Varman, 78 vāsanās, 26 Capacity, 40 Buddhistic nihilism, 2, 3 Caraka, 263, 274, 275, 279, 285 n., Buddhist Legends, 248 n. 286 n., 287 n., 292, 301, 302, 304, Buddhist logicians, 166, 170 307, 312, 314-316, 322 n., 327, 329, Buddhists, 5, 9, 31, 32, 33, 65, 67, 332, 334-336, 339, 340, 342, 343, 68, 71, 96, 108, 113, 115, 118, 124, 346, 348, 349, 352, 355-357, 359 n., 125, 136, 171, 172, 186-189, 269, 360 n., 363-366, 368, 369, 371, 372, 367, 375, 399, 412, 415, 433, 435, 375, 376, 378-380, 382, 383, 384 n., 496, 499-501, 511, 514, 517, 521; 386 n., 388, 389, 393, 395-397, 399, deny any being as the ground 400, 401-409, 411, 415, 417.423, of world-appearance which is like 427-429, 431-435, 471-473, 475 dreams, 5; their quarrel with Caraka-candrikā, 431 the Vedantins regarding the nature Caraka-pañjikā, 431 of existence as causal efficiency, Caraka-parisista, 429 Caraka-samhitā, 273 n., 277, 278, 291, 32 Buddhist subjective idealists, 211 302 n., 308 n., 310 n., 313 n., 314, Buddhist writers, 51, 171 315 n., 318 n., 319 n., 323 n., 324, buddhitvākalanam, 236 326 n., 327 n., 331, 332 n., 334 n., buddhi-vaisesika, 342 335 n., 336 n., 339 n., 340, 342 n., buddhi-vibhramsa, 416 347, 348 n., 360, 361 n., 363, 366 n., buddhi-yoga, 444, 451, 452 367 n., 369, 370 n., 371, 373 n. buddhy-adhisthāna, 316 374 n., 375 n., 376 n., 377, 386 n., Bulletin de l'Académie des Sciences de 392, 393, 395, 396 n., 397-402, 411, Russie, 59 n., 61 n., 62 n. 416, 422, 426, 427, 429, 471, 472, Burlingame, E. W., 248 473 n., 477 Burning, 97, 335 n. Caraka-tattva-pradīpikā, 431 Bühler, G., 550 Caraka-tātparya-ṭīkā, 310 n., 431 Cardiac plexus, 355 caitanya, 207 Caritrasimha, 126 n. Caitraratha Forest, 357 caritta, 500 cakra, 355, 455 Cartilages, 286 n., 322 cakra-bhramivad-dhrta-śarīrah, 250 Caste, 501, 503, 505 Caste-duty, 486, 487, 502-505, 507, Cakradatta, 426, 431 Cakrapānidatta, 275, 276 n., 277, 302 508, 513, 514 n., 303 n., 304, 308, 310, 312 n., Categorical imperative, 493 313 n., 314, 315, 318, 319 n., 322 n., Category, 12, 15, 24, 146, 147, 157, 163, 170, 187, 191, 237, 366, 369, 323, 324 n., 327 n., 332 n., 335, 338 n., 339 n., 340, 343, 347, 348 n., 372, 389 Cattle, 301 349. 360 n., 361 n., 362-371, 373-Cattle-shed, 509 376, 380 n., 384 n., 395, 396, 405 n., 406 n., 415 n., 425-428, 430-435 catur-anuka, 189, 190 Cakra system, 454 Catur-mata-sāra-samgraha, 219

cauryābhāva, 505	Changing, 189; association, 63; con-
Causal, 176, 521; agent, 74, 177; ap-	tents, 15; materiality, 51; objects,
paratus, 182; complexes, 4; effi-	33; states, 33
ciency, 32, 95, 136, 137, 185; forces,	Channel, 291, 324, 344, 347
174; moment, 185; nature, 184;	Character, 15, 18, 27 n., 132, 187,
operation, 25, 41, 144, 173, 175, 186,	188
517; state, 37; substance, 172; trans-	Character-appearance, 13
	Characteristic, 4, 6, 18, 38, 162, 176,
formation, 44, 172	182, 199, 200, 228, 233, 251, 371, 512
Causality, 31 n., 148, 172, 186, 221,	
396; of Brahman, 106; of the world	Characterized appearances, 22 n., 23;
due jointly to Brahman and Māyā	entities, 22
according to Padartha-tattva, 10	Characterless entity, 271
Causation, 164, 168	Chariot, 229
Cause, 3, 11, 22 n., 38-40, 95, 144,	Charm, 280, 281, 293-299, 301; system,
145, 152, 160, 161, 166, 183, 186,	294
188, 190, 191, 195, 203, 215, 337,	Chāndogya, 78, 246, 250 n., 259 n.,
366, 372, 374, 375, 389, 396-398,	260, 276 n., 345, 346, 520
516, 517; and effect, 191; of atoms,	Chāndogya-bhāṣya-ṭīkā, 193
187; of the world, 37; unknown,	Chāndogya Upaniṣad, 43 n., 333, 344 n.,
360	345 n., 498, 521, 544, 548 n.
Cause-effect, 375, 376	Chāndogya-Upanişad-vārttika, 43 n.
Causeless, 161, 187	Chāyā-vyākhyā, 262
Cavity, 352	chedana, 358
caya, 335	chedanīya, 357
caya-kāraņa-vidveşa, 335 n.	Checks, 326 n.
cāgānussati, 459	Chemical changes, 317
Cāraṇa-vaidya, 283, 284	Chemistry, 357
Carvaka, 387, 402	Chest, 336
Central Asia, 435	chidra-malas, 326 n.
Central seat, 357	Chimerical, 131
Centres, 16	Chintamani, T. R., 196
Cerebral region, 353, 354	Cholera, 282
Cerebrum, 353 n., 356, 357	Christianity, 550
Ceremonies, 468	Church Street, 14
Cervical plexus, 353	Chyle, 317, 322-324, 328, 330, 331,
Cessation, 21, 234, 242; from work,	348, 349
507; of desires, 444; of work, 508	cic-chāyāpatti, 89 n.
cestā, 327, 472	
ceșțitam, 371	Cid-ānanda-daśaślokī, 79 Cid-ānanda-stava-rāja, 79
cetanā, 23, 36, 302, 316, 360 n., 368,	cid-ātman, 112
471, 477, 500 setani dhātu 472	cikitsā, 278, 288 n., 392, 430
cetanā-dhātu, 472	Cikitsā-darśana, 432
cetanā-pratisandhātā, 366	Cikitsā-kaumudī, 432
cetanāvantaḥ, 410	Cikitsā-sāra-tantra, 432
cetas, 254, 366	Cikitsā-sthāna, 429
cetasika, 500	Cikitsā-tattva-vijnāna, 432
ceto-vimutti, 460	cikitsitam, 276
cetya-samyoga-cetanāt, 236	cikīrṣā, 515
cetyatva, 236	cın-mātra-sambandhinī, 197
Ceylonese, 164	cin-mātrāśrita-visayam ajñānam, 85
chadmanā, 478	Cinnabomma, 219
chala, 385, 386 n., 401	cintya, 343
Chandah-prasasti, 126	cira-jāgara, 267
Chandas, 24, 275 n., 496, 547	cirāj-jāgrat-sthita, 266
Change, 45	Circular bone, 284 n. 4
Changeable, 16, 221	Circulation, 323
Changeful, 241	Circulatory system, 323
Changeless, 11, 13, 240; being, 51	Circumstance, 233

cit, 89, 89 n., 235, 243, 244, 271 citra-bhitti, 104 Citra-mīmāmsā, 220 citrinī, 353, 356 citrinī nādī, 354, 356 Citsukha, 49-51, 53, 58, 83, 86, 87 n., 92, 116, 119, 124, 138, 147, 148, 149 n., 150 n., 152, 154, 156, 157, 160-163, 171, 172, 192, 194, 198, 217, 218, 222 n.; awareness of awareness impossible, 150, 151; his analysis of illusion, 155; his criticism of the atomic theory, 157, 158; his criticism of "cause" (kāraņa), 160 ff.; his criticism of Nyāya categories, 156; his date and works, 148; his definition of self-revealing consciousness, 148-150; his quarrel with Prabhākara on the subject of illusion, 154 ff.; his refutation of the category of time, 156, 157; his refutation of class-concepts (jāti), 160; his refutation of drawa, 161, 162; his refutation of numbers, 158; his refutation of qualities (guna), 162, 163; his refutation of space, 157; his treatment of the falsehood of the world-appearance, 152, 153; his treatment of nescience (ajñāna), 153; main content of his Tattvapradipikā, 148 n.; nature of self, 151, Citsukha Ācārya, his refutation of the Nyāya definition of perception, 138 cit-svarūpāh, 411 citta, 75, 234, 238, 239, 243, 250, 256, 258, 265, 292, 305, 306, 341 citta-camatkāra, 236 citta-vimukti, 265 citta-vrtti, 264 cittinah, 292 n. 5 Cipudru, 200 n. 2 Class-concept, 40, 108, 131, 132, 139, 148, 159, 162, 163, 187, 188, 194, 37 I Class-duties, 486 Class-nature, 188, 189 Clavicle, 286 n. 2 Cleanliness, 505 Clinging, 497 "Closed," Cloth, 189 Clouds, 205 Coarse, 337 n. Coccyx, 285 n., 287 n. Cognition, 18-21, 23, 70, 136, 149, 153, 180, 188, 214, 239, 243, 274 Cognitional character, 29

Cognitional existence, 58 Cognitive activities, 256 Cognitive functions, 256 Cognitive nerves, 342 Cognitive operation, 211 Cognitive process, 206 Cognitive relation, 213 Cognitive senses, 76, 500 Cognitive states, 151, 250, 251 Cognized object, 10, 22 Cognizer, 19, 22, 23, 351 Cognizing, 15; activity, 104, 149; faculty, 180 Coherence, 15 Cola country, 148 n. Cold, 242, 301, 320, 321, 332, 337 n., 357, 358, 360, 361, 362 n., 365, 408, 419, 500, 510, 511 Colic, 346; pain, 298 Collar bone, 286 n., 287 Collocating, 138, 160; conditions, 161 Collocation, 168, 174, 187, 516; of causes, 161, 472, 473; of things, 161 Collyrium, 238 Colour, 24, 60, 181, 186, 188, 191, 194, 199, 289, 327, 330, 355, 360, 367, 377; cognition, 180; particles, 25 n. Colouredness, 374 Colouring pitta, 326 n. Combination, 189, 360 Combinations of atoms, 20 Command, 48 Commentary, 27 n., 29, 38, 43, 52, 54, 99, 102, 103, 107, 108, 196, 219, 232, 354 n. Commentator, 51, 164 Common duty, 505-507 Common good, 506 Common self, 181 Commonsense, 3; view, 2, 508 Common well-being, 506 Communion, 451, 457-459, 466, 467, 470, 490, 492, 501, 503, 504, 530 Community, 506 Compact, 337 n. Compassion, 511 Compendium, 214 Compilation, 49 Compilers, 53 Complex, 4, 25, 65, 215; quality, 17, 18 Compounding, 370 Conative senses, 75 Conceit, 373, 409, 510 Conceive, 254

Concentration, 460, 500, 504

300
Concept, 234; of contact, 158
Conception, 236, 247, 524
Conception of Buddhist Nirvana, The,
164 n 166 n
164 n., 166 n. Concepts of duality, 193
Conceptual, 236; activity, 236; crea-
tion, 237, 243, 244
Conch-shell, 6, 101, 114, 134-137,
155
Conclusion, 163, 173, 373, 376-378,
383, 387
Concomitance, 19, 121, 140, 141, 194,
374, 388 n., 397
Concrete, 25, 235 n.; duration, 212;
individual, 239; state, 236
Conditional, 142
Conditionality of relations, 142
Conditioning knowledge, 18
Conditions, 16, 182, 184
Conduct, 500, 503
Conformations, 498
Congenital vāta, 337
Conglomeration, 164, 166
Conjeeveram, 98
Conjunction, 40
Connection, 355
Connotation, 475
Conscious, 15, 371; centre, 16; moments, 62; states, 13, 187
Consciousness, 14, 18, 28, 30, 33, 35,
62-65, 69, 71, 72, 148, 149, 153,
164, 199, 201, 205-207, 209, 210,
213, 215, 222, 234, 271, 310, 314,
318, 360, 366, 368, 369, 387, 406,
318, 360, 366, 368, 369, 387, 406, 471, 477, 498, 532; of relationing,
33; pure, 22
Consequence, 183
Conservation of energy, 517
Constant, 63
Constituent, 17, 18, 74, 322, 371, 525;
elements, 59, 304
Constitution, 334
Constitutional, 335
Constitutive stuff, 48
Constructive, 331; instincts, 23; prin-
ciples, 333; tendencies, 24 Consumption, 298, 386
Contact, 190, 194, 360, 373, 374, 381 n.;
of atoms, 190
Contact-points, 188
Container, 22, 144
Contemporary, 50
Contentless, 182
Contentment, 490, 492, 501, 503
Content of recognition, 66
Contiguity, 367
Continuity, 15, 21; of consciousness,
180

Continuous, 241; appearance, 25 n.; perception, 213 Contradiction, 110, 137, 147 Contrary, 17 Control, 256, 419; of anger, 505, 510; of mind, 505, 510 Controller, 215 Controversy, 125 Cooking, 97, 188, 331 Co-operant, 184 Co-operation, 11, 326 Cordier, Dr P., 425 n., 427, 429 Co-religionists, 501 Coronation ceremony, 282 Corporeal, 512 Correspondence, 134 Cosmic universe, 524 Cosmic world, 526 Costal cartilages, 286 n. 1 Cotyloid cavity, 287 n. Cough, 296, 298, 300 n. Country, 370 Courage, 328, 333 Course, 519 Covetous, 498, 498 n. Covetousness, 497, 498 Cow, 159, 420, 509, 512 Cranial bones, 287 n. Cranium, 287 Craving, 504 Creation, 72, 178, 234, 235, 242 Creationism, 1 Creative power, 74 Creative thought movement, 235 n. Creator, 2, 39, 41, 176, 177 Creed, 501 Critical thinking, 264 Criticism, 35, 146, 156, 165, 166, 171, 192, 204, 388; of qualities, 194 Cruelty, 373, 409, 510 Cupidity, 497 Curatives, 280 Curator, 205 Curd, 40 Cures, 280 Currents of sensation, 340 Cursing, 282 Customary morality, 504, 523 Customs, 127, 489, 503 Cyavana, 432 Cycle, 526 dahana, 333 daharādhikaraņa, 205 n. daiva, 253-255, 310, 407, 408, 472,

daiva yajña, 487 daivī sampat, 510

	,
dakşiṇā, 292, 544	507-511, 516, 519, 520, 522, 520;
dakşināyana, 519	bonds of, 268; for life, 405
dama, 495, 505	Desirelessness, 228, 490
Damsel, 229	Desisting, 500
Dancing, 498 n.	Destiny, 253, 354, 360, 370, 404, 526
dantolūkhala, 287 n. 4	Destroyed cause, 186 n.
darśana, 455	Destructibility, 386 n.
dasa-kusala-kamma, 498	Destructible, 197, 512
Dasgupta, S. N., 17, 449 n. 1, 501 n.	Destruction, 182, 235, 238; of the
Daśarathapriya, 99	atoms, 191; of citta, 268; of mind,
Daśa-śloki-mahā-vidyā-sūtra, 120	448
Daśa-śloki, 79	Destructive, 331; play, 178
Data of experience, 157	deśa, 358, 38)
Dattātreya, 443	deśa-kāla-kriyā-dravyaiḥ, 240
Datum of perception, 212	Detached, 452
Days, 156	Detachment, 475
dākṣya, 505 n.	Determinant of causality, 186
dāna, 505 n., 544	Determinate, 23; perception, 97;
Dārila, 284, 293	thought, 25
Dārila Bhaţţa, 275	Determination, 23 n., 55, 75, 186
dāruņa, 332 n.	Determine, 23
	deva, 314
Death, 248, 299, 336, 498, 501, 512, 523, 526	Devadatta, 62, 75
Deathless, 518, 526	Devagiri, 123
Debate, 377	Devakī, 544
Decay, 498	Devaki-putra, 544
Deccan, Early History of the, 540	Devarāma Bhatta, 81
n, I	devatā, 43
Decisions, 24, 373, 384	deva-yāna, 519, 521
Decoction, 390 n.	Devādarśa, 283
Deeds, 242, 248	Devendra, 55
Deep sleep, 232	Devesvara, 111
Defeat, 512	Devotee, 532
Defects, 38, 214	Devotion, 439 -441, 503, 523, 531, 534,
Deficiency, 319, 326, 335	547; to Vedic gods, 505
Definition, 127, 136, 143, 145, 159-	dhairya, 264, 505
161, 192; of cause, 186; of perception,	dhamani(i), 289, 290, 343, 344 n., 346-
137	350, 351 n., 352, 355; its pre-Cara-
deha, 446 n. 3	kian senses discussed, 345, 346
deha-sambhava-hetavalı, 330	Dhamma-pada, 248, 489, 490, 493
Dejection, 230	dhanaiṣaṇā, 405
Delirium, 298, 333	Dhanañjaya, 75
Deliverance, 267	dhanur-ākāre, 354
Delivery, 290 n. 3	Dhanur-veda, 274
Delusion, 170, 245, 499, 500, 510	Dhanvantari, 316, 424, 425, 432, 433
Demerit, 249, 409, 416	dharma, 21, 22 n., 131, 199, 327, 410-
Demons, 230, 295, 300, 468, 478,	412, 416, 419, 479, 483, 484, 486-
535	488, 494, 503, 525, 538
Denotation of words, 187	Dharma-dharmi-viniścaya, 49
Denunciation, 512	dharma-kāya, 22 n.
Denutritive, 357, 358	Dharmakīrti, 137, 171
Dependence, 10, 529	dharma-kşetra, 502
Dependent on being, 36	dharma-megha, 251
Desirable, 512	Dharma-mīmāṃsā-paribhāṣā, 220
Desire, 24, 91, 178, 179, 252, 264,	Dharmarāja Ādhvarīndra, 52 n., 53, 54,
324, 360, 370, 373, 375, 409, 411,	89 n., 105, 198 n., 208, 212, 214, 217
412, 422, 442, 450, 451, 453, 477,	dharma-saṃketa, 185
484, 488, 495, 498, 501, 503, 504,	dharma-śāstra, 547

dhātu, 22 n., 276, 304, 307, 317, 319, 320, 324, 329, 331–333, 343, 347, 349, 389 dhātu-mala, 331, 332 dhātu-rasa, 323 n. dhātu-vaja-rasa, 322 dhātu-vajāmyan, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-vajāmyan, 315 dhī, 328, 505 dhī-dhrti-smrti-vibhrasta, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrti-vibhramša, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhāma-bindu, 455 dhyāna-bindu, 455 dhyāna-bindu, 455 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nāgārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 02; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 18 Difference - of - awareness - from - theobject, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
Dharmatrāta, 171 dharma-vicāra, 56 Dharmaya Dikṣita, 220 dharmya, 514 dhānya, 317 dhāraṇa, 328, 342, 454, 455 dhārin, 343, 368 n. dhātu- 22 n., 276, 304, 307, 317, 319, 320, 324-329, 331-333, 343, 347, 349, 389 dhātu-sāmyam, 327 n. dhātu-vaiṣamya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-vaiṣamya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-vaiṣamya, 315 dhi, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhrti-yibhramṣa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhruwo, 22 n. dhrti-yibhramṣa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhimm, 497 dhyāma-bindu, 455 dhyāma-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119, Nā- gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of San- kara, 189; Śrīharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 tf. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 02, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130, 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - and- object, 18 Difference - between - awareness - and- object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - the- object, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	dharma éraddhā ror	Digits, 285
dharma-vicāra, 56 Dharmaya Dikṣita, 220 dharmya, 514 dhāraṇa, 328, 342, 454, 455 dhārin, 343, 368 n. dhātu, 22 n., 276, 304, 307, 317, 319, 320, 324-329, 331-333, 343, 347, 349, 389 dhātu-mala, 331, 332 dhātu-raia, 322 dhātu-sasa, 323 n. dhātu-vaiṣamyan, 327 n. dhātu-vaiṣamyan, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-vyūhana, 315 dhi, 328, 595 dhrit-vibhramsa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrit-vibhramsa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma, 497 dhyāna-bindu, 455 dhibetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 266, 299, 300 n. 2 Dict, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiate, 143 Differentiate, 143 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestive fire, 333		
Dharmaya Dikṣita, 220 dharmya, 514 dhānya, 317 dhānya, 317 dhārin, 343, 368 n. dhātu, 22 n., 276, 304, 307, 317, 319, 320, 324-329, 331-333, 343, 347, 340, 389 dhātu-rāsa, 323 n. dhātu-rāsanya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 320, 339 dhātu-waiṣamya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 320, 339 dhātu-waiṣamya, 315 dhi, 328, 505 dhi-dhṛti-smṛti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhruva, 22 n. dhrti, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhṛti-vibhramsa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma-yōqa, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā- gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of San- kara, 189; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 tf. Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - and- object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - the- object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
dharmya, 514 dhāraṇa, 328, 342, 454, 455 dhārin, 343, 368 n. dhātu, 22 n., 276, 304, 307, 317, 319, 320, 324-329, 331-333, 343, 347, 349, 389 dhātu-mala, 331, 332 dhātu-raṣa, 323 n. dhātu-vajāmyan, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-vajāmyan, 315 dhī, 328, 505 dhī-dhrti-smrti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrīta, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhrīti-vibhraṃṣa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūmo, 497 dhyāna-bindu, 455 dhyāna-bindu, 455 dhyāna-bindu, 455 Disdectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā- gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of San- kara, 189; Srtharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 02; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference - of - awareness - and- object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - the- object, 18 Difference - of - awareness - from - the- object, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
dhānya, 317 dhāraṇa, 328, 342, 454, 455 dhātin, 343, 368 n. dhātu, 22 n., 276, 304, 307, 317, 319, 320, 324-329, 331-333, 343, 347, 349, 389 dhātu-rasa, 323 n. dhātu-rasa, 322 dhātu-vaiṣamya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-vyūhana, 315 dhī, 328, 505 dhī-dhrti-smṛti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrtuva, 22 n. dhrtuva, 22 n. dhrimo, 497 dhyāna-bindu, 455 dhyāna-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 180; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 tf. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
dhāraṇa, 328, 342, 454, 455 dhārin, 343, 368 n. dhātu, 22 n., 276, 304, 307, 317, 319, 320, 324-329, 331-333, 343, 347, 349, 389 dhātu-mala, 331, 332 dhātu-rapa-rasa, 322 dhātu-rapa-rasa, 322 dhātu-sāmyam, 327 n. dhātu-vaiṣamya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-wyiḥana, 315 dhī, 328, 505 dhī-dhṛti-smṛti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrītu, 22 n. dhrīti-vibhraṃsa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma-pā, 420 dhima-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srtharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 df. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference-between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiate, 143 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
dhātu, 22 n., 276, 304, 307, 317, 319, 320, 324, 329, 331–333, 343, 347, 349, 389 dhātu-mala, 331, 332 dhātu-rasa, 323 n. dhātu-rapa-rasa, 322 dhātu-sāmyam, 327 n. dhātu-vaisamya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-wyihana, 315 dhīt, 328, 505 dhīt-dhṛti-smṛti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrīto, 22 n. dhrīti-vibhraṃsa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhima-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārijuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srtharṣa and Nāgārijuna, 163 df. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference-between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiate, 143 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	dhanya, 317	
dhātu, 22 n., 276, 304, 307, 317, 319, 320, 324, 329, 331–333, 343, 347, 349, 389 dhātu-mala, 331, 332 dhātu-rasa, 323 n. dhātu-rapa-rasa, 322 dhātu-sāmyam, 327 n. dhātu-vaisamya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-wyihana, 315 dhīt, 328, 505 dhīt-dhṛti-smṛti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrīto, 22 n. dhrīti-vibhraṃsa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhima-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārijuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srtharṣa and Nāgārijuna, 163 df. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference-between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiate, 143 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	dhāraṇa, 328, 342, 454, 455	
320, 324-329, 331-333, 343, 347, 349, 389 dhātu-mala, 331, 332 dhātu-rasa, 322 n. dhātu-rasamyam, 327 n. dhātu-vaisamyam, 327 n. dhātu-vyūhana, 315 dhī-dhṛti-smṛti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrit-vibhraṃsa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūmo, 497 dhyāna-bindu, 455 dhyāna-boindu, 455 dhyāna-boindu, 455 dhyāna-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 180; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 if. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diatrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	dhārin, 343, 368 n.	Direct percep
320, 324–329, 331–333, 343, 347, 349, 389, 389, 381, 332 dhātu-mala, 331, 332 dhātu-rasa, 323 n. dhātu-raṣa, 323 n. dhātu-vaṣamya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhā-dhṛti-smṛti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 causes, 32 to Sāmkh, dirura, 22 n. dhṛti, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhṛti-vibhraṃṣa, 416 dhāma-pā, 420 dhāma, 497 dhyāna, 256, 342, 454, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 diyāna-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nāgārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163; ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Dieternoe, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130, 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	dhātu, 22 n., 276, 304, 307, 317, 319,	Disciplinary n
349, 389 Discoveries, Discriminatination distribution distribution, 331, 332 Discriminatination distribution distribution, 331, 332 Discriminatination distribution distribution, 332, 339 Discriminatination discrimination distribution, 327, 395 Discussion, Disease, 28c, 38c, 329, 339 Discussion, Disease, 28c, 36c, 329, 339 Discussion, Disease, 28c, 36c, 37c, 37c, 37c, 37c, 37c, 37c, 37c, 37		Discipline, 51
dhātu-mala, 331, 332 dhātu-rasa, 323 n. dhātu-rūpa-rasa, 322 dhātu-sāmyam, 327 n. dhātu-vaiṣamya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-vyūḥama, 315 dhī, 328, 505 dhī-dhṛti-smṛti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrtu, 22 n. dhrtu, 22 n. dhrti-vibhraṃsa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūmo, 497 dhyāna-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā- gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of San- kara, 189; Śrtharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 12; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-and- object, 17 Difference-between-awareness-and- object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 337, 339, 390, 413, 4 329, 330 doga-prakṛtil dyābhāva, 2		
dhātu-rasa, 323 n. dhātu-rapa-rasa, 322 dhātu-sainyam, 327 n. dhātu-vaisamyan, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-vyishana, 315 dhī, 328, 505 dhī-dhrti-smrti-vibhrasta, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrti, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhrti-vibhramsa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhima, 497 dhyāna, 256, 342, 454, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 dhyāna-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā- gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of San- kara, 189; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between - awareness - and- object, 17 Difference-between - awareness - and- object, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
dhātu-rūpa-rasa, 322 dhātu-saimyam, 327 n. dhātu-vaisamya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-vyūhana, 315 dhī, 328, 505 dhrīt-vibhrasta, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrīt-vibhramsa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūmo, 497 dhyāna, 256, 342, 454, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Dhiabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā-gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srlharsa and Nāgārjuna, 163 if. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diatrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - andolpject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andolpject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andolpject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andolpject, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 328, 328, 328, 36, 328, 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases of 10 Disgust, 501 Disgustion, Disgustion, 36 n., 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 26 n., 336 n. 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 26 n., 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 26 n., 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 26 n., 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 26 n., 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 26 n., 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 26 n., 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 26 n., 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 26 n., 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 26 n., 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 26 n., 376, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 270, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 270, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 270, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases, 270, 377, as modific causes, 32 to Sāṃkhy Disgases,		
dhātu-sāmyam, 327 n. dhātu-vaisamya, 319, 320, 326, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-vyihana, 315 dhī, 328, 505 dhī-dhṛti-smṛti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhṛti, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhimo, 497 dhyāna-bindu, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Sriharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
dhātu-vaiṣamya, 319, 320, 328, 328, 329, 339 dhātu-vaiṣamya, 315 dhū, 328, 505 dhī-dhṛti-smṛti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhruv, 22 n. dhṛti, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhṛti-vibhraṃṣa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūmo, 407 dhyāna, 256, 342, 454, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diapetes, 282, 296 Diapetes, 18, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā- gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of San- kara, 189; Srtharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-and- object, 18 Difference-between-awareness-and- object, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
329, 339 dhatati-vyihana, 315 dhi, 328, 505 dhi-dhrti-smrti-vibhrasta, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrti, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhrti-vibhramsa, 416 dhima-pā, 420 dhima, 256, 342, 454, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 dhyāna-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā- gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sań- kara, 189; Sriharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130, 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-and- object, 17 Difference-between-awareness-and- object, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
dhātu-vyūhana, 315 dhī, 328, 505 dhīl, 328, 505 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhruva, Nr, 400 n. dhruva, 22 n. dhrit-vibhransa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūmo, 497 dhyāna-bindu, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 180; Srlharsa and Nāgārjuna, 163 if. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diatrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	dhātu-vaişamya, 319, 320, 326, 328,	
dhī, 328, 505 dhī-dhṛti-smṛti-vibhraṣṭa, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhṛti, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhṛti-vibhraṇṣa, 416 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma-pā, 420 dhima-bindu, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 df. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-andobject, 17 Difference-between-awareness-andobject, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	329, 339	n., 336 n.,
dlit, 328, 505 dlit-dhrti-smrti-vibhrasta, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhrti, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhimo, 497 dhimo, 497 dhyāna-bindu, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Dhiabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārijuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Sriharsa and Nāgārijuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	dhātu-vyūhana, 315	376, 377, 3
dhi-dhyti-smyti-vibhrasta, 416 Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dhruva, 22 n. dhyti, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhyti-vibhramsa, 416 dhima-pā, 420 dhima-pā, 420 dhima-bindu, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Sriharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-and-object, 17 Difference-between-awareness-and-object, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	dhī, 328, 505	as modifica
Dhruva, Mr, 400 n. dlriva, 22 n. dhrii, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhrii-vibhramsa, 416 dhimo, 497 dhyāna, 256, 342, 454, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 dhyāna-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā- gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of San- kara, 189; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 tf. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Diiflerence, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130, 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Diiflerence-between-awareness-and- object, 17 Diiflerence-between-awareness-and- object, 18 Difflerentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	dhī-dhrti-smrti-vibhrasta, 416	causes, 320
dhruvo, 22 n. dhruvo, 22 n. dhrui, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhriti, 273, 420 Disinclination Disintegration Disylanction, Disliking, 31 Dispute, 377 Dissection, 301 Dissection, 302 Dissection, 30		
dhṛti, 373, 470, 505 n., 510 dhṛti-vibhramsa, 416 dhāma-pā, 420 dhāma-pā, 420 dhāma-pā, 427 dhyāna-sindu, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā- gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of San- kara, 189; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-and- object, 17 Difference-between-awareness-and- object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma-pā, 420 dhyāna, 256, 342, 454, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srtharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-andobject, 17 Difference-between-awareness-andobject, 18 Difference-between-awareness-andobject, 18 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
dhūma-pā, 420 dhūma, 497 dhyūna, 256, 342, 454, 455 Dhyūna-bindu, 455 Dhyūna-bindu, 455 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā-gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 if. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between - awareness - and object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - the object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	theti nihhramia 416	Disjust, 301
dhimo, 497 dhyāna, 256, 342, 454, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 if. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diatrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
dhyāna, 256, 342, 454, 455 Dhyāna-bindu, 455 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Sriharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-and-object, 17 Difference-between-awareness-and-object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
Dhyāna-bindu, 455 dhyāna-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā- gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of San- kara, 189; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between - awareness - and- object, 17 Difference-between - awareness - and- object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303 Digestive fire, 333		Disjunction,
dlyāna-yoga, 448, 458 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā- gārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of San- kara, 189; Srlharṣa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet. 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between - awareness - and object, 17 Difference-of -awareness - from - the- object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303 Dissociation Dissociation 526; of ig Distance, 36 Distance, 36 Distinction, Distinction, Distinction, Diversity, 2 of content Divinc equi Divodāsa, 44 Didhāti, 126 dikṣā, 292 n. Dāpikā, 78 Doetrine, 22 525 Doing good Dominant, 3 Dormant, 16 doṣa, 300, 312 doṣa, 300, 313 doṣa-prakṛtik doṣābhāva, 2		Disliking, 35
Diabetes, 282, 296 Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 180; Sriharsa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diatrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
Diagnosis, 301 Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagārjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srtharşa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-andobject, 17 Difference-between-awareness-andobject, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 526; of ig Distance, 36 Distance,	dhyāna-yoga, 448, 458	Dissection, 28
Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagazinan and Vedānta, 163; of Sanh kara, 189; Srlharşa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diiterence, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130, 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	Diabetes, 282, 296	Dissociation,
Dialectic, 118, 127, 170, 171, 225 n.; criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagazinan and Vedānta, 163; of Sanh kara, 189; Srlharşa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diiterence, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130, 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 18 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	Diagnosis, 301	Dissolution,
criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nagarjuna and Vedānta, 163; of Sankara, 189; Srlharsa and Nāgārjuna, 163 if. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet. 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - and object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - the object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		526; of ign
gărjuna and Vedānta, 163; of San- kara, 189; Srlharşa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - and- object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - the- object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	criticism, 156; methods, 119; Nā-	
kara, 189; Srlharşa and Nāgārjuna, 163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-andobject, 17 Difference-between-awareness-andobject, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	gariuna and Vedanta, 163: of San-	Distasteful, 3
163 ff. Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - theobject, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	kara, 180: Sribarsa and Nāgāriuna	
Dialectical, 51, 72, 146; arguments, 218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet. 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - and object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - theologict, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		Distinction t
218; criticism, 92; subtleties, 192; thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet. 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between - awareness - and object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - theologict, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		Disturbance
thought, 147 Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-andobject, 17 Difference-of-awareness-from-theobject, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333	1) arcticien or subtleties tor:	Diverse 267
Diarrhoea, 206, 299, 300 n. 2 Diet, 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95–97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between - awareness - and-object, 17 Difference-of-awareness - from - theobject, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361–363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
Diet. 384 Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - and object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - theobject, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
Difference, 14, 17, 18, 26 n., 27, 30, 63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between-awareness-andobject, 17 Difference-of-awareness-from-theobject, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
63, 65, 76, 88, 92, 95-97, 116, 117, 127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between - awareness - andobject, 17 Difference-of - awareness - from - theobject, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200, 202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference-between - awareness - and-object, 17 Difference-of - awareness - from - the-object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		
202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14; of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - and object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - the object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333 Dīgestive fire, 333		
of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - and- object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - the- object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333 Doctrine, 22 525 Dogs, 291, 5 Dogs, 291, 5 Dogs, 291, 5 Dos dosa, 30, 30 Dominant, 3 370, 330 dosa, 300, 310 320, 330 dosa-prakṛtil doṣābhāva, 2	127, 130 132, 148, 161, 199, 200,	dīkṣā, 292 n.
of characters, 370; of identity, 370 Difference - between - awareness - and- object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - the- object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333 Doctrine, 22 525 Dogs, 291, 5 Dogs, 291, 5 Dogs, 291, 5 Dos dosa, 30, 30 Dominant, 3 370, 330 dosa, 300, 310 320, 330 dosa-prakṛtil doṣābhāva, 2	202, 209, 210, 370; numerical, 14;	Dīpikā, 78
Difference - between - awareness - and object, 17 Difference - of - awareness - from - the object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333		Doctrine, 227
object, 17 Difference-of-awareness-from-the- object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333 Dogs, 291, 5 Dogs, 2	Difference - between - awareness - and -	
Difference-of-awareness-from-the-object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333 Digestive fire, 333 Dominant, 3 Dormant, 16 doça, 303, 305, 303, 303, 303, 303, 303, 303	object, 17	
object, 18 Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333 Dominant, 3 Dormant, 16 dosa, 300, 310 dosa, 300 dosa,		
Different, 28, 64, 358, 359; classes, 161; effects, 161; measure, 190 Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361-363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestive fire, 333		
161; effects, 161; measure, 190 dosa, 300, 310 Differentiate, 143 337, 339, Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 dosa-prakṛtiḥ Digestive fire, 333 dosā-prakṛtiḥ dosābhāva, 2		
Differentiate, 143 Differentiation, 23 n. Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333 337, 339, 390, 413, 4 329, 330 doga-prakṛtiḥ doṣābhāva, 2	1611 offects 1611 measure 102	
Differentiation, 23 n. 390, 413, 4 Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333 390, 413, 4 329, 330 dosa-prakṛtiḥ dosābhāva, 2		
Digestion, 303, 322, 323 n., 336, 361- 363, 365 n., 370 Digestive fire, 333 329, 330 dosa-prakṛtiḥ dosābhāva, 2	****	
363, 365 n., 370 doṣa-prakṛtiḥ Digestive fire, 333 doṣābhāva, 2		
Digestive fire, 333 dosābhāva, 2		329, 330
Digestive function, 328 Doubt, 141,		dosābhāva, 21
	Digestive function, 328	Doubt, 141, 1

n. n., 27 n., 30, 35, 167, 171 ; akirti, 167 ion, 32 otion, 374 measure, 501 280 n, 23, 24, 250 e knowledge, 250, 251, 19, 129, 377, 378, 392 301, 320, 327-332, 335 337, 359, 366, 370, 372, 384, 385, 390, 393, 397; ations of dosas, 329; its off.; its theory according a and Nyāya, 328, 329 n. he legs, 299 n, 244, 251, 504 g, 191, 265, 306 360 379 88 248, 268, 523 37, 109, 177, 191, 194, orance, 85 57 ties, 31 14, 15, 401 n. 335 , 38, 39, 195, 357, 367; , 14 ment, 510 4, 432, 433 n. I , 375, 501, 517, 520, 521, o living beings, 505 , 325, 327, 328, 332, 334-341, 362, 366, 372, 383, 97; according to Suśruta, 334 n. 48, 377, 383, 500

The state of the s	7 7 7 7 7
Dramidācārya, 43	duḥkham, 22 n.
drastr, 88	duḥkhābhāve, 92 n.
drava, 359 n.	Dullness, 303, 360, 373, 408
dravya, 187, 193, 359–363, 365, 369,	duradhigamatā, 261
371, 373	Duration, 156
Dravya-guṇa-saṃgraha, 364	Durgācārya, 535
dravya-prabhāva, 359, 363	Durgăgupta, 432
dravya-yajña, 487	durniścaya, 255
dravyātmakatā guņasya, 191	Durṇāmā, 300
Dream appearances, 203	Duryodhana, King, 502
Dream conceptions, 240	Dusty, 408 Dutt, Dr U. C., 429
Dream construction, 21, 240	
Dream experience, 6, 8, 28, 241, 266	Duty, 373, 438, 439, 442, 444, 445,
Dream ideas, 26	457, 480, 484, 501, 505-508, 520-
Dream knowledge, 310, 355	, 523
Dreamless sleep, 53, 101, 154, 215	dūṣya, 328
Dream life, 80	Dvaidha-nirnaya-tantra, 432
Dream objects, 36	Dvaita, 57 n.
Dream perceptions, 80	dvaitādvaita, 44
Dream persons, 266	Dvayāvin, 300
Dream state, 195, 240	dvādašāṅguli, 257
Dreams, 5, 19-21, 25, 26, 194, 269,	Dvāpara age, 410
270, 283	dvāra, 47, 112
Drink, 330, 501	Dvārakā monastery, 192
droha, 413	dveşa, 267, 370, 413, 414
Dropsy, 282	Dvivrantya, 430
Drought, 370	dvy-aṇuka, 189, 190, 193
Drugs, 277	Dyads, 189, 306
	dyauh, 292 n.
Drug system, 294	Dying, 182 n.
Drupada, 541	
Dry, 332, 357, 361, 408; country, 370	Dynamical, 234, 238
Dryness, 358, 360, 362 n., 365	Dynamic principle, 334
Drdhabala, 348 n., 359, 426, 429-431,	Dalhana, 273, 277, 279, 286 n. 4, 302
433, 434	n. 2, 303, 313 n. 2., 314 n. 2, 329,
Drdhabala samskāra, 434	330, 336 n., 349, 350, 351 n., 372,
dṛḍha-bhāvanā, 256	411, 424-428, 435
Dṛg-dṛśya-prakaraṇa, 79	
dṛk, 152, 199	Ear, 325, 326 n.
drk and drśya, 200	Earth, 74, 187, 302, 359, 360, 362,
dṛk-sthiti, 454	367, 501
dršah adršyatvāt, 199	Earthquake, 283
drśya, 88, 152, 199, 232	Earthy, 357, 359
drśyamāna, 369	Eating, 338, 501
dṛṣṭānta, 194, 375, 378, 381 n., 383	Eclipses, 283
dṛṣṭānta-sama, 381 n.	Ecstatic joy, 450, 453
dṛṣṭānta-viruddha, 385	Effect, 3, 12, 38, 39, 41, 145, 161, 174-
dṛṣṭārtha, 383	176, 183, 184, 186, 190, 329 n.,
dṛṣṭi, 221	359 n., 360, 374, 396-398, 508, 517
	Effective tones, 23
Drsti-srsti, 17 n. Drsti-srsti school, 16	Effectuation, 27 n.
	Efficiency, 186, 327
drsti-srsti-vāda, 52, 84, 364	Effort, 248, 253, 254, 360, 369, 371,
Dual experience, 213	272
Dualistic, 2; writers, 192	Fig. (born from) 200 222
Duality, 95, 101, 148, 221, 224, 226,	Egg (born from), 309, 322
243; of subject and object, 88	Ego, 15, 77, 101, 102, 104, 179, 233.
Ducts, 344 n., 345, 346	235, 266, 369
duḥkha, 277, 371	Ego-feeler, 104
duḥkha-sahiṣṇutā, 419	Egoism, 24, 75, 360, 414. 510, 511

37-	
Production are many	Eschatological, 520
Egoistic, 217, 511	
ejā, 496	Eschatology, 517
Ejective forces, 327	esse est percipi, 268, 272
eka-jīva-vāda, 82 n.	Essence, 38, 40, 129, 164, 168, 236, 243,
Eka-śloka, 78	358
eka-vidhir eva anyavyavacchedah, 94	Essenceless, 8, 35, 169, 233; products, 4
ekänta, 389, 391, 546	Essencelessness, 7, 35, 234
ekānta-dharma, 545	Essentials, 159
ekānta-kalanaļī, 238	Established, 19
ekāntin, 545	Eternal, 24, 63, 73, 121, 179, 180, 188,
Ekānti-Vaiṣṇavas, 545	369, 372, 379, 380; consciousness,
ekārammana, 459	181; entities, 187; soul, 179; sub-
ekārtha-kriyā-kāritā, 184	stances, 161; thing, 191
ekāyana, 548 n. 3	Eternality, 191, 386 n.
Element, 227, 302, 344, 358-360, 369,	Eternity of atoms, 187
372, 408, 501, 515, 516	Ether, 302
Elemental, 334; body, 303; world, 215	Ethereal, 357, 359
Elephant, 512	Ethical ideas, 496
Elevation, 532	Ethics, 500, 501, 514
	Ethics of Buddhism, The, 496 n. 2
Eliminatory, 140 Emanations, 1, 524	Ethics of the Hindus, 506 n.
Emancipation, 92, 99, 100, 115, 148,	Ever-existent, 18
181, 185, 204, 227, 229, 234, 242,	Evil, 445, 497, 498; effects, 408
245, 246, 248, 249, 251, 266, 383,	Evolutes, 172
385	Evolution, 16, 24, 372, 410 n.
Emblic Myrobalan, 294	Excitants, 29
Embryology, 273	Excitation, 198
Emotional, 464	Excitement, 409, 410
Emotions, 149, 152, 153, 245, 411	Excreta, 317, 325, 327-330, 347, 350-
Empirical, 366	352; channels, 348
Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics,	Exhalation, 258, 449, 459, 460
289 n. 4, 299, 301 n. 2	Existence, 26 n., 32, 183, 193, 243,
Endeavour, 255	498, 517; of the soul, 383
Endurance, 495, 502, 505 n.	Existent, 12, 155, 194, 234, 239, 373;
Enemy, 295, 501, 509-511, 514	entity, 232
Energy, 244, 327, 333, 373, 510	Existing entity, 181-183
Enjoyable, 464	Experience, 20, 22, 27, 33, 34, 44, 58,
Enjoyer, 181, 186, 526	66, 68, 72, 75, 84, 94, 101, 111, 129
Enjoyment, 181, 229, 238, 246, 368,	138, 149, 150, 167, 179, 187, 203,
446, 470, 509, 522	266, 270, 271, 280, 368, 404, 465,
Enmity, 497	468, 470, 499
Entity, 12, 15, 20, 21, 31, 31 n., 68,	Experimenting, 384
187, 233, 236	Expiating sins, 282
Entrails, 289	Expiation, 508
Envy, 497	Expiration, 259, 262
Epidemics, 408	
Epistemological, 32, 89 n.	External, 271; characteristics, 21; kar-
Epistemologically, 36	ma, 238; object, 17, 18, 20, 21, 26,
Equipments and and soo sou sou	27, 151, 269, 270, 272, 282, 366;
Equanimity, 475, 477, 500, 501, 504,	senses, 156, 344; sensibles, 22;
508, 511, 512, 530, 531; of mind, 511	world, 25, 26, 26 n., 209, 211, 270
Equilibrium, 236, 237, 327, 329 n.,	Extinction, 249, 501
333, 358, 530 Erronaus 611 apparance 611 in	Extra-individual reality, 89 n.
Erroneous, 64; appearance, 65; im-	Extra-mental, 24
positions, 21	Extreme, 508; idealists, 21
Error, 5, 417; of judgment, 416	Extremism, 504
Eruptions, 326 n.	Eye, 325, 326 n.
Erysipelatous inflammation, 299	Eyebrows, 342, 353 n., 355
esanā, esā, 496	Eye-diseases, 246, 298

Fact, 236	Fluids, 302
Factor, 516	Foam, 329
Fainting, 498	Foe, 512
Faith, 24, 373, 494, 505, 512	Foetal development, 318; according to
Fallacies, 17, 123, 194, 377, 378, 386,	Ātreya, 309, 310; divergences of
387	view referred to, 316; in the Garbha
Fallacious argument, 175	Upanisad, 312 n.; its processes in
False, 20, 27, 65, 129, 152, 155, 178,	Caraka and Suśruta, 317 ff.
182, 213, 217; appearance, 6, 25 n.,	Foetus, 290, 302, 303, 306-308, 314-
96, 113, 156, 233; association, 154;	317, 322, 333, 346, 384, 406, 408
cognition, 136; creations, 7, 8; ex-	Folklore, 295 n. 1
perience, 102, 154, 155; ignorance,	Folk-notions, 295 n. 1
4; knowledge, 8, 12, 155, 233,	Folly, 498
414; object, 113; perception, 155,	Food, 330, 348, 349, 436, 501
224; predications, 8; presentations,	Food-juice, 308, 331, 345, 347, 350-
155; relationing, 154; show, 37,	352, 355
38	Foolishness, 415, 509, 522
Falsehood, 154, 217, 498 n.; two mean-	Force, 253
ings of, 105	Forehead, 354
Falsity, 152; of the world, 454	Forgiveness, 505, 510
Faridpur, 225 n.	Forgiving nature, $505 n$.
Fasting, 278, 497	Forgiving spirit, 510, 511
Fat, 317, 318, 322, 324, 325, 336, 347-	Formalism, 119, 124, 125
349, 352, 361; channel, 348	Formative, 415
Fatality, 404	Formless, 254
Fate, 404	Foundation, 506
Fatness, 333	Free-will, 252, 255
Faults of expression, 146	Friend, 510-512
Faulty answer, 384	Friendly, 378, 511
Faulty statement, 384	Friendship, 460, 497, 529, 534
Fear, 333, 492, 510	Frogs, 109
Feeble discrimination, 250	Fruition, 255; of actions, 472
Feeling, 23 n., 24, 71, 178, 179, 263,	Fruits, 333
341, 412, 414, 498; as indifference,	Fruit-yielding actions, 246, 247
23 n.; of disgust, 461	Fuel, 249
Feeling-stuff, 414	Full-moon, 520
Fellow-being, 511	Function, 31, 179, 239, 366, 367, 525;
Fermentation, 336 n.	of thought, 14
Fetter, 497	Fury, 497
Fever, 282, 300, 396, 398	
Fibula, 285 n. 6	Gadādhara, 428
Fiery, 357, 359; character, 331	Gadādhara Bhaţţācārya, 119, 124
Filosofia Indiana, 398 n.	gahanam, 496
Fineness, 360	Gain, 503, 508, 512
Finished discrimination, 250	gala-gaṇḍa, 298 n.
Finitude, 16	Gall-bladder, 288
Fire, 74, 140, 141, 160, 187, 194, 238,	gandha, 194, 236, 350
302, 331–334, 359, 526	Gandhabba, 539
Firm will, 24	Gandhamādana, 544
Fistula, 276	Gandharva, 300
Five vāyus, 75	gandharva-pattanam, 233
Fixation of will, 504	Gandharva-tantra, 393
Flame, 182, 184	gantā gacchati, 169
Flashing, 64	ganth., 496
Flesh, 291, 317, 322, 324, 331, 342,	Gangabhatta, 515
347, 349, 352, 361; currents, 348	Gangā, 354
Flies, 409	Gangādhara, 79, 347-349, 380 n. 2.,
Flowers, 333	429-431

Gangadharendra Sarasvati, 56, 220, 231 Gangāhari, 79 Gangāpurī Bhattāraka, 50, 51 Gangeśa, 54, 125, 126, 146 Gangeśa Upādhyāya, 119 Gananatha Sen, Mahamahopadhyaya, 337 n., 353 n. ganda-mālā, 298 Ganesa Bhisaj, 434 Garbe, R., 550 garbha-karā bhāvāḥ, 309 Garbha Upanisad, 312 n. 3 garbhāsaya, 313 garbhotpāda, 328 Garland, 498 n., 525 Garuda, 540 Gauda, 126 Gauda Abhinanda, 232 Gauda Brahmānanda Sarasvatī, 79 Gaudapāda, 2, 7, 21 n., 28, 30, 57 n., 78, 80, 231, 234, 262 n. 1, 272 Gauda-pāda-kārikā, 6, 251 Gaudapădīya-bhāsya, 78 Gaudavaho, 111 Gaudeśvara Ācārya, 58 Gaudorviśa-kula-praśasti, 126 Gauri, 82 n. Gautama, 380, 386 n., 387, 394 gavaya, 131 gavinikā, 290 n. 3 gavinyau, 290 Gayadāsa, 425, 427, 428, 431 Gayi, 372, 410 gāho, 496 Găndhāra, 274, 298 n. 4 gāndhārī, 353 gāyatrī, 294 gedho, 496 Generality, 187 Generator, 23 Generic, 374 Genesis, 235 ghana, 235 n., 244, 314 ghana-jāgaras, 267 ghana-jägrat-sthita, 266 ghana-samvedana, 235 ghana-spanda-kramāt, 235 n., 245 ghanībhūya, 236 Ghata-jātaka, 541, 542, 544 ghora, 281 Ghosuṇḍī, 539 ghosa, 350 Ghoşaka, 171 giddhi, 496 Gifts, 267, 437, 441, 501, 513, 514 Girvāņendra Sarasvatī, 52 n., 216 Gitā, 251, 418, 437-439, 443-448, 450 n. 1, 452-455, 457-459, 462-

468, 470-473, 475-479, 483-488, 490, 492, 495, 496, 498-505, 507-517, 519-526, 529, 531-534, 536, 541, 545, 546, 548, 549, 551, 552; analysis of how actions are performed, 515, 516; avidyā in and in Buddhism, 498-500; Asvattha simile of the Upanisads, how applied in, 523, 524; avyakta, its meanings in, 470 ff.: Brahman, its meanings in, 473 ff.; clinging to God, necessity of, 529, 530; conception of sadharana-dharma and varna-dharma, 505 ff.; conflict between caste-duties and other duties, 513, 514; conservation of energy principle applied to the problem of immortality, 518; conservation of energy principle in, compared with that of Yoga, Vedānta and Nyāya, 517; crude beginnings of Samkhya in, 467 ff.; ethical ideas compared with those of the Upanisads and Buddhism, 493 ff.: ethics, basis of, 498; God and his doctrine in, 530 ff.; God, his nature in, 464 ff., 524 ff.; idea of God in, and in the Upanisads, 530; ideal as performance of sva-dharma in, 501, 502; ideal in, compared with the sacrificial and other ideals, 503, 504; ideal of self-surrender, 503; ideal of tapas, 513; immortality in, 518, 519; important commentaries on, 443; interpretation by Madhva, 442; interpretation by Rāmānuja, 441, 442; interpretation by Sankara, 437, 438; interpretation by Yamuna, 430; its conception of dharma and sacrifices, 486 ff.; its date, 549 ff.; its difference from Mimāmsā, 483 ff.; its relation to Samkhya, 476, 477; its relation to Vedanta, 477 ff.; karma, rebirth, and liberation, 520 ff.; kşetra and ksetra-jña theory of, 463, 464; meaning of Yoga in, 443 ff; path of knowledge and of duty, 528, 529; performance of duties with unattached mind in, 507 ff.; prakṛti, puruşa and God in, 464-466; prakrti-purusa philosophy in, 461 ff.; principal virtues in, 510 ff.; purușasükta conception of God and the conception of God in, 524; rebirth and life after death, 519, 520; sattva, rajas and tamas in, 468 ff.; Samkhya, its meaning different from that of classical Sămkhya in, 457, 458; sāmkhya-yoga, discussion on the

meaning of, in. 455-457; sense-control in, 488 ff.; sense-control in, different from that of Buddhism, 490; sense-control in, different from that of Patañjali, 491, 492; some vicious tendencies denounced in, 509, 510; standpoint of ethics in, compared with the general standpoint of Hindu ethics, 504 ff.; virtue of sameness, 511, 512; yoga in, akin to that of Paña-rātrayoga, 461; yoga in Patañjali, indebted to yoga in, 460, 461; yoga of, different from the Upanişad yoga, 453 ff.; yoga instructions in, 446 ff.; yoga, its meaning different from that of Buddhism in, 459, 460; yogin, his characteristics, 449, 450; yogin, his relation with God, 450, 451 Gtā-bhāṣya, 442 Gtā-bhāṣya-vivecana, 193
Gitā-bhūṣaṇa-bhāṣya, 443
Gītā-nibandhana, 226
Gitartha-samgraha, 439, 443
Gītārtha-saṃgraha-dīpikā, 439 Gītārtha-vivaraṇa, 443
Gītā-sārārtha-saṃgraha, 443
Gītāśaya, 439
Gītā-tattva-prakāśikā, 443
Gītā-tātparya-bodhinī, 58
Gītā-tīkā, 443
Gtā-vivrti, 443
Glandular sores, 296
Glenoid cavity, 287 n. 2
go, 131 God, 1, 44, 72, 80, 112, 176–178, 197,
229, 254, 372, 402, 403, 410 n., 438-
444, 446, 447, 450-453, 457, 459,
461-467, 473, 474, 476, 477, 484,
400, 402, 400, 501-504, 500, 510,
512, 514-516, 519, 522-526, 529, 533, 537, 542, 545, 547
533, 537, 542, 545, 547
Goddesses, 245
God's powers, 42 God's will, 109
Gods, 245, 420, 487
Going, 169
Gokulacandra, 443 Gokulanātha Upādhyāya, 126 n.
Gold, 37, 512
Goldstücker, Th., 540
Gomin, 428
Good, $21,246,271,405$; and bad, $23 n$.;
deeds, 411; life, 422
Goodness, 507
Gopatha-Brāhmaṇa, 274 n. 3, 276 n., 280 n., 283
200 n., 203

Gopāla Sarasvatī, 103 Gopālānanda Sarasvatī, 57 n. Gopālika, 87 n. Gopîkanta Sarvabhauma, 79 Gopirāma, 79 Gopurarakşita, 424 Govardhana, 428, 431 Government, 204 Govinda Sarasvatī, 55 Govindānanda, 49, 81, 103, 104, 261 Grace, 503 Grammarian-philosopher, 171 Grammatical, 142 granthi, 104 Grass, 350 Grating, 338 grāhaka-graha, 25 grahya-grāhakānuśaya, 22 Greed, 409, 497, 498, 510 Greediness, 511 Greedy, 510 Grief, 247, 333 Griffith, 291 n. grişma, 335 grīvāh, 286 Gross, 355 Grossness, 360 Grounds, 17 Growing, 36 Growth, 29; of the body, 322 grha-godhikā, 298 n. 7 grha-stha, 505 Grhya-sūtras, 281 guda, 285, n. 7 gudābhyah, 288 Gujarat, 192 gulgulu, 393 gulpha, 284 n. 4 gulphau, 284 guna, 162, 174, 175, 187, 188, 190, 194, 292, 314 n., 329, 330, 332, 357, 358, 359 n., 360, 361, 363, 366, 367, 369, 370, 372-374, 414, 440, 441, 455-458, 462, 465-467, 476-478, 512, 515, 524, 525 guṇa-attachments, 477 guņamayī māyā, 477 Guna-traya-viveka, 57 n. gunatva, 143 gunavattvātyantābhāvānadhikaranatā, 162 gunătita, 512 gunin, 314 n. 1 Gupta empire, 164, 435 guru, 357, 359 n., 420 gurv-ādayaḥ, 369 gurv-ādi, 369 Gūdha-bodhaka-samgraha, 428

Gūdhārtha-dīpikā, 443 Gūdhārtha-prakāśa, 220 Hair, 325 haliksna, 288 Hallucinations, 5, 180 hamsa, 252 n. Handful, 343 n. hanu-citya, 287 Hanumad-bhāşya, 443 hanvor dve, 287 n. 4 Happiness, 113, 501, 512, 530 Happy, 277; temper, 513 Hara-kinkara, 122 Hara - kiṅkara - nyāyācārya - paramapaņģita-bhaļļa-vādīndra, 122 Hardness, 328, 360 Hare's horn, 5, 111, 240 Hari, 442, 535, 543 Hari Dikşita, 82 haridrā indravaruņī, 297 Hari-gitā, 545 Harihara Paramahamsa, 57 n. Hari-lilā-vyākhyā, 225 Harinātha Sarmā, 148 n. Hariścandra, 427, 431 Harmful, 357 harşa, 313 hasti-jihva, 353 Hate, 489 Hatred, 360, 370, 373, 497-499 hatha, 268 Hatha-Yoga, 373, 455 Hatha-yoga-pradipikā, 354 n. havih, 461 Hārīta, 397, 427 Hārīta-saṃhitā, 432 Head, 297, 336, 340, 343 Headache, 300 n. 2 Head disease, 296, 340 Health, 330, 384 Hearing, 236, 360 Heart, 288, 290 n. 2, 316, 340, 344 n., 345, 347, 352, 355 Heart diseases, 299 Heat, 194, 238, 241, 320, 321, 325, 328, 331, 358, 360, 362 n., 365, 419, 500, 510, 511 Heaven, 229, 503, 520, 523 Heaviness, 335 n., 358, 360, 361, 369 Heavy, 337 n., 357 Heels, 284 Heliodorus, 540 Hell, 91, 489, 510 hemanta, 335, 370 hemanta-grīsma-varsāh, 321 n. Hemādri, 427, 434

Hemorrhage, 289; of women, 297

Heracles, 543 Heramba Sena, 428 Herb, 298, 358 n., 365 Heredity, 273 Hermaphrodite, 312 n. 3 Hermitage, 229 Heroism, 502, 505 n., 525 hetāv īrşyu, 420 hetu, 120-123, 148, 194, 374, 379, 380, 381 n., 386 n., 387, 388, 395 Hetu-tattvopadeśa, 49 hetv-antara, 388 hetv-artha, 389, 390 hetv-ābhāsa, 194, 386 n., 388, 389 n. Higher self, 453, 466 Himālayas, 229, 370 himsā, 419 Hindu Ethics, 483, 504; standpoint of, Hindu Mysticism, 449 n. 1 Hindu philosophy, 515 Hiranyagarbha, 76 Hiranyākşa Kausika, 357 Hiranyāksya-tantra, 435 hirā, 289, 290, 344, 346 Hiriyanna, 1 n., 43, 85 n., 86, 98, History of Indian Logic, 392 History of Indian Philosophy, 1, 17, 265 n. 4, 269 n. 1, 271 n. 1, 477 n. 1, History of the Vaisnava Sect, Early, 544 n. hitā, 277, 344, 405, 420, 422 hitā nāḍīs, 345 Hinayāna, 500 Hinayāna Buddhists, 168 Hoernle, R., 279, 284 n. 3, 285 n. 4, 286 n. 1, n. 2, n. 3, n. 4, 287 n. 5, 329,424, 428-431, 433, 434 Holes, 332 n. homa, 281 Homogeneous, 14, 377 Horns, 191 Hostile, 378 Hot, 242, 312 n., 357-359, 361-363, 365 n.Householder, 505 hrāsah, 322 hrī, 24, 510 hṛdaya, 288, 340 n. hrdaya-stham pipāsā-sthānam, 348 n. hrdayotkleda, 335 n. hrt, 292 hrt-padma-yantra-tritaye, 258 Hultzsch, E., 219 Human body, 278, 302 Humanity, 506

Human passion, 497	73, 134, 15
Human self, 42	118; snake
Humid, 408	Ill-will, 497
Humility, 534	Image, 14, 54 Imaginary, 2
Hunger, 254	Imaginary, 2'
Hygienic habits, 308	Imagination,
Hypothesis, 12, 26, 64	_ 367, 373
Hypothetical, 337; entities, 233, 336	Imaginative of
	Immanent, 4
icchā, 264, 370, 496	Immediacy,
Idea, 26, 30, 31, 182, 186, 375, 501,	Immediate,
510, 525	144; conta
Ideal, 503, 504; creations, 236	Immediatene
Idealism, 19, 21, 25, 35, 102, 213, 221,	Immoral, 23
256, 268, 270; refutation of, 269	Immortal, 4
Idealistic, 231; Buddhism, 231, 234,	526
242; monism, 164; philosophy, 234	Immortality,
Idealists, 402	521, 537
Ideation, 20, 31	Immutable la
Identical, 15, 26, 27, 30, 31 n., 32,	Impatience,
33, 36, 38, 64, 68, 90, 152, 153, 169,	Imperative,
172, 173, 183, 184, 202, 224; entity,	Imperishable
34, 202; object, 176; point, 20	Impermanen
Identity, 14, 31, 33, 34, 65, 72, 131,	Implication,
152, 227, 370, 526; as a relation, 14;	Importance,
function of thought, 14; in diversity,	Impossible,
172; of the awareness, 32, 165; of	Impotency,
cause and effect, 165; of the self, 34,	Imprecations Impressions,
47, 65, 67	Impressions,
Idleness, 333, 373	Impure, 36,
iḍā, 257, 292 n., 353, 453	239
iḍā nāḍī, 354 Ignorance, 1, 3, 4, 5, 8, 24, 73, 74,	Impurities, 3
98, 101, 104, 148, 153, 154, 185, 187,	Inactive, 360
203, 204, 251, 267, 333, 409, 413,	Inanimate, 3
414, 416, 462, 479, 498-500, 509,	Incantations,
510, 522, 529, 530	Incarnation,
Ignorant, 367, 378	Inclinations,
ihāmutra-phala-bhoga-virāga, 495	Incompreher
Iliac, 348	Inconsistenci
Ilium, 285 n. 7	Inda, 539
Ill-temper, 497	Indefinability
Illumination, 62, 178, 204, 210, 211 n.,	Indefinable,
212	127, 128,
Illuminator, 526	224, 499,
Illusion, 3, 6, 9, 11, 16, 25, 29, 32, 36,	221
47, 64, 69, 101, 110, 114, 148, 194,	Indefinite ex
197, 198, 200, 204, 223, 239, 241,	Independent
261, 524; difference in the theory	Independent
of, between Nāgārjuna and Śaṅkara	Indescribable
and Gauḍapāda, 7	194, 195,
Illusoriness, 533	265, 271;
Illusory, 26, 28, 73, 101, 109, 181, 221,	Indescribable
234, 240; appearances, 101, 113; character, 217; cognition, 180; crea-	Indestructibl
character, 217; cognition, 180; crea-	Indeterminal
tion, 468; experience, 185; images,	Indeterminat
180; impositions, 30, 113, 114, 150,	94; experi
194; knowledge, 139; perception,	materials,

52; products, 223; silver, e, 206 n. 46 71 90, 233, 261, 266, 328, construction, 21 12, 524; self, 271 13, 14, 63, 69, 105 149, 150; antecedence, act, 211 ess, 138 n., 464, 478, 484, 501 173, 476, 502, 512, 525, , 294, 456, 512, 513, 518, law, 31 n. 373 483 e, 476, 517, 518 nt, 230, 241 18, 148, 384, 521 370 159, 169, 188 333 s, 295 , 65, 239, 250 se, 321 37, 38, 303, 408; states, 327, 503, 504 36, 359, 360 , 278, 281 502, 525 239, 242, 251, 497 nsible, 164 cies, 166 ty of nescience, 222 12, 16, 22, 29, 51, 118, 156, 163, 164, 205, 221, 529; nature, 155; stuff, kistence, 16 t co-operation, 184 t existence, 59 le, 35, 36, 48, 147, 164, 203, 221, 232-234, 236, nature, 100 leness, 35 le, 33, 512, 538 ble, 134 ite, 22, 401, 454; cognition, ience, 97; knowledge, 21; 23

370	
Index 148 m	Initiation, 547
Index, 148 n.	Injunction, 509, 520
India, 402	Inner change, 22
Indian anatomists, 286 n. 2	Inner consciousness, 26 n.
Indian Antiquary, 550	
Indian Interpreter, The, 550	Inner dynamic, 24
Indian literature, 256	Inner law of thought, 29
Indian medical men, 377	Inner psychoses, 22
Indian Medicine, 423, 436	Inner states, 185
Indian philosophy, 119, 227, 273, 369,	Inoperative, 177, 269
377, 395, 414, 417; pessimismin, 414	Inscriptions, S.I., 219
Indian thought, 375, 376 n., 408, 421	Insects, 409
Indifference, 246, 501	Insensible, 254
Indigestion, 348	Inseparable, 191, 374; inherence, 183,
Indignation, 333, 497	371
Indische Studien, 288 n. 2	Inseparableness, 191; of character,
Indispensable, 18, 523	191; of space, 191; relation, 360;
Indistinguishable, 377	relation of inherence, 40
Individual, 33, 58-60, 115, 131, 139,	Insomnia, 337 n.
159, 189, 369; consciousness, 77;	Inspiration, 262
good, 485; ignorance, 84; members,	Instinctive passions, 252
188; persons, 84, 109; self, 75; soul,	Instinctive subconscious roots, 26
72, 205 n.	Instincts, 415
Individuality, 449	Instructions, 21, 229, 501
	Instrument, 45
Indivisible, 157, 199	Instrumental cause, 12, 360, 372,
Indo-Iranian, 295 n. 1	410
Indra, 229, 295 n. 3, 304, 328, 433	Instrumentality, 11, 112
indrajāla, 244	Instruments of cognition, 137
Indrā-viṣṇu, 535	
indriya, 23, 238, 239, 366	Intellect, 75, 373, 406
indriya-dhāraṇa, 494	Intellectual, 378; states, 179
indriya-nigraha, 505	Intelligence, 89, 268, 320, 321, 360,
indriya-vijaya, 405	369, 373, 375, 504, 516
Indu, 304, 328, 433	Intelligent, 36, 38
Induction, 148	Intelligible, 36
Indulgence, 509	Intense, 251
Inequality, 229	Intention, 497
Inert, 337 n.	Interdependence, 7, 8, 22
Inertia, 360	Interdependent origination, 3 n.
Inexhaustible, 356	Internal canals, 289
Inexplicable, 20, 29, 48, 156, 158, 185	Internal organ, 310 n. 2
Inference, 18, 26 n., 32, 63, 66, 68, 72,	Interpretation, 1, 356
106, 118, 120, 129, 139, 141, 148,	Intervening, 144
159, 167, 176, 192, 194, 198, 213,	Intestine, 288, 297, 348, 351
302, 365, 373-376, 380, 396, 398,	Intimate relation, 40
408	Intoxicating drinks, 498
Inferential, 77; cognition, 135; know-	Intrinsically, 242
ledge, 18	Intrinsic difference, 201
Inferior, 378	Introduction, 49
Inferiority, 370, 401 n.	Intuitive, 73; consciousness, 154, 199;
Infinite, 16, 63, 73, 113, 454; con-	perception, 113
sciousness, 77; differences, 132;	Invalid, 18, 141, 184, 186
number, 358; regressus, 202; time,	Invariability, 31 n.
132	Invariable, 172, 186; antecedence, 145,
Inflammation, 282	186, 326, 386, 398; concomitance,
Inhalation, 258, 259, 449, 459, 460	139-142, 148; connection, 176;
Inherence, 360	power, 185; prognostication, 397
Inherent, 22; movement, 20	Invariably and unconditionally asso-
Inhering cause, 144	ciated, 380
	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·

	= : •
Invariably associated, 396	Jayacandra, 126
Invisible, 337 n.	Jayanandi, 431
Inward resolution, 482	Jayanta, 51, 107, 279, 280, 307 n. 1,
Iron age, 402	394, 399, 413, 414
Irrelevant, 160	Jayarāma, 443
Ischium, 285 n. 7	Jayatirtha, 442
itaretarāśraya, 97	Jayākhya-saṃhitā, 491
itaretarāśraya-prasangāt, 95	Jayollāsa-nidhi, 220
Itihāsa-veda, 274 n. 3	Jābāla-brāhmaṇa, 251
1-tsing, 433	jādya, 10
Irṣyā, 413	jūgarūka, 338
Īśa Upaniṣad, 551	jāgrad-vāsanāmayatvāt svapna, 76
Īśā, 78	jāgrat, 241, 264
Īśāvāsya-bhāsya-ṭippaṇa, 193	jāgrat-svapna, 266
Īśopaniṣad-bhāṣya, 78	jāgrat-svapna sthita, 267
Isvara, 30, 48, 50, 72, 80, 112, 176,	Jajala, 283, 432
177, 197, 372, 474, 533; its critical	jālinī, 496
cisms by Kamalasila, 176 ff.	Jänakinātha, 218 n.
īśvara-bhāva, 505 n.	jānu, 285 n. 4
Iśvarakṛṣṇa, 80, 171, 372, 428, 476	jānunoḥ sandhī, 285
Īśvara-saṃhitā, 547, 548 n. 1	Jātaka, 248 n., 424
Isvarasena, 431	
	jāti, 43, 159, 194, 380–382, 387, 401, 498
Isvarābhisandhi, 126	
Ista-siddhi, 198, 199, 205, 213	Jealousy, 267
Īsta-siddhi-vivaraņa, 198	Jejjata, 372, 428
Ista-siddhi-vyākhyā, 198	jhāna, 459, 460, 500
Tauliala	jigiṃsanatā, 496
Jackals, 409	jijnāsā, 384
Jacob, G. A., 82	Jina, 49, 50, 72, 75, 84, 85, 88–90,
Jacobi, H., 398 n.	205 n., 235, 236, 239, 304
jada, 36	Jinadāsa, 428, 431
jadātmikā, 105	jīva, 104, 105, 109, 110, 112
jadātmikā avidyā-šakti, 105	jīva-bhūta, 464, 472
Jagaddhara, 443	jīva-caitanya, 77
Jagadiśa, 79	jīva-dhātu, 241
Jagadīśa Bhattācārya, 119, 124	Jivaka, 276, 424
jagan-mithyātva-dīpikā, 57 n.	Jivaka-tantra, 435
Jagannātha Pañcānana, 79	jīvana, 328
Jagannāthāśrama, 53, 56, 103, 193, 216	jīvana-pūrvaka, 515
Jaimini, 479, 486	jīvan-mukta, 245–247, 250
Jaina, 98, 119, 171, 172, 399, 544, 550	jivan-mukta state, 248
Jaiyyata, 427	jīvan-muktatā, 245
Jalada, 283	Jivan-mukti, 246, 251, 252
jalpa, 377–379, 401	Jivan-mukti-viveka, 214, 216, 251,
Jalpa-kalpa-taru, 347 n., 380 n. 2	252 n., 268
Janaḥ, 76	jīvann eva, 251
Janārdana, 49, 205, 543	jīva-rāśi, 44
Janārdana Sarvajña, 52 n.	jīva-sthiti, 260
janghe, 285	Jiva-sūtra, 436
jangida, 293, 294, 295 n. 3	jīvatvāpādikā, 104
Japan, 294	Jīvādana, 432
jarāyu, 291	Jīvānanda, 430, 431
jatru, 286 n. 2	jīvātman, 461
Jatūkarņa, 427, 432	jīvita, 368
Jatūkarņa-samhitā, 432	jīvitendriya-virodhinī, 21 n.
jaṭā, 496	jīvotkrānti, 260
Jaundice, 282, 297, 298	jñāna, 100, 272, 491, 499, 505 n.
Jaundiced eye, 143	jñāna-gata-pratyakṣatva, 207

300	
I 7 7 1	against the non-permanency of en-
Jñānaghana, 82 n.	tities answered by, 185 ff.; Yogasena's
jñāna-karma-samuccaya, 44, 100	criticisms against the doctrine of
jñāna-nāḍī, 355	momentariness answered by, 184;
jñāna-pratisandhātā, 368	
Jñāna-saṃkalinī, 354, 355	his criticism of the concept of God,
jñāna-saṃskāra, 250	176 ff.; his criticism of the concept
Jñāna-sāra, 232	of Isvara or God, 176 ff.; his treat-
Jñāna-siddhi, 148 n.	ment of the different views of the
jñānavatī, 378	nature of momentariness, 186; his
Jñāna-vāsistha, 231	criticism of the doctrine of soul
jñāna-vişayīkṛtena rūpeņa sādṛsyam,	(Nyāya), 178, 179; his criticism of
134	the soul theory of Kumārila, 179 ff.;
jñāna-yoga, 441, 442, 456, 487, 529	his criticism of the Yoga concept of
Jñānāmṛta, 99	God, 177 ff.; his doctrine of mo-
Jñānāmṛta Yati, 78	mentariness, 182 ff.; his refutation
Jñānārṇava, 432	of Nyāya-Vaiśeşika categories, 187
Jñānendra Sarasvatī, 54, 79	ff.; his refutation of the Sāmkhya
	theory of soul, 181; his refutation
jñānin, 531	of the theory of the persistence of
Jňanottama, 58, 87 n., 98, 99, 148 n.,	entities, 182 ff.; his refutation of the
198	
Jnanottama Bhattaraka, 82 n.	Upanisad theory of self, 181; his
Jñanottama Miśra, 48	theory of causal efficiency (artha-
jñātatā, 152, 211	kriyā-samarthā), 183 ff.
jñātur jñeya-sambandhaḥ, 105	Kamalasila and Santaraksita, their
Jobares, 543	criticisms of the Samkhya doctrine
Joint causality, 177	of parināma, 172 ff.; writers men-
Joint nature, 184	tioned in their work Tattva-sam-
Joint operation, 472	graha and its Pañjikā, 171
Joints, 331, 336, 348	Kambalāśvatara, 171
Joy, 333, 373, 467, 495, 504, 511,	kamma, 500
512	Kanauj, 126
Judgments, 341	Kanha, 541, 544
Jug, 143, 151	Kanhāyana, 544
juhvati, 448	Kaṇāda, 370
jvara, 296	Kaṇāda-sūtra-mbandha, 123
jyotiḥ-sthāna, 318	kaṇḍarā, 324, 352
Jyotis, 275 n.	Kaniska, 429 n. 1, 431
jyotişa, 547	kantha, 353 n.
33 7 1 5 4 7	kaṇṭha-nāḍī, 286 n. 2
Kahola-brāhmaṇa, 251	kanthorasoh sandhih, 348 n.
kaivalya, 251, 454	kapālam, 287
Kaivalya-kalpadruma, 56	kapālikā, 285 n. 4
Kaivalyānanda Sarasvatī, 443	kapha, 257 n. 2, 300, 317, 325-331,
Kaivalyānanda Yogīndra, 56	222 224 225 # 226 227 220
Kaivalyāsrama, 79	333, 334, 335 n., 336, 337, 339,
	350-352, 361, 365, 392 kaphoda, 286 n. 4
kakāṭikā, 287	
Kaksapuṭa-tantra, 426	kaphodau, 286
Kakubha, 300	Kapila, 410 n., 477
kalpa, 275 n., 526, 547	Kapilabala, 429
kalpanā, 90, 238, 239, 312 n., 314,	Kapila-Samkhya, 458
370	Kapila-tantra, 435
Kalpa-sthāna, 424, 429	karana, 389
Kalpa-taru, 52	karaṇa-śakti-pratiniyamāt, 174
Kalyāṇa Bhatta, 443	Karatha, 432
Kamalajanayana, 225 n.	Karavirya, 424
Kamalaśila, 25, 27 n., 28, 31 n., 171,	Karāla-tantra, 435
172, 175, 176, 178, 179, 181–185,	karma, 101, 104, 185-188, 237-239,
186 n., 187, 188, 375, 376; criticisms	243, 249, 253, 255, 256, 302, 310,

	5-1
339, 357, 359, 360, 371, 383, 402-	kāraṇa, 104, 137, 160, 374, 389, 395,
404, 408, 437, 439, 488, 520-522,	472
524, 533	kārana-kṣaṇa-nirodha-sama-kālaḥ,21n.
karma-bijam manah-spanda, 238	kāraņa - kṣaṇa - vilakṣaṇa - kāryasya,
karma-nāśe mano-nāśaḥ, 238	21 n.
karma-puruşa, 303 n., 373	karaṇa-vyāpāra, 517
karma-sannyāsa, 457	Kārikā, 21 n., 28, 30, 87, 250, 370
karma-yoga, 441, 442, 444, 451, 452,	Karttika Kunda, 427, 42
457, 529	Kārttikeya, 107
Karṇa-bhāra, 550	Kāruņya, 228, 230
karṇa-śūla, 299	kārya, 161, 374, 389
kartavyatā, 482	kārya-jñānam, 310 n. 3
kartā, 237, 314	kārya-kāraņatā, 376
kartr, 244, 395, 469, 472, 473	kārya - kāraņa - vādasya vedānta -
kartrtva, 242	bahir-bhūtatvāt, 221
kartṛtva-bhoktṛtvaikā-dhāraḥ, 104	karya-phala, 389
Karuma, 300	kārva-sama, 380 n. 4, 382 n.
karuṇā, 412, 460, 511	kāryatā-jñāna, 515
kaṣāya, 312 n., 357, 358	kārya-yoni, 389
Kathā-vatthu, 247, 248 n.	kāsa, 296, 298 n. 4
Katha Upanişad, 78, 290 n. 2, 344 n.,	Kāśika, 297 n. 4
345, 453, 488, 494, 523, 524	Kāśī, 424
Katha-vallt, 251	Kāšī-khaṇḍa, 429
kathina, 359 n.	Kāśīnātha Sāstrin, 54
Kathopanisad-bhāṣya-ṭīkā, 193	Kāśīrāja, 432, 433 n. 1
katu, 312 n. 3, 357, 358, 362, 365 n.	Kāśmīra, 434
kaumāra-bhṛtya, 276	Kāśmīra-pāṭha, 430
Kaumāra-tantra, 425	Kāśyapa, 427
kauśala, 452	Kāsyapa-samhitā, 431, 435
Kauśika-sūtra, 275, 282-284, 293	Kāṭhaka, 486, 551
Kauşītaki, 251, 259 n. 3, 283	Kāṭhaka-saṃhitā, 544
Kauṣītaki-brāhmaṇa, 544	Kāṭhakopaniṣad-bhāṣya, 78
Kausītaki-Upanisad, 344 n.	Kāthmāṇḍu, 431
Kautilya, 541	Kātyāyana, 540
Kaviraj Gangaprasad Sen, 427	Kāya-cikitsā, 276, 425
Kaviraj Gananatha Sen, 431	kedārī-kulyā, 323
Kavirāja, 79	Kenopanişad, 78, 196
kāhābāha, 299	Kenopanişad-bhāşya, 78
kākatālīya, 271	Kenopanişad-bhāşya-tippana, 193
kāla, 156, 235, 317, 321, 358, 359, 372,	Kenopanisad-bhāṣya-vivaraṇa, 78
389, 410	Keśava-bhatta, 79, 284, 443, 541, 543
Kālahasti-śaraṇa-Śivānanda Yogīndra,	kevala-jägaras, 266
219	kevala-jāgrat-sthita, 266
kālātīta, 386 n., 387	kevalānvayi, 120, 121, 123 kevalānvayi-hetor eva nirvaktum asak-
Kālidāsa, 230, 231, 239, 402, 550	yatvāt, 123
kālpanika-puruşa-bheda, 116	kevalānvayini vyāpake pravartamāno
kāma, 327, 412, 413, 489, 490, 496,	hetuh, 121
499 hām ahi artha hrivām 515	Khalaja, 300
kām api-artha kriyām, 515 kāmya-karma, 99	khale-kapota-nyāya, 323
kānti, 57 n.	khanti-samvara, 500
Kānyakubjeśvara, 126	Khaṇḍana-khaṇḍa-khādya, 57 n., 103,
Kānkāyana, 316, 357	119 n., 126, 127, 132, 133 n., 134,
Kāṅkāyana-tantra, 435	141, 146, 156, 192
kāṇḍa, 353	Khaṇḍana-khaṇḍanam, 126 n.
Kāpya, 333	Khandana-kuthāra, 126 n.
Kāpyavaca, 327	Khandana-mahā-tarka, 126 n.
kāraka-vyāpāra, 41	Khandana-mandanam, 126 n.

502	
Khandana-phakkikā, 126 n.	Kṛṣṇatīrtha, 56
Khandana-țikā, 126 n.	Kṛṣṇālaṃkāra,
Khandanoddhāra, 126 n.	Kṛṣṇānanda, 19
khara, 332, 359 n.	Kṛṣṇānubhūti,
Kharanada-samhitā, 432	Kṛṣṇātreya, 276
kha-tan-mätra, 236	Kṛṣṇātreya-tant
khyāti, 87 n., 204	krtaka, 182
Kidney, 288, 348	kṛta-nāśanī, 299
Kidney-bean, 358 n.	Kṛtavirya, 316
kilāsa, 297	kṛta yuga, 546
Kimīdin, 296, 300	krti-sādhyatā-jñ
Kindness, 511; to the suffering, 510	Krttika, 396
King Ariştanemi, 230	kṛtyā, 293
King Daśaratha, 230	kṣamā, 505
King Keladi-Venkatendra, 219	kṣaṇa, 182 n.
King of Gauda, 148 n.	Kṣaṇa-bhanga-s
King of Kanauj, 126	ksanika, 182 n.,
kiñcanam, 496	ksanikasya, 32 r
kiṭṭa, 325, 327, 331	kṣaṇikatva, 368
kīkasāsu, 286 n. 2	kṣara, 104
Kleisobora, 543	ksara purusa, 40
kleśa, 304	Ksataksina, 431
kleśa-jñeyāvaraṇa, 22 n.	Ksatriya, 292, 4
klista, 414	kṣānti, 505 n., 5
kloma, 288, 318, 348	kṣāra, 357, 358,
Knowability, 140	Kṣārapāṇi-saṃh
Knowable, 140	Kşemarāja, 263
Knower, 34, 152 Knowing, 263; faculty, 179, 180	kşetra, 463-465 kşetra-jña, 293,
Knowledge, 18, 19, 66, 127, 148, 151-	
153, 228, 246, 248, 256, 266, 272	
333, 368, 373, 374, 376, 378, 403	
437, 440, 462, 469, 475, 499, 500	
502, 505 n., 508, 510, 523, 529, 53.	
Knowledge situation, 25	Kşurika, 454
kodho, 497	kuhū, 353
Koka, 300	Kukşila, 300
Koṇḍa Bhaṭṭa, 55, 108	kula-kuṇḍalinī,
kopo, 497	Kula-pañjikā, 2
Kotalipara, 225 n.	kulattha, 363
kraminah sahakārinah, 183	Kulārka Paņḍit
kriyā, 238, 260	124, 147 n.;
kriyākhya-jñāna, 491	Mahā-vidyā s
kriyā-spanda, 238	Kullūka, 538 n.
kriyātmaka, 261	Kumāra-saṃbha
krodha, 267, 489	Kumāraśira Bh
krodha-varjana, 505	Kumāraširas, 3
Kṛkala, 75	Kumārila, 87, 1
kṛmuka, 298 Kṛṣṇa, 438, 449, 455, 489, 500, 502	179, 197, 214 kumbhaka , 257,
503, 507, 512, 516, 518-520, 525	
529-532, 535, 541, 543, 544, 546	o, kuntāpa, 296
547; and Vasudeva, 541 ff.	Kunti, 48
Kṛṣṇa Ācārya, 79	kuṇḍalinī, 354,
Kṛṣṇabhatta Vidyādhirāja, 442	kuṇḍalī energy,
Kṛṣṇa Devaki-putra, 550	kundalī šakti. 1
Kṛṣṇakānta, 79	kuņdalī šakti, 3 Kuppusvāmī S
Krsna-kutūhala nātaka, 225	188 n.
• • •	

, 115 220 96 82 n. 6, 427 tra, 435 ñāna, 515 siddhi, 49 367 n. 68 486, 487, 502-507, 514 510 8, 466 hitā, 432 , 471, 472, 523 410, 464, 468, 523 98, 301 266, 267 355 225 n. ta, 49, 51, 119–121, 123, introduction of his syllogisms, 120-122 . I ava, 230 haradvāja, 357 316 . 111, 112, 120, 147, 171, 4, 479, 482, 483, 485 , 258 Dr, 87 356, 455 , 356 356 Sāstrī, 43 n., 84 n., 87,

170	zea 583
Kurukṣetra, 502, 507, 518, 536	Ligaments, 324
Kurus, 545	Light, 70, 153, 332 357, 360; of con-
Kusumāñjali, 141, 393	sciousness, 207
Kusūla, 300	Lightness, 358, 360, 362 n.
kuśa grass, 446	Liking, 358
kuśalotsāha, 501	Limitations, 14, 22, 200, 252
kuştha, 293, 294, 297, 298	Limited forms, 23
Kuvalayānanda, 220	Limited self, 113
kūrca, 279, 284 n. 3	Limited truth, 3
kūrca-śiras, 284 n. 3	Limitless, 73
Kūrma, 75	Linguistic, 167
kūrpara, 285	lin, 480
	linga, 106, 139, 198, 293, 395, 398
laghu, 332, 338, 357, 359 n.	linga-deha, 306 n. 1
Laghu-candrikā, 85, 225 n.	linga-parāmarša, 139
Laghu-jñāna-vāsiṣṭha, 232	linga-śarīra, 75
Laghu-mahā-vidyā-vidambana, 123	lingādibala-labdhākārollekha-mātreņa,
Laghu-samgraha, 83	213
laghutā, 362 n.	lingi, 293
Laghu-tīkā, 79	Lips, 348
Laghu-vākya-vṛtti, 80	Liquid, 337 n.
Laghu-vākya-vṛtti-prakāśikā, 80	Liquidity, 360
Lakşaṇāvalī, 125 Lakşmīdhara Deśika, 79	Liquors, 498
Lakşmīdhara Kavi, 56	Literature, 377 Liver, 288, 318, 348
Lakşminrsimha, 52, 108	Living beings, 36
lalanā-cakra, 355	Lizards, 409
lalāṭa, 287	hlā, 42
Lankāvatāra-sūtra, 22 n., 35, 127, 234,	Līlāvatī, 147 n.
272, 398	lobha, 409, 413, 489, 497
Larger intestine, 289	lobhanani, 497
Laryngeal plexus, 355	lobhitattam, 497
Larynx, 286 n. 2, 353 n.	locaka, 330
Laukika-nyāya-muktāvalī, 30 n.	Localization, 23
lavalī, 360 n.	Locus, 19, 110
lavaņa, 312 n. 3, 357, 358	Locus standi, 130
Law, 493; of causality, 31 n.	Logic, 377, 390, 392; of probability,
laya, 104	376 n.
Laziness, 335	Logical, 191, 373; apparatus, 51;
lāghava, 315, 362 n.	argument, 164; categories, 389; con-
lālasā, 497	sequence, 12; dialectic, 191; dis-
Lātyāyana-samhitā, 435	cussions, 127; disputes, 401; fal-
Lean, 337 n.	lacy, 17; formation, 118, 119, 125, 129; methods, 51; tricks, 401
Leanness, 333	Logically, 19
Learned, 378 Learning, 505	lohint, 291
Legal literature, 279	lohita-vāsasaḥ, 344 n.
Leprosy, 297	lohitā, 317
Lévi, S., 429 n. 1	Lokanātha, 57 n.
Liberation, 187, 414, 415, 437, 438,	loka-rakṣā, 440
455, 469, 470, 523, 546	loka-samvrta, 4
Lie, 498 n.	loka-samvrti-satya, 5
Life, 360, 368, 405, 498 n.	loka-vyavahārah, 3 n.
Life-functions, 515	Lokāyata, 171
Life of Nagarjuna from Tibetan and	lokottara, 22
Chinese Sources, 398 n.	lokottara-nirvikalpa-jñāna-lābhāt, 21
Life of the Buddha, 276, 424 n. 1	Longing, 497
Life-principle, 472	Looseness, 333

Lord, 442; of communion, 453	mahā-munih, 22 n.
Lorinser, Dr, 549	mahā-pralaya, 109
Loss, 512	Mahārāja, 539
Lotus, 356; in the sky, 5, 240; stalks,	Mahā-Rāmāyaṇa, 231
350 n.	mahāsupti, 104
Love, 497	Mahātala, 76
Lower prakrţi, 464	Mahā-vagga, 276
Lower purusa, 465, 467, 468	Mahā-vidyā, 49, 51, 115, 119-124;
lubhanā, 497	nature of its syllogisms, 120-122;
	referred to, defended and criticized
Lumbar nerve, 353	by Nyāya and Vedānta writers, 118-
Lumbar plexus, 355	120; syllogisms refuted by Vādīn-
Lumbar vertebrae, 287 n. 1	
Lungs, 288, 318	dra, 122-124
Lust, 490, 497	Mahā-vidyā-daśaślokī-vivaraņa, 123
Lustful, 367	Mahā-vidyā-viḍambana, 103, 119 n.,
Lymph, 317, 318, 325	120, 122
	Mahā - vidyā - vidambana - vyākhyāna,
Macdonell, A. A., 259, 288 n., 345,	123
346, 486	Mahā-vidyā-vivaraņa-tippana, 123
mada, 267, 413	Mahāvṛṣa, 298 n. 4
madana, 391	Mahā-vyutpatti, 288 n. 1
Madātyaya, 430	Mahāyāna, 501, 513
Madhu-kośa, 434	Mahāyāna monism, 164
Madhu-mati, 434 n. 4	Mahāyānists, 30
madhura, 312 n. 3, 357, 358	Maheśvara, 428
Madhusudana Sarasvatī, 53, 55, 56,	Maheśvara Tirtha, 83, 196
77 n., 79, 81, 116, 118, 124, 198,	Mahimnah Stotra, 226
199, 223 n., 226, 227, 443; his line-	Mahidhara, 232
age, date and works, 225, 226; his	maitra, 511
philosophy in his Vedānta-kalpa-	Maitra, S. K., 483 n. 1, 506 n.
latikā, 227	Maitrāyaņa, 471
Madhva, 125, 192, 442, 443	Maitrāyanī, 486, 523
Madhva-mukha-bhanga, 220	Maitreyī-brāhmaņa, 251
Madhva school, 118	Maitrī Upanişad, 259 n., 344 n., 345,
madhya-śartra, 316	412, 448, 449
madhya-viveka, 250	majjā, 317, 328
	majjābhyaḥ, 289
Madras, 84 n., 87	
Magic, 37, 38, 244; rites, 281	Major term, 139
Magical creations, 37, 38, 467	mala, 234, 239, 325, 327, 328, 334
Magician, 37, 38, 206 n.	mala-dhātu, 325, 327
Magundi, 300	mala-pātra, 289 n. 1
mahad brahma, 462	Malformations, 333
mahat, 305, 340 n.	Malice, 497
mahat parimāņa, 189	Malicious, 498 n.
Mahā-bhārata, 274, 276, 306, 394,	Malimluca, 300
418, 419, 450 n., 458, 461, 476, 502,	Malla Bhatta, 79
508 n., 535 n., 536, 538, 539, 541-	Malleoli, 284 n. 4
546, 548, 550, 552	mamankaro, 496
Mahā-bhārata Anukramaṇī, 544	mamattaṃ, 496
Mahabharata period, 508	mamāyitam, 496
Mahā-bhāşya, 546, 548	Man, 445
mahābhūta, 362, 463	Manaḥ, 230
Mahādeva, 122	manaḥ-kalpanayā, 230
Mahādeva Vaidya, 79	manaḥ - pariṇāmaḥ samvid - vyañjako
Mahādeva Vidyāvagīša, 79	jñānam, 198
Mahā-lakşmī-paddhati, 225	manaḥ-prasāda, 513
Mahāmahopādhyāya Kuppusvami,	manaḥ-spanda, 254
219	manana, 22, 24
	•

manas, 23, 75, 76, 104, 156, 187, 194,	Manibhadda, 539
196, 206, 227, 232-234, 236-239,	maṇi-pūra-cakra, 355
241, 243, 244, 246, 255, 262, 292,	maraṇānussati, 459
303, 304, 307 n. 5, 308, 341, 343,	Marbles, 134
347 n., 351 n., 355, 356, 358, 360,	marma, 340 n.
366, 367-369, 371, 373, 458, 463	marman, 313 n.
manasi, 369	Marrow, 289, 291, 317, 322, 324, 347,
manaś-cakra, 355	348, 361
manda, 359 n.	Marshy, 370
manda-viveka, 250	
Man-god, 525, 532	mastakābhyantaroparişṭhāt śirā-sandhi-
Manhood, 525	sannipāta, 342
	Master, 526
Man-hymn, 537	mastiska, 340
Manifestation, 23,174,235; of mind, 256	mastiskam širo-majjā, 340 n.
Manifests, 51	mastulunga, 340
Manifold world, 203	matānujāā, 388 n.
mano-javena, 304	Material, 10; cause, 10-12, 45, 51, 74,
manomaya, 76	114, 143, 195, 197, 334, 360, 372,
manomaya-koşa, 75	389, 410; objects, 178; power, 105;
manomaya puruşa, 344	staff, 11, 76, 195, 217; stuff, 109;
mano-nāśa, 251, 252	things, 175; world, 21, 108
Manoramā tantra-rāja-tīkā, 225	Materiality, 10, 45, 114, 236
manoratho, 497	Materia Medica, 429
mano-vahā, 347 n.	Mathurānātha, 443
mano-vahā-nāḍī, 355	Mathurānātha Bhattācārya, 119
mantra, 277, 278, 536	Mathurānātha Sukla, 78
mantr, 351	matsara, 413
Manu, 61, 449, 505, 542 n. 3, 546	matsnā, 288 n. 3
Manukulāditya, 45 n.	matsnābhyām, 288
Manuscript, 49, 112, 204, 205	Matter, 44, 312, 526
manya, 290 n. 3	matup, 400 n.
manyu, 412, 413	maṭha, 99
mangala-homa, 278	Mațmața, 300
Mañju-bhāṣiṇt, 79	mauna, 513
Mandana, 52, 82-87, 96-102, 110, 112,	Mauryas, 540
148 n., 198, 204, 224, 283, 335 n.,	Maxim, 27, 32, 66, 161, 389, 391, 392;
482; all relations are mental in,	of identity, 201
95, 96; Brahma-kāṇḍa of Brahma-	Mādhava, 214, 215, 428, 433–435
siddhi holds that perception does	Mādhava Sarasvatī, 232
not apprehend diversity of objects,	Mādhva-Kara, 428
88, 89; his divergence of view from	Mādhyamika, 165-167
Sarvajñātma Muni, 85; his identity	Mādhyamika-kārikā, 164, 398, 426
with Suresvara the author of the	Mādhyamika-Sautrāntika, 164
Naiskarmya-siddhi disproved, 86;	Mādhyamika-sūtra, 3, 5 n.
his refutation of the category of	Mādhyamika-vṛtti,165 n., 166 n., 168 n.,
difference, 92 ff.; his refutation of	307 n. 3
"difference as negation," 97; his	māgha, 294
view of avidyā and māyā, 89; his	mā himsyāt, 493
view of Brahman as pure bliss, as	Mālatī-Mādhava, 112
elaborated by Sankhapāņi, 90; re-	māmsa, 285, 312 n. 3, 317
ferences to his doctrine by other	māṃsa-dharā, 317
Vedantic writers, 84, 85; the author	māna, 373
of Brahma-siddhi, 83; the content of	Māna-manohara, 120, 124
the Niyoga-kāṇḍa and Siddhi-kāṇḍa	mānesa, 469
chapters of the Brahma-siddhi of, 98;	mānasa pratyakşa, 69
the general content of the fourth	Māṇḍūkya, 78
chapter of his Brahma-siddhi, 87, 88	Māndukya - Gaudapādīya - bhāṣya -
mani, 359 n., 364	vyākhyā, 193
""", 359 H., 304	-yy-1 -yu

586 Index

3	
Māṇdūkya-kārikā, 78, 92, 192	Menstrual flow, 351
Māṇḍūkya-Upaniṣad-bhāṣya, 78	Menstrual product, 313
Māṇdūkya-Upaniṣad - bhāṣyārtha-sam-	Mental, 24, 500, 504; causes, 187; con-
graha, 78	tact, 139; control, 500; creation, 233,
Māra, 489	235, 243, 245; diseases, 418; func-
mārdava, 510	tions, 464; inclinations, 491; modifi-
mārga, 348 n., 350	cations, 243; movement, 238; opera-
Mārīci, 316, 333	tions, 22; phenomena, 186; state, 15,
Mārkaņdeya, 316	153, 187, 258, 500; tendencies, 468
Mārtaṇḍa-tilaka-svāmin, 107	Mercy, 373
māruta, 361	Merit, 248, 249, 416
mārutādhiṣṭhānatvāt, 316	Meru, 370
mātsarya, 267	meru daṇḍa, 352, 353 n.
Māthara Ācārya, 171	Messenger, 230
Māṭhara-vrtti, 400 n., 401 n.	Metacarpal, 285
$m\bar{a}y\bar{a}$, 10, 11, 16, 36, 41, 44, 45, 47,	Metaphorical, 329
48, 50, 51, 72, 73, 77, 84, 89, 104,	Metaphysical, 191, 192, 499, 501, 502,
106, 163, 197, 215, 217, 221, 224,	514
238, 239, 271, 473, 477, 524, 525,	Metatarsal, 285
533; alone the cause of the world,	Method of interpretation, 2
11; as an instrumental cause (Brah-	Methodological, 337
man being the material cause) ac-	Methods, 29, 166
cording to Sarvajnātma Muni, 11;	Methora, 543
differences of view regarding its re-	mettā, 460
lation with Brahman, 11; scholastic	meya - svabhāvānugāminyām anirva -
disputes as to the nature of its	canīyatā, 127
causality, 11	meyatva, 121
māyā-mātram, 37	Mice, 409
māyā-nirmitatvābhyupagamāt, 203	Middle discrimination, 140, 250
māyā power, 476	Migration, 406
māyā theory, 42	Milk, 59, 60, 97, 175, 322-324, 350
Measure, 148, 194, 360, 370	Mind, 35, 76, 154, 156, 217, 232, 243,
Mechanical, 360, 369	256, 331, 339, 355, 367, 368, 377,
medas, 312 n. 3, 317, 324, 325	406, 419, 447, 469, 498, 500-502,
medhā, 328, 373	508, 512, 530
Medhātithi, 251, 394	Mind activities, 470
Medhātithi Gautama, 393	Mind-associated consciousness, 34
Medical, 358 n., 372, 373, 376, 378;	Mind-body, 523
formulas, 435; herbs, 277, 294;	Mind-contact, 70
literature, 295, 300, 301, 354 n.;	Mindfulness, 500
practitioners, 277; science, 276;	Mind-object contact, 69
system, 352; treatment, 303 n. 4;	Mind-organ, 227, 310, 314, 366
writers (later), 299	Mind-person, 344
Medicinal, 359 n.	Mind-structure, 524
Medicine, 275, 279, 280, 320, 357,	Mineral, 333
359, 360, 363-365, 370, 371, 389,	Minor term, 139
403	Miraculous, 294; effect, 364
Medicine of Ancient India, 424 n. 2	Mirage, 5, 29, 230, 234; stream, 233
Meditation, 90, 256, 259, 447, 460,	Mirror, 180
493, 494, 500, 501, 511	Misconception, 479
Meditative union, 446	Misdeeds, 408
Medium, 229	Misery, 41, 178
medo-dharā, 317	Mitākṣarā, 82 n., 107
Medulla oblongata, 355	Mithilā, 119, 125, 394
Megasthenes, 543	mithuna, 392
Memory, 24, 148, 261, 264, 373, 374	mithyā, 105
Mendicant, 505	mithyācāra, 493
Menstrual blood, 350, 352	mithyā-jñānam, 8, 12, 413

mithyā-jñāna-nimittaḥ, 105
mithyā-samvṛta, 4, 5
mithyātva, 148, 152
mithyā-yoga, 321, 405
Mitra, 292
Mixed rasa, 359
Mixing up, 370
Mimāṃsaka, 46, 54, 72, 385
Mimāṃsā, 46, 56, 57 n., 86, 88, 98,
117 120 154 210 280 441 450
117, 120, 154, 219, 389, 441, 479, 483-488, 577; vidhi conception,
479 ff.; vidhi conception, diverse
views on, 481, 482
Mīmāṃsādhikaraṇa-mālā, 220
Mīmāṃsā-sūtra, 280 n., 400 n., 401 n.,
479
Mīmāṃsā view, 99
Mimamsists, 80, 99, 125, 171, 172,
180
Mode of mind, 15
Modes of Brahman, 44
Modification, 22, 25, 30, 101, 183, 186,
210, 215, 233, 243, 372
Modifications of māyā, 35
Moggallāna, 248
moha, 413–417, 498
mohanam, 498
Moist, 337 n., 361
Moistening, 361
Moisture, 358, 360, 365
mokṣa, 44, 227, 229, 249, 267, 407,
723
523
523 mokşa-sādhana, 228
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-śāstra, 385, 423
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-śāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232
523 mokşa-sādhana, 228 mokşa-śāstra, 385, 423 Mokşopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-śāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-śāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; ap-
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184–186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character,
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n; existents, 32; flashing, 31,
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184–186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233;
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184–186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184–186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151,
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 Mokṣa-ṣāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣa-ṣāstra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184–186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184–186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sādrana, 228 Mokṣa-ṣāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣapāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Moniem 42
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sādrana, 228 Mokṣa-ṣāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣapāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Moniem 42
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sātra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Monism, 43 Monistic, 204; interpretation, 218; type, 228; Vedānta, 219; view,
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Monism, 43 Monistic, 204; interpretation, 218; type, 228; Vedānta, 219; view, 203
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Monism, 43 Monistic, 204; interpretation, 218; type, 228; Vedānta, 219; view, 203 Mon 6, 26, 230, 525
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Monism, 43 Monistic, 204; interpretation, 218; type, 228; Vedānta, 219; view, 203 Moon, 6, 26, 330, 525 Moral, 23 n., 24, 378, 404, 464, 484,
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184–186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Monism, 43 Monistic, 204; interpretation, 218; type, 228; Vedānta, 219; view, 203 Moon, 6, 26, 330, 525 Moral, 23 n., 24, 378, 404, 464, 484, 511, 523; conflict, 453, 495; destiny,
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Monism, 43 Monistic, 204; interpretation, 218; type, 228; Vedanta, 219; view, 203 Moon, 6, 26, 330, 525 Moral, 23 n., 24, 378, 404, 464, 484, 511, 523; conflict, 453, 495; destiny, 206, 207; discipline, 500; efforts,
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Monism, 43 Monistic, 204; interpretation, 218; type, 228; Vedanta, 219; view, 203 Moon, 6, 26, 330, 525 Moral, 23 n., 24, 378, 404, 464, 484, 511, 523; conflict, 453, 495; destiny, 206, 207; discipline, 500; efforts,
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Monism, 43 Monistic, 204; interpretation, 218; type, 228; Vedānta, 219; view, 203 Moon, 6, 26, 330, 525 Moral, 23 n., 24, 378, 404, 464, 484, 511, 523; conflict, 453, 495; destiny, 206, 207; discipline, 500; efforts, 466, 467; elevation, 447, 457; injunctions, 278; life, 418; precepts,
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Monism, 43 Monistic, 204; interpretation, 218; type, 228; Vedānta, 219; view, 203 Moon, 6, 26, 330, 525 Moral, 23 n., 24, 378, 404, 464, 484, 511, 523; conflict, 453, 495; destiny, 206, 207; discipline, 500; efforts, 466, 467; elevation, 447, 457; injunctions, 278; life, 418; precepts, 494
523 mokṣa-sādhana, 228 mokṣa-sāstra, 385, 423 Mokṣopāya-sāra, 232 Molecular, 194 Momentariness, 66, 184, 186 Momentary, 5, 32, 63, 70, 71, 96, 177, 182, 184-186, 201, 367, 368; appearance, 32; cause, 185; character, 182 n.; existents, 32; flashing, 31, 63; ideas, 30; imaginations, 233; individuals, 59 Moments, 15, 26 n., 27 n., 60, 65, 151, 182, 184, 206, 211 n., 236, 238 Mongolia, 164 Monism, 43 Monistic, 204; interpretation, 218; type, 228; Vedānta, 219; view, 203 Moon, 6, 26, 330, 525 Moral, 23 n., 24, 378, 404, 464, 484, 511, 523; conflict, 453, 495; destiny, 206, 207; discipline, 500; efforts, 466, 467; elevation, 447, 457; injunctions, 278; life, 418; precepts,

Morbid elements, 319 Morbidities, 325 Morbidity, 336, 360, 362, 365 Mosquitoes, 409 Mother-energy, 355 Metion, 163, 360 Motionless, 408 Motor dhamanī, 351 Motor organs, 261 Mouth, 156, 325 Movement, 188, 235, 352, 365, 371; of thought, 254 Moving, 332, 361 mrdu, 359 n., 361 mrgatrsnikādayah, 21 n. mr:yu, 299 Mucus, 276 Mudga, 358 n. muditā, 412, 460 mudrās, 455 mukhya, 259 n. 3 Muktāvalī, 225 mukti, 245, 272 Muktika, 511 n. Muktika-Upanisad, 246, 247 n., 511 n. Mukundadāsa, 443 Mukundāśrama, 82 n. Multiplicity, 243 Mummadideva, 232 Mumuksu-vyavahāra, 231 Mundane, 512 muni, 233, 506 Munidāsa, 431 muñja grass, 296 Muñjavān, 298 n. 4 Mundaka, 345, 551 Mundaka-bhāsya-vyākhyāna, 193 Mundaka-Upanisad, 50, 78, 250 n., 260, 344 n., 345, 494, 495, 551 Mundaka-Upanişad-bhāşya, 78 Muralidhar, P., 424 Muscles, 254 Music, 498 n. Mutual dependence, 159 Mutual help, 184 Mutual interdependence, 140 Mutual negation, 122, 200, 226 Mutual reference, 158 Mutual relations, 204 mūḍhā, 378 mūlādhāra, 453 mūrdhni, 449 mūrttāmūrtta-rāśi, 44 mūtrūtisāra, 296 Mysterious centre, 356 Mysterious Kundalini, The, 353 n. Mysterious operation, 364 Mysterious power, 356

Mystic, 534	Nāduvil Matham, 198
Mystical cognition, 491	Nāga, 75, 539
Mystical state, 451	Nāganātha, 434
Wiystical state, 451	Nāgārjuna, 3, 4, 7, 8, 10, 30, 51, 119,
mada zur	124, 127, 163-165, 168, 170, 171,
nada, 345	372, 398, 424-428, 436; his criti-
Nagnaka, 300	cism of causation as interpreted by
Nails, 325, 326 n.	
nairūpya, 174	Bhavya and Candrakīrti, 164, 166;
Naisadha-carita, 126, 393	his criticism of causation contrasted
Naiskarmya-siddhi, 17, 80, 82, 84, 99,	with that of the Hinayanists, 168;
100, 102, 148 n., 198, 199, 216, 251	his criticism of the concept of
Naişkarmya-siddhi-ţīkā, 148 n.	"going," 168 ff.; his distinction of
Naiskarmya-siddhi-vivarana, 99	limited truth (samvrta) and absolute
naişțhikī, 415	truth (paramārtha), 3; his view re-
Naiyāyika, 51, 71, 108, 118, 120, 124,	garding production and nature of
127, 128, 131, 134, 139, 144, 146,	things, 41; his main thesis of "no
163, 167, 171, 172, 176, 182, 185,	thesis," 163, 164, 166, 167
189, 227, 329, 412	Nāgeśa, 262
na kimcid avedişam, 154	Nāgeśvara, 55
Nakşatra-kalpa, 283	nākşatrāņi, 292 n.
Nakula, 432	nāma-rūpa, 498
naļam, 345 n.	nāma-rūpāṅkura, 307
Nara, 537, 543	Nāma-saṃgraha-mālikā, 220
Naradanta, 428	Nănă Dîkşita, 17, 52, 222 n., 225
Narahari, 57, 231, 443	nānāpekṣa-pratiyoginām bhedaḥ pratī-
Narasimha, 79	yate, 95 nāra, 538
Narasimha Bhatta, 55	
Narasimha Kavirāja, 329 n., 434	nārāyaṇa, 439, 535, 537, 539, 541, 543,
na svarūpa-dṛṣtiḥ prati-yogy-apekṣā,	545, 546, 548, 549; conception of,
199 National Courses 187	537, 538
Natural forces, 185	Nārāyaṇa Dīkṣita, 54 n.
Natural quality, 502	Nārāyaņa Jyotisha, 57 n.
Nature, 358 n., 501, 525; of conscious-	Nārāyaņa Yati, 79
ness, 64; of knowledge, 194; of	Nārāyanāśrama, 53, 54, 216
things, 372	Nārāvanendra Sarasvatī, 78
Nauseating, 501	nāsikya, 250 n. 3
nava, 385	ñāna-saṃvara, 500
nava-dvāram, 292	Nearness, 360
Nava-nitaka, 435	Necessary antecedence, 186
Nava-sāhasānka-carita, 126	Neck, 336
nava-tantra, 385	Negation, 85, 91, 95, 97, 110, 117, 131,
navābhyasta-tantra, 385	132, 143, 162, 182, 194, 222, 223,
Navel, 318, 342, 350, 352, 355	271, 438
navya-nyāya, 124	Negative, 117, 121, 153; criticism, 192;
na vyavahāra-bījam, 89	instances, 121; pleasures, 90
Naya-maṇi-māla, 219	Negativity, 193
Naya-mayūkha-mālikā, 219	Neither-real-nor-unreal, 117
Nayana-prasādinī, 147, 156 n.	Neo-realist, 269
nābhi, 289	Nepal, 58 n.
nābhi-kanda, 355	Nerve-physical, 356
nādī, 257, 263, 289 n., 290, 291, 344-	Nerve-plexus, 353-356, 453, 455
346, 348, 353-356; its meaning, 345;	Nerves, 256, 342, 356
its number, 345 n., 348; its pre-	Nervous system, 344, 352, 453
Carakian senses, 345, 346	
nāḍlkā, 345	Nescience, 6, 9, 45, 101, 117, 148, 153,
nādī-saṃsparśanodyata, 256	195, 221, 222, 227, 449 Neutral 257, 278
Nāḍi-vijñāna, 354	Neutral, 357, 378
nāḍi-vraṇa, 296	New bones, 286 n. 1
	New moon, 519

New Testament, 549	
Nibandha, 192, 497	nivasişyasi, 551
nibandha-puṣpāñjali, 49	nivesanam, 497
	nivrtti, 507, 508
Nibandha-saṃgraha, 273, 424, 427 nibbāṇa, 460	niyama, 278, 454, 455, 491
nidaršana, 389, 392	niyama-viddhi, 46
	niyantā, 332
Nidāna, 301, 395, 397, 428, 430, 432,	niyati, 372, 410
433 Nidāna bradība 424	niyoga, 392, 481
Nidāna-pradīpa, 434	Niyoga-kāṇḍa, 87, 88, 98
Nidāna-sthāna, 395, 425, 428	nīla, 29
Niddesa, 539, 542, 549 nidrā, 104	Nilakantha, 274, 443, 545
nigamana, 379, 387	Nilakantha Bhatta, 434 n. 4
Nigama-tattva-sāra-tantra, 353 n.	Nilakaṇṭha Dikṣita, 219 nilāgalasālā, 298 n. 6
Nigamānta Mahādešika, 439	
nigraha-sthāna, 388, 401	nīlikā, 297
	nīrandhra, 354 n.
Nihilists, 127, 234	Non-appropriation, 506
niḥsvabhāva, 35	Non-being, 143, 148, 203, 238
niḥśeṣa-karmāśaya, 249	Non-Buddhistic, 164
niḥśvāsa, 327	Non-distinction, 207–209
nijigiņisanatā, 496	Non-eternal, 120-122, 386 n., 387
Nimbārka school, 443	Non-eternality, 191
Nimi, 357	Non-existence, 28, 193, 217, 243, 517
Nimi-tantra, 435	Non-existent, 12, 28, 32, 41, 111, 120,
nimitta, 74, 395 nimitta-kāraņa, 360	121, 152, 155, 161, 173, 194, 224,
	234, 235, 244, 259, 517
nimīlite, 257	Non-existing effects, 174
niranuyojyānuyoga, 389 n.	Non-injury,469,505,506,508-511,514 Non-momentary, 182
nirarthaka, 389 n.	
nirākārā buddhiḥ, 180	Non-moral, 403
nirāspadā, 21 n.	Non-perception, 200 Non-permanency of entities, 185
nirdeša, 389, 390	Non-pleasurable-painful, 23 n.
nirnaya, 389	
Nirukta, 275 n., 346 n., 535, 547	Non-production, 249 Non-self, 6, 101; elements, 24
nirvacana, 389, 392	Non-stealing, 505
nirvāṇa, 231, 247, 450 n. I	Non-transgression, 500
nirvāṇa-mātra, 233	
nir-vikalpa, 22, 374, 401	Normal, 335; duty, 509, 514, 516;
nir-vikāra, 368	measure, 319; state, 339
Niścaladāsa Svāmin, 216 n.	Nose, 325 Nostrils, 367
Niścala Kara, 427, 429	Nothingness, 16
niścaya, 173, 373, 384	Nourishment, 307
niścayātmikā, 484 n. 1	Niga, 107
niścayātmikā antaḥkaraṇa-vṛtti, 75	Nṛsiṃhasvarūpa, 52 n.
niścayātmikāḥ, 367	Nṛsiṃha Thakkura, 443
nişkarşana, 169	Nṛsimhāśrama Muni, 17, 31, 43 n.,
nişkriya, 163 nişprakārikāyāḥ saprakārakatvena bhā-	51-56, 57 n., 72, 78, 92, 103, 124,
	216-218; his date and works, 216;
vaḥ, 224	nature of his Vedantic interpreta-
nitamba, 285 n. 7, 287 n. 2 Nityabodha Ācārya, 111	tions, 217
	Number, 158, 162, 188, 360, 370
nityaga, 368 n.	Numerical, 14; difference, 370; quali-
nitya-naimittika, 442 Nityanātha Siddha, 427	ties, 162
Nityanātha Siddha, 427	Nutrient, 365 n.
nitya-sama, 380 n. 4, 382 n.	Nutritive, 357, 358; elements, 185
nityatva-pratiședhât, 386 n.	Nyāya, 19, 40, 51, 57 n., 107, 115, 117,
nityatvād, 22 n.	120, 122, 125-127, 137, 143, 146,
nityānitya-vastu-viveka, 495	,,,,,,,

Nyāya (cont.) 147, 160, 161, 168, 170, 179, 192, 205, 211, 248, 306, 307, 375, 379, 393, 394, 415, 482, 483 n. 2, 484, 485, 515, 517; its arguments in favour of the existence of God criticized by Kamalasila, 176 ff.; its idea of emancipation, 248; its theory of the subtle body, 306; origin of, 392 ff.; springs of action in, 412, 413 Nyāya, categories, 147, 148, 156, 192; definitions, 163; logic, 167; logicians, 192; perceptions, 168; philosophy, 145, 398; psychology, 414; school, 167; system, 374, 408; view, 178; writers, 124, 127, 146, 157 Nyāya-candrikā, 57 n., 425, 428 Nyāya-dīpāvalī, 51, 116, 118, 192 Nyāya-dīpāvalī-tātparya-tīkā, 116 Nyāya-dipikā, 442 Nyāya-kalpa-latikā, 83 Nyāya-kandalī, 83, 85, 249 n., 263 n. 1, Nyāya-kaṇikā, 45 n., 83, 85, 87, 107, 482 n. 1 Nyaya-loka-siddhi, 49 Nyāya-makaranda, 12, 49, 69 n., 70 n., 89 n., 116-118, 147 n., 192, 194 Nyāya-makaranda-sangraha, 192 Nyāya-makaranda-ţīkā, 116 Nyaya-makaranda-vivecant, 116 Nyāya-manjarī, 107, 248 n., 278 n., 307 n. 1, 381, 382 n., 394 n., 399, 413, 460 n. 1, 480 n. 1 Nyaya-mäla, 81 Nyāya-muktāvalī, 219 Nyāya-nibandha-prakāśa, 107 Nyāya-nirnaya, 103 Nyāya-pariśuddhi, 119, 120 Nyāya-rakṣā-maṇi, 82 n., 220 Nyāya-ratna-ṭīkā, 45 n. Nyāya-ratnāvalī, 77 n. Nyāya-sāra, 120, 122 Nyāya-sāra-vicāra, 122 Nyāya-siddhānta-dīpa, 54 Nyāva-siddhānta-mañjarī, 218 n. Nyāya-siddhānta-mañjarī-vyākhyāna, 218 n. Nyāya-sudhā, 148 n. Nyāya-sūci-nibandha, 107, 112 Nyāya-sūtra, 107, 248, 273, 371, 374, 377, 379-381, 383 n. 1, 386 n., 387, 388 n., 393, 394, 398–401 Nyāya-sūtra-vṛtti, 393 Nyāya-śāstra, 393, 394 Nyāya-śikhāmaṇi, 54 Nyāya-tattvāloka, 45 n. Nyāya-Vaiśeşika, 49, 163, 197, 310,

328, 371, 372, 515; analysis of volition, 515; criticism of its categories by Srīharşa, 127 ff.; its categories criticized by Ānandajñāna, 193, 194; its categories refuted by Citsukha, 157 ff.; its categories refuted by Kamalasila, 187 ff.; its categories refuted by Sankara, 189 ff. Nyāya-vārttika, 106 Nyāya - vārttika - tātparya - parišuddhi, Nyāya-vārttika-tātparya-ṭīkā, 45 n. nyāya-vistara, 547 nyāyācārya, 122 Nyāyāmṛta, 118, 225 Nyāyāmrta-taranginī, 118 nyūna, 384, 385, 388, 389 Object, 17, 19, 25, 27, 29-31, 35, 88, 358, 367, 401; of awareness, 20, 29, 209; of consciousness, 64; of knowledge, 27 Object-consciousness, 149 Objection, 31, 101, 153 Objective, 21, 22, 24, 508; consciousness, 236; content, 15; entities, 25; existence, 21, 149; experience, 102; ignorance, 77; plane, 73; self, 34; world, 20, 236 Objectively, 236 Objectivity, 29, 101, 153 Oblations, 448, 526 Obligatoriness, 46 Obligatory duty, 99, 506 Observation, 174, 366, 375 Obstacle, 377 Occasion, 377 Occasional, 368 Occipital, 287 n. 5 Ocean waves, 329 Odour, 320, 355, 365 Oiliness, 328 ojas, 293, 315-317, 324 n., 343, 346 Old age, 512, 523 Older literature, 104 OM, 494, 526 Omnipresent, 204, 529 Omniscience, 22, 39, 53 Omniscient, 50, 118, 177; being, 135; God, 72 Oneness, 224; of reality, 129 Ontological, 36, 265, 366, 517, 518; existence, 73; objectivity, 25 Operation, 144, 177, 198 Operative, 177; action, 137; functions, 76; principle, 333 Opposite quality, 190 Opposition, 497

1110	591
Oppositional relation, 95 Oppositional term, 95	pakṣe vyāpaka-pratītya-paryavasāna- balāt, 121
Organ, 357, 358, 365	pakvāśaya, 316, 317, 330, 336
Organism, 515	Palate, 348
Organized, 500	Palatine process, 287 n. 4
Oriental Historical Manuscripts, 219	palita, 297
Oriental Manuscript Library, 205	Patijaka, 300
Origin, 239, 410 n., 526	Pancreas, 288 n. 3
Origination, 4, 161, 235; of the sub-	Pandit, 17 n., 217, 222 n., 223 n., 224 n., 225 n., 270 n.
stratum, 12	Pandit, Mr, 111, 112
Orissa, 164	Panjpur, 429
Orthodox school, 369	panthā, 348 n.
Os calcis, 284 n. 3	Pantheism, 451
Oscillating movement, 238	Pantheistic, 1
Oscillation, 158	Pantzinor village, 429, 430
Os innominatum, 285 n. 7	pañca-daśānga yoga, 454
"Osteology," 424, 434	Pañcadast, 214, 215, 216 n., 251 n.
Otherness, 131, 132	panca-mahā-bhūta-vikārāḥ, 358
Oughtness, 482	Pañcanada, 429
Outhursts of pleasure, 245	Pañcanaliya kāvya, 126
Ovary, 290, 302, 307, 309	Pañca-pādikā, 8, 31 n., 52, 54, 102,
Owls, 409	103, 106, 148, 209, 251 Pañca-pādikā-dhyāsa-bhāṣya-vyākhyā,
Pada-candrikā, 232, 434	31 n.
Pada-mañjart, 297 n. 4	Pañca-pādikā-śāstra-darpaṇa, 31 n.,
Pada-yojanikā, 79	103
padārtha, 389, 390	Pañca-pādikā-vivaraņa, 17, 30, 31 n.,
Padārtha - candrikā - prabhāsa - nāma,	32, 33 n., 34 n., 52, 53, 79, 84, 103,
436	148, 149, 193, 206 n., 208-210, 214,
Padārtha-nirṇaya, 44	216
Padārtha-tattva, 10	Pañca-pādikā-vivaraņa-bhāva-prakāsi- kā, 31 n.
Padārtha-tattva-nirnaya, 50, 51, 57 n.	Ra, 31 n. Pañca-pādikā-vivaraņa-prakāsikā, 54,
Padārtha-tattva-nirņaya-vivaraņa, 193	103, 217
Paddy, 358 n.	Pañca-pādikā-vyākhyā, 52 n.
padma, 356 Padmanābha Paṇḍita, 126 n.	Pañca-prakriyā, 52 n.
Padmapāda, 8, 9, 30, 31 n., 32, 34, 47,	Pañca-rātra, 461, 491, 546, 547,
48, 51, 54, 79, 86, 89 n., 102, 106,	548 n.
147-149, 151, 209; causality of	Pañcasikha, 476
147-149, 151, 209; causality of Brahman, 106; his followers, 102,	pañca-vidham adhyātman, 537
103; his view of perception, etc.,	pañcendriya-guṇāvahā, 355
105, 106; meaning of ajñāna, 104,	pañcikaraṇa, 74 n., 76
105; quarrel with Buddhists re-	Pañcikaraṇa-bhāva-prakāsikā, 79
garding the nature of existence, 32;	Pañcikaraṇa-prakriyā, 79
regarding the nature of self-con-	Pañcikaraṇa-tātparya-candrikā, 79
sciousness, 33 ff.	Pañcīkaraṇa-ṭīkā-tattva-candrikā, 79 Pañcīkaraṇa-vārttika, 79
Padma-purāna, 393	Pañcikaraṇa-vārttikāharaṇa, 79
padma-yugma-traya, 257	Pañcikarana-vivarana, 79, 193
Paila, 432	Pañjikā, 31 n., 171
Pain, 175, 181, 203, 242, 248, 343,	paññā, 500, 504
360, 366, 369, 371, 373, 412, 463,	panidhi, 497
470, 510-512	para, 360, 369, 370, 378
Paintul, 23 n., 242	paraḥ ātmā, 368
Painting, 203	paralokaişaṇā, 405
Paippalāda, 283	parama-guru, 86
pakşa, 121, 139 pakşa-dharmatā, 148	parama-hamsa, 252 n.
panya-unurmutu, 140	• • •

• ,	
Parama-hamsa-Upanişad, 252 n.	Patanjali, 259 n., 265, 304 n., 403, 408,
paramam padam, 228	410 n., 414, 431, 436, 443, 447, 451-
parama-sūksma, 411	455, 458, 460, 461, 476, 477, 491,
Paramananda, 126 n.	492, 504, 539, 540, 542, 543, 546,
paramāņu, 189, 193	548, 549
paramārtha. 5	Patañjali-sūtra, 517
paramārtha-darśana, 248	Patella bone, 285 n. 4
paramārtha-prapā, 443	Path of wisdom, 495
paramārtha-rūpa, 4	Pathology, 434
paramārtha-satya, 3	Patience, 360, 500-502, 510
paramātman, 445, 446, 455, 461, 465,	Patient, 296
466	patitthā, 459, 500
paramātma-rāśi, 44	patigho, 497
Parameśvara, 53, 206	paurņamāsī, 292 n.
param ojas, 343	pauruşa, 252-254, 272, 525
param dhāma, 533	paurușa-vādins, 402
para puruşa, 468	Pauşa, 294
parasparādhyāsa, 113	Pauşkalāvata, 424
parasparopakāritā, 184	Paușkalāvata-tantra, 435
para-tantrată, 10	paustika, 281, 296
para-vijnapti-višesādhipatyāt, 21 n.	pavamāna, 292 n.
parādi, 369	pavana, 333
parā prakṛti, 465	Pavīnasa demon, 300
parärtha, 412	pācaka, 303, 330
Parāśara, 251	Pādma-tantra, 548 n. 3
Parāšara-saṃhitā, 432	pāka, 362 365, 370
Parāśara-smṛti, 83, 252 n.	Pāṇḍava, 502, 545
paribandho, 497	Pandya, 219
Paribhāṣā, 53	Pāṇini, 297 n., 538-540, 542, 543
Parietal, 287 n. 5	pāṇi-pāda-salākādhiṣṭhāna, 285 n. 3
pariggaho, 496	pāṇi-pādāṅguli, 285 n. 1
parigraha, 409	pāpa, 522
parihāra, 388	pāramārthika, 2, 44
Parimala, 106 n.	pāramparya, 374
parināma, 21, 38, 39, 44, 46, 172, 190,	Pārāśarya, 316 pāribhāşika, 363
193, 194, 224, 370, 372, 410; cause,	pārimāndalya, 189; measure, 190
45; doctrine, 171; view of causation,	Pārśvanātha, 544
45 pariņāmi-kāraņa, 51	pārṣṇt, 284
paripāka, 27 n.	pārthiva, 359
parisamkhyā-vidhi, 47	pāşaṇḍa, 541
parispanda, 256	pāṣāṇavat-samam, 266
parisat, 378	Pātanjala-Sāmkhya, 177
Parjanya, 300 n. 2	pātāla, 76, 300
paroksatvād acintyam, 316	Pätrasvämin, 172
Particles, 157	Pățaliputra, 427
Particular, 63	pāṭimokkha-saṃvara, 500
Partless, 157, 158, 190, 199	Pea, 169
Parts, 40	Peace, 444, 450, 490, 500, 501, 503,
Parvataka-tantra, 435	511
paryanuyojyopeksana, 389 n.	Peacefulness of mind, 510
Passion, 229, 373, 414, 419, 451, 453,	Pearl, 525
459, 477, 4 ⁸ 9, 493, 497, 49 ⁸ , 529,	Peculiarities, 159
531	Pelvic bone, 287 n. 1
Passionlessness, 475	Pelvic cavity, 285
Passive, 24	Pelvis, 340, 348
pasavah, 292 n.	pemam, 497
paśyanti, 353	Penances, 539

Penis, 296, 326 n.	Philosophy, 44, 51, 66, 73, 228, 504,
People, 509	509, 517, 525; of Badarayana, 36
Perceived universe, 241	Phlegm, 299, 300, 325, 365, 391
Perceiver, 22, 67, 135, 139, 155, 200-	Phlegmatic diseases, 200
202, 209, 234, 341	Physical, 238, 369, 404, 504; diseases,
Perceiving, 330; power, 200; principle,	4.8; process, 48; propulsion, 480;
199	sciences, 273; trouble, 512; world,
Perceiving-self, 200	270
Perception, 17, 18, 20, 21, 65, 88, 92,	Physician, 277, 278, 328 n., 338, 357,
116, 117, 135, 145, 148, 159, 167,	387, 389, 392, 415
180, 187, 192, 194, 200, 202, 205,	Physiological activity, 331
207, 208, 212, 213, 226, 234, 254,	Physiological effects, 360
269, 270, 302, 373, 374, 377, 401,	
407; of identity, 65	Physiological functions, 261, 263, 331,
Percepts, 270	333 Physiological apparations
	Physiological operations, 332, 335
Perceptual, 77; data, 156; experience,	Physiological position, 332
105; knowledge, 77, 192; process.	picchila, 359 n., 361
208, 217	pihā, 497
Percipi, 19	Pilgrimage, 230, 441, 508
Performance, 502	Pillar, 26
Perfumes, 498 n.	piṅgalā, 257, 292, 353 n., 354, 453,
Pericardium, 284 n. 3	454
Permanence, 186	piṇḍa, 43, 312 n., 314
Permanent, 22, 179, 241, 368, 369;	pipāsā, 496
consciousness, 71; convictions, 240;	pipāsā-sthāna, 288 n. 1
entity, 22; perceiver, 187; self, 71,	Pipe, 346
179; subject, 366; substance, 145	pippalī, 299 n. I
Persistence, 18, 67; of knowledge, 18	Pischel, R., 345 n.
Persistent, 188, 241	Piśāca, 282, 300
Persisting cause, 183	Piśāca-veda, 274 n. 3
Persisting entity, 183, 184	pitr-yāna, 519, 521
Person, 252, 255, 367	pitta, 257, 276, 282, 296, 300, 317,
Personality, 110, 524	319, 320, 325-337, 339, 341, 344,
Perspiration, 351; channels, 348	
	347, 349, 350, 361, 362, 365, 392, 524; nature of, 330, 331
Pessimism, 414, 504	pitta-dharā, 317
Pessimistic tendency, 521	pittala, 334 n.
pešt, 314, 318	pitta-prakṛti, 328, 334
Pettā Dīkṣita, 54 n.	pittāsaya, 350
phala, 359	
phala-tyāga, 444	pithara-pāka, 194
phale nersyu, 420	piyato, 490
Phantom show, 11	ptlu-pāka, 194
phana, 342, 351	Placenta, 291
Pharmacopæia, 277	Planet, 333
Pharyngeal plexus, 355	Plant, 333, 359
Phālguna, 294	Plato, 506
Phenomena, 177, 501	Playful activity, 42
Phenomenal, 126, 127, 167, 499;	Playful instincts, 178
appearance, 48; reality, 167; self,	plāśī, 289
415	Pleasantness, 358
Phenomenon, 374	Pleasing, 337 n.
Philosopher, 38, 446	Pleasurable, 23 n., 242; experience,
Philosophic, 502; analysis, 467; know-	91; state, 181
ledge, 246, 523; truth, 504; view,	Pleasure, 68, 175, 247, 248, 343, 360,
2; wisdom, 494	366, 369, 371, 373, 374, 404, 412,
Philosophical, 228, 501; development,	452, 163, 487, 504, 508-512, 520
48; idea, 366; ignorance, 417; truth,	Pleasure-seeking, 507
230	Plexus, 353 n., 356
D II	38
<i>D</i> 11	

plihan, 288	prajñāparādha, 321, 339, 405, 415-
Pluralistic experience, 204	418, 422
Plurality, 38, 39, 95, 161, 195; of	prakarana, 57 n., 231
causes, 161	Prakarana-pañcikā, 249
Points of dispute, 389	prakarana-sama, 380n., 382n., 386, 387
Poison, 359 n., 361, 497	Prakatartha-vivarana, 46, 49, 50, 72, 196-198, 205, 206, 213; its philo-
Polemic, 126, 127	sophy, dates, etc., 196-198
Polemical, 204	prakāśa-heyatvāt, 197
Poles, 208 Politics, 385	Prakāšānanda, 17-19, 31 n., 52, 53,
Polluting agents, 326–328	55, 56, 84, 221, 223-225, 270; Brah-
Pollution, 408, 409	ma and the world in, 224; discus-
Popular belief, 377	sions regarding awareness in, 17-
Positive, 47; cause, 197; entity, 182;	10; discussions regarding subjective
experience, 154; knowledge, 154;	idealism in, 17; māyā in, 224; nature
quality, 152; unity, 153	of ajñāna in, 222; nature of ānanda
Positive Sciences of the Ancient Hindus,	in, 223; negative dialectics of, 18, 19;
253 n., 356 n.	quarrel with Vasubandhu of, 19;
Positivity, 193	theory of causality in, 221-223;
Possession, 158	view-point of his work, 220, 221;
Postures, 455	works of, 225
poşaka-rasa, 323 n.	Prakāśānubhavānanda, 17 n.
Potency, 8, 31, 175, 359, 361-363,	Prakāšātman, 9, 10, 17, 30, 33, 82, 84, 89, 103-106, 118, 148, 149, 151, 193,
Potency-in-chief, 364	208-210, 214, 222-224, 234; his
Potential, 23 n.; ajñāna, 53; energy,	quarrel with the Buddhists regard-
356	ing nature of objects, 30, 31
Potentialities, 24	Prakāśātma-śrī-caraņaiḥ, 104
Potter, 249	prakopa, 335 n.
Potter's wheel, 246	prakṛti, 42, 72, 101, 104, 109, 175, 177,
Power, 8, 22, 215, 243, 510; of con-	181, 238, 239, 250, 258, 265, 272,
trolling others, $505 n$.; of produc-	334, 335, 372, 388, 410, 440, 455,
tivity, 26 n.	457, 461-465, 467, 473, 477, 478,
Prabandha-parisodhini, 52 n.	482, 515, 516, 525, 526, 533, 534
Prabhākara, 66, 67, 69, 147, 154, 155,	prakrti-dosas, 335 n.
197, 249, 483, 515; his analysis of illusion, 154; his idea of emanci-	prakṛti-māna, 335 n. prakṛtim yānti māmikām, 526
pation, 249	pralaya, 37, 48, 191
prabhāva, 323, 362, 364–366	pramā, 128, 137, 194, 206, 212, 213
Prabodha-candrikā, 443	pramāda, 413
Prabodha-candrodaya nāṭaka, 220	pramāṇa, 77, 128, 137, 167, 194, 204,
Practical action, 152	222, 254, 373, 375, 376, 379, 380,
Practical discipline, 500	384 n.
Practical movement, 155	pramāṇa-caitanya, 207, 208
Practice, 487, 500, 514	Pramāṇa-mañjarī, 120, 124 Pramāṇa-mālā, 12, 13, 51, 116, 118,
pradeša, 389, 391 pradhāna, 172, 370, 440	148, 192
Pradyumna, 543, 545	pramāṇa-samuccaya, 44
Pragalbha Miśra, 126 n.	Pramāņa-vārttikālankāra, 49
Pragmatic, 371; basis, 152	Pramāṇa-vārttikālankāra-tīkā, 49
Praise, 512	Pramāṇa-vidhvaṃsana, 398 n.
praişya-praişayoh sambandhah, 481	Pramāṇa-vidhvaṃsana-sambhāṣita-vṛ-
prajāḥ, 292 n.	tti, 398 n.
Prajapati, 484	Pramāņa-vṛtti-nirṇaya, 198
prajñapti-sat, 58	pramātr, 77, 105
<i>prajňā</i> , 24, 265, 491, 504, 548 Prajňākara Gupta, 49	prameha, 343 n. Prameya-dīpikā, 442
Prajnakara Gupta, 49 Prajnananda, 79, 196	prameya-uipika, 442 prameyatvāt, 121
- 1 mj. milatica, /9, 190	promogatous, 121

pramiti, 77	pratyātma-vedya, 22
Pramodapurandara Ācārya, 225 n.	pratyetavya, 19
praņetā, 332	pratyudāharati, 342
prasanga, 389, 391	Proudhānubhūti, 81
prasanga-pratidṛṣṭānta-sama, 380 n. 4	Pravacana-bhāṣya, 250
prasanga-sama, 381 n.	pravartanā, 482
prasāda, 318, 325, 492	pravartate, 314
prasāda-dhātu, 325	pravrtti, 389, 507
prasāra, 336 n.	pravrtti-sāmarthya, 130
Prasthāna-bheda, 225	prayatna, 238, 369–371
prasyandana, 349	prayatnādi, 371
prasama, 335	prayatnānta, 369, 370
Praśastamati, 172	prayatnāntarīyaka, 381 n.
Praśastapāda, 162, 249, 412, 413, 505,	prayatnāntarīyakatva, 382 n.
515	prayojana, 383, 384 n. 1
Praśastapāda-bhāṣya, 163 n.	prākṛta-māna, 319, 320
Praśnanidhāna, 428	prāktana, 253
Praśna-Upanisad, 78, 290 n., 344 n.,	prāmānya, 214
345	prana, 75, 76, 104, 258-260, 262, 291,
Praśna-Upaniṣad-bhāṣya, 78	292, 303, 311, 332, 333, 340, 342,
prathamā-bhūmikā, 264	344,346,347,349,352,356,373,448,
pratibandha, 176	449; as depending on the head, 340;
pratibimba, 48	as vibration, 263; as vital parts, 342;
pratibimba-vāda, 106	channels of, 347, 348; heart the
pratijñā, 379, 387	centre of, 340; history of the mean-
pratij nā- hāni, 388	ing of, 259 ff.; seat of, according to
pratijñāntara, 388 n.	Caraka, 342
pratijnā-sannyāsa, 388 n.	prāṇaiṣaṇā, 405
Pratimā-nāṭaka, 394 n.	prāṇa-karmāṇi, 448
pratimvistā, 378	pränamaya-kosa, 76
pratipakṣa-bhāvanā, 460	prāṇa-nirodha, 258, 268
pratipannopādhau niṣedha-pratiyogit-	prāṇa-saṃyamana, 454
vam, 222	prāṇa-spanda, 256, 257
pratipannopādhāva-pratiyogitva, 217	prāṇa-vahā, 318
pratisamskartr, 425	prāṇa-vahānām srotasām hṛdayam mū-
pratisthā, 279, 285	lam, 343
pratisthāpanā, 379	prāṇa vāyu, 348, 355
prati-tantra-siddhānta, 383	prāṇāpāna-gatī ruddhvā, 448
pratīkopāsanā, 448, 488	prāṇāya svāhā, 448
pratīta, 19, 128	prāṇāyāma, 256, 257, 447-449, 452-
pratītya-samutpāda, 3 n., 8	455, 458
pratyabhijñā, 33, 65, 67	prāpty-aprāpti-sama, 380 n. 4, 381 n.
pratyag ātman, 6	prārubdha-karma, 247, 250
Pratyagbhagavan, 147	Prātišākhyas, 276
Pratyag-rūpa-bhagavān, 119 n.	prātītīka-sattva, 270 prāyaś-citta, 275, 278, 281, 295, 296
pratyak, 63	
pratyak-cit, 110	Pre-condition, 405, 506 Predatory birds, 409
pratyak-citi, 9	Predominance, 367
Pratyak-svarūpa-bhagavat, 156 n.	Preferment, 501
pratyaksa, 92, 194, 207, 373, 374, 376,	Preparatory measure, 500
379, 407, 411	prerana, 481
Pratyaksadevayathācārya, 439	Presentation of the false, 154
Pratyakşa-śārīram, 354 n.	Pride, 267, 373, 409, 509-511
Pratyak-tattva-pradipikā, 222 n., 223 n.	Principle of consciousness, 20, 22
pratyaktva, 115 praty-anuyoga, 384	Principle of difference, 60
pratyaya, 395	Principle of intelligence, 20
pratyāhāra, 454, 455	Principle of thought, 35
Z:X:	

D 1 2	D. Italia san
Privilege, 505	Puṇṇabhadda, 539
prīṇana, 328	punya, 522
Probability, 373	pupphusa, 258 n., 318
Probandum, 120, 121, 139, 140	Purāṇa, 43, 74, 78, 228, 279, 328,
Probans, 139	547
Proceedings and Transactions of the First	Purāņa-veda, 274 n. 3
Oriental Conference, Poona, 400 n.	Pure, 36, 303; annihilation, 234;
Proceedings of the Madras Oriental	awareness, 33; being, 13; bliss, 13,
Conference, 232	90, 113, 215, 223; blissfulness, 92,
Process, 256, 377	cessation, 234; consciousness, 22,
Procreator, 525	30, 33-35, 46, 65, 71-74, 77, 101,
Product, 13, 18, 23, 331; complexes, 4	105, 118, 179, 181, 197, 203-207,
Production, 11, 18, 25, 32, 37, 38, 41,	209, 211, 227, 235, 236, 238, 241-
62, 166, 168, 173, 174, 177, 182, 184,	243; essencelessness, 234; extinc-
186, 187, 190, 235, 236; of action,	tion, 233; happiness, 22; idea, 234;
473; of knowledge, 18	intelligence, 8, 13, 21, 22, 50, 89 n.,
Prognostication, 396, 397	102, 110, 233, 477; negation, 234;
Prohibitions, 504	thought, 24; vacuity, 235
Projection of objectivity, 25	Purificatory rites, 278
Proof, 128	Purity, 469, 502, 505, 510, 511, 513,
Proper discernment, 134	514, 542; of heart, 510; of mind,
Proper measure, 325	438, 441
Proper proportion, 327	purīṣa, 317
Property, 357–360, 365, 506	purīşa-dharā, 317
Propulsion, 481, 482	puritat, 344
Prosperity, 501	puruşa, 181, 234, 241, 250, 251, 255,
Protection, 505	265, 272, 379, 380, 385, 388, 440,
Proud, 510, 511	457, 458, 461, 465-467, 472, 477,
prstha-gatāsthi, 287 n. 1	524, 537
prstih, 286	puruşah parah, 465
prthak, 370	puruşa-kāra, 256
prthaktva, 194, 370	puruşa-narayana, 537
prthivi, 75	Puruşa-niścaya, 342 n.
Psychical frame, 105	Puruşa-sükta, 523, 524, 537
Psychical process, 48	puruşārtha, 547
Psychological, 108, 265, 366; appear-	purusottama, 55, 416, 466
ance, 32; constituents, 58; duality	Purusottama Dīkṣita, 115
of awareness, 29; elements, 58–60;	Purusottama Sarasvatī, 79, 225
entities, 59; existence, 73; experi-	Purusottamavana, 120
ence, 170; ignorance, 12, 100;	pury-aṣṭaka, 245
necessity, 25; objectivity, 25; objects of awareness, 29; self, 9; thought,	Pus, 325, 330 Puṣpāñjali, 80
35	pūraka, 257, 258
Psychologically, 31	Pūrņaprajna, 120
Psycho-physical parallelism, 339	Pūrņākşa Maudgalya, 357
Psychosis, 24, 29, 250, 254, 464	Pūrņānanda, 232, 354 n.
Psychosis-transformations, 22	Pūrņānanda Sarasvatī, 79
Pthisis, 288, 299	Pūrņānanda Tirtha, 78, 79
Pubic, 348; bone, 285 n. 7; nerve,	Pūrņānanda Yati, 353 n.
353	pūrva, 400 n.
Pubis, 285 n. 7	pūrva-kāla-bhāvitva, 160
Public good, 485	pūrva-pakṣa, 389, 391
pudgala, 58, 59	pūrva-prajnā-saṃskāra, 104
Pudgala-viniścaya, 58 n., 59 n.	pūrva-rūpa, 336 n., 396, 397
punar-ukta, 388, 389 n.	pūrvavat, 398–400
Punarvasu, 395	Pūrvottara - mīmāṃsā - vāda - nakṣatra-
Punarvasu Ātreya, 393	mālā, 219
Pungent, 337 n., 357-359, 363	pūṣā, 353
	-

pūtikā, 296 рйуа, 330 п. Qualification, 186 Qualitative change, 15 Qualities, 5, 143, 148, 152, 158, 161, 162, 187, 190, 359, 360, 369-374. 378, 462, 501, 505 n., 515 Quick, 337 n. Quickness, 156 Race, 501 Radius, 285 n. 6 Rage, 497 Raghunātha, 146 Raghunātha Siromani, 124. 126 n. Rains, 59, 321, 327, 335, 370 rajas, 72, 74, 75, 303, 314, 319, 329, 367, 372, 419, 436, 456, 468 rajas element, 261 rajo-vahana-nādyaļi, 344 n. Rajputana, 539 Rajshahi, 49 Rajwade, V. K., 551 n. Rakşah, 300 rakta, 317, 324, 326, 327, 339, 352 rakta-dharā, 317 rakta-duști, 324 ram, 551 Rangaraja Adhvarin, 54 Rangarāja Makhīndra, 218 Rangoji Bhatta, 55, 108 rañjaka, 330 rasa, 194, 236, 302, 312 n. 3, 317, 322-325, 327, 328, 339, 343 n., 347, 348, 350, 357-366, 390, 391 rasa-dhātu, 323 rasa-dușți, 324 Rasa-ratnākara, 427 Rasa-sāra, 123 rasa-sthāna, 350 rasa-vāhinī, 348 n. Rasābhivyañjikā, 56 Rasātala, 76 rasāyana, 276, 301 Rasāyana-tantra, 425 Rasika-rañjinī, 443 rati, 490, 497 Ratnakirti, 49 Ratna-prabhā, 103, 104, 429 Ratna-tūlikā, 56 Ratna Vaira, 40 raukşya, 337, 362 n. Ravigupta, 432 Ray Chaudhury, Dr., 544, 550 Rādheya, 48

Rādhamalla, 326 n.

rāga, 267, 413, 414, 489, 497 rāga-dveşa, 420 rāgādi, 369 Rāghavānanda, 78, 115 Rāghavendra Svāmin, 443 Răghavendra Yati, 17 n. rāja-karmāņi, 296 Rāja Makhīndra, 218 rājasa, 367, 373, 468-470 Rāja-tarangiņī, 431 Rājānaka, 443 rāksasas, 283 Rāma, 229, 230, 255, 507, 546 Rāmabhadra, 79 Rāmabhadra Dīkṣita, 431 Rāmabhadrānanda, 56 Rāmabhadrāśrama, 55 Rāmacandra, 79, 238 Rāmacandra Tīrtha, 79 Rāmacandra Yajvan, 220 Rāmacandrārya, 82 n. Rāmadatta, 99 Rāmadeva, 231 Rāmakaņţha, 443 Rāmakṛṣṇa, 53, 216 n., 443 Rāmakṛṣṇa Adhvarin, 208 Rāmakṛṣṇa Bhaṭṭa, 434 n. 4 Rāmakṛṣṇa Dīkṣita, 54 Rāmanārāyaṇa, 443 Rāmanātha, 57 n., 434 Rāmanātha Vaidya, 434 Rāmarūdrī, 264 n. Rāmatīrtha, 52, 56, 79, 85, 111, 115, 118, 193 Rāmādvaya, 197, 198, 204, 205, 208, 212-214; ajñānas as many, 210, 211; continuity of perception through a rapid succession ajñāna covering and its removal in, 211; his date and work, 204, 205; his definition of right knowledge different from that of Vedānta-paribhāṣā, 212; his relation with Pañca-pādikā, 209, 210; his theory of Vedantic perception in contrast to that of Vedanta-paribhāṣā and Sikhāmaṇi, 225 ff.; his view different from that of the Vedānta-paribhāṣā on the subject of the continuity of perception, 211; his view of time, 211, 212; movement of vrtti and perception, 208-210; place of antahkarana in perception, 208-212; pure consciousness and perception, 211 Rāmājñā Pāndeya, 225 n., 226 Rāmānanda, 52 n., 82 n., 439 Rāmānanda Sarasvatī, 10, 31 n., 56, 80, 103, 196

	~
Rāmānandatīrtha, 79, 232	Relativity, 157
Rămānuja, 43, 125, 201, 219, 262, 439,	Rele, 353 n., 354
441, 442, 542	Religion, 525
Rāmānuja-bhāṣya, 262 n. 2	Religious, 367, 509, 525; discipline,
Rāmānuja-mata-khandana, 220	488; duty, 505; endeavours, 488
	Remoteness, 369
Rămāyaṇa, 229, 230, 506	
Rāmayaṇa-bhārata-sāra-saṃgraha, 220	Renunciation, 252, 444, 457, 458, 510,
Rāmāyana-sāra, 220	_ 514
Rāmāyaṇa-sāra-saṇgraha, 220	Repentance, 508
Rāmāyaņa-sāra-stava, 220	Repetition, 360
Rāmāyaņa-tātparya-nirņaya, 220	Reply, 388
Rāmāyaṇa-tātparya-saṃgraha, 220	Reports on Sanskrit Manuscripts, 219
	Repository, 22
Rămendra Yogin, 57 n.	
Rāmeśvara Bhāratī, 82 n.	Repulsions, 239
rāśi, 44	Resemblance, 131
React, 23	Resolution, 253
Real, 117, 167, 271; God, 2; ignorance,	Respiratory process, 258 n. 1
4; objects, 26; souls, 2; substance,	Responsibility, 501, 505, 507, 508
23; transformation, 38, 39, 44;	Result, 376
world, 2, 20	Retentive power, 373
Realism, 271	Revelation, 13-16, 197
Realistic, 1, 2, 213; definitions, 163,	Reward, 503
168; interpretation, 38; logic, 167;	Rhetoric, 220
transformation, 38, 39, 44	Rhetorician, 171
Reality, 5, 15, 20, 73, 115, 165, 181,	Ribs, 286 n. 2
186, 193, 195, 206 n., 236, 245, 268,	Rice, 358 n.
499	Right cognition, 134, 136, 137
Realization, 233, 239, 524	Right conduct, 405, 406, 423
Rearing, 505; of cows, 505 n.	Right knowledge, 99, 153, 181, 187,
Reason, 120, 121, 123, 139, 148, 194,	194, 206, 212, 213, 229, 239, 248,
375 Payaning at and ann	251, 261 Bight responsion res
Reasoning, 24, 376, 377	Right perception, 135
Rebirths, 75, 90, 305, 407, 465, 520-	Right thinking, 90
523, 530	Right volition, 500
recaka, 257, 258	Ritual, 547
Récentes Découvertes de MSS. Médi-	Ritualistic, 284
caux Sanscrits dans l'Inde, 425 n.	Rockhill, W., 276, 277, 424 n. 1
Receptacle, 179, 526	roga-bhisag-jittya-vimāna, 377
Recognition, 65, 67, 184	rohint, 317, 396
Recognition of identity, 33, 34, 66; in	romāvarta, 342
Buddhism and Vedānta, 33 ff.	
	Root, 347, 365; desires, 243; inclina-
Rectum, 288, 318, 331, 336, 348, 351	tions, 243, 255
Red, 27, 344 n., 349	Rooted instincts, 248
Reed, 346	Root-impression, 31
Reflection, 50, 55	Rope, 7, 37, 73, 106
Refutation, 127, 146, 147, 160, 188,	Rosy, 349
189, 192; of action, 188	Roth, 274, 283
Relation, 15, 22, 24, 25, 34, 44, 96, 106,	Rough, 332, 338
121, 144, 146, 152, 158, 159, 167,	Roughness, 360
173, 191, 203, 204, 372, 374, 397;	ruci, 497
of identity, 34; of inherence, 148,	Rudimentary element, 76
158, 187-189; of inseparability,	
	Rudra, 538
194 Relationing as	Rug-viniścaya, 434
Relationing, 31	rūkṣa, 332, 338, 357, 359, 361, 363,
Relationship, 152	_398
Relative concept, 91	rūpa, 377
Relative space, 157	rūpatva, 374
Relativistic, 164, 213; philosophy, 164	rūpin, 202

	3,,
rūrah, 298 n. 4	samaveta-samavāya, 374
Rg-Veda, 281, 345, 346, 394, 486, 535,	samaya-viruddha, 38 =
537 D V V V	sama-yoga-vāhin, 319
Rg-Vedic, 301; hymns, 280; sacrifices,	samādhāna, 459, 500
281	samādhi, 24, 251, 452, 454, 455, 484 n.,
Rju-vivarana, 52 n.	500, 504
Rk, 274, 390, 526	samāna, 75, 258, 260, 291, 332
Rkşagrīva, 300 rsi, 295 n. 3, 394, 539	sambandhi-svabhāva-janya 142 sambandhi-svabhāva-śrita, 142
111, 293 11. 3, 394, 339 Itavah, 292 n.	sambhāvanā-bhāṣya, 103
, tuoun, 292 n.	Sameness, 511; in all situations of life,
sabhāga-santati-vicchedākhyam, 21 n.	511; in blame, 511; in joy, 511; in
Sabhā-parva, 544	praise, 511; in sorrow, 511
sac-chāstra, 267	samīcīna, 370
Saccidānanda, 79	samuccaya, 389, 392
Sacral nerve, 353	sa:nudga, 287
Sacral plexus, 355	samutthāna, 395
Sacrifice, 353 n., 437, 441, 448, 473.	Samyagbodhendra Samyamin, 52 n.
479, 483, 485, 487, 501, 504-506,	sarıyagjñānādhigama, 249
510, 513, 514, 523, 526, 535, 537	samyak, 135
Sacrificial, $43 n$, 494 ; actions, 493 ;	samyak-paricchitti, 134
duties, 474, 479; performance, 522	sambhava, 384
sacro-coccygeal plexus, 355	saṃbhāṣā, 378
Sacrum, 285 n., 287 n.	saṃbhinnobhaya-rūpatvāt, 104
sad-asadbhyām vilaksaṇam, 127 Sadānanda, 55, 231	samghāta, 463 samgraha, 49
Sadānanda Kāsmīraka, 57, 196	saṃharṣa, 378
Sadānanda Vyāsa, 443	Saṃhitā-kalpa, 283 n.
Sadāsiva, 219	Samhitā-vidhi, 283 n.
Sadāsivendra Sarasvatī, 82 n.	samjñā, 23
sa-deha-muktatā, 245	samkalpa, 373
sad-vṛtta, 405, 420	samkalpa-nagaram, 233
Sages, 395, 539	samkalpa-puruşa, 233
saguṇa-brahma, 218	Samkarşana, 539, 542, 543, 545, 546,
sahabhūtam kāryam, 186	548
Sahadeva, 432	saṃkhyā, 370
saha-kaṇṭhikā, 289 n. 3	Samkşepa-śārīraka, 11 n., 17, 43 n.,
sahakāri, 160	45 n., 52, 54, 56, 85, 110-112, 115,
sahakāri-kāraņa, 109	216, 223 n.
Sahapāla Deva, 427	Samkşepa-śārīraka-sambandhokti, 52 n.
sahasrāra, 353, 356	Samkşepa-śārīraka-sāra-samgraha,116,
sahasrāra-cakra, 356	225 cambrābti 207 #
sahopalambha-niścaya, 49	saṃprāpti, 397 n. saṃsarga, 338 n.
sahopalambha-niyama, 26 n., 35 sahopalambha-niyamād, 26 n.	saṃsāra, 44
Saint, 247, 420, 501, 506	Saṃsāra-taraṇī, 232
Saintly persons, 264	saṃskāra, 65, 360, 370
Saline, 358, 359	sansrti, 234, 238
Salt, 357	saṃśaya, 383, 389, 392, 500
Salvation, 228, 305	samsaya-sama, 380 n., 382 n., 386, 387
sama, 236	samślesa, 307
sama-dhātoḥ, 327 n.	samślesa-pratyaya, 207
sama-pittānila-kapha, 334	samvara, 500
samatva, 451, 511	samvatsarāļi, 292 n.
sama-vāta-pitta-śleşman, 334 n.	samvedanamaya, 256
samavāya, 40, 148, 183, 184, 187, 189-	samvid, 63, 149, 201, 208, 235, 259
191, 194, 371, 374; relation, 374	samvit-karma, 68
samavāyi-kāraņa, 143, 360	samvit-spanda, 254

ajñāna in, 115; commentaries on his
Samksepa-śārīraka, 115, 116; differ-
ence of his view with that of Man-
dana, 85; his date, 112; his view of
the causality of maya, 11; nature of
ajñāna, 112; nature of Brahman,
114; Vedānta and Buddhism in,
115
sarva-pratyayānām yathārthatvam,
148
Sarva-siddhānta-rahasya-ṭīkā, 55
sarva-srotāmsi ayana-bhūtāni, 347
sarva-tantra-siddhānta, 383
Sarvato-bhadra, 443
Sarvānga-sundarī, 434
sarvāpahnava, 265
Sarvārtha-siddhi, 119 n.
sarve bhāvā anutpannāḥ, 167
sarvendriya-param, 341
sat, 194, 373
sataś cetyāṃśa-cetanāt, 236
satata-kriyā, 370
sati, 500
sati-samvara, 500
sat-kārya-vāda, 39, 165, 172-174, 472,
473, 477, 517; its criticisms by
Kamalaśīla and Śāntarakṣita, 172 ff.
sattā, 10
satthakamma, 276
sattva, 72, 74, 183, 193, 197, 206, 250,
303, 308, 313, 319, 329, 366, 367,
372, 419, 436, 456, 462, 468, 542
sattva-saṃśuddhi, 510
sattva stuff, 211 sattva-śuddhi, 438
satya, 4, 76, 383, 505, 510
Satyabodha, 98
satya-vacana, 505, 544
Satyavān, 306 n. 1
satya-yuga, 409
Saubhāgya-vardhinī, 79
saukşmya, 315
saukşmyāt, 349
saumanasyāni, 296
saumya, 313
saumyatva, 513
Saunāgas (grammarians), 540
Sautrāntikas, 26 n.
sa-vikalpa, 107
sa-vyabhicāra, 384, 386 n.
sa-vyabhicāra hetu, 386 n.
sādhaka, 330
sādhana, 115
sādharmya-vaidharmya-sama, 380 n. 4
sādhāraṇa, 357, 506
sādhāraṇa-dharma, 505, 506, 514
sādhāraņatva, 358
sādhūpadiṣṭa-mārgeṇa, 252, 253

sādhya, 139, 380, 381 n., 388 n.	Sātyaki-tantra, 435
sādhya-sama, 386 n., 387	Sāyaṇa, 79, 187, 215
sādhyābhāvavad-avrttitvam, 120	288 n., 289, 290,
Sāhasānka-carita, 428	299, 344 n., 345 n.
Sāketa (city), 540	Scapula, 286 n. 4
sākṣi consciousness, 214	Scattering, 337 n.
sākşin, 53, 154	Sceptical, 498 n.
Sāma, 274	Scheme of life, 415
sāmagrī, 161, 164	Scholastic, 11, 124;
Sāman, 526	Scholasticism, 119
sāmarthyātišaya, 97 sāmānya, 371, 397	Science, 73; of life,
sāmānya-chala, 385, 386	Scriptural command
sāmānya-pratyāsatti, 139	Scriptural injunction
sāmānyato-dṛṣṭa, 398, 399, 400 n.	Scriptural text, 252 Scriptures, 114, 253,
Sāmin, 57 n.	Seal, Dr Sir B. N
Sāṃkhya, 36, 37, 42, 74, 89 n., 10	506 n.
107, 115, 165, 172-175, 181, 227,	Seasons, 389
242, 250, 260, 292, 300, 304, 312,	Seat of consciousnes
314, 328 n., 329 n., 332, 372, 388 n.,	Second moon, 26
394, 410, 411, 414, 451, 455-458,	Secretions, 288 n., 3
461, 463, 465, 467, 468, 472, 473,	339, 345
475-477, 493, 517, 518, 549, 550;	Secretive aspect, 331
475-477, 493, 517, 518, 549, 550; arguments, 173; its general criti-	Secretory character,
cisms by Kamalasīla, 175; philo-	Secretory currents,
sophy, 273 n., 428; physics, 273;	Seed, 160, 185, 235
prakrti, 74; refutation of its soul	Seeds of memory, 1
theory by Kamalaśīla, 181; system,	Seeming appearance
366 Sambhan and Nusiva on the theory of	Self, 1, 8, 16, 21, 23,
Sāṃkhya and Nyāya, on the theory of	68, 71, 73, 76, 10 156, 180, 181, 194
doşas, 328, 329 n. Sāṃkhya-kārikā, 80, 106, 116, 249,	215, 217, 223, 30
250 n., 262, 304, 377, 400 n.	367-369, 373, 38
Sāmkhya parināma, criticisms of, by	446, 462, 471, 47
Sāntarakṣita and Kamalaśīla, 171 ff.	525
Sāmkhya-pravacana-bhāşya, 262, 305,	Self-abnegation, 228
306 n, 1	Self-alienation, 240
Sāṃkhya-sūtra, 250, 372	Self-cognizing, 74
Sāmkhya-tattva-kaumudī, 45 n., 305 n.	Self-conscious, 235;
Sāṃkhya-Yoga, 261, 262, 310, 313 n.,	Self-consciousness,
414, 546; its doctrine of subtle body,	236
304, 305; its idea of emancipation,	Self-contained, 14;
249, 250; <i>prāṇa</i> in, 261, 262	Self-contentedness,
Sāmkhyic, 311	Self-contradiction, I
Sāmkhyist, 165, 171, 173, 234, 517	Self-control, 242, 24 448, 493, 500, 505
Sāmrājya-siddhi, 56	Self-controlled, 420
sāndra, 359 n.	Self-criticism, 272
sāra, 359 n. sārajjanā, 497	Self-dependence, 17
sārajjitattam, 497	Self-directed, 236;
Sāranga, 123	Self-dissociated, 121
Sārasvata-prakriyā, 192	Self-evident, 13, 16,
sārāgo, 497	Self-flashing, 236
Sārārtha, 99	Self-gain, 507
sātmya, 308	Self-good, 405
sāttvika, 367, 373, 468	Self-hood, 24
Sātvata, 541-543, 546, 547	Self-identity, 34, 66-
Sātyaki, 541	Self-illumination, 14

187, 215, 280 n., 281, 283, 289, 290, 292, 293, 298 n., n., 345 n., 346 6 n. 4 337 n.98 n. life, 415 11, 124; logicism, 124 m, 110 ; of life, 278 command, 522 injunction, 228 text, 252 114, 253, 267 Sir B. N., 356 n., 483 n., 30 sciousness, 302 on, 26 288 n., 325, 327, 331, 337spect, 331 haracter, 337 n. currents, 346 185, 235 emory, 187 opearances, 235 6, 21, 23, 24, 33, 34, 42, 65, 3, 76, 101, 112, 148, 152, 181, 194, 197, 206 n., 211, , 223, 308-310, 343, 351, 373, 387, 388, 401, 444-, 471, 473, 512, 516, 518, ation, 228 tion, 240 ing, 74 ous, 235; ego, 238 ousness, 22, 68, 181, 195, ned, 14; state, 239 tedness, 477 diction, 123 l, 242, 244, 277, 373, 441, , 500, 505, 513, 514 lled, 420 sm, 272 dence, 17 ed, 236; consciousness, 236 iated, 121 t, 13, 16, 483 g, 236 07 405 24 v, 34, 66-68, 71 nation, 148

Salf interest 470 486 507 508 555	Sense-experiences, 24
Self-interest, 470, 486, 507, 508, 513	
Selfish interest, 485	Sense-faculties, 23, 24, 58
Selfishness, 503	Sense-functioning, 24
Self-knowledge, 227, 239, 373, 437,	Sense-gates, 462
442, 493, 499	Sense-gratification, 510
Self-love, 24, 414, 507	Sense-illusions, 5
Self-luminosity, 70, 73, 104	Sense-impressions, 349, 351
Self-luminous, 8, 65, 68, 70, 126, 168,	Sense-knowledge, 25, 208, 355
199-201, 217; consciousness, 204	Sense-modifications, 23
Self-manifesting, 8, 69	Sense-object, 23, 62, 76, 77, 180, 194,
Self-meditation, 466	206, 207, 215, 320, 321, 332, 343,
Self-mortifications, 469	351, 367, 373, 463
Self-ostentation, 416	Sense-organ, 138, 187, 213, 269, 309,
Self-perception, 67, 73	310, 315, 327, 332, 333, 358, 360,
Self-persistence, 67, 68	366, 515
Self-realization, 456, 515, 532	Sense-perception, 23, 24, 30, 116, 167
Self-realized state, 512	Sense-pleasure, 514
Self-recognition, 195	Sense-property, 199, 359 n., 360
Self-reflecting, 235	Sense-quality, 355
Self-restrained, 277	Sense-uncontrollability, 488
Self-revealed, 152, 180, 201	Sensible, 28, 29, 369
Self-revealing, 69, 72, 74, 104, 110,	Sensory consciousness, 357
156, 197, 201, 221; consciousness,	Sensory dhamanī, 351
33, 150, 152, 154	Sensory nerves, 349
Self-revelation, 63, 109, 110, 129, 148,	Sentence, 236
	Separateness, 148, 162, 194, 360
149, 151 Self-same, 97	Separation, 194, 370
Self-satisfied, 512	Sequence, 20
Self-seeking, 507	Series, 23, 26 n.
Self-shining, 15	Serpent Power, 356
Self-shiningness, 36	Sesamum, 97
Self-surrendering, 461	seśvara-sāṃkhya, 476
Self-thinking, 235	Sex-attraction, 509
Self-validity, 214; of knowledge, 214	Sex-continence, 421, 469, 505, 513
Selling, 505	Sex joy, 324
Semen, 302, 304, 307, 313, 317, 322,	Sex-relation, 498 n.
323 n., 330, 347, 352, 361, 372;	Sex-strength, 276
channels, 348	Sex-union, 509
Seminal fluid, 322-324	Shama Sastry, Dr, 436
Semi-statical creation, 235 n.	Shamefulness, 24
Senart, É., 550	Sharp, 361
Sensation, 48, 269; of smell, 342	Sharpness, 360, 362 n., 365
Sense, 23, 35, 151, 153, 194, 239, 254,	Sheath of knowledge, 75
261, 292, 344, 360, 366, 368, 369,	Shivering, 294 n., 301
401, 406, 489, 493	Shoots, 160, 169
Sense-affections, 512	Shoulder-blade, 286
Sense-attraction, 450, 488	sibbant, 497
Sense-channels, 89 n.	siddham, 390
Sense-cognition, 58, 73, 349, 367,	Siddha-sāra-saṃhitā, 432
373	Siddha-yoga, 427, 428, 433, 435
Sense-contact, 138, 145, 152, 154, 374,	siddhānta, 383, 385
498 Sanua control 152 150 187 102 107	Siddhānta-bindu, 77 n., 226
Sense-control, 453, 459, 487, 490, 491,	Siddhānta-bindu-nyāya-ratnāvalī, 79
502, 505, 511, 514	Siddhānta-bindu-sandīpana, 79
Sense-data, 34, 58, 60, 176, 180, 188,	Siddhānta-bindu-sīkara, 220
351	Siddhānta-bindu-tīkā, 225 n.
Sense-desire, 513	Siddhānta-candrikā, 434
Sense-enjoyments, 73	Siddhānta-dīpa, 115

G: 1 II = -4 - 3-4:1 =	
Siddhānta-dīpikā, 17, 57 n.	smṛti-bhraṃśa, 417
Siddhānta-leśa, 10, 11, 17, 44, 47, 49,	smṛti-śāstra, 438
50, 53, 72, 216 n.	smṛti-vibhraṃśa, 410
Siddhānta-leśa-saṃgraha, 220	Snake, 7, 37, 74
Siddhānta-muktāvalī, 11, 17, 18 n.,	Snake-charms, 281
222 n., 223 n., 225, 263 n.; its view	snāva, 289, 346
that māyā alone is the cause of world-	snāyu, 257, 285 n., 312 n., 313 n., 318,
appearance; and Brahman the basis	352
of māyā, 11	sneha, 328, 442, 497
Siddhānta-nidāna, 337 n.	snigdha, 357, 359 n., 361, 363
Siddhānta-nyāya-ratna-pradīpikā, 79	Social order, 509
Siddhānta-ratnākara, 220	Society, 509
Siddhānta-siddhānjana, 56	Sockets, 286 n.
Siddhānta-tattva-bindu, 55, 79, 225	Soft, 337 n., 361
Siddhānta-tattva-bindu-ṭīkā, 55	Softness, 360
Siddhānta-viveka, 51	Solar, 145, 148; vibrations, 156, 157
Siddhi-kāṇḍa, 87, 88, 98	soma, 303, 330, 333, 359, 428
Siddhi-sthāna, 357, 426, 429	soma-cakra, 356
Significance, 504	Sorcery, 301
sikatāvatī, 290 n. 3	Sorrow, 249, 295, 311, 416, 467, 504,
silāñjālā, 298 n.	
	511-513, 530
Silver, 37, 113, 135	Soul, 44, 178, 236, 248, 303, 306, 309,
Similarity, 131, 134	311, 314, 343, 356, 357, 360, 367,
Simile, 26 n., 329	371, 372, 406, 530
Simultaneity, 156	Soul theory (Kumārila), criticized by
Simultaneous, 31 n., 388 n.; production,	Kamalaśila, 179 ff.
178	Soul theory (Nyāya), criticized by
Simultaneously, 26, 27, 31 n., 178	Kamalaśila, 178, 179
Sin, 246, 404, 409, 414, 422, 442, 508,	Sound, 24, 60, 182, 355, 367, 382 n.,
522	386 n., 387
Sincerity, 469, 502, 505 n., 510, 511,	Sound-cognition, 180
513, 514; of mind, 505	Sound-potential, 236
sineho, 497	Sour, 331, 357
Sinful, 409	Sourasenoi, 543
Sinner, 512	Source, 358, 410 n.
Sītārāma, 82 n.	South India, 53
Skanda, 107	Space, 168, 194, 360, 369, 381 n.
Skanda-purāṇa, 393	Space-determinations, 23
skandha, 58, 59, 286, 450 n.	Space-locations, 29
Skeleton, 288	spanda, 235 n., 244, 254, 263
Skill, 502, 505 n.	spanda-śakti, 104, 257
Skin, 317, 324, 330, 348, 361, 367	spandāspandātmaka, 234
Skull, 279, 352, 353 n.	sparša, 194, 236
Slander, 498 n.	Spatial, 16; difference, 370; extension,
Sleep, 257, 261	25 n.
Sleepiness, 373	Special capacity, 175
Slim, 337	Special efficiency, 97
Slipperiness, 360, 365	Special power, 40
Slippery, 361	Specific, 357, 374; agency, 359; caste-
Slow, 338	duty, 506, 507; duty, 505, 506, 514;
Smaller intestine, 336	ignorance, 77; nature, 358; par-
Smaller self, 451	ticulars, 148; peculiarities, 187;
Smartness, 505 n.	purpose, 359; qualities, 139, 189;
Smell, 194, 236, 330, 360, 367	relation, 31
Smoky, 160, 408	Speculation, 373, 410 n.
Smooth, 337 n., 357	Speech, 241, 254, 333, 338, 469; organ,
Smoothness, 328, 360	346
smṛti, 54, 238, 239, 373, 514, 549	Sphota-siddhi, 87 n.
. 7517 5 7 577 5757 5 17 5 17	

Spider, 74, 178	Subhūti Gautama, 316
Spider's webs, 178	Subject, 27, 29, 31, 35, 88
Spinal column, 287 n., 352, 353	Subject-consciousness, 149, 211
	Subjective, 22, 24, 180, 187, 204, 377,
Spinal cord, 353, 355–357	508, 522; act, 197; character, 522;
Spine, 353 n.	cognition, 19; conscience, 522; ego,
Spiral, 355	236; experiences, 102, 149; ideas,
Spirit, 234, 282	
Spiritual categories, 467	21, 48; idealism, 48; ignorance, 77;
Spleen, 288, 348	illumination, 206; mental, 16; same-
Spring, 335, 370	ness, 511; states, 149; thought, 236
Springs of action, 411, 413	Subjectively, 217, 233
sprhā, 413	Subjectivistic, 213
srotas, 291, 346-350, 352	Subjectivity, 9
Stabilized, 500	Subject-object awareness, 29, 33
Stage, 236, 238	Subject-object consciousness, 24
stana, 286	Subject-object knowledge, 250, 266
Star, 333	Subject-objectless, 235, 238, 271
State, 236, 250; of deep sleep, 245	Subject-object relation, 88, 105, 144,
Statical, 234	146, 152, 153
Stcherbatsky, 58 n., 59 n., 61 n., 166 n.	Subodhinī, 55, 73, 75 n., 115, 443
Steadiness, 328, 360, 419, 505, 510; of	Subrahmanya, 81
mind, 492	Subrahmanya Agnicin Makhindra,82 n.
Steady, 491	Substance, 19, 47, 51, 117, 143, 158,
Sternum, $286 n$.	161, 162, 167, 172, 187, 188, 191,
sthairya, 419	193, 194, 203, 261, 358–360, 363,
Sthairya-vicāraņa, 126	
sthavirāntra, 289	369-371, 373 Substanceless 16, 222
sthālakas, 286 n. 3	Substanceless, 16, 233
sthālakārbudas, 286 n. 3	Substance-stuff, 12
	Substantial, 337 n.
sthāna-vijnapti, 23	Substantiality, 38, 48
sthānāni, 336	Substantive, 187; basis, 23; reality, 20
sthāpana, 452	Substitution-meditation,449,452,479,
sthāpanā, 379	488
sthira, 241, 359 n.	Substratum, 19, 194, 195
Sthiramati, 19, 21, 22 n.	Subtle, 332, 377; states, 245
sthira-pratyaya, 240	Subtle body, 75, 245, 302, 306, 351 n.;
Sthira-siddhi-dusana, 49	in Sāmkhya-yoga, Vaišesika and
sthita-dhī, 440, 491	Nyāya, 304–306; agreement of the
sthita-prājna, 247, 491	Vedānta and Caraka, 312
sthiti, 18, 169, 177, 231	Subtler, 368
sthula, 337 n., 359 n.	Success, 512
stimita-gambhīra, 232	Succession, 20, 156, 179
Stomach, 330, 331, 336, 362	Successive processes, 374
Stone, 512	Sudhindra Yati, 443
Stormy, 408	Suffering, 238, 247, 368, 373, 404, 479,
Straightness of conduct, 511	522
Strength, 327, 336	Sufficient cause, 18
strī-karmāni, 296	Sugar-cane, 361
Student, 505	suhṛt, 378
Studies in the Medicine of Ancient India,	Suitability, 370
279 n., 284 n., 286 n.	Suitable, 370
Study, 505, 510, 514	sukha, 22, 277, 370, 422
Stuff, 10; of world-objects, 35	sukha-duhkhe yugapaj janyete, 91
Suali, L., 398 n.	sukham āyuḥ, 277
Sub-conscious, 21, 33, 34; impressions,	Sukhaprakāśa Muni, 58, 86, 116, 148 n.
33, 250	sukha-rūpa, 217
Subheşaja, 276 n.	sukha-sanga, 462
subhisaktama, 293	Sumati, 172
: •	

	3
Summer, 327, 335, 370	Sutala, 76
Sun, 330, 499, 525	sūksma, 305, 332, 337, 359
Sunāmā (demon), 300	sūkṣma-deha, 304
Suparņa, 539	sūkṣma-śarīra, 75, 76
Superficial changes, 24	sūkṣmāḥ-śirāḥ, 346
Super-imposed, 206	Sūryapandita, 443
Super-imposition, 149, 209, 213	Sūṣā, 290
Superior, 178	Sūṣāṇi, 290 n. 4
Superiority, 370, 401 n.	Sūta-samhitā, 251
Super-person, 476, 529, 533	Sūtra-bhāṣya-vyākhyāna, 82 n.
Super-personality, 478, 524, 525	S:ītras, 38, 39, 41, 44
Support, 143; of <i>māyā</i> , 45	Sūtra-sthāna, 329, 330, 366
Supposition, 18, 31	sūtrātman, 76, 215
Supreme bliss, 453	svabhāva, 4, 89, 372, 410
Supreme essence, 16	svabhāvātišaya, 173
sura, III	sva-dharma, 439, 502
Suranandī, 428	akāraņa-sattā-samavāya, 41
Surat, 154	sva laksaņa, 167
Sureśvarācārya, 1 n., 17, 46, 48, 51,	sva māna, 325
52, 57, 78-80, 82-87, 98-102, 105,	svapna, 264
111, 112, 147 n., 148 n., 192, 198,	svapna-jāgara, 266
216; karma and emancipation in,	svapna-nara, 266
99; karma and jñāna, 100; nature of	sva-prakāśa, 69, 148, 197
ajñāna, 101, 102; nature of self and	sva-prakāśatā, 108
self-realization, 100, 101	sva-prakāśā cit, 109
Surgery, 276, 330	Svar (world), 76
Suriya, 539	svarūpa-bheda, 129
susūkșmān, 342	Svarūpa-nirņaya-ṭīkā, 193
Susruta, 263, 273, 275-279, 284 n.,	sva-samjñā, 389
285 n., 286 n., 287 n., 302 n., 303 n.,	sva-saṃvedana-mātrakam, 235
304,316,317,329 n., 330-333, 334 n.,	sva-saṃvin-nairapekṣeṇa sphuraṇam,
342, 344 n., 348, 349, 350 n., 351,	197
352, 361 n., 362-365, 372, 389, 410,	svastyayana, 278, 281
423-426, 429, 433, 435; his de-	svasyāpi svena vedyatvāpātāt, 151
scription of the apertures of the	svatah-prāmānya, 214
dhamants, 350; his description of the	sva-viṣaya-jñāna-jananam, 32
function of the dhamants, 350 ff.;	sva-vyāghāta, 123
on dhātu-mala, 331; his view re-	svayaṃbhū-linga, 355
garding the relation of dhamanis to	svayam-prakāśa, 149
cognition, 351 ff.; his view regard-	Svayamprakāśa, 56, 82, 192
ing sirās and dhamanīs, 349; his	Svayamprakāśa Yati, 79
view that the cognitive and cona-	Svayamprakāša Yogīndra, 57 n.
tive nerves are attached to the brain,	Svayamprakāšānanda, 56
342; his view that souta is a dosa, 329	svābhāvikah sambandhah, 141
Suśruta-candrikā, 425, 428	svābhinna-kārya-janakatvam upādā-
Suśruta-samhitā, 258 n., 273, 276 n.,	natvam, 45
277, 279, 313 n., 315 n., 318 n., 331 n.,	svādhiṣṭhāna-cakra, 355
335 n., 336 n., 342 n., 344 n., 349 n.,	svādu, 358
372 n., 377 n., 389 n., 390, 423-429	Svāmidāsa, 428
Suśruta school, 289	Svāmikumāra, 431
Suśruta-Sūtra-sthāna, 361 n.	Svāmīndrapūrņa, 52 n.
sușirāḥ, 352	Svānubhūti-prakāša, 55
susumnā, 292, 353-355, 453, 454	svārtha, 412
suşumņā nādī, 345	
	Svātma-voga-pradīpa, 57 n.
susupta, 241, 264	Svātma-voga-pradīpa, 57 n. svāvidyayā, 84
susupta, 241, 264 susupta-sadrša-sthiti, 264	Svātma-voga-pradīpa, 57 n. svāvidyayā, 84 Sweet, 242, 309, 325, 327, 337 n., 347,
susupta, 241, 264	Svātma-voga-pradīpa, 57 n. svāvidyayā, 84

606 Index

Syllogism, 119-122, 373 Symbolic sacrifice, 544 Symbolic syllables, 499 Symbols, 337 Sympathy, 247, 511 Symptoms, 293, 295, 320, 329 n., 336, 337, 348 n. Syncretistic, 54; works, 55 Synonymous, 348 Syrup, 358 System, 375, 525 Systematic study, 1 Systematized, 500 Sabara, 87, 171 śabda, 346, 376, 381 n., 383 śabda-brahma, 354 n. Sabda-nirņaya, 103 n. śabda-nyāyārtha, 392 šabdatva, 374 śabdartha, 187 śaitya, 362 n. Saiva, 54, 218, 219, 443; authorities, 263; commentary, 218; philosophy, Śaiva-bhāṣya, 218, 220 Saiva-kalpa-druma, 220 Saivism, 49 Śakadhūmaje (demon), 300 śaktayah, 243 šakti, 8, 10, 22, 40, 44, 104, 175, 215, 218, 362, 363 śaktimat, 11 saluna, 297 salya, 276, 390, 424 Salya-tantram, 330 n., 425 šama, 444, 495, 505 n. Šambūka, 506, 507 Śańkara, 2, 5-9, 11, 21, 25, 27-30, 35, 37-39, 41-44, 46, 48, 51, 77-79, 81, 85 87, 89, 92, 99, 100, 102, 105, 108, 111, 112, 119, 124, 151, 171, 172, 189, 191, 196, 218-221, 228, 231, 246, 250, 260-262, 267, 268, 270, 272, 288 n., 311, 344, 346, 437, 438, 442, 443, 446, 448, 449, 452, 453, 456-458, 474, 478, 495, 499, 504, 507, 533, 549; and some Buddhists differ regarding the ontology of illusion, 5; attempts to prove that his philosophy was realistic, 2; bhedābheda interpretation prior to, 43; contradicts his own view on idealism, 28 did not elaborate the exact nature of the causality of avidya or of Brahman, 11; emphasizes that waking experience is as false as dream experience in Gaudapāda's commentary, 28, 29; his assertion

that the world-appearance is mere illusion is dogmatic, as also the doctrine that the self is the only ground on which all illusions are imposed, 8; his commentary cannot satisfactorily convince that the sūtras professed unqualified monism, 42; his criticism of the atomic theory, 189 ff.; his criticism of the theory of samavāya, 190; his definition of illusion, 5, 6; his dialectic arguments, 180 ff.; his explanation as to the illusory creation by ignorance: interpretation of his explanation by his other followers, 8; his explanation of the causal theory on realistic lines as against Nyāya, 39-41; his four important followers and the divergence of their views, 47, 48; his idealism compared with that of Yogavāsistha and Buddhist idealism, 268 ff.; his interpretation of the Brahmasūtra and the Upanişads as reconciliation of the pantheistic and dualistic tendencies, 2; his interpretation of illusion in Gaudapāda's Kāri $k\bar{a}$, 6; his realistic interpretation of the Brahma-sūtras with parenthetic reservation, how far justifiable, 39; his refutation of Buddhist idealism, 269, 270; his refutation of Buddhistic idealism, 27; his refutation of the charge of the incompatibility of the production of the impure world from the pure Brahman, 37; his refutation of the Samkhya criticism of Vedānta, 36, 37; his two different analogies regarding the production of the world from Brahman, 37; his view of the nadis and the heart, 344; his views regarding sirā and dhamani, 344 n.; his works and followers, 77-82; how far he is justified in sometimes taking parināma analogies and sometimes the view of magical creation, 38; originator of Vedanta dialectics, 163; special nature of his dialectic as distinguished from that of Sriharşa and Citsukha, 191, 192 Sankara-bhāṣya, 11, 103, 108, 251 Śańkara-dig-vijaya, 82, 86, 112 Sankara Miśra, 103 n., 126 n., 356 Sankara school, 3, 30, 44, 62

Sankarasvāmin, 172

111, 148, 214 Śaṅkara-vijaya, 111

Śańkara Vedānta, 11, 16, 17, 34, 35,

Sankarānanda, 82, 86, 215, 443

śankā, 141 Seşagovinda, 55 śankha, 287 n., 342 Sesanrsimha, 205 Sankhapāṇi, 83, 87, 89 n., 90, 91, 94, Seşa Sārngadhara, 119, 196 353, 354 śesavat, 398, 399, 400 n. śarat, 335 Śikhāmaṇi, 53, 54, 74 n., 208 śartra-chidra, 348 n. śiksā, 547 śarīrī, 303 n. 4 Śikṣā, 275 n. Sarku (demon), 300 Šikṣā-samuccaya, 501, 513 Śaśadhara Acārya, 54 Singhana, 123 Satapatha-brāhmaņa, 279, 286, 289, Sipivista, 535 368, 394, 424, 486, 535-537 śirasi şat, 287 n. śauca, 505, 510 śiras-tāl»-antara-gatam, 341 Saunaka, 316 śirā, 256, 289, 291, 318, 342, 344, 346, Śaunaka-tantra, 435 348-350, 352, 354 Saunakiya, 283 śirā-saraņi-kotare, 256 śaurya, 328, 370, 505 n. Sişya-hitaişinī, 126 n. Sıva, 82 n., 218, 265 Sıvadayālu Srīdharasvāmin, 443 śābdī bhāvanā, 479, 480 Śākalya, 252 śākhā, 283 Šīvadasa, 364, 431, 432, 435 śākhā-nāḍīnām, 200 n, 2 Šīva-karņāmṛta, 220 Sākunteya, 357 Sivalāla Sarman, 79 śālākya, 276, 424 Šiva-līlārņava, 219 Śālākya-tantra, 425 Šiva-purāņa-tāmasatva-khaņḍana, 220 Śālikanātha, 147 n., 249 Sivarāma, 57 n., 103 Sāli-stamba-sūtra, 307 Siva-sūtra-vimaršinī, 263 n. Šiva-šakti-siddhi, 126 śānta, 234, 235, 281 Śiva-tattva-viveka, 220 Săntarakșita, 25, 28, 31 n., 58 n., 171, Śivāditya, 147 n. 172, 175, 176, 178, 179, 181-188, 375, 376; his argument against the Sivāditya Miśra, 123 Upanişadic view similar to that of Šivādvaita-nirņaya, 220 Saṅkara, 28 Šivānanda-laharī, 220 Śivānanda-laharī-candrikā, 220 śānti, 450 n., 510 Sivānanda Yati, 57 n. Śānti-kalpa, 283 Śivārcana-candrikā, 220 Sānti-śataka, 460 n. 1 Śivārka-maṇi-dīpikā, 219, 220 Sāṇḍilya-sūtra-ṭīkā, 225 Šivopādhyaya, 263 śārada, 298 n. Šivotkarsa-candrikā, 220 Śārīra, 350 n., 351 n., 352 n., 415, 469 Śivotkarşa-mañjarī, 220 Šarīra-brāhmaņa, 251 śtghra, 338 Šārīraka-bhāşya, 56, 246 n. Śārīraka-bhāṣya-prakaṭārtha, 49 śīla, 459, 500, 501, 504 Sārīraka-bhāṣya-ṭīkā, 193 śirsa, 340 śtrsakti, 296, 299, 340 Sārīraka-mīmāṃsā-bhāṣya, 56, 78, 80 Śārīraka - mīmāṃsā - nyāya - saṃgraha, śirsāmaya, 299 30 n., 82 śīta, 332, 335, 338, 357, 359, 361 Śārīraka-mīmāmsā-samgraha, 82 n. śita-virya, 361 śttosma-varsa-laksanāh, 321 n. Sārīraka - mīmāṃsā - sūtra - siddhāntaśttosmānilaiļi, 314 kaumudī, 82 n. ślaksna, 359 n. Šārīraka-nyāya-maņimālā, 82 n. śleşma, 299 Śārīra-padminī, 435 ślesma-dhara, 317 Šārīra-sthāna, 284 n. ślesmala, 334 Sārngadhara, 288 n., 326 n., 327 n., ślesman, 276, 282, 296, 319, 325, 327, 435; his view of mala, 326 328, 330-333, 335, 336, 337 n., 344, śāstra, 253, 254, 385, 445 347, 319, 371, 391 Sāstra-darpaņa, 82, 103, 108 n. ślesma-prakṛti, 328, 334 Šāstra-prakāšikā, 83, 193 ślesmā, 299 Šāstra-siddhānta-leša-tīkā, 225 ślis, 330 śāstrāntara, 399 śloka, 230 śeṣa, 400 n.

608 Index

Śloka-sthāna, 392 Śloka-vārttika, 428 śoci, 297 śonita, 302, 312 n., 329, 330, 335 n., śraddhā, 292, 468, 494 śrāddha, 282 Śrima (demon), 300 śritāh, 340 Śri, 294 Sribrahma, 428 Śrī-darpana, 126 n. Śridhara, 49, 147 n., 264 n., 306, 412, 444, 446, 449 n., 452, 453 n., 456, 462, 474, 478, 484 Sriharşa, 24, 51, 53, 54, 56, 57, 83, 92, 103, 119, 124-129, 131-133, 135, 137-139, 141, 143-147, 163, 164, 168, 170-172, 192, 194, 218, 248; awareness and its object cannot be similar, 134; Buddhist precursors of pre-Sankara Vedanta dialectic, Kamalasīla and Sāntaraksita, 171 ff.; compared and contrasted with Nāgārjuna, 170, 171; his assertion of indefinability of all appearances is a direct challenge to Nyāya-Vaiśeşika, which thinks that all that is knowable is definable, 127; his criticism of "being," 142; his criticism of the Buddhist definition of right cognition, 136; his criticism of the definition of "invariable concomitance," 141, 142; his criticism of the nature of concomitance (vyāpti), 139, 140; his criticism of non-being, 142; his criticisms often refer to Nyāya definitions rather than to Nyāya thought, 146; his criticism of the Nyāya definition of "cause," 144; his criticism of the Nyāya definition of right cognition, 133 ff.; his criticism of the Nyāya theory of relation, 144; his criticism of the possibility of knowing the class-concepts, 139, 140; his criticism of substance and quality, 143; his criticism of tarka, 140, 141; his criticism of Udayana, 141; his date, works and followers, 125, 126; his dialectic compared with that of Nāgārjuna, 163; his dialectic distinguished from that of Sankara, 191, 192; his difference with the Mādhyamika position, 168; his difference with Vacaspati and Mandana, 101; his ontologic argument for the existence of Brahman, 128; his refutation of analogy,

142; his refutation of "difference," 129; his refutation of the category of "difference," 129 ff.; his refutation of the definition of cause, 143-145; his refutation of the definition of perception, 137, 138; his refutation of the notion of instruments of knowledge in, 137; his view that all definitions may be proved false, 128 ff.; his view that world-appearances are false because all definitions of any of their categories are selfcontradictory, 147; method of his dialectic, 133; perception cannot challenge the instruction of the Upanisads, 129; precursors of his dialectic, Kamalasīla and Sāntaraksita, 171 ff.; responsible for the growth of verbalism in the new school of Nyāya, 146; similarity of his dialectic to that of Nagariuna, 127 Śrikaṇāda, 354, 355 Śrikaņţha, 218, 219 Śrikantha Bhatta, 79, 427, 432 Śrikantha Datta, 428, 435 śrīmad-ānanda-śailāhva-pañcāsyam satatam bhaje, 193 Śrīmad-bhagavad-gītā, 228, 247, 250 Śrīmad-bhāgavata-ṭīkā, 226 Śrīmādhava, 427, 428 Śrīnātha Cūḍāmaņi, 225 n. Šrīnivāsa, 120 Šrīnivāsa Yajvan, 57 n. Śrīranganātha, 108 Śrisimha, 123 Śrī-vidyā-paddhati, 225 śroni-guda-samśraya, 331 śroni, 285 śront-phalaka, 285 n. 7 Śruta-prakāśikā, 262 n. śrngātaka, 342 śubha, 341 Śubhagupta, 172 Šubhańkara, 126 n. śubhāśubha, 23 n. śubhāśubha-karma-vipāka, 23 n. śuci-dravya-sevana, 505 śuddha, 36 śuddha-samvit-mayā-nanda-rūpa, 264 Suddhānanda, 192 śukra, 312 n., 317, 328 śukra-dharā, 317 śukra-prādur-bhāva, 351 śunthi, 363 śusira-kara, 332 n. śuşma, 300, 301, 331 śusmino jvarasya, 298 Sūdra, 502, 504, 506, 514, 531

śūla, 298, 346 Tantra school, 354, 355, 357 śūnya, 234, 271, 330 Tantra-siddhānta-dīpikā, 219 śūnyatā, 7 tantra-yantra-dharah, 332 Śūnya-vāda, 426 tantra-yukti, 389, 390 Śūnya-vāda theory, 3 Tangalva, 300 śūnya-vādin, 2, 35 Tanka, 43 n. Šūnya-vādin Buddhists, 7 tauhā, 490, 496, 499 Śvayathu, 431 tapah, 76, 229, 423, 437, 469 506, 508, śvetā, 317 510, 513, 514, 523, 536, 544 Švetāšvatara, 471 tapo-yajña, 487 śyena sacrifice, 381 n., 483 n. tarka, 140, 141, 376, 454 şad-anga, 343 Tarka-cūḍāmaṇi, 54 şad-anga yoga, 453, 455 Tarka-dīpikā, 108 şad-āśraya, 312 n. Tarka-kāṇḍa, 87, 88, 92 Şad-darsana-samgraha-vrtti, 148 n. Tarka-pāda, 84 n. şad-indriya, 366 Tarka-saṃgraha, 49, 50 n., 51, 116 n., Ṣaṣṭi-tantra, 476 119 n., 192, 193, 194 n., 210, 211, Ṣaṭ-cakra-nirūpaņa, 353 n., 354 Tarka-viveka, 51, 79 Tachibana, 496 tarko 'pratyakşa-jñānam, 376 Tactile, 176 taruna asthi, 286 n. Tactual particles, 25 n. Taste, 181, 194, 199, 236, 355, 357-Tactual sense, 156 360, 362-366, 370 tad anusandhatte, 238 Taste cognition, 180 tadātve, 374 tathya-samvṛti, 4 tad-bhāva-bhāvitā, 376 tat param, 499 tad-utpatti, 183 tattva, 193 Tattva-bindu, 45 n., 87 n., 107 tadvati tat-prakāraka-jñānatvam, 214 Tattva-bodha, 57 n. taijasa, 548 taiksnya, 362 n. Tattva-bodhint, 52 n., 54, 115, 216 n., Taittirīya, 78, 486 217 Tattva-candrikā, 79, 193, 431 Taittiriya-Āraņyaka, 538 Taittirīya-bhāşya-țippaṇa, 193 Tattva-cintāmaņi, 54 Tattva-cintāmaņi-prakāśa, 54 Taittirīya-bhāṣya-vārttika-ṭīkā, 193 Taittirīya-brāhmaņa, 251, 280 n., 291 n. Tattva-dipana, 10, 52, 79, 103, 193, Taittirīya-prātiśākhya, 394 208 n., 210 Tattva-dīpikā, 79, 222 n. Taittirīya-samhitā, 536 tattva-jñāna, 252 Taittirīya Upanişad, 494 Taittirīyopanişad-bhāsya, 78 Tattva-kaumudī, 250 Taking of pure food, 505 Tattva-kaustubha, 54, 219 Tattva-muktā-kalāpa, 119 n., 262 n. 3 takman, 298, 299, 300 n. 2 Tattva-muktāvalī, 219 tala-kūrca-gulpha, 285 n. Tattva-pradīpikā, 51, 83, 119 n., 139, Talātala, 76 147, 148 n. tamas, 72, 74, 104, 234, 267, 303, 304, Tattva-samīkṣā, 45 n., 83, 87, 106, 107, 314, 318, 319, 329, 367, 372, 419, 110 n., 116 436, 456, 462, 468, 499 Tattva-samgraha, 20 n., 25, 27 n., 28 n., tan-mātras, 74, 236, 245, 305, 477 31 n., 171, 172 n., 182 n., 186 n. tannāśomuktir ātmanah, 99 Tattva-samgraha-pañjikā, 174 n. tantra, 276 n., 352 tattva-śraddhā, 495 Tantra anatomy, 356, 357 Tattva-śuddhi, 57 n. Tantra-cūdāmaņi, 353 n. tattva-tīkā, 43 n. Tantra literature, 354 n. Tattva-vaiśāradī, 45 n., 262, 306 n. Tantra philosophy, 356 Tattva-vibhākara, 250 Tantra physiology, 273 Tattva-vibhāvanā, 87 n. Tantras, nādī-cakras in, 354-356; su-Tattva-vivecana, 54 summā, its position in, 353, 353 n., Tattva-viveka, 54, 72 354; system of nāḍīs in, 352-354 Tattva-viveka-dipana, 54, 217 n. Tantra-sāra, 432

Thoughtfulness, 513 Tattvāloka, 49, 50, 193 Thought-movement, 235 n., 254 Tattvānusandhāna, 56 Thought-principle, 35 Tattvopadeša, 81 Thought-processes, 21, 256, 369 Taxila, 276, 424 Thought-stuff, 29 Taylor, 219 Thought-substance, 24 tādātmya, 31 n., 183 Throat, 331, 348, 361, 365 tādātmya-pratīti, 40 Tibet, 164 tālu, 287 n. 4 tālu-mūla, 288 n. 1 Tibetan, 59 n., 164 Tibia, 285 n. 6 tāluşaka, 287 n. 4 Tiger, 509, 513 tāmasa, 373, 468 tikta, 312 n. 3, 350, 357, 358 tāmasika, 367 Tilak, 550, 551 n. tāmrā, 317 Tilakasvāmin, 107 Tantric charms, 281 Time, 68, 148, 156, 157, 187, 194, 321, Tāṇḍa, 283 358, 360, 369, 370, 372; and space, Tārā-bhakti-taranginī, 225 266 Tātparyu-bodhinī, 216 n. Tirumalai Nayaka, 219 Tātparya-candrikā, 441 tiryag-ga, 351 Tātparya-prakāśa, 231, 235 n., 266 Tātparya-ṭīkā, 107 tīkṣṇa, 359, 361 Teacher, 254, 378, 420, 513, 534 tīvratara, 251 Teaching, 378, 505 tīvrā, 291 Tongue, 326 n., 331, 348, 367 Technical term, 377 Topic, 377 Teeth, 326 n. tejas, 236, 241, 245, 312, 313, 362, Tortoise, 109 Touch, 194, 236, 355, 358, 360 505 n., 510 Toxicology, 435 Tejo-bindu, 454 tejo-dhātu, 307 toya, 333 Trachea, 286 n. 2 Tekka Matha, 49 Telang, K. T., 122, 123, 549, 550 Trade, 505 n. Tradition, 78, 102, 377 Temperament, 378 Temples, 287 Tranquillity, 229 Temporal, 15, 16, 342; bones, 287 Transcendence, 512 n. 5; determinations, 187 Transcendent, 21, 22, 524, 526; re-Temptation, 501 ality, 16; self, 10, 368; state, 455 Tendons, 348, 501, 510, 511, 516 Transcendental, 168; principle, 72 Term, 373 Transformation of Brahman, 42 Transformations, 20-23, 25, 35, 36, Terminology, 14 Testicles, 318 38, 51, 88, 104, 114, 171, 177, 198, 206, 207, 210, 211, 221, 224, 232, Testimony, 39, 114, 170, 373 Texts, 17 233, 332, 347, 501 Theist, 226 Transgression, 100, 275, 405, 422, 505 Theistic, 1 Transitory, 490 Theology, 525 Transmigration, 372, 411 Theory, 357, 501; of creation, 194; Transparent, 337 n. trasareņu, 157 of momentariness, 31; of pain, 91; of perception, 168; of substances, 371 Trayyanta-bhāva-pradīpikā, 52 n. Thesis, 19, 21, 29, 163, 165, 166, 170, Tretā age, 409, 410 183, 189, 194, 232, 387 Triads, 306 Trickery, 378 Thickness, 360 trika, 285 n. 7 Thing, 359 n., 498, 510 Third Oriental Conference, 1 n. trika-sambaddhe, 286 n. 4 Thirst, 335 n., 348 tri-kāla, 375 Thoracic vertebrae, 286 n., 287 n. 1 Trilocana, 107 Trilocanaguru, 107 Thought, 23, 189, 191, 236, 266, 302, 367, 373, 405, 414 Triṃśikā, 21, 22 n., 25, 26 n., 29, 35 Thought-activity, 235, 240, 272 Trinity College, 14 Thought-creation, 235 n., 244 Trinity Street, 14

_	011
Tripathi, 49, 50n., 116, 192, 193 n., 19	6 Umbilicus, 289
tri-prakāra-mahā-sthūņam, 257 n. 2	Unaffected, 42
Tripuri-prakaraņa-tīkā, 193	Unattached, 510, 511
Trišikha-brāhmaņa, 454	Unattachedness, 511
Triune, 23	Unattachment, 524
trivent, 354	Uncaused, 63
tri-vidha, 401 n.	Unchangeable, 24, 33, 42, 45, 63, 73,
Trivikramācārya, 52 n.	164, 179, 206 n., 221, 240, 271, 368,
trivṛt-karaṇa, 74 n.	369, 476; consciousness, 181
Troubles, 501	Uncompounded, 74
True associations, 155	Unconditional, 176
True experience, 155	Unconditionality, 160
True knowledge, 164, 174, 246, 457	1 nconnected, 230
True proposition, 155	Unconscious, 181
True recognition, 155	Unconsciousness, 265
Trunk, 343	Uncontradicted existence, 30
Truth, 3, 114, 118, 378, 494, 495, 53	34 · udemonstrable, 22
Truthful, 513	Underlying consciousness, 53, 206,
Truthfulness, 373, 505, 510	207, 209
tṛṣṇā, 413, 415 n., 499	Undesirable, 512
trtīyaka, 297	Undetermined fruition, 249
Tubercles, 286 n. 3	Undifferentiated, 23 n., 474; aware-
tuccha, 224	ness, 211
tulyārthatā, 371	Unhappy, 277
turya, 264, 267	Unhealthy, 320
turyālīta, 264, 266 n.	Uniform motive, 178
Tübingen, 283	Unimportance, 370
tyakta-kartrtva-vibhramah, 245	Uninferable, 454
tyāga, 505, 508, 510	Unintelligent, 36–38 Unintelligible, 12, 138, 143
tyāga-mātra, 228 Tippaņa, 425, 428	Uninterrupted succession, 25 n.
Tikā-ratna, 52 n.	Unique, 13, 228; relation, 31
į tha-ratha, 32 m.	Unity, 85, 243; of consciousness, 179;
ubhayedyuḥ, 297	texts, 46, 81
Ubiquitous, 14	Universal, 63, 139, 374; altruism,
ucchlankhau, 285	501; characteristic, 159; compassion,
ucchvāsa, 327	461; concomitance, 140; duty, 506;
ucitena pathā, 313	friendship, 501, 511; piety, 511;
Udara, 431	pity, 501; self, 6, 9; spirit, 457
udara, 287 n. 1, 289	Universality, 85, 194
Udayana, 40, 51, 107, 119, 123-12	6, Universe, 11
134, 140, 141, 147 n.; criticized l	by Unknowable, 263
Sriharşa on the subject of tarka, 1.	41 Unlimited, 63
udāna, 75, 259, 260, 332	Unmanifested, 232, 263, 357, 358, 471,
udāsīnā, 378	519, 525, 530; state, 236
udāvarta, 391	Unmāda, 431
uddeśa, 389, 390	Unmāda-cikitsitam, 341 n.
Uddyotakara, 119, 124, 137 n., 147 r	
171, 182 n., 186, 384 n., 393, 39	4, Unperceivable, 138
400 n.	Unperceived, 199
Ui, H., 398 n.	Unperturbed, 500, 510, 512
Ulna, 285 n. 6	Unperturbedness, 511 s- Unproduced, 63, 182
Ultimate, 233, 236; being, 235; cau	
ality, 106; cause, 111, 114, 237; col	0 ((
sciousness, 22; entity, 232-234; prin	
ciple, 474; reality, 8, 13, 22, 42, 9	o_ Unrighteous 400
168, 199, 221, 271, 454; specific pro	Unspeakable, 35, 89 n., 203, 204, 221
perties, 371; truth, 15, 494, 508	Onopoundoro, 55, 67,5,7,

612 Ind	lex
Unsubstantial and and	upādhi, 72, 142
Unsubstantial, 202, 203	upālambha, 388
Unsuitable, 370	upāṅga, 273, 274, 276, 279
Unsuitability, 370 Untenable, 358	upāya, 359, 389
Unthinkable, 22, 221, 362-364, 529	upekkhā, 460
Untruthfulness, 373	upekṣā, 23 n.
uṇādi, 541	Úpholder, 526
nnduka, 318	Upodghāta, 280 n., 283 n.
upacaryate, 261	Upper worlds, 76
ирасауа, 235 н.	uras, 286
npacara-chala, 386 n.	Urinal canal, 296
upadeśa, 389, 390	Urinary disease, 343
Upadesa-sāhasrī, 79, 81	Urine, 325, 327-330, 347, 350-352
Upadeša-sāhasrī-vivrti, 193	Uruṇḍa, 300
upadhā, 412, 415	ussado, 497
upadhāraṇa, 459, 500	Uśanas-sanhitā, 435
upa-dhatn, 324	uṣṇa, 312 n., 357, 359 n., 361
upakāra, 183 Upakrama-parākrama, 220	Uterus, 313 utkarşa-prakarşa-rūpa, 401 n.
upalabdhi-sama, 380 n., 382 n.	utkarṣāpakarṣa-varṇyāvarṇya-vikalpa-
upalakṣaṇa, 11	sādhya-sama, 380 n., 381 n.
upamā, 380	Utpala, 49
upamāna, 148, 377	Utpatti, 231
upanaya, 379	utpatti, 232
upanāho, 497	utsāha, 327
upanibandho, 497	uttamaļi purusaļi, 466
Upanișadic, 205 n., 494, 499; simile,	Uttamāmṛta, 99
467	nttara, 380, 391
Upanişad-ratna, 58	Uttara-sthāna, 433
Upanisads, 1, 2, 8, 37-30, 46, 58, 78,	Uttara-tantra, 329, 330, 332, 389, 424,
92, 98, 100, 113, 114, 116, 129, 151, 215, 226, 259, 260, 270, 333, 344,	425, 427, 429 Uttara-vasti, 426
448, 453, 455, 471, 475, 478, 493,	uttarāyaņa, 519
495, 496, 511 n., 518, 520, 525, 530,	Uveyaka, 172
532, 536, 548, 551; as one consistent	Uvula, 259, 355
philosophy borrowed by Sankara	ūha, 375, 377
from his predecessors, 2; commen-	ūhya, 389, 392
tators before Saṅkara, 1; ethical	ūrdhva-gā nāḍī, 345 n.
ideas in, 494, 495; heart in, 344;	urdhva-mūlam tripād Brahma, 523
nature of its philosophy under Gau-	ūru-nalaka, 285 n. 8
dapāda's influence, 2; their view of	ūrū, 285
self criticized by Kamalaśila, 181;	Vacuity at 224
their views regarding the <i>nāḍīs</i> , 344 ff.	Vacuity, 21, 234 Vacuous space, 59
Upanisad texts, 80, 87, 88, 98, 132	Vagina, 289, 290 n., 291, 313 n.
upapatti-sama, 380 n. 4, 382 n.	vahana-pāka-sneha, 328 n.
nparati, 495	Vaibhāṣikas, 186 n.
upasamānussati, 459	Vaideha Janaka, 316
Upaśama, 231	Vaideha king, 357
upasamana, 358	vaidharmya, 132
upasamanīya, 357	vaidya, 385
npaśaya, 397	Vaidyaka-sarvasva, 432
upatāpa, 293, 309	Vaidyakāṣṭānga - hṛdaya - vṛtter bhe -
Upavarşa, 43	şaja-nāma-sūcī, 436
upavāsa, 278 upaveda, 274, 276	Vaidyanātha Dīkṣita, 81
upaceaa, 274, 276 upādāna, 9, 334, 497, 498	Vaidyavācaspati, 434 Vain, 511
upādāna-kāraṇa, 12, 372	vain, 511 vairāgya, 231, 412, 439, 454
	・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・

Vairāgya-šataka, 460 n. Vaiśeșika, 51, 55, 119, 120, 125, 157, 179, 189-192, 194, 248, 262, 272, 302, 307 n., 369, 412, 514; categories, 55, 192; its theory of the subtle body, 306; philosophy, 193, 332 n., 398 n.; physics, 192, 273; springs of action in, 412; system, 366, 371; theory, 190 Vaiśeşika-bhāşya, 162 Vaišeşika-sūtras, 356, 369-371 Vaiśya, 502, 504, 505, 531, 542, 546 vaisamya, 320 Vaişņava, 125, 192, 219, 441, 443, Vaisnavism and Saivism, 543 n. 549 n. Vaitaraņa, 424 Vaitarana-tantra, 435 vaitāna, 283 Vaitāna-sūtra, 284 Vaiyāsika-nyāya-mālā, 81 Vajrā, 353, 354 vakrānumāna, 120 Vakulakara, 431 Valabhī, 164 valaya, 284 n. 4 valayāsthi, 284 n. 4 valāsa, 298 n., 299 Valid, 12, 158, 166, 184; means of proof, 236; proofs, 167 Validity, 166, 170 Vallabhācārya, 147 n., 156 n., 443 Vamśidhara Miśra, 250 n. vanam, 497 vanatho, 497 vanisthu, 289 Vanity, 509-511 Vangasena, 427, 435 Varada Paṇḍita, 57 n. Vararuci, 432 Vararuci-samhitā, 432 Vardhamāna, 107, 126 n. Variability, 384 varna-dharma, 505 varnaka, 52 n. varņāsrama-dharma, 505 varnya-sama, 386, 387 varsā, 335 Varuna, 292, 300 n. 2 Varying states, 180 vasanta, 335 Vasiştha, 229, 257 vasti, 289 n. 1, 340, 426 vasti-kriyā, 296, 426 vastu, 203 vastutva, 38 Vasubandhu, 19-21, 25, 26 n., 29, 35, 58-60, 62, 164, 171; admits pure

knowledge, 20; arguments of Śańkara for psychological duality of awareness do not apply to Vasubandhu, 29; central features of his philosophy, 24, 25; did not deny objectivity of objects of awareness, but regarded objects as awarenesses, 29; experiences like dream, 20; his date, 20 n.; his denial of the doctrine of pure vacuity, 21; his idealistic conceptional space, 25; his idealistic explanation of physical events, 21; his refutation of the atomic theory, 20; his theory of ālaya-vijñāna, 22; his theory of pure consciousness and its power, 22; his theory of thought transformations, 21; his view of thought as real substance and its threefold transformations, 23 ff.; his view that illusory impositions must have an object, 21; perceptual knowledge of the material world not trustworthy, 20; sahopalambha-niyama absent in, 26 n. 1; world-construction as false as dream-construction,

Vasumitra, 171
vasv-ańka-vasu-valsare, 107
Vaśiṣṭha-rāma-saṃvāda, 229
vati, 400 n.
Vatsapa, 300
Vavvūšsas, 300
vā, 330

Vācaspati Miśra, 11, 12, 25 n., 29, 36 n., 45, 47, 48, 51, 52, 56, 57, 74 n., 81 -83, 87, 101, 103, 105, 106, 109, 111, 112, 116, 119, 124, 126 n., 196, 220, 250, 260, 262, 272, 305, 306 n., 393, 304; admits jīva as the locus of avidyā and Brahman as its object, 110; admits two kinds of ajñāna, 108; discussions regarding his date and teachers, 107; his account of the Sautrāntika view of the existence of the external world, 26 n. 2; his definition of truth, 108, 100; his difference with Sarvajňātma Muni, 110; his explanation regarding the nature of object, 29; his followers, 108; his reference to other Buddhistic arguments regarding the falsity of space, 28n.; his view of illusion, 110; his view of the status of the object of knowledge, 111; method of his commentary, 108; on the Sāmkhya-Yoga theory of the subtle body, 305

-	
Wāsārambhana arh	22
Vācārambhaṇa, 216	33 34
vāda, 377, 379, 401 Vādāvalī, 57 n.	39
	vātaj
Vādirāja, 443	Vāta
Vādivāgīšvara, 196	
Vädindra, 120, 122–124, 196; his da	vāta
and works, 122, 123	_
Vāgbhata, 274, 284 n. 3, 285 n.	
286 n. 1, 288 n. 1, 304, 327, 32	
332, 425, 427, 432-434; diseases	w väti-
modifications of doşas, 329; his vie of doşa, dhātu and dhātu-mala, 33	
his view of doşa, dhātu and mal	
327 ff.	n, vac
Vägbhata junior, 363	41
Vāgbhaṭa-khaṇḍana-maṇḍana, 425	Vāy
Vāgīša Gosvāmin, 225 n.	väyı
Vāhata, 263, 433	20
Vājasaneyi-saṃhitā, 536	
vājikaraņa, 276, 301	3
Vājīkaraņa-tantra, 425	3.
vāk, 346	
vāk-chala, 385, 386 n.	3: vede
vākya-doşa, 384, 385	Ved
Vākyakāra, 43 n.	2
vākya-praśaṃsā, 385	4
vākya-šeṣa, 389, 391	5
Vākya-vivaraņa-vyākhyā, 193	Ved
Vākya-vṛtti, 80, 81	vede
Vākya-vṛtti-prakāśikā, 80	Ved
Vākya-vṛtti-ṭīkā, 193	5-
Vālmīki, 229, 230	Ved
vāna-prastha, 505	Ved
vān-manah-sarīra-pravṛtti, 321	34
vānmaya, 469	73
Vāpyacandra, 431	1
vāraņā, 353	20
vāritta, 500	2
vārsika, 345	4
Vārttika, 1 n., 48, 52, 78, 83, 84, 10	
102	a
Vāryovida, 357	ie
vāsanā, 26, 27 n., 186, 187, 237-23	39, tl
243, 245, 251, 255-257, 264, 26	
268, 269	ff
vāsanābhidhānaḥ, 242	o
vāsanā-kṣaya, 252	р
Vāsistha, 230, 231, 238, 255	Ā
Vāsistha-Rāmāyaņa, 231	0
Vāsisṭha-Rāmāyaṇa-candrikā, 231	a
Vāsistha-sāra, 232	ir
Vāsisṭha-sāra-gūḍhārthā, 232	le
vāstavī, 224	c
Vāsudeva, 535, 538-544, 548, 549; a	nd a
Kṛṣṇa, 541 ff.	r
Vāsudevaka, 539	ti
Vāsudevendra, 57 n.	u
vāta, 258, 282, 296, 319, 327, 33	0- 5

49, 350, 352, 361, 362 n., 371,)2 ja, 300, 301, 331 a-kalā-kalīya, 332 n. ıla, 334 2-prakṛti, 328, 334 299 kāra, 299 i-krta-nāśanī, 299 I-kṛtasya-bheṣajīm, 300 siputriyas, 59, 60, 62, 182 syāyana, 119, 124, 171, 248, 384 . 1., 390, 393, 399 n., 400 n., 401 n., 13 orvida, 333 ru, 75, 245, 257 n., 259 n., 260, 262, 63, 276, 291, 300, 304, 311, 313, 15, 318, 325-331, 332 n., 333-336, 38, 339, 345, 348, 349, 362 n., 63, 365, 384; according to Caraka, 32 ff. anā, 23 das, 44, 224, 236, 274, 275, 277, 279, 280, 294, 333, 390, 405, 407, 438, 178, 481, 484, 487, 493, 494, 514, 20, 524, 526, 545, 547, 548 da-stuti-țīkā, 225 avādinah, 424 dādhyaksa - bhagavat - pūjyapāda, 2 n. dānanda, 52 n. dānta, 1, 3, 13, 15, 18, 19, 29, 33, 4, 37, 44, 47, 53, 54, 56, 57, 69, 71-3, 86, 96, 107, 115, 118, 124, 125, 27, 128, 156, 168, 192, 198, 205, 208, 216, 217, 220, 223, 224, 227, 31, 234, 242, 261, 271, 310, 311, 10, 438, 472, 474, 476, 478, 479, .88, 499, 504, 512, 518, 548, 550; *jñāna* and *prakṛti* in, 74; all subective notions are only contents, and herefore outside the revelation in, 6; analysis of consciousness in, 63 f.; apprehension of objects involving bjective characters, objects and the oure immediacy of revelation in, 13; Anandabodha's arguments in favour of the self-luminosity of the self and its criticism of the Prabhakara n, 69, 70; beginnings of the diaectical arguments in, 51; Buddhist riticism of the identity of the self ind its reply in, 66, 67, cognitional evelation not a product in, 13; coninuation of the school of Vacaspati up to the seventeenth century in, 51, 52; continuation of the schools of

4, 335 n., 336, 337 n., 339, 344,

Index 615

Sureśvara, Padmapāda and Mandana up to the fourteenth century in, 52, 53; continuity of conscious life in, 15; criticism of Buddhistic analysis of recognition in, 65; difference between pure intelligence and cognitional states in, 13; does not admit any relation between the character and the object, but both are manifested in one simple revelation, 13; eleventh century writers in, 49; everything else which is not a principle of revelation is māvā in, 16: existence of self cannot be proved by inference in, 68; existence of self is only proved through its immediacy and self-revelation in, 68, 60 general writers after the fourteenth century greatly under the influence of the Vivarana school in, 53; idea of jīvan-mukti in, 251; in what sense cognizing is an act. in what sense it is a fact in, 15; "I" only a particular mode of mind in, 15; its account of the antahkarana, 75; its account of the koşas, 75, 76; its account of the possibility of recognition, 65, 66; its account of the universe, 76; its account of the vāyus, 75; its central philosophical problem, 47; its chief emphasis is on the unity of the self, 72, 73; its conception of identity differentiated from the ordinary logical concept of identity, 14; its cosmology, 73--77; its difference with the Mahāyānists regarding nature of objects in the Vivarana school, 30; its theory of the subtle body, 311; its three opponents, Buddhist, Naivāvika and Mīmāmsaka, 71, 72; its twofold view, 13; logical explanation as regards the nature of identity in, 14; meaning of cognizing in, 15; meaning of prana in, 260, 261; memory does not indicate awareness of awareness in, 67; mental states and revelation in, 15; nature of ajñāna and its powers in, 73, 74; nature of the antahkarana in, 76, 77; nature of the obligatoriness of its study in, 46; no cognition cannot be cognized again in, 14; notion of "I" as content in, 15; possible borrowing of its theory of perception from Samkhya by Padmapāda in, 89 n.; principle of revelation designated as self or atman in, 16; principle of revelation is self-con-

tent, infinite and non-temporal in, 16; principle of revelation neither subjective nor objective in, 16; quarrel with the Prabhākaras on the subject of revelation in, 67; reasons adduced as to why cognition cannot be cognized in, 14; refutation of the arguments against the self-luminosity of the self in, 68, 69; revelation cannot be individuated, 16; revelation identical with self in, 15; self-identity proved through memory in, 67; seventeenth and eighteenth century writers more under the influence of Vācaspati, Surešvara and Sarvajnātma than of the Vivarana in, 56, 57; Srīharşa, Citsukha and the mahāildya syllogism of Kulārka in, 51; status of the object in, 35; tenth century writers in and Buddhism in, 48, 49; the evolution of the microcosmos and macrocosmos from ajñāna, 74, 75; the self limited by māyā behaves as individuals and as God in, 72; the theory of trivitkaraņa and paūcī-karaņa in, 74; Vidyāranya's analysis of the recognizer in, 66; Vidyāraņya's contention that the self-identity cannot be explained by the assumption of two separate concepts in, 67, 68; writers from the seventeenth to the nineteenth century in, 57 n. 1; writers inspired by Jagannäthäśrama Nrsimha and Appaya in, 55; writers inspired by Kṛṣṇānanda of the seventeenth century in, 56; writers of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries in, 55

Vedānta arguments, 118, 128 Vedānta dialectic, 125; history of its rise and growth, 124, 125; mahāvidyā syllogisms of Kulārka as its direct precursor in, 124, 125 Vedanta dialectics, 57 n., 163, 171; forerunners of, 171 ff. Vedānta epistemology, 149, 154 Vedānta-hrdaya, 57 n. Vedānta idealism, 151 Vedānta-kalpa-latikā, 225, 226 Vedānta-kalpa-taru, 108, 119 n., 260 Vedānta-kalpa-taru-mañjarī, 108 Vedānta-kalpa-taru-parimala, 108, 226 Vedānta kaumudī, 52, 53, 197, 198, 204-206, 209, 210, 211 n. Vedānta-kaumudī-vyākhyāna, 205 Vedānta-kaustubha, 82 n. Vedānta-nava-bhūsana, 56, 8::

Vedānta-paribhāṣā, 17 n., 30 n., 54,	Verbal definitions, 146
74 n., 75 n., 105, 207, 208, 209 n.,	Verbalism, 171
211 n., 217, 223 n.	Verbal nature, 163
Vedānta-paribhāṣā-prakāsikā, 54 n.	Verbal repetition, 385
	Verbal sophisms, 146
Vedānta philosophy, 19, 51, 62, 112 Vedānta-sāra, 54, 55, 73 n., 75 n., 81 n.,	Verbal usage, 184
	Vertebrae, 287 n. 1
103, 261 Vedānta-siddhānta-candrikā, 56	Vertebral column, 285 n. 1, 287 n. 1,
Vedānta-siddhānta-muktāvalī, 57 n.,	
	353 vibhava, 537
270 Vodanta nitra 228 260 262	vibhāga, 158, 194, 360
Vedānta-sūtra, 228, 260-262	Vibhrama-viveka, 87 n.
Vedānta-sūtra-muktāvalī, 82	
Vedānta-šikhāmaņi, 54	vibhūti, 549 Vibration, 256; of the prāṇa, 256
Vedānta-tatīva-dīpana-vyākhyā, 54	
Vedānta-tatīva-kaumudī, 45 n.	Vibratory, 254; activity, 257, 258, 261;
Vedānta-tattva-viveka, 54, 216, 217 n.	movement, 188
Vedanta teachers, 17, 30	vicāra, 358, 359
Vedānta texts, 47	vicāraņā, 264, 373
Vedānta topies, 81	Vice, 194, 248, 305, 373, 487, 493,
Vedānta writers, 55	498, 507, 510, 511, 522
Vedāntācārya, 441	vicikitsā, 413
Vedāntie, 31 n., 52 n., 92, 311; attack,	Vicious, 22, 23, 409, 414; endless series,
125; circle, 55; concept of salvation,	130; infinite, 40, 70, 117, 132, 162,
227; concepts, 148; cosmology, 73,	174, 178, 185; infinite regress, 128,
226; development, 48; doctrines,	255
228; idealism, 36; influence, 477,	Viciousness, 373
478; interpretation, 49; interpreta-	Victory, 512
tion by Bhartrprapañca, 1; inter-	viddeso, 497
preters, 208; monism, 224; pro-	Videha, 427
blems, 228; self, 33; texts, 90, 98,	videha-mukti, 252
99, 102; writers, 44, 53	Videha-tantra, 435
Vedāntin, 30, 234	vidhāna, 389, 391
Vedāntist, 12, 31, 96, 124, 125, 128, 157,	vidhi, 50, 479-483
167, 168, 225, 517 vedānga, 274, 276	Vidhi-rasāyana, 220 Vidhi-rasāyanopajīvanī, 220
Vedāṅga-sāra, 432	Vidhi-viveka, 45 n., 86, 87, 106, 482
Vedārtha-saṃgraha, 43 n.	vidhura, 351
Vedic commands, 479, 481-486	vidhurā, 342
Vedic commentator, 215	vidradha, 299
Vedic dharma, 533	Vidvan-manoramā, 79
Vedic duties, 43 n., 46, 99, 100, 437	Vidvan-mano-rañjanī, 261 n. 1
Vedic index, 345 n., 346 n., 486 n. 3	vidvat-samnyāsa, 251, 252 n.
Vedic India, 301	Vidyabhusan, Dr, 393, 394
Vedic injunctions, 468	vidyā, 12, 238, 239, 505
Vedic knowledge, 495	Vidyābharaņa, 126 n.
Vedic religion, 493	vidyābhāva, 12
Vedic texts, 74 n., 98, 129	vidyābhīpsita, 495
Vedische Studien, 345 n.	Vidyādhāman, 79
vega-pravartana, 327	Vidyāmṛta-varṣiṇī, 115
Vegetables (born from), 309	Vidyāraṇya, 52, 53, 57, 69, 70 n., 78,
Veins, 256, 289, 290, 318	82, 83, 86, 103, 214, 216, 251, 252;
Venis, 17 n.	a follower of the Vivarana view, 215;
Venkața, 43 n., 82 n., 119, 120, 123,	his date and works, 214, 216; his
200	idea of Jivan-mukti, 251; his view
Veńkaţanātha, 441	that māyā and Brahman are the
Veńkateśa, 432	joint cause of the world-appearance,
veram, 497 Verbal command, 470	215; the writer of Pañcadast and
Verbal command, 479	of the Jivan-mukti-viveka, 251 n.

	017
Vidyāraņya Muni, 66, 67	Vindhyasvāmin, 171
Vidyāratna, K., 2 n.	vinibandhanam, 497
Vidyā sāgarī, 103, 126 n., 132, 134 n.	viññāna, 498
Vidyā-surabhi, 99	Violent, 408
Vidyā-śrī, 82 n.	violent, 408
vidyā-taru, 107	viparīta-dharmatva, 6
Vidyātīrtha, 215 n.	viparyaya, 10, 381, 391
View 266 260 250 -f alim	uparyāsa, 5; (error), four kinds of e
View, 366, 369, 378; of things, 13	vipara, 22-24, 362-361, 366, 201
Vigorous, 303	virakti, 251, 252
Vigraha-vyāvartanī, 165	viraj, 43
vigrhya-saṃbhāṣā, 378	virāt, 215, 548
Vijayanagara, 219	rircka, 315
Vijaya-prašasti, 126	Virility, 301, 333
Vijayaraksita, 428-430, 432, 434, 435	viriya-samvara, 500
vijnapti, 20	virodho, 497
vijnapti-mātratā, 22, 24	Virtue, 194, 248, 305, 373, 404, 493,
Vijnapti-mātratā-siddhi, 10 n.	50% 510, 511, 514, 522
vijnāna, 23, 127, 164, 307, 343, 373,	Vicinous, 23, 367, 414, 511, 512, 514;
491, 505 n.	deeds, 246
Vijñāna-bhairava, 264	viruddha, 384, 385, 386 n., 388
Vijñānabhikṣu, 262, 443	viruddha hetu, 386 n.
vijñāna-dhātu, 307	visalpa, 200
Vijñāna-kaumudī, 264	visalpaka, 299
vijñāna-kriyā-śakti-dvayāśraya, 104	visarga, 370
vijñānamaya, 76	visarpa, 299, 430
vijñānamaya-koṣa, 75	visattikā, 497
vijñāna-mātra, 19, 22, 234	Visible, 157, 337 n.; dosa, 337 n.
vijñāna-pariņāma, 21	Vision, 333
vijñāna-vāda, 20, 209, 228, 272	Visual, 176; consciousness, 61; organ,
vijnana-vadins, 2, 242	31; perception, 20, 25 n.; sense, 156
Vijñānāmṛta-bhāṣya, 262	višada, 332, 359 n., 361
vikalpa, 75 n., 236, 261, 389, 392,	višesa, 148, 187, 189, 371, 397
401 n.	višista-devatā-bhakti, 505
vikalpa-vāsanā, 23	višistas yaiva ānanda-padārthatvāt, 223
vikāra, 320, 369	Viśistādvaita, 57 n., 441
Vikrama-samvat, 107	višistādvaita-vādin, 439
Vikramaśilā, 49	višuddha-cakra, 355
vikrti, 334, 335, 358, 386 n., 388	višva, 76, 548
vikşepa, 73, 389 n.	Viśvabhāratī, 58 n.
viksepa-śakti, 74	Viśvadeva, 115
viksipati, 112	Viśvambhara, 79
vilayana-rūpā vṛddhiḥ prakopaḥ, 335 n.	Viśvanātha Tīrtha, 220
vilāpanī, 264, 265	Viśvarūpa Ācārya, 82, 83, 86, 87, 251
vimukta, 251	višva-rūpatā, 241
Vimuktātman, 198, 199, 201, 203-205;	Viśvāmitra, 230, 541
criticism of the bhedābheda view by,	Viśvāmitra-samhitā, 432
201, 202; criticism of the sahopa-	Viśveśvara, 443
lambha-niyamāt by, 201; his date and	Viśveśvara Pandita, 80
works, 198; his refutation of "differ-	Viśveśvara Sarasvati, 55
ence," 199, 200; nature of pure con-	Viśveśvara Tirtha, 78
sciousness in, 199; tries to prove an	Viśveśvarananda, 82 n.
intrinsic difference between aware-	Viśveśvarāśrama, 57 n.
ness and its object, 201; world-	viśvodarā, 353
appearance like a painting on a	vișama-pravartanā, 416
canvas in, 203	vişama-vijñāna, 416
Viṃśatikā, 19, 20 n., 21 n., 26 n., 29	vişamāhāropayogitvāt, 334 n.
Vinaya-Piṭaka, 276	Vișa-tantra, 425
vināša-prati;•dhāt, 386 n.	vişaya, 23, 30, 104, 110, 112. 152
omasa-pran, -anar, 300 m.	

010	uea
	** ***
vişaya-caitanya, 207	Vomiting, 348
vişaya-gata-pratyakşatva, 208	vraṇah, 330 n.
vişaya-titikşā, 495	Vrddha-Vāgbhaṭa, 317 n. 1
vişaya-vijñapti, 22	vṛddhāḥ, 103
visaya-visayi-bhāva, 144, 152	vrddhi, 322
visayān indriyāņām, 341	vṛkka, 318
vişayopalabdhi, 373	Vrnda, 427, 435
Vișņu, 535, 536, 538, 546-549; and	Vṛṣṇis, 539, 541, 543
bhagavat, 539, 540; conception of,	vṛṣya, 323, 365 n.
535, 536; conception of, and of	vṛtti, 56, 70, 87, 206, 207, 210, 256,
nārāyaṇa, 537, 538	306
Vişnubhatta, 52 n.	vṛtti-caitanya, 208
Vișnu-dharmottara, 279 n.	vṛtti-jñāna, 77
	vṛttikāra, 43
Vișnu-mukhā, 536	
Visnu-pada, 536	Vṛtti-prabhākara, 216 n.
Vișnu-purăna, 251	vrtti transformation, 206
Vișņu-purăņa-țīkā, 148 n.	Vrtti-vārttika, 220
Vișņu-smṛti, 279 n.	vyakta, 470
Vital centres, 340	vyakter apaiti, 386 n.
Vital currents, 179	vyartha, 388
Vital element, 315, 316	vyatireki, 400 n.
Vital functions, 357, 487	vyavasāya, 107, 384
Vitality, 241, 328, 336	vyavasāyātmikā, 484 n. 1
Vital parts, 342	vyādhi, 336 n.
Vital powers, 21	Vyādhi-sindhu-vimardana, 432
Vital principle, 241	Vyäkarana, 275 n., 547
vitandā, 377, 379, 401	V yākaraņa-vāda-nakṣatra-mālā, 219
Vitthala Dīkṣita, 443	vyākhyāna, 389, 39 2
Vivarana, 53, 54, 56, 103, 208, 209,	V vākhyāna-dīpikā, 123
216 n., 222; line, 104; school, 34, 53,	Vyākhyā-sudhā, 55
57	vyākulita-mānasaļī, 312 n. 3
Vivarana-prameya-samgraha, 52, 53,	vyāna, 259, 260, 291
63 n., 65 n., 66 n., 67, 70 n., 83, 84,	vyāpādo, 497
86, 87, 103, 214, 216	vyāpāra, 137, 186
Vivaraņa-siddhānta-candrikā, 434	vyāpāraķ preraņā-rūpaķ, 481
Vivaraņa-siddhānta-cintāmaņi, 329 n.	vyāpti, 120, 139, 148, 194
Vivaraņa-tātparya-dīpikā, 148 n.	vyāpti-graha, 148
Vivaraņopanyāsa, 10, 31 n., 103, 216 n.	vyāroşaṇam, 498
Vivaraņopanyāse Bhāratītīrtha-vaca-	Vyāsa, 78, 87, 259 n. 2
nam, 216 n.	Vyāsa-bhāṣya, 251, 262, 265, 305, 408,
vivarta, 38, 39, 224; cause, 45; view,	476, 517
46, 215; view of causation, 224	Vyāsatīrtha, 118, 225, 226
vivarta-karana, 50, 51	Vyāsāśrama, 119
Viveka-cūdāmaņi, 79	vyāvahārika, 2, 44
viveka-nispatti, 250	vyāvṛtta, 63
vividisā-saṃnyāsa, 252 n.	vyāyāma, 419
Vīrasimhāvalokita, 436	vyūha, 545, 546, 548
vīrya, 241, 351, 359, 361-366, 370,	
391, 501	Wackernagel, 345 n.
vIță, 256	Waking experiences, 6, 8, 28
Vocal activities, 500	Waking ideas, 26
Vocal organs, 254	Waking life, 80, 115
Void, 272	Waking state, 26, 240, 241, 257
Volition, 23, 24, 71, 152, 153, 463,	Walleser, 398 n.
515	Warm, 358, 361, 408
Volitional states, 179, 180	Washerman, 160
Volitional tendency, 479	
Voluntary, 515	Waste-products, 325, 327, 331, 337 Watchfulness, 505
	matemaniess, 505

cipation, 248; jīvan-mukti and the

Prabhākara idea of emanicpation, 249; jivan-mukti and the Samkhya idea of emancipation, 249, 250; jl-

	*-9
Water, 74, 187, 194, 302, 331-334, 347,	yasmin śūnyam jagat sthitam, 234
349, 352, 357–360, 362, 364, 367,	Yasomitra, 58 n., 62
501; channels, 348	yathārthānubhava, 213
Watery, 331, 357, 359; character, 331	yathārthānubhavah pramā, 133, 212
Way, 115, 367	yathā-vidhi, 294, 295
Weak, 338	Yaugācāryas, 120
Wealth, 510	Yādava, 541, 543
Weber, Dr Albrecht, 288 n., 486 n.	Yādavābhyudaya, 220
Well-being, 509	Yādavābhyudaya-ṭīkā, 220
Whirlwind, 408	Yādavānanda Nyāyācārya, 225 n.
White, 349; leprosy, 282	Yājňavalkya, 107, 252, 286 n. 1
Whitney, W. D., 340 n.	Yājñavalkya-Dharma-śāstra, 279 n.
Whole, 20, 40, 152, 157, 187	Yamunacarya, 439-441, 541, 546, 547
Will, 149, 248, 402, 415; force of, 264;	yātudhānas, 296, 300
to live, 414	Yellow, 27, 176, 330; awareness, 70,
Willing, 263	71
Will-power, 242	Yellowness, 143
Windpipe, 286	Yoga, 107, 109, 250, 258, 265, 356,
	380, 390, 415, 439, 440, 443-445,
Winter, 327, 335, 370	447, 451-453, 456, 457, 460, 461,
Wisdom, 24, 257, 442, 444, 491, 494,	466, 467, 489, 499, 504, 512, 514,
500, 502, 504, 505, 514, 530, 532 Wise, 378, 531	519, 547; concept of God criticized,
Wish, 497	177; springs of action in, 414
World, 1, 3, 11, 51, 114, 230, 236	yoga-dhāraṇā, 449 n. 2
World-appearance, 1, 5, 9-12, 19, 45,	Yoga discipline, 242
46, 48, 55, 74, 98, 101, 105, 106, 110,	Yoga literature, 354 n.
111, 117, 118, 147, 152, 168, 170,	Yoga practices, 273, 436, 440, 448,
215, 217, 221, 224, 230, 233-236,	477
239-245, 256, 268	Yoga processes, 453
World-construction, 21	yoga-sevā, 450
World-creation, 39, 42, 242	Yoga-sūtra, 5 n., 251, 265, 304 n., 403,
World-experience, 3, 4, 170	408, 443, 451, 461, 549
Worldly life, 521	Yoga-sūtra-bhāṣya, 87
World-manifestation, 410 n.	Yoga system, 436
World-objects, 21, 28, 36	yoga-śataka, 425, 436
World-order, 533	Yoga Upanişads, 455, 461
World-phenomena, 50	yoga-vāhitvāt, 332 n.
World-process, 73, 170	Yoga-vārttika, 262, 355
Worms, 297, 298, 300	Yoga-vāsistha, 17, 57 n., 228, 230 n.,
Worship, 537	231-234, 237, 240, 246, 247, 250 n.,
Wounds, 330	251-254, 259, 263, 264 n., 265-268,
Wrath, 497	270-272, 402 n.; citta and move-
Wrong construction, 154	ment, 258; conception of jtvan-
Wrong notion, 9	mukti, 245 ff.; denial of daiva in,
Wrong perception, 137	255; energy and its evolution, 343 ff.;
, 3,	energy and world-appearance, 243 ff.;
yad antar-jñeya-rūpaṃ, 27 n.	estimate of its philosophy, 271,
yadrcchā, 372, 410	272; free-will and destiny, 253; its
yajña, 292 n., 448, 487, 488	doctrine of prārabdha-karma, 246,
yajña-vidaḥ, 448	247; its idealism compared with
Yajñeśvara Makhindra, 218 n.	that of Prakāśānanda, 270, 271; its
Yajus, 274, 390, 526	idealism compared with that of
Yakkha, 539	Sankara and Buddhist idealism, 268
yakna, 288	ff.; jīvan-mukti and Nyāya eman-
1 0 (0	cination 248; items multi and the

yakşas, 283, 468

yantra, 257

yakşman, 297 n. 5, 298 Yama, 251, 311, 432, 454, 455, 491

Yoga-vāsistha (cont.) van-mukti and the Samkhya-yoga idea of emancipation, 249-251; jivanmukti and Vidyāranya's doctrine of jīvan-mukti, 251; jīvan-mukti compared with Buddhist sainthood, 247, 248; jīvan-mukti compared with sthita-prājna, 247; karma, manas and the categories, 237-239; nature of kartrtva, 242 ff.; nature of the work, other works on it and its date, 228-232; origination of the world through thought-movement, 235-237; place of free-will in, 254; prāna and prāṇāyāma in, 257 tf.; prāṇa vibration and knowledge in, 256; right conduct and final attainment in, 267, 268; stages of progress towards saintliness in, 264 ff.; theory of spanda, 235-237; ultimate reality is pure intelligence, 232, 233; vāsanā and prāņa vibration in, 256, 257; world-appearance is entirely mental creation and absolutely false, 233,

Yoga-vāsistha-Rāmāyana, 228, 232 Yoga-vāsistha-samksepa, 232 Yoga-vāsistha-sāra, 232 Yoga-vāsistha-sāra-samgraha, 232 Yoga-vāsistha-shokātt 1222 MY

Yoga-vāsiştha-tātparya-prakāśa, 240 n. Yoga-vāsistha-tātparya-samgraha, 232 Yogācāra, 164 Yogānanda, 57 n. Yogānandanātha, 436 yogārūdha, 444, 445, 446 n. Yogeśwara, 453 Yogins, 189, 256, 440, 444, 446-451, Yogi-yājñavalkya-samhitā, 354 Yogiśvara, 57 n., 122 yogyatā, 150 yoni, 358 vuddhe cāpy apalāvana, 505 n. yudh, 551 Yudhişthira, 508, 509 Yugosena, 172 3 uj, 443, 444, 446 yujir, 443, 444 yujir yogc, 443, 444 yuj samādhar 143 yukta, 446 n. 1, 458 yukta äsīta, 449 yukti, 359, 360, 370, 373, 375, 376 Yukti-dīpikā, 45 n. Yukti-prayoga, 49 yuñjyāt, 446 n. 4

Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft, 345 n.

लाल बहादुर शास्त्री राष्ट्रीय प्रशासन अकादमी, पुस्तकालय

Lal Bahadur Shastri National Academy of Administration Library

MUSSOORIE/मसूरी अवाष्ति सं० /Acc· No. 9822

क्रपया इस प्रम्नक को निम्नलिखिन दिनांक या उससे पहले वापस कर दें।

Please return this book on or before the date last stamped below.

Take the Country of Botom								
दि <i>नां</i> क Due Date	उध≀रकर्नकी संख्या Borrower's No.	दिनांक Due Date	उधारकर्ता की संख्या Borrower's No.					
-	7/5	com a com a supplementation of						
* ne-								

181.409 Das v.2

LBSNAA



LIBRARY

LAL BAHADUR SHASTR! National Academy of Administration MUSSOORIE

Accession No. 9822

- Books are issued for 15 days only but may have to be recalled earlier if urgently required.
- An over-due charge of 25 Paise per day per volume will be charged.
- 3. Books may be renewed on request, at the discretion of the Librarian.
- Periodicals, Rare and Reference books may not be issued and may be consulted only in the Library.
- Books lost, defaced or injured in any way shall have to be replaced or its double price shall be paid by the herrower.